



LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 03

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

Synopsis

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khkh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201 – The Trial That No One Had Ever Cleared In Ten Thousand Years!

This time, the Ancient Law's reward was much lesser than the previous one. Not all of Yue Yang's Shadows received a reward.

Only the Barbarian cow Shadow received a reward.

[Bloodeye Double Kill]: When [Doom's Eyes] is triggered to kill an enemy, there is a small chance that a related enemy will be killed too. This skill will not work on non-living beasts or undead beasts who don't have souls.

Yue Yang realized that the Barbarian Cow Shadow seemed to have another skill that appeared to be useless. The chances of one killing with [Doom's Eyes] was already very little, the chances of triggering this [Bloodeye double Kill] would almost be next to none.

However, this was a free skill given to him from the heavens, so Yue Yang couldn't return it even if he wanted to. He could only receive it. He immediately diverted his attention from the special skill that was given to the Barbarian Cow Shadow from the Ancient Law, and anxiously looked at the changes on the Barbarian Cow Shadow's body. She was still in the midst of evolution, bathed in a golden light as black smoke seeped out from her body relentlessly. Her body became smaller little by little and the horns on her head twisted backwards. The silver-coloured cow horns had also slowly turned into gold colour.

The gold-coloured horns slowly turned smaller and grew longer backwards.

Her obviously masculine face outline slowly became softer and more feminine.

Her 2-meter tall height might still be very big, but it was much better than her previous build. The current her even looked more slender than before.

Her sturdy, bulging muscles were now only limited to her arms and thighs, completely disappearing from the rest of her body. Instead, a girl's smooth and tender skin was covering the rest of her body. Although she didn't have a snow-white, tender skin like the Bloody Queen's, compared to her previous body, her skin had completely changed. Then, Barbarian Cow Shadow's body and the Barbarian Cow Leather Armor that she was wearing started to ignite in fire, dropping lumps of fire on the ground...

Her two arms weren't bulky anymore, her fingers had also become thin and slender.

The tail on her back had also completely disappeared. Above her thighs, a womanly butt was present. Other than the part of her body below her knees, which were still cow's legs and hoofs, there were no other characteristics that showed that she was a Barbarian Cow.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow suddenly bent over in pain as a bright golden light suddenly emitted from her heart area.

As the flames on her body subsided, the new Barbarian Cow Shadow who stood back up again made Yue Yang gasp in surprise.

Her body was completely bare, all the armors that she wore previously had completely disappeared. Although her skin was a little bronze in colour, it seemed even healthier and full of vitality. On her extremely well-proportioned slender body, the most eye-catching part of her body that would make others immediately spurt nosebleed was a pair of what Yue Yang would reckon as a G-cup breasts. If it weren't for the fact that she was 2-metres tall, those treasures that would cause a storm in other's blood wouldn't be proportionate to her body at all.

There was a little golden bell dangling from her neck, resting in the middle of those incredible breast.

There was also a golden wristband on her wrist.

Her waist was no longer sturdy and stocky like last time, instead, it was shapely and smooth like a normal girl's. Due to her ridiculously big butt, she looked like she had a beautiful pear-shaped build.

Yue Yang's gaze travelled further down...

Yue Yang suddenly felt a perverted impulse in his heart. But she was his own Guardian Beast. Between humans and beasts, is it really okay?

Seeing the Barbarian Cow Shadow's current sexy body, the Bloody Queen was a little jealous. Fortunately, although she lost in terms of the chest area, she still had the upper-hand on the other parts of her body compared to the Barbarian Cow Shadow. Xiao Wen Li, on the other hand, didn't understand anything at all. She saw that the part below Barbarian Cow Shadow's belly was a little different from her own. She tilted her head in curiosity and was even thinking of reaching her hands out to touch that part. Yue Yang hurriedly grabbed her curious hands and handed some of his clothes to Barbarian Cow Shadow.

Although his clothes were a little too small on her, he didn't prepare anything for her beforehand. She had to make do with this.

Seeing that Yue Yang didn't dare to look at Barbarian Cow Shadow's body, the Bloody Queen suddenly flew towards him and hugged his back. She pasted her soft, tender body tightly on his back, allowing him to feel her curves and softness. Xiao Wen Li also joined in the fun, her little hands wrapping themselves on Yue Yang's thighs as she rubbed her face on his lower abdomen. Xiao Wen Li was only trying to act like a spoiled child on Yue Yang, but currently, the guy from another world's willpower was strained to its breaking points. The fire in his heart burned even bigger as Xiao Wen Li rubbed her face on his abdomen.

He carried Xiao Wen Li up and gave her a kiss, trying to subdue the fire in his heart.

Xiao Wen Li become very happy.

She hugged Yue Yang back and showered his face with kisses. In the end, even the Bloody Queen also leaned her face closer towards Yue Yang, breathing hot air.

Yue Yang caressed the Bloody Queen's face. He had wanted to turn his head and kiss those cherry lips, but Yue Bing, who was on the ground, suddenly moved. Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen was so surprised that they immediately released each other. Only Xiao Wen Li, who was completely ignorant about all these, continued to hug Yue Yang tightly.

Yue Bing mumbled some words unconsciously, before continuing to sleep.

The fire in Yue Yang's heart was finally quenched as he picked his sister up and started to read the new information about the Barbarian Cow Shadow on his Grimoire.

Barbarian Cow Shadow: Named "Ah Man" by her master. Humanoid special-type. Intelligence Unlocked. Gold-ranked Level 5. Living half-entity. Guardian Beast. Undergone humanoid Reconstruction five times. Special Skills: [Trample], [Doom's Eyes], [Bloodeye Double Kill]...

There wasn't much difference on the description, but when Yue Yang saw the words 'Intelligence Unlocked', he was extremely touched.

It was not important if the Barbarian Cow Shadow levelled up or

not. If the Barbarian Cow Shadow didn't have intelligence, then she would only become a dumb beast who was destined to toil every day in the future. She would have a future only if her intelligence was unlocked. Only then would she be able to evolve into a Holy Beast... As for Mythical Beasts, Yue Yang didn't hope too much. Only heaven knows the requirements to evolve a beast into a Mythical Beast! Even such an intelligent beast like the Bloody Queen who could speak was not a Holy Beast. Yue Yang would already be very happy if the Barbarian Cow Shadow could evolve into a Holy Beast!

Another thing that made Yue Yang very happy was that amongst the Barbarian Cow Shadow's description, her 'half-entity' description had already turned into a 'living half-entity'.

(Shiro: Explained in chapter 37 and 48. Barbarian Cow Shadow is a half-entity, which means that she was half a shadow, so she did not have any feelings such as pain, unlike other living beasts)

Seemed like the Barbarian Cow had finally started to have life.

Although she may not look completely like a human now, she had finally started to have life. This would also mean she was nearer to becoming human-like. If this continued, she would probably reached the realm of human-like very soon.

Turning human-like and possessing intelligence were essential requirements to become a Holy Beast, it was also extremely important points!

Unlike the Bloody Queen, Ah Man was still obedient and well-

behaved after her evolution.

Yue Yang recalled her into the Silver Grimoire. He thought that she would rebel against him like the Bloody Queen had, but she had actually obediently turned into a golden light and returned into the grimoire without any resistance at all. As Yue Yang turned his grimoire and observed the Barbarian Cow Shadow's picture, he felt extremely proud. Amongst so many beasts, only she and Xiao Wen Li were obedient to him. As for the others... Hui Tai Lang would hide behind his back and eat magic cores secretly. The Bloody Queen, needless to say, she was practically a finicky princess. Thinking of this, Yue Yang couldn't help but to smack the Bloody Queen's perky little butt, causing the Bloody Queen to be stunned.

“Why, did, you, hit, me?” The Bloody Queen didn't understand why her master had punished her. She thought about the battle she fought just now. Hadn't she done her best?

“Smack, smack!”

Yue Yang was a little embarrassed. He was just thinking about it, but his hands had actually really spanked the Bloody Queen's butt.

Realizing that he had hit her wrongly, he proceeded to catch the Thorny Flower Demoness who was hopping around happily, placed her body on his knees and spanked her butt a few times too.

Surprisingly, unlike with the Bloody Queen, Yue Yang had hit the Thorny Flower Demoness lightly. The Thorny Flower Demoness

didn't care about being hit, she was enjoying it instead. She twisted her little butt and was reluctant to get away from Yue Yang's knees.

She only jumped up when Yue Yang delivered a last, hard spank on her butt.

She held back her tears as she miserably hid behind the Bloody Queen's body.

The Bloody Queen thought that her romantic gesture that she couldn't help doing just now had offended her master's dignity, so she simply bowed her head and accept her master's punishment. Yue Yang also didn't explain himself, he only glared at them before he reached out and patted their heads, showing that he had forgiven them. Giving subordinates the stick and then the carrot is the true way of becoming a master, Yue Yang had copied and used this advice to his advantage.

As a result, the Bloody Queen and the Thorny Flower Demoness were extremely touched. Both of them held one of Yue Yang's hands each as tears welled up in their eyes, almost falling out onto their faces.

Seeing that Yue Yang had forgiven them, their tears immediately turned into joy. Both of them immediately nodded their heads, showing their intentions to listen to him obediently in the future.

Xiao Wen Li watched the whole thing amusedly.

She had a unique relationship with Yue Yang, and she was also well-behaved, so Yue Yang had always pampered and showered her with praises every time. She never had to worry that she would be punished.

Seeing that Yue Yang was patting the Bloody Queen's head, Xiao Wen Li pulled Yue Yang's hands and rubbed it on her head too. She raised her clear doe-eyes and nodded towards Yue Yang, full of smiles, as if the feeling of his hands on her head was very comfortable for her.

“Let's go, let's take a look at the Gemini Temple!” Yue Yang had gained confidence after clearing the Taurus Temple Trial. He wanted to clear the Gemini Temple quickly.

What kind of beasts would await him in the Gemini Temple?

Yue Yang carried Yue Bing as he led Xiao Wen Li forward.

The Bloody Queen and the hopping Thorny Flower Demoness who had both refused to be recalled back into the Grimoire followed behind. The group of people entered the golden teleportation gate at the back of the hall, teleporting into the the third temple of the Twelve Zodiac Temples, the Gemini Temple.

The guardian of the Aries Temple was the Three-headed Chimera, while the guardian of the Taurus Temple was a beast that was close to becoming a Holy Beast, the White Bull, who could turn into human.

What kind of strong monster would there be in the Gemini Temple?

Yue Yang remembered that Qian Qian had said that there was a rule in the Twelve Zodiac Temple Quest. The twelve temples would be divided into four rounds, three temples in each round. Within each round, the third temple's monsters would definitely be the strongest. That meant that the beasts guarding the Gemini, Virgo, Sagittarius and Pisces Temples would be stronger compared to the other temples. Furthermore, from the recounts of the warriors who had come for the challenge through thousands of years, a frightening conclusion had been made: The beasts from the third temple, Gemini and the sixth temple, Virgo were said to be the most abnormal out of all...

In the past ten thousand years, no one had ever managed to clear these two temples!

Normal warriors wouldn't start challenging from the Aries Temple. Most of them would choose to start their challenge at the seventh temple, Libra or the tenth temple, Capricorn.

They knew that they wouldn't be able to finish the whole quest, but they still hoped to clear a few trials.

Hence, most warriors would avoid challenging the Gemini and Virgo Temples, these two abnormal Trials.

Through ten thousands of years, the highest record for the Twelve Zodiac Temples was an anonymous warrior who had

managed to clear nine Trials. This record became the limit of human capabilities, no other man managed to beat this record. This anonymous warrior had started at the seventh temple, Libra, and was finally defeated at the Gemini Temple.

He had left a few words: No one will be able to clear the Gemini Temple. It's definitely impossible!

Right now, Yue Yang's heart was filled with anticipation.

What kind of beast was it that had made that strong warrior who had held the record for ten thousand years say these words? What kind of strong beast was it actually, that no one in the past ten thousand years had managed to defeat it?

When Yue Yang entered the Gemini Temple, he realized that there wasn't a single beast in this place.

It was completely empty.

It was only after Yue Yang walked into the arena inside that was guarded by a BOSS that he realized the reason why the anonymous warrior had said that. When Yue Yang saw the beast guarding the temple, he couldn't help but to shout out loud, completely shocked, "Dammit, how can this be...? No wonder he said this Trial couldn't be cleared. Turns out it's really undefeatable! My God, this, how do I fight this thing?"

Chapter 202 – [X-ray Vision], Perverted Heart

Standing in front of Yue Yang, the Guardian of the Gemini Temple was beyond Yue Yang's expectations.

It wasn't any kind of beasts. Instead, it was Yue Yang's own shadow.

A shadow that was exactly the same as Yue Yang.

His appearance, height, abilities, and even movements and habits were all identical. Yue Yang felt like he was looking at the mirror. The only difference was that this shadow could use his combat skills, while Yue Yang's body was restricted by the limitations of the Ancient Code. Beside the shadow, there was Xiao Wen Li's shadow, and behind him, there were the Bloody Queen's, the Thorny Flower Demoness' and even Hui Tai Lang's shadows. At the back of Yue Yang's shadow's back, there was even the shadow of the sleeping Yue Bing!

No matter what kind of abilities that the warrior who entered this Gemini Temple had, this temple would create a shadow exactly like him.

Yue Yang summoned his grimoire and turned the little Golden Beast on his wrist into a dagger.

The shadow on the opposite side also did the same thing.

He was a complete copy. The only different thing was that Yue Yang couldn't personally participate in the battle, but the shadow on the opposite side had already taken out his Hui Jin Magic Blade, raising it up high.

It could be said that the more powerful Yue Yang's abilities were, the faster he would fail at this battle... If it were a useless nerd without any combat power at all that entered this Temple, maybe he would have a higher chance to clear the Gemini Temple.

The stronger the warrior, the faster he would fail at this Trial!

"Can you speak?" Yue Yang sensed that since the Gemini Temple had completely copied his abilities, if they fight head on, he would definitely lose. Yue Yang thought, if the shadow had completely copied his thoughts too, then he wouldn't want himself to lose in this battle since he wished to clear this Trial. However, his hope was wrong, because the shadow on the other side couldn't speak at all. He also didn't seem to have intelligence; he only had combat abilities. The shadow wore a golden mask that had a crying face on one side and a smiling face on the other, as he started to walk towards Yue Yang. The Bloody Queen's Shadow flew high up in the sky while the Thorny Flower Demoness' Shadow summoned countless clusters of flowers that started to take root on the ground. Hui Tai Lang's Shadow had also started to release its Qi as the strongest shadow, Xiao Wen Li's Shadow, followed behind Yue Yang closely, moving in a zigzag manner.

Yue Yang froze. This attacking move was a move that Xiao Wen Li and him had practiced for a long time before they develop

mutual understanding in battles.

Just now, at the Taurus Temple, they had put this move into use. He never thought that the shadow would be able to copy this move so easily.

The only thing that made Yue Yang felt lucky was that his Innate Level 1 Strength had not been copied by the shadow. As for the Invisible Innate Sword Qi, it seemed like the Ancient Law could not detect his skill and did not copy them too. It seemed like it wouldn't be possible for the Gemini Temple to copy them, otherwise he would lose this battle even more miserably. If the shadow had used [Nirvana's Flame] and [World Exterminating Wheel] the moment he attacked, Yue Yang wouldn't even need to fight at all.

Fortunately, the only thing that the Gemini Temple had copied was Yue Yang's superficial abilities. The only beasts that were copied were also only those that followed Yue Yang when he entered the temple, such as Xiao Wen Li and the others.

His other beasts such as the Spirit of Flame and Smoke that was still inside the Dimension of Duel, the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice and the Barbarian Cow Shadow were not copied too.

Seemed like these copies were directed towards beasts whose strength could be copied. However, this alone was already enough to make Yue Yang despair, because there was his own additional shadow who had could personally participate in combat...

Yue Yang also realized that the golden mask that the shadow had worn was a mysterious Artifact.

Even with his Level 4 [Divine Vision], Yue Yang still couldn't see through the golden mask's properties.

He could only feel that this golden mask was closely related to the copies... It was just like the golden bell that was hung on one of the Three-headed Chimera's head, the pure and holy Sheep-head, and the golden hoop that was hung on the White Bull's nose. This golden mask must also be a key to decide victory or defeat in this battle. If Yue Yang didn't manage to take control of this mask, he would definitely not be able to defeat the other side. He would then not be able to clear the Trial.

The problem was how could he snatch the golden mask away from his own shadow that possessed the same skills that he had?

The stronger he was, the stronger his opponent would be.

The strength of this shadow could be seen when he turned the little Golden Beast into a dagger just now. At first, the copy didn't have that, but when he did the action, the copy on the opposite side would also learn and had the same abilities.

Xiao Wen Li shook her head and turned into a rainbow light, floating into Yue Yang's body.

The figure of Xiao Wen Li's shadow on the other side trembled a

little. She didn't disappear, but it was obvious that her abilities were weakened by a whole lot. At the most, she would only have the strength of the White Bull that they had fought just now. Seeing that Xiao Wen Li's copy wasn't able to summon her Diamond Grimoire, Stone-Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and Thunder Naga, Yue Yang sighed in relief. The current situation was extremely dire, but Yue Yang had secretly thought of an idea... He would definitely not be able to win fighting the opponent head on. No matter how strong a person was, he would not be able to defeat himself so easily. Furthermore, in the situation where he himself couldn't personally participate in the combat, he would definitely not be able to win against himself.

Right now, Yue Yang felt that his only advantages were the fact that his hidden strength had not been copied, and that his opponent didn't have any intelligence, only combat abilities.

This Gemini Temple Trial, there must definitely be a way to clear it.

However, before finding the way, everyone could only return home empty-handed and dejected...

Taking advantage of the fact that his protective shield was still present, if he immediately charged towards the Right Hall and the Left Hall to find Artifacts, then go to the Back Hall and clear the Trial, would that be a good idea? Yue Yang thought about this. He then recalled all of his beasts, carried his sister and then flew like a flash towards the Left Hall. It was empty inside. There was only a line of words on the walls of the Left Hall: Truth becomes fiction when the fiction is true.

“What the heck? Did you guys think this is the imaginary world in the [Dream of the Red Chamber](#)? You still dare to say such words!” Yue Yang sweated profusely.

Taking advantage of the time, Yue Yang ran to the Right Hall.

At the Right Hall, there wasn't the second part of the quote from the Dream of the Red Chamber 'Real becomes not-real where the unreal's real' written on the wall. Instead, there was a painting of a giant mask that was half smiling and half crying.

Yue Yang wiped off his sweat. Fortunately it was not the second part of the quote, otherwise Yue Yang would think that the designer of the Twelve Zodiac Temples was a person from his world. It was only a giant mask painting of a half-smiling and half-crying face on the wall.

Seemed like this golden mask was the key to clearing the Trial, but how could he snatch it from his copy?

Yue Yang ran outside again and discovered that his copy was watching him running around leisuredly, sitting on one side. It seemed like he had no intention to attack Yue Yang at all.

With the complete protection of the protective shield and the key to clearing the trial safe on his face, he obviously didn't need to care about Yue Yang's futile efforts of running around the Temple. He had waited relaxedly in the middle of the Wrestling Ring as Yue Yang tire himself out. His eyes also looked like how Yue Yang

carried himself normally, an expression of a smile yet not a smile. Yue Yang was almost driven mad looking at the shadow's actions.

“Forget it, it's not a good time today to fight.” Yue Yang carried his sister and slipped away out from the Wrestling Ring.

The shadow didn't move at all, but Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen and Thorny Flower Demoness' Shadow immediately chased after Yue Yang.

When Yue Yang, who was carrying his sister, reached the teleportation circle and was about to teleport away, all the shadows suddenly disappeared into thin air. The golden mask quietly lied on the ground. With its half-crying and half-smiling face, it looked extremely out of this world...

In this ten thousand years, there was not a single person who succeeded in clearing the Gemini Temple.

This was because there had been no one who managed to defeat a shadow that had the same abilities as themselves, under the situation where they couldn't participate in the battle personally.

When Yue Yang came out from the Twelve Zodiac Temples, a few Silver-armoured Guards looked at him astonishedly. This was because they all knew that this brat had went in for a few hours. Strangely, he did not die, he had even carried his little sister out. This brat seemed to be the one who came and sleep through the whole Trial the previous time, a few guards could vaguely recognise him, but they couldn't be very sure.

The Gold-armoured Guard Leader had already known that Yue Yang was an extremely strong warrior who was just hiding his strength.

The previous Trial Clearing Rate that he recorded had almost made the Gold-armoured Guard Leader faint in shock last time. In this Gold-armoured Guard Leader's perspective, this brat had magically cleared a trial although he was weak and useless.

However, seeing that Yue Yang's face was not beaming with joy and his sister was sleeping on his back, it seemed like he had encountered some setbacks.

But the Gold-armoured Guard Leader couldn't be very sure.

"Did you encounter setbacks? Maybe you can gain more information if you go to the Warrior's Guild and find out more about the Trial. Your two companions have already left." The Gold-armoured Guard Leader was acting business-like on the outside, but as he brushed past Yue Yang, he whispered in a very soft voice, barely audible to Yue Yang alone. "Princess Qian Qian didn't want to wait, so she had gone back to rest. She said she will wait for you at Windchime Inn."

"Thanks." Yue Yang scampered off quickly, leaving the Twelve Zodiac Temple.

If he could participate in the battle himself in the Gemini Temple, Yue Yang would not leave so quickly. He would probably

try to clear it first.

But since he couldn't personally participate in the battle and the shadow copy also seemed to be very frightening, Yue Yang obviously chose the last strategy of the [Thirty-Six Stratagems](#): If everything else fails, retreat. He planned to ask Princess Qian Qian first, maybe the tigress would have a good idea.

Leaving the Star's Domain, Yue Yang returned to the Warrior's Guild.

After walking through various wide roads, walked over two stone bridges, and searching his map for a long time, Yue Yang finally found the Windchime Inn that was located in an isolated place, away from the rest of the city. However, there were quite a few people there. The place give off a feeling like the Chengde Mountain Resort or the Wenquan County. Although it was a little isolated, it looked beautiful with its pleasant country scene. Since people liked refined, beautiful landscape like this, guests naturally came to this inn unceasingly. Before Yue Yang even managed to enter, he was suddenly stopped by tall, burly guards... They said that this place was restricted to nobility or Rankers of Level 3 [Heroes] and above, people who could afford to stay here.

“I am Luo Hua City Mistress' Personal Bodyguard. I came here to visit Princess Qian Qian.” Although Yue Yang had stated his identity, the bodyguards still doubted him.

“There are quite a few beasts in the vicinity, please allow us to escort you to the Inn.” The Guard Leader seemed to be offering their services to escort him on the surface, but in reality, they were

afraid that Yue Yang was a fake. If Princess Qian Qian didn't recognize him, they had decided to immediately crush all of Yue Yang's bones and throw him out to the wild dogs.

"Up to you!" Yue Yang was too lazy to bother with these small fries, he immediately turned and walked forward.

The Guard Leader and two of his subordinates quickly followed.

The Windchime Inn was extremely big, unlike a normal resting lodge. Yue Yang didn't know if there were hot springs here, but there was definitely a lot of attractions around.

In front, there was a huge building. The Guard Leader gestured at Yue Yang to go to the reception... Who would know that before Yue Yang managed to enter the building, there was a maid wearing silk clothings bowing at him respectfully, "Welcome, honoured guest. May I enquire if you are the esteemed Yue Clan Third Young Master? Princess Qian Qian has been waiting for you for a long time, please follow this servant!"

She treated Yue Yang as if he was a VVIP guest. The Guard Leader standing behind Yue Yang started to sweat profusely.

Fortunately he didn't start beating Yue Yang on impulse, otherwise, he would really get into a big trouble.

Who would know that this youth who was wearing tattered clothes and carrying a sleeping girl on his back would be a friend of

the Princess?

“Yue Clan Third Young Master... Could it be that useless trash of the Yue Clan?” One of the guards asked in curiosity.

“Why would you care if he is a useless trash or a genius? Yue Clan members must not be provoked at all costs!” The Guard Leader humphed coldly. The main reason for him not beating Yue Yang up just now was because there was Hui Tai Lang beside Yue Yang. Although it wasn’t contracted, Hui Tai Lang who was pretending to be Bronze-ranked Level 3 was still scary enough to instill fear on many people. The guards were only Level 2 [Bravemen] after all, only the Guard Leader was a Level 3 [Hero].

Even if Hui Tai Lang was only Bronze-ranked Level 3, it would be able to easily bite off their bones.

※ ※ ※

The maid led Yue Yang to two luxurious residence that was connected in the middle, before bowing in respect and said, “This servant is of a low status, so I could only escort you to this point. If Third Young Master has any orders, please ring the summoning wind chime on the entrance!”

Maybe this was why this inn was called the Windchime Inn. Here, there were windchimes in every VIP guests room.

Yue Yang didn’t quite understand the array of the summoning

wind chime, so he just went and straight away open the doors to the garden and entered the residence.

He laid Yue Bing on the soft bed.

He then looked around and realized that Princess Qian Qian and his cousin Yue Yu were not present. However, their clothes and luggages were all in the next room. Yue Yang's hearing was extremely sharp, he heard the sound of water splashing on the bathroom next door. His heart jumped, could it be that the tigress was bathing? Her clothes were all here, proving that she was in this room. Hence, the one bathing must be her.

Yue Yang quickly searched around the two luxurious residences that were connected in the middle and realized that his cousin, Yue Yu, was also not present. Maybe she had gone out.

Chance, this was a chance bestowed to him by the heavens.

It was time to peek at spring time... Last time, he was dying to wait for his [Divine Vision] to level up. He only wanted an [X-ray Vision] ability, he only wanted to be able to peek in broad daylight like today!

(Shiro: uhh the author uses words like 'push down' and 'spring', you guys probably understand what those mean right?)

Hadn't the tigress pretended modesty last time, not allowing him to look at her body?

He would see her body no matter what!

Furthermore, he would be seeing it as much as he wanted, as clear as he wanted!

Yue Yang's perverted heart immediately started to ignite, his heartbeat increasing by 100 bpm as his blood boiled.

Princess Qian Qian's [Six Records] Inherent Skill was extremely sensitive, no matter where he hide to peek, she would definitely be able to discover him. However, what would happen if he hide outside, separated by a wooden door and used his newly found [X-ray Vision] skill that came from the combination of his Level 4 [Divine Vision] and [Traversing Naked Eye]?

Then she wouldn't be able to accuse him of peeping. He was doing a just and honorable action of admiring beauties!

Although it would be a waste of Innate Qi, in order to enjoy the most beautiful things on earth, all would be worth it!

Yue Yang started his Level 4 [Divine Vision] and [Traversing Naked Eye]. Innate Qi filled his eyes, and in the next moment, Yue Yang's eyes suddenly emitted a bright golden light. It was extremely radiant, making others unable to look at him clearly.

The wooden door that separated the bathroom and the living room rapidly turned transparent, finally turning so transparent that it was almost non-existent, not blocking anything anymore.

Yue Yang secretly gulped his saliva down and looked inside...What he saw was an extremely beautiful, perfect, flawless naked body, sprinkled with countless water drops, drenched with water as streams of water flowed down her skin. Those water drops sparkled like gems, setting off a beautiful contrast with her snow-white skin, making Yue Yang gasp in amazement.

The most beautiful scenery in the whole world could just be right here.

As he looked at her flawless back, his gaze travelled down to her slender waistline.

Further down, there were two soft, tender full moons. Those perfect arch and shape almost made Yue Yang flew to the sky in excitement, his heart beat increases by 300 bpm. His blood boiled to the top of his head, as heat pooled beneath his belly, spreading to the rest of his body...

Her long, slender, white legs attracted him endlessly. Her secret parts that was hidden from his view, especially, attracted both his body and soul.

He really wanted to immediately explore and probe those hidden territory, observing them in detail.

“No, this won’t do. This tigress is simply too alluring. I never thought that she would have such a beautiful body. Let’s just go all out now and push this tigress down first.” Yue Yang had actually thought of pushing down Luo Hua City Mistress first, because he

had a greater chance of pushing her down. As for Princess Qian Qian, he thought that it wouldn't be easy. Princess Qian Qian's character and temperament was unlike Luo Hua City Mistress. Of course, the girl that would be hardest to push down was the mysterious beauty. If it wasn't for the fact that he was saving Fourth Mother the other day and pulled down her mask, he wouldn't even see her face until now!

Yue Yang couldn't wait to push down Luo Hua City Mistress, he should just barge in and push this Princess Qian Qian, the tigress down first.

He wouldn't think if Jun Wu You would chase after him brandishing a huge sword in the future, he would just enjoy his blissful sexual life first!

And thus, Yue Yang who was not wearing any top immediately pulled down his pants. He was about to jump, kick the door open and pin Princess Qian Qian on the ground, then push her down...

Right at this moment, a sound suddenly appeared outside.

It was a person's stepping sound that almost couldn't be heard.

Yue Yang was still holding his pants. Before he even had the chance to throw it on the ground, he realized that someone was pushing the door open entered into the room.

At first, Yue Yang thought that the person who entered the room

would be his cousin Yue Yu. He immediately wore his pants back. When he saw who had entered, he was immediately stunned. The person who entered wasn't his cousin, it was Princess Qian Qian instead. The tigress was carrying a bottle that had a pink liquid inside, Yue Yang thought it might be perfume or body wash. However, that bottle was emitting an extremely sweet-smelling fragrance. Even though it was sealed with a cork, Yue Yang could still smell the fragrance.

Eh? It was Princess Qian Qian?

Then, who was bathing inside?

Could he be peeking at the wrong person? Was it his cousin Yue Yu inside...? When Yue Yang thought about this, he immediately sweated profusely!

“You big pervert! What are you doing in my room?” When Princess Qian Qian saw that Yue Yang was even taking off his pants and was almost naked, she was extremely shocked. Furthermore, although it was covered by clothes, some part of him was standing up dignifiedly, as if ready to turn into a mighty dragon and break out of his constraints. Princess Qian Qian couldn't help but be embarrassed and shouted loudly, “Get out now!”

“Who's outside? Is it Qian Qian?” Indeed, Yue Yu's voice resounded from inside, as she asked with a doubtful tone and turned off her shower.

“It's me. It's nothing, continue your bath. I went to the Warrior's

Guild to get the Beautiful Demonic Flower Perfume that Luo Hua sent to you just now.” Yue Yang didn’t know what Princess Qian Qian’s motives were for keeping his presence a secret.

But Yue Yang couldn’t escape, because Princess Qian Qian was glaring at him with her tigress eyes.

That expression, seems like if Yue Yang didn’t give her a proper and logical explanation, she would make Yue Yang feel the power of her sharp white teeth.

Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders and spread his arms, pretended to be relaxed as he shook his head and replied with a very low voice, “I didn’t know there was someone inside, I just wanted to take a bath! Fortunately you came back. Tigress, if you keep looking at me like that, I will shout ‘Sexual harassment!’, you know...”

“Go on, shout! Shout it as loud as you can!” Princess Qian Qian then suddenly increased the volume of her voice, speaking towards the bathroom, “Sister Yu, Yue Yang that brat has returned!”

“...” Yue Yang was so scared that his heart almost exploded, but fortunately Yue Yu didn’t peek out of the door. Otherwise, she would probably see a scene that resembled something like a naked man caught in an adultery act. With Yue Yang’s abilities, Princess Qian Qian wouldn’t be able to hold him back so easily, but just as Yue Yang was about to teleport away, Princess Qian Qian said something that immediately made Yue Yang raise up his hands in surrender.

Princess Qian Qian had said, “If you dare to leave, I’ll report this to Fourth Mother and Yue Bing!”

How could Yue Yang not surrender?

He miserably reached out his arms and placed his hands both on Princess Qian Qian’s shoulders, nodding very seriously, “Your Highness, I know you have been wanting to push me down for a long time. However, can I just request that after we finish doing H, could you give me some money to feed our kids...”

When he said this, Princess Qian Qian glared at him for a full 3 minutes, as if she was seeing some kind of freak.

Yue Yang thought that he had succeeded shocking this tigress to the core and was feeling very satisfied in his heart!

Who would know that when Princess Qian Qian reacted, she would display such a vigorous action instead, making Yue Yang shout happily in pain...

Chapter 203 – Biting And Pinching

Princess Qian Qian moved in closer, moistening her cherry lips, looking as if she wanted to kiss Yue Yang.

At that moment, Yue Yang was very excited. He thought, could it be that this tigress wanted to push him down? Looking at her as she slowly shifted downwards, Yue Yang's heart was wildly beating. Could it be that she wanted to do 'that' to him? Did she really want to give him a 'love bite'... ... Princess Qian Qian parted her cherry lips slightly, her pink tongue as smooth as velvet, as her lips moved closer to Yue Yang's chest. It looked like she wanted to kiss him downwards to pleasure Yue Yang.

Oh god, as expected, this tigress really liked to take the initiative in pushing him down!

Yue Yang was excited. He felt that he should give a chance for her to take initiative. In any case, even when she had pushed him down first, he could regain the upper hand later in the game. At that time, it would not matter who was on top or below, it would still be a mutual pleasure!

Unfortunately, she had instead bared her little white teeth and ruthlessly bite on Yue Yang's chest, causing Yue Yang to yell in pain.

"Is that Xiao San? What happened? You two, stop fighting!" Yue Yu could faintly hear the commotion outside. Thinking that Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian were having a lovers' quarrel, she

hurriedly used her towel to wipe herself, preparing to come out to mediate the fight.

“We’re fine!” Yue Yang hurriedly answered. He wanted to grab Princess Qian Qian and then throw her out of the house ruthlessly. But at this moment, her offense strategy suddenly changed.

Her white teeth no longer bit him. Instead, her little pink tongue gently licked his wound, kissing it lightly.

It was as tender as possible, and she even blew lightly across the wound in the end, like a lovable little wife.

Even though it was painful for Yue Yang, once he saw this girl displaying such tenderness, he slowly lowered his raised hand as she had made him feel so much sizzling pleasure that he could not bear to throw her out. However, when Yue Yang was prepared to forgive her, Princess Qian Qian’s hand immediately pinched his butt with much force, forcing him to yet again jump and yell in pain.

Yue Yang only understood now.

This girl was not making ‘love bites’; she was really biting with all her might. She had even used her tiger claws to pinch his butt. She was really a classic violent girl, he really could not handle her.

Of course, Yue Yang was also someone to be reckoned with.

He was extremely retaliant, and he would definitely exact his revenge a hundred fold whenever he suffered a setback. Hence, Yue Yang prepared to pin this girl to the ground, tear off all her clothes, and then bite harshly onto her breasts a hundred times, and lick it a hundred times. As for pinching butts, of course he would pinch her butt at least a hundred times too... Princess Qian Qian wanted to escape, but Yue Yang ferociously tightened his grip on this little alluring woman who drove him mad, and then pinned her stubbornly onto the ground. He raised his wolfish claws, preparing to put to use his ‘Thirty-Six Clothes-Removing Moves’.

Some noises escaped from the wooden door. It seemed that Yue Yu was about to come out.

At this moment, not only Yue Yang, even the struggling Princess Qian Qian immediately leaped up.

Smiles appeared on their faces at the same time, as they clasped each other’s hands tightly.

Princess Qian Qian smiled as if she were a tigress pretending to be a little fox. “So it turns out that our Yue Yang has returned. Welcome! I am not sure how the situation was when you cleared the trial of the Twelve Zodiac Temples? Did you clear it without a hitch?”

Yue Yang’s actions were even faster than Princess Qian Qian. As he leaped up, he had even managed to re-adorn his long trousers at the same time.

He similarly faked a smile. “Thank you Your Highness for your concern. Yue Bing and I have successfully cleared one trial. Clearing trials are nothing, really...” Lowering his voice, he then whispered in Princess Qian Qian’s ears. “Tigress, I will not be a man if I don’t take revenge. If I don’t exact revenge on you, I will not be called Yue Yang, just you wait! Let me tell you, tigress, if you remove all your clothes later, and surrender on your own accord, I would still consider torturing you a little less. Otherwise, I’ll defile you first and then kill you, and defile you again and kill you!”

On hearing this, Princess Qian Qian smiled like a fox spirit.

Similarly, she whispered back, “Are you trying to threaten me? Not so easy, brat, if you have the balls, come and do it now!” After that, she raised her voice, at a volume where Yue Yu could also hear. “Congratulations, Yue Yang. It has been many years since anybody could successfully clear the trials of the Twelve Zodiac Temples. You are really worthy of being called the Pervert of all Perverts, ahh I mean, you really are worthy of being called a hero amongst the youths!”

Yue Yu knew that these two people were a little like sworn enemies, clashing with each other every time they saw each other.

Even though a blind person could tell that these two people harbour feelings towards each other, their personalities and tempers got in the way. Currently, they were still in the situation of being at total odds with each other like sworn enemies.

Yue Yu had actually not finished wearing her clothes, and her

body was wrapped in a white bath towel. But she was so worried that Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian would start fighting, so she hurriedly opened her door and stuck out her head to take a look.

Upon seeing that the two were holding hands and smiling instead, she was immediately pleased. “It’s good that you guys are all right. Sit down for a while, I’ll come out soon. Just now I have cooled some pickled plum juice. It’s in the cupboard, you guys can drink it first!”

Reassured, she closed the bathroom door to wear her clothes.

Outside, Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian immediately turned against each other and made their moves.

This time, the amount of strength they used was almost equal. They could not push each other down and both of them fell onto the ground.

Yue Yang had used more strength on her hands, but Princess Qian Qian had a flexible and supple body. She made up with the lack of strength in her hands by adding a leg, using her long legs to hook and pin down Yue Yang’s right arm, both of her hands locking Yue Yang’s left arm in place. Her entire body twined around Yue Yang, removing any opportunity for him to use his strength. Both of them were in a very compromising situation, but none of them realised this, as they were too preoccupied with trying to win against each other.

“Surrender now, otherwise I am going to use my finishing

move!” Yue Yang felt that there was a need to let this girl see who she was dealing with, and let her understand what was called male dominance.

“Absolutely not!” Princess Qian Qian’s response was stubbornly against surrendering. She knew that Yue Yang did not dare to use too much strength and wanted to use it against him. The commotion made by full-blown wrestling and shouting could not be easily explained if they were heard by Yue Yu, hence he could only use his strength silently. On the other hand, she herself had the support of her beast. Even if she did not use her full strength, she could still resist Yue Yang to an extent for now.

“You are courting death...” Yue Yang would never really fight her, so he directly put his ‘Thirty-Six Clothes-Removing Moves’ to use.

He could not remember, but some pervert had once said the wise words of ‘Any difficult woman would not be able to defeat a guy once her clothes were taken off’.

This girl was a tigress and was hard to tame.

But as long as he stripped her naked, she would definitely turn into a lovable and cute little lamb.

Suddenly, soft steps sounded from outside the room, followed by the voice of Yue Bing calling for her brother. In one second, Yue Yang immediately transformed from a mighty pervert to a good older brother. He released Princess Qian Qian, leaping up to

answer her. “Bing-er, we’re fine, we have already returned.”

Princess Qian Qian hurriedly tidied up her clothes, afraid that Yue Bing would misunderstand her if she saw that she was dressed messily.

She even threw a meaningful glance at Yue Yang, asking him to help to see if there’s anything out of the ordinary with how she looked.

Yue Yang matter-of-factly extended his hand and helped her to straighten her collar.

Then, with lightning-fast speed, he grabbed and pinched those erect breasts hard, causing so much pain to Princess Qian Qian that tears almost flowed out of her eyes. Yue Bing then came into the room and was pleasantly surprised at the luxurious chambers, not noticing Princess Qian Qian who was covering her chest as she clicked her tongue in admiration. “Where is this? This room is too beautiful, it’s decorated as if it is a palace”

“This room is rented by Her Highness the Princess, of course it won’t be bad. There’s even some iced pickled plum soup in the cupboard, I’ll pour some out for you!” Yue Yang was too pleased with himself. He had launched a surprise attack on the tigress successfully, and even rendered her speechless, unable to say a thing about it. It would most likely become something she would never forget. Even if they became an old couple in the future, she would probably not forget this day. But it was her own fault for biting, pinching him and be so arrogant about it... Yue Yang faced Princess Qian Qian’s death glare head-on leisuredly, whistling as if

nothing had happened, and running to the cupboard to take out a large pot of iced pickled plum soup.

Princess Qian Qian was furious. She almost wanted to kick this fellow up and beyond the farthest clouds.

What a petty fellow, she only gently bit him once, and did not even bear to use any force. Yet, he pinched her so hard, so much that that place felt so tender and delicate now. She almost fainted in pain.

She had trusted him. Who would think that this fellow... If she had known, she would have bitten a piece of flesh from his chest, and let him die in pain.

What made Princess Qian Qian most frustrated was that Yue Bing had arrived.

She was too embarrassed to massage her breasts in front of Yue Bing, hence she could only repress and endure her pain.

Princess Qian Qian wanted to empty the entire bowl of pickled plum soup onto his face, but on the surface she looked as if nothing had happened. When she bent her back to pick up the bowl, she whispered back to him. “You big pervert, I am not done with you!” She saw Yue Bing who had just finished washing her face with water turn back, and immediately put on a smile on her face. “Bing-er, tell me about all the battles you encountered in clearing the trial, have you not already successfully cleared them? Come, sit beside me!”

Yue Bing took the little bowl happily, and sat on the other side of Princess Qian Qian, nodding. “It’s all thanks to Brother’s effort, I could have never defeated them myself. Why don’t you ask Brother, I fainted due to the large blast, so I am not too sure about what happened after that.”

From the bathroom, Yue Yu had changed into a new set of clothes. Carrying the fragrance that one would have after bathing, she sat across Yue Yang. “Xiao San , quick, tell us, how did you manage to clear the trials?”

Smelling the fragrance that Yue Yu carried produced some sort of reaction within Yue Yang’s heart, it suddenly jolted slightly.

This fragrance seemed to be a little familiar.

Even though it was not really identical, but there was a type of fragrance that was extremely similar On all of the girls’ bodies, including Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, the mysterious beauty, there was that type of mysterious strongly fragrant smell. Last time, Yue Yang did not notice this, because it was normal for girls to smell nice, and they also liked to spray a little perfume on themselves, or bring around a scented purse. But when time passed, Yue Yang then realised that no matter how different it was, there was an identical fragrance on their bodies.

It was not too obvious normally, but since Yue Yu had just finished bathing, the fragrance that radiated from her was exceptionally obvious.

Could it be that this was the legendary ‘virgin scent’?

This was not what made Yue Yang most surprised. What was most unbelievable to Yue Yang was that even Phoenix Fairy, whom he previously had two intimate experiences with, also had this type of fragrance on her body She was a lustful Sky Demon who had sucked countless men dry. She, who was deemed as a Ten Thousand Beheader, how was it possible But if this sort of fragrance was not ‘virgin scent’, why didn’t normal matrons have it?

Yue Yang could not verify this, but he made a note in his heart. He must clarify this, there were still many mysteries surrounding the Phoenix Fairy.

“Everybody is talking to you!” Princess Qian Qian realised that this fellow was daydreaming, and hit him on his head with her fist.

“Ah Nothing, I am thinking about Gemini Temple’s Shadow Duplicate.” Of course, Yue Yang could not say that after he smelt his cousin’s scent, it had led him to suspect that the Phoenix Fairy was a virgin, so he hurriedly steered himself back to the topic at hand. “We’ve already cleared Taurus Palace, but we have yet to clear Gemini Temple. It’s a good time for you guys to help think of strategies. The battle process went like this”

“You have successfully cleared Aries and Taurus Temple?” Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu were extremely surprised. Let alone them, even Yue Bing also did not know that Yue Yang had

challenged and successfully cleared Aries Palace alone.

“Those are history. Now my problem is how I am supposed to clear Gemini Temple.” Yue Yang would rather challenge ten White Bulls than challenge the Shadow Duplicate.

As for Yue Yang’s successful clearance, Princess Qian Qian really wanted to yell at Yue Yang for his abnormalness.

Of course, when it came to proper business, she did not cause trouble for Yue Yang.

She knitted her brows together and nodded lightly. “Gemini and Virgo Temples are the toughest Temples. Gemini Temple duplicates the challenger’s abilities entirely. No matter what abilities the challenger has, the Shadow Duplicate will similarly gain them too. You don’t know what the most terrifying attribute of Gemini Temple is. The Shadow who wears a Golden Gemini Mask is immortal. Even if you kill it a hundred times, it would still continue to respawn and continue to maintain the same amount of strength as the challenger ... Hence, fighting head to head would not result in success in clearing Gemini Temple. Your decision to take the initiative to withdraw was a correct one. It is hard to clear Gemini Temple, normal Rankers would avoid it and are not willing to challenge it. If you want to clear it, you would have to think of a way to conquer it. I can say definitively that there must be a way to clear the Temple, it’s just that as of now, we can’t find it yet.”

“I have heard of a method. Even though there’s no known case of success, but it would perhaps serve as a reference for you, Xiao San.” Yue Yu’s words immediately made Yue Yang’s eyes light up.

“Say it, Sister Yu.” Yue Bing wholeheartedly hoped that her brother would successfully clear all the Temples and become the only Ranker in the entirety of history to successfully clear all the Palaces.

As long as he could successfully clear both Gemini Temple and Virgo Temple, she believed that Brother would definitely clear the rest of the eight palaces.

The chance to scale to the pinnacle and to surpass the ten thousand years of history was just right in front of him.

Yue Bing believed that Brother was the person with the highest chance of clearing the Trials. The only regret was that Brother’s abilities were too powerful. Hence, challenging Gemini Temple became an even more arduous task.

If it was herself as the challenger, perhaps the level of difficulty would not be as hard as her Brother’s ... But unfortunately, she could not help Brother! In her heart, the silently anxious Yue Bing was extremely overjoyed on hearing that Yue Yu had good news for them.

Yue Yu smiled serenely, indicating to Yue Yang and Yue Bing not to be too impatient. Her voice was tender as she told them a story. “Last time, my mentor’s mentor’s mentor was a Curing-type Doctor. She did not have any fighting abilities, and she went to challenge Gemini Temple. Her Shadow hence also did not have any fighting abilities. Also, before she stepped into Gemini Temple, she

thought of a way, and that is to beat herself up extremely severely before crawling into the palace Her Shadow Duplicate was also injured so severely that it fell to the ground and could not stop. Merely with her determination and will, she crawled into the wrestling ring and obtained the Golden Mask. But when she arrived at the Rear Hall, and was about to succeed, she realised there was still a Strengthening-type Beast She was unable to take up the challenge, and she was compelled to summon her Grimoire, heal herself, and escape from the Temple! Even though she failed, she had been the one closest to succeeding ”

After thinking for a while, Yue Yang asked. “What is the Strengthening-type Beast at the Rear Hall of Gemini Temple?”

Princess Qian Qian and Yue Bing also looked at Yue Yu, they also wanted to know the truth.

Faced with the inquisitive gazes of all, Yue Yu lightly shook her hand. “I don’t know either. My mentor did not say it, I asked about this then, but she didn’t say.”

“Then find your mentor and ask her.” Even though Princess Qian Qian hated this fellow Yue Yang to the core, and was always thinking of biting him to death, but whenever it came to him, she still cared about any issues that he had, especially those relating to his future.

“Is that good? Maybe my Mentor has some hidden troubles that she cannot mention, maybe she doesn’t know it either. Otherwise, when I asked her then, she would have answered me, and not kept silent.” Yue Yu respected her elders more, but when she saw the

determination in Princess Qian Qian's eyes and the thirsty expression on Yue Bing's face, her heart softened. She looked at Yue Yang who was still thinking hard, and nodded lightly. "Alright. But if Mentor does not want to say it, we cannot force her too, because then, Mentor had warned me repeatedly that it was imperative that I do not tell any outsiders!"

"Let's go!" Princess Qian Qian saw that Yue Yang was still thinking, so she pulled him up with one hand. "What can just thinking do, we'll first ask about the situation, you can think more about it when we come back!"

Chapter 204 – Living In Happiness Without Appreciating It

Yue Yang and the others returned to Shang Jing.

Yue Yu's mentor lived in a quiet small villa in Shang Jing Academy.

She was an old woman with hair as white as snow. She wore her clothes plainly and simply, and she seemed calm and gentle.

Seeing that Yue Yu had come, she slowly nodded her head as a kind of loving glow appeared on her eyes. She gestured for everyone to sit down and said softly, "Princess Qian Qian and the others, please sit down. Yu-er, didn't you go to Tong Tian Tower with the Princess?"

"Master, this is my third oldest cousin. He wanted to understand more about how Great Grand-master had challenged the Gemini Temple back then..." Yue Yu sat down near the old woman and held her hands.

"Yu-er's third oldest cousin? Ah, good boy, sit down, you don't have to be so polite!" The old woman measured Yue Yang seriously as she nodded: "You are completely different from the rumours. You understand how to hide your abilities even though you are still very young. Commendable! Yu-er, why did you bring up such an old story?" Yue Yu immediately answered, "My cousin wanted

to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples. He has cleared the Aries and Taurus Temples, but he is stuck with the Gemini Temple. I told him about how Great Grand-master has challenged the trial before, hoping to give him some inspiration. In the end, Princess Qian Qian felt that it would be best if we come over and asked you in person... If Great Grand-master has especially stipulated not to tell outsiders about her experience, then we will stop asking you.”

“Cleared the Aries and Taurus Temples?” The old woman’s body shook when she heard that and started to measure Yue Yang up and down again, “It’s been a long time since such an outstanding youth appeared in Da Xia Empire, what a good news!” Speaking of clearing the Gemini Temple, actually, Master did not specify that it was to be kept a secret. Sure, I will tell you guys about it!”

“Thank you, master!” Yue Yu happily held the old woman’s hands up, holding them to her lips.

She was very close with the old woman, almost as close as a mother and a daughter.

If it wasn’t for their student-master identity and the fact that the difference between their age was too big, other people would have really mistaken them for a mother and daughter.

The Xie Clan was extremely respectful to the Yue Clan when they were still growing. The Xie Clan master, Xie Tao, had also always flattering and licking Yue Shan’s boots.

Afterwards, there were two members of the Xie Clan who

managed to climb onto Level 7 [Overlord]. One was called Xue Nu, who was also known as “Thousand Miles Killer” while the other was called Xue Tu, also known as the “Exterminator”. This caused the Xie Clan to rise greatly in power. Furthermore, they had the backing of one of the Four Great Clans, the Yan Clan. Hence, they gained even more power.

If it weren't for the fact that they did not have a solid foundation and recognition by the common folks, they would have become one of the Five Great Clans.

There were even more geniuses emerging from the Xie Clan currently, for example, the pitiful guy's rival in love, Xie Qian Ren. He was one of the brightest younger generation, and he was extremely famous, almost as famous as Yue Tian, Yue Yan and the others. His abilities were only below the Three Great Killing Stars, Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang. Xie Tao, who had previously sucked up to Yue Shan, the Yue Clan substitute Clan Master before, had become more and more arrogant each day, especially after he became Blade Mountain City Master.

(Shiro: Just to let you guys now... Feng – Wind, Yan – fire, Xue – snow, Xie – blood)

There was one time they had business with the Yue Clan. After selling the goods to the Yue Clan and receiving the money, they had ordered some Clan members to disguise themselves as robbers and stole the goods back, selling them to the others.

This attack had caused a great loss to Yue Clan's wealth.

It was also the start of the grudge between the two Clans.

Xie Clan continued to deny the accusation. Even when Jun Wu You, the emperor, asked them about the matter angrily, they were still unyielding as they had backing. Finally, the Yue Clan could only give up and suffered quietly as they could not find any evidences. As the Yue and Xie Clan fall out, they discontinued any communication between both parties. Although the marriage arrangement between Yue Yu and the oldest son of the Xie Clan, Xie Qian Qiu had not been rescinded, even a blind person could see that the two clan's attempt at marriage relations had completely failed.

Yue Clan didn't have an excuse to rescind the marriage, and the Xie Clan was deliberately trying to step on the second daughter of Yue Clan, stubbornly refusing to rescind the marriage.

Not only that, the Xie Clan had even urged Yue Yu to quit school early so that she may marry into the family quickly.

In reality, Xie Qian Qiu had already married the daughter of Lie Clan. He already had a wife and concubines, and at the same time, he was also the most notorious playboy of Shang Jing Academy.

The playboy Xie Qian Qiu was notorious for always dallying with beautiful girl, he was even dubbed as the 'School Flower Killer'.

He was extremely different from Yan Po Jun, who was a serious man. A lot of girls had thrown themselves into Yan Po Jun alike, but his reputation was still not bad. At least, he would not be like

Xie Qian Qiu who strutted around announcing publicly that he had completed the “Thousand Girls Feast”.

Yue Yu’s mother was not the legal wife and had passed away early. The legal wife’s treatment to Yue Yu was also borderline, she did not shower her with love nor be cold and indifferent towards her.

In front of others, she would even pretend that she cared about her daughter.

Towards Yue Yu’s marriage, she only agreed. In any case, the Yue Clan could not find a good excuse to rescind their marriage.

Yue Yang didn’t quite understand Yue Yu’s problem before, but after he went to Ivy Academy and the Despair Abyss, Yue Bing had told him her story. Only then did he realize that this gentle, warm and refined older cousin of his had such a tragic destiny...

“Yu-er, sit down!” The old woman caressed Yue Yu’s face lovingly as she sighed, “That time, the matter about the elders challenging the Trial has brought much embarrassment to our sect as they had been completely cheated and deceived. Hence, we, the younger generation, didn’t talk about it much. Inside the Gemini Temple, all the challengers who managed to take off the Golden Mask had met a second shadow at the Rear Hall afterwards. The second shadow was the complete opposite of the first shadow. Not only will it have an opposite sex, its power will also be fixed at Gold-ranked Level 6. It wouldn’t be like the first shadow who changed their abilities according to the body of the challenger.”

“Did you mean that the second shadow that a boy would meet would be a girl shadow? And that a girl would meet a male shadow?” Yue Yang froze when he heard her explanation.

“Yes. As Grand-master had entered the trial with heavy injuries, her fiancé and family had even thought that she had been humiliated by the shadow inside. Hence, they rescinded their marriage arrangement. Master had pleaded for her innocence and even asked the Empress at that time to investigate and clear her name. However, until the end, she still couldn’t get her lover’s heart back. She finally committed suicide to prove her innocence. The Gemini Temple’s shadow was only imaginary, so it wouldn’t humiliate the challengers. In order to investigate the truth, my Master had tried different kinds of ways to enter the trial and finally, she proved that no matter what, the second shadow copy’s body would never do something to humiliate the challenger. My pitiful Grand-master couldn’t prove her innocence till the end. It was all because her fiancé was trying to seek for power through marriage relations and decided to marry the Left Minister’s daughter, thus he used Grand-master’s innocence as an excuse. The second shadow and the first shadow are twins, but the second shadow is the true Guardian of the temple. The second shadow would also not...”

The old woman’s story had caused Yue Bing and Princess Qian Qian to sob.

Being able to think that that Grand-master’s chastity had been sullied because she challenged the Trial, that Grand-master’s fiancé’s way of thinking was really exaggerated and malicious.

That Grand-master had really chosen the wrong fiancée.

Princess Qian Qian was extremely regretful towards this matter. She felt that she must not choose the wrong partner no matter what. She didn't want to have a tragic ending like that Grand-master.

She turned and looked at Yue Yang.

She felt that although this brat was a playboy, had a mind full of perverted thoughts and always thinking of pushing girls down, he was still outstanding in different aspects. First of all, he cared about his family. No matter if it was Fourth Mother's or Yue Bing's matter, he was always the first to come to their rescue. If he married a girl, she believed that he would also be a caring and loving husband to his wife. Secondly, he had morals and was also honest, he wouldn't say anything hypocritical.

As for the other aspects such as combat abilities, he was even more outstanding, one in a million.

Although she didn't want to admit that this brat was really outstanding, compared to other guys, this brat was still quite a good choice.

His only problem was his fickle heart. This brat's was a big pervert by nature, falling in love with beautiful girls the moment he saw them. Furthermore, he had a strong desire to possess them all. Fortunately she didn't have any boy friends, otherwise this

brat would probably kill that unlucky guy out of jealousy.

Learning from Yue Yu's Great Grand-master's story, Princess Qian Qian decided that she would consider it more carefully first. It concerned her future anyway.

If she chose wrongly in a marriage, that would be the end.

Could the Prince of Zhi Jin that had asked for her hand in marriage be better than Yue Yang?

Could that young Sect Leader of the Floating Mist Sect that she had never seen before be more outstanding than the big pervert Yue Yang? Her father did not want her to marry for a political reason, that was her fortune. Hence, she really must consider it carefully. She shouldn't let a moment of rashness destroy her whole life.

Yue Yang didn't know, but Princess Qian Qian was carefully comparing him to all the guys he knew secretly in her heart.

Yue Yang was deep in thought, thinking about an important question.

The first shadow copy, why would it wore the Golden Mask? Why would the second shadow appear after the Golden Mask was taken off? What would happen if he took that Golden Mask and bring it out of the Gemini Temple?

“This is my master’s diary when she challenged the trial last time. I’ll give it to you for your review!” The old woman gave Yue Yang a diary containing detailed materials and resources about the Gemini Temple. It even had various illustrations.

Yue Yang was overjoyed. After they say goodbye to the old woman, he couldn’t wait and impatiently read through the diary quickly.

Seeing that Yue Yang was too obsessed with the trial, Princess Qian Qian couldn’t help but to punch him lightly.

Yue Yang waved his hands, “Shoo, you can read it after I finished reading. I’ll sue you for sexual harassment if you touch me again...” Princess Qian Qian had gotten used to his words, but Yue Yu and Yue Bing was there. Princess Qian Qian felt really awkward and blushed, as she gave Yue Yang another light punch. Yue Yang was thoroughly confused. What’s wrong with this girl? Had she become addicted to punching others? As he prepared to punch her back, Yue Yu hurriedly hold his hands and said, “Don’t be angry, it’s a good thing that she is hitting you!”

“What?” Yue Yang was even more confused. How could it be a good thing that she is hitting him?

“If it were others, she wouldn’t beat them. Hehe, alright, you should stop reading your book. We are all very hungry, how about we find a place to eat?” Yue Yu realized that Princess Qian Qian had a kind of different look when she look at Yue Yang. There was a mysterious glow, or maybe, the light that had already existed in her heart before had grown even brighter. Yue Yu thought that it

was perhaps because of her Great Grand-master's story that Princess Qian Qian made some kind of decision that she had not made before.

With a woman's sixth sense, she obviously felt happy for her brother.

She was happy, but she also felt that her cousin was an idiot. Girls are usually more reserved than guys. If it weren't for the fact that Princess Qian Qian had feelings for him, why would she act like a spoiled kid around him?

Furthermore, her punch was so light and gentle, it couldn't even kill a mosquito. How was this beating people up? It was practically a pleasure...

This idiot cousin, he really was living in happiness without appreciating it!

Yue Yu was afraid that Princess Qian Qian wouldn't clarify it clearly because she was shy, so she could only stop Yue Yang who was about to punch her back. Let alone Yue Yu, even Yue Bing who didn't understand love at all could see that Princess Qian Qian had feelings for her brother. She was secretly laughing at this point of time, laughing at her brother's idiocy. He had mistaken Big Sister Yi Nan as a guy, and had even thought that Princess Qian Qian was beating him up now. She thought that her brother had been cooped up in his room for far too long that he didn't understand a girl's heart at all.

Rightfully speaking, Yue Yang indeed liked to coop up in his room as an otaku, but he was definitely not an idiot.

He was only pretending to be one.

Princess Qian Qian, the tigress, he would definitely not let her feelings towards him slip away. But right now, he would only tease her around and play all sorts of tricks on her. It wouldn't be too late if he could find a good opportunity to push her down in the future...

“Aih, isn't this my future wife? I heard that my wifey is so pure and spotless that even I, her rightful fiancé can't even touch her a little bit, as if you are made of pure gold. Now, why are you pulling a guy's hands so aggressively? Even if you guys want to do it, don't do it in front of me. In any case, I am still your fiancé, you know? If I had known earlier that you are a hypocritical slut, I would have left you to die without mercy. Fancy that I thought you were still a virgin, it turns out that you are expired goods...”

A strange, loud voice resounded from a pathway as a guy strutted forward.

Notes:

Great Grand-master – the old woman's master's master

Grand-master – the old woman's master

Master – the old woman

Disciple – Yue Yu

Chapter 205 – Stomp The Bird, Burst The Balls And Let's Start To Roast!

Yue Yang turned around and saw a tall lanky man wearing a long white robe.

He looked extremely arrogant. His looks could forcibly pass as handsome, but he looked pale, as if he had drunk too much wine. Yue Yang saw that this person's face looked as cunning as a fox, he had eyes small as slits, thin lips and crooked nose. It was enough that he kept a long hair draped over his shoulders, but he had to plait them into small braids in both of his ears, making him look weird and flirtatious. However, even with such an inappropriate appearance as a student, this fellow was still as confident as king.

Princess Qian Qian scowled angrily. She had wanted to glare this arrogant and foul-spoken fellow to death.

However, she turned around and looked at Yue Yang. She then decided that she would give the opportunity for him.

She should allow her man to solve domestic problems!

Previously, she had listened to her father. Right now, she would just listen to this brat and leave matters to him...

She pulled Yue Bing slightly and gestured to leave matters to Yue Yang, they should just wait and watch the show. At first, Princess Qian Qian was a little worried if that idiot fellow would recognize

her and ran away in fear. Who would know that she was actually thinking too much. That vulgar guy (official nickname) measured the three girls up and down, completely not recognizing Princess Qian Qian, who was not carrying any sword on her back or wearing her silver armour. She was merely a warrior who was wearing leather armour. The vulgar guy didn't pay Princess Qian Qian a lot of attention, he only thought that she was a heroic, beautiful looking woman. He didn't recognise her as a Ranker.

In the end, the vulgar guy saw Hui Tai Lang, who was standing behind Yue Yang.

Yue Yang reckoned that the reason this idiot was looking at Hui Tai Lang was because he thought Hui Tai Lang was a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Ironbacked Demon Wolf...

"It's you?" Yue Yu recognised whom the vulgar guy was, her snow-white face was immediately masked with coldness. She humphed, "Xie Qian Qiu, although speaking bullshit is your forte, could you please not show off so much? Also, have your eyes gone blind or have you placed them on your butt instead? When did you ever see me flirting and getting touchy-feely with guys?"

"I saw it with my own eyes. Slut, you are still flirting and getting touchy-feely in front of me even now. Does he only have that Bronze-ranked Level 3 trash of a dog? Do you think I don't have such a beast? My Golden-eyed King Ape is already Bronze-ranked Level 4, my Ox-head warrior is also Bronze-ranked Level 4. I am so awesome, yet I don't parade myself around the town. Why are you even showcasing your trash of a dog! Yue Yu, you whore, you think you can be rude to me just because you found a pretty boy? You

want to break our engagement? Dream on!” The tall and thin guy called Xie Qian Qiu laughed evilly.

However, no matter how arrogant he was, he didn’t dare to make any assumptions.

The moment he saw Hui Tai Lang howling, he immediately took out a red crystal and summoned a strengthening-type Gorilla.

Red light flashed as the Gorilla merged with his body. His originally thin body immediately bulged out with muscles as he turned into a 2-metres-tall, hulk-like guy. His top had torn apart and shred to pieces due to his bulging muscles. His smooth, white skin had also slowly turned Gorilla-like as thick hairs started to grow on his body.

The Xie Qian Qiu who had increased combat skills due to the strengthening from his Bronze-ranked Level 4 Golden-eyed King Ape looked incomparably aggressive.

Afterwards, he had even summoned his other Bronze-ranked level 4 Ox-head Warrior, pleased with himself. He seemed to want to scare Yue Yang to death, unbridledly showing off his abilities.

He pointed at Yue Yang as he arrogantly humphed, “Pretty boy, kneel before ME at once, and lick my toes!”

Yue Yu thought that Yue Yang would probably be able to kill this idiot with one move if he really attacked him.

Although she hated Xie Qian Qiu, she didn't want Yue Yang to become sworn enemies with the Xie Clan because of her. She hurriedly shouted, "How shameless you are, Xie Qian Qiu! Who do you think you are? How dare you act so arrogantly? Scram, stop getting all crazy here. This is not your Xie Clan's Courtyard, so stop showing off here!"

Xie Qian Qiu was immediately angered when he heard this, "Bitch, don't even think that you can pretend to be a virtuous woman just because you have the Yue Clan behind you! You are going to graduate soon, and your graduation day is the day of our marriage. At that time, you, second-hand woman, are going to be my personal slave. I can touch you wherever I want. There's not that many days left. Go on, pretend as much as you wish! Pretend to be pure and chaste, pretend that that rotten part of yours below is actually gilded with gold! Hahah, what use would all this pretends do? Wouldn't you still be mine in the end? Yue Yu, I have endured a hypocritical fiancé like you for far too long. Why don't you let yourself be caught by me today? You are not made of jade and gold anyway, you are just a promiscuous woman! Haha, I'm going to come for you now, let's see how the Yue Clan will protect you!"

Yue Yu was so angry that her face had gone completely white. Her whole body was trembling, she was so furious that she couldn't even speak.

Yue Yang only watched coldly from the side, allowing the clown to continue his performance.

Yue Yang's Level 4 [Divine Vision] could see through a lot of things.

For example, Xie Qian Qiu's beast might be one of the strongest amongst his peers, it was actually pretty good. However, Yue Yang's [Divine Vision] could see that this Bronze-ranked Level 4 Beast was evolved using magic crystals. Hence, even if it was a Bronze-ranked Level 4, it wouldn't even compare to another person's Bronze-ranked Level 3 beast that was cultivated painstakingly using other ways.

Hence, it could be deduced that the Xie family's dramatic increase in power had actually come from wealth and support behind the scenes.

This type of levelling without expending time and effort was only a short-term benefit, an instant burst of power. Although it looked very powerful on the surface, it is actually just trash.

Yue Yang didn't know who was supporting the Xie Clan behind the scenes, but looking at Xie Qian Qiu, he could more or less understand one thing.

The Xie Clan was only a pawn that was set up in the front lines by somebody in the dark who was controlling them behind the scenes.

Their only use was to deal with the Yue Clan, or even all of the Four Great Clans!

Let alone Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Xue Tan Lang – the Three Great Killing Stars who grew through solid training – Xie Qian Qiu's power could not even compare to the Yue Clan's younger generations – Yue Tian, Yue Yan, even Yue Ting. Their strength differed greatly. Yue Yang reckoned that Xie Qian Qiu's power was more or less at the level of the worst performing Yue Clan younger generation – Yue Bao. If they really fought, Xie Qian Qiu didn't even have his own grimoire, he would definitely lose out from Yue Bao.

With his weak, alcohol-induced body and the two Bronze-ranked Level 4 beasts that were cultivated from magic crystals, Yue Yang could defeat him with just one of his fingers.

However, Yue Yang decided to show a performance to this idiot.

The harsher, the more abusive Xie Qian Qiu spoke to him, the more reason he could have to bash him up for Yue Yu. He could also beat him up even more ruthlessly!

This pesky little guy who talked a lot of bullshit, was the Xie Clan really unwilling to break the engagement no matter what?

Now that Xie Qian Qiu had said such unkind and ruthless things, he could never go back on his words. Let's see how the Xie Clan could still protect him later!

Yue Yang couldn't do anything to Yue Yu's tragic fate when he only heard about it last time. Now that the problem had shown himself in front of him, Yue Yang would not let him go easily.

Although he had not had much interaction with his cousin, he knew that she was gentle and kind. She also seemed to have helped the pitiful guy a lot last time, so he didn't mind helping her a little.

At this moment, a girl walked out from the trees on the boulevard pathway.

She had ample bosom and butt, and she looked very sexy and flirtatious.

Her clothing was not exactly appropriate, Yue Yang could see half of her bosom that was skimpily covered by her half-worn clothes. It was obvious that she was having a wild time with Xie Qian Qiu in the bushes just now.

From a distance, the sensitive Princess Qian Qian who had the [Six Records] Inherent Skill could already smell the scent of indecency from this woman's body. She immediately frowned as she pulled Yue Yu and Yue Bing and retreated a few steps behind. Xie Qian Qiu thought that they had retreated because they were afraid of him, and he immediately become even more arrogant as he laughed out loud gleefully. When that sexy girl saw Yue Yu, she immediately started a train of curses and foul language like a volcano that had just erupted...

Her curses were simply not fit for anyone's ears.

Yue Yu shook with anger.

In the end, she finally could take it no more. She pulled Yue Yang and said, “Xiao-san, don’t bother about these dogs, let’s go!”

“Thinking of running away? Not that easy!” Xie Qian Qiu leapt high up, jumping more than 10m in distance, landing heavily in the middle of the road in front of Yue Yang and the others. His arms were spread wide apart, blocking their way.

His Ox-head Warrior also followed, stomping all the way.

Its target was the lazy-looking Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai Lang originally really liked to fight, but it had fought against too many strong opponents. It had killed Silver-ranked beasts, heck, it had even killed Gold-ranked beasts.

Hence, towards a Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ox-head Warrior, Hui Tai Lang really couldn’t feel too enthusiastic or raise its spirits to fight it.

“Kneel down, open your mouth and suck me. If your blowjob is satisfactory, I can consider letting you and this bastard off. Otherwise, I will beat you to death right here and now! As for you, pretty boy, kneel down and bark. If I don’t tell you to stop, you must continue to bark. Otherwise, I will not only behead your bastard head, I will also destroy your whole family!” In reality, it was not the first time that Xie Qian Qiu did this kind of thing. Dallying in daylight, raping women and destroying others families were something that he had done countless of times.

If it was at a crowded place, he would probably exercise restraint.

However, this place was the most secluded and isolated place in the Shang Jing Academy. It was a retirement place for old teachers.

In such an isolated pathway, there wouldn't even be students walking through during the day. Xie Qian Qiu thought that if he didn't take this chance to gobble the three beautiful girls up, he would not do himself any justice.

He wouldn't meet these kind of beautiful, high quality ladies everyday...

Xie Qian Qiu started taking off his pants. Seeing this, the three girls immediately turned around, spitting out in disgust.

They had seen obscene guys before, but they had never seen such an obscene guy!

Princess Qian Qian punched Yue Yang's shoulders and shouted, "Idiot, why are you still staring like a fool? Quick, finish him off!"

Hearing this, that sexy girl was immediately angered. She summoned a strengthening-type, Normal-ranked Level 3 Leopard and fused together with it, turning into a Leopard Girl with black spots all over her body and sharp claws.

She jumped up and charged forward.

She ruthlessly brandished her claws, sweeping it against Princess Qian Qian's smooth, flawless face as she shouted angrily, "Bitch, does your mouth feel itchy? I shall help you scratch it!" Princess Qian Qian was about to punch the slut down and send her flying away, but suddenly, purple flames rose to the sky as a shining flash of sharp blade swept across the Leopard Girl. Yue Yang had already moved one step earlier and cut through the Leopard Girl's claws.

That Leopard Girl fell down hard on the ground, wailing out miserably and rolled on the ground in pain.

Yue Yang's expression didn't change as he stomped his foot down onto that Leopard girl's chest. Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu and Yue Bing immediately heard the sound of ribs breaking.

The sexy girl immediately shouted out in pain, begging him to stop.

Blood spurted out from her mouth.

Yue Yang then kicked the girl's lower jaw, causing more teeth and blood to spurt out even more, scattering all over the ground.

That Ox-head warrior immediately charged over and brandished its axe, trying to slash at Yue Yang. However, before it could even raise its axe, its head was already sent flying by Yue Yang's slash. Yue Yang turned around as the Ox-head Warrior's headless body thudded heavily on the ground.

Yue Yang immediately acted as if he had not done anything, whistling gleefully as he carried his Hui Jin Magic blade that was dripping with blood, walking towards Xie Qian Qiu who was staring dumbstruck, unable to believe his own eyes...

“Ah... ah!” Xie Qian Qiu suddenly snapped back to his senses, frightened to his very core as he turned around and immediately ran away.

But the moment he turned around, he found that Yue Yang was standing right in front of him, smiling brilliantly.

That smile looked identical to a devil's.

Xie Qian Qiu couldn't help but be frightened to his core. Losing control, he couldn't help but to thoroughly wet his pants. Drops of pee splashed to the ground.

When Yue Yang raised his blade, Xie Qian Qiu immediately shouted madly, jumping up high to the sky. He was thinking of jumping out of this frightening place with his super strong jumping strength. He didn't have any courage to fight against Yue Yang at all, because he had seen clearly how this pretty boy had actually killed his Bronze-ranked Level 4 Ox-head Warrior with one slash of his blade. Such an enemy would be impossible to fight against.

Hence, Xie Qian Qiu's only thought was to: RUN!

“Clown, continue your show! I haven’t seen enough!” Yue Yang flashed and immediately appeared in the sky. With a swing of his blade, he smashed Xie Qian Qiu’s crooked nose, beating his bulky Gorilla body that had been strengthened down straight to the ground.

“Spare me... ahhhhh!!!”

Xie Qian Qiu’s pleas were cut short by Yue Yang’s stomp.

Just like a toad being stomped by a person.

When Yue Yang lifted his foot back up, Xie Qian Qiu’s face was completely destroyed. Blood spurted out endlessly from his mouth.

Seeing this, Yue Yan shook his head, as if he was unsatisfied with the damage he had done. He then proceeded to stomp on Xie Qian Qiu’s fingers one by one, patiently breaking his bones as he said coldly, “Cry out, cry out as much as you like! Cry out louder, right, just like that. Actually, you can cry out louder. Cry out as if you are really in pain! If you could try to sound like a pig on the way to its slaughterhouse, that would be perfect!”

Yue Yu was afraid that Yue Yang would kill Xie Qian Qiu. Although she completely hated Xie Qian Qiu that trash, killing him would cause a war between the Yue Clan and the Xie Clan.

She didn’t want her clan to get a strong enemy that would fight

them to the death because of her own matters.

Seeing Yue Yang raising up his blade, she immediately shouted out, “Don’t kill him! This kind of trash is not worth it for you to kill...”

“If the Yue Clan can’t even protect a single girl, how can we be known as the Four Great Clans? We should just be named the Coward Clan then.” Yue Yang laughed coldly as he gestured to Yue Yu not to intervene and leave it all to him. He then cut Xie Qian Qiu’s pants open with his Magic Blade. When he saw it, he immediately laughed out, “I have even thought that you have a huge beast since you were so arrogant! You only had a little sausage, and you dared to say you have slept with a thousand girls? You don’t even compare to Young Master Guan Xi, and you still dare to be so arrogant! There’s no other way. If I don’t open your eyes here, I think you would die with regrets. Open your eyes clearly, you should feel so ashamed of yourself that you would commit suicide on your own!”

(Shiro: I have no idea who Young Master Guan Xi is)

Yue Yang started to undo his pants. Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu could see this brat’s indecent actions from the corner of their eyes, they immediately blushed with awkwardness and disgust.

As for Yue Bing, she immediately lowered her head and shut her eyes tight, not daring to turn around.

Yue Yang didn’t care about what the three girls would think about him then, as he slowly undid his pants and said, “Behold the

Big Cannon, ready to launch; Big Hydrant, ready to launch; Big Cannon, shoot!”

(Shiro: I tried)

He then awesomely shoot his pee into Xie Qian Qiu’s mouth that had been so beaten up that it had become deformed.

In the end, he had even shook himself comfortably and pulled his pants back up.

Seeing that Xie Qian Qiu was pretending to be dead, Yue Yang shouted to Hui Tai Lang, “Hui Tai Lang, have you eaten a roasted sausage before? I’m feeling really good today, I can even cook one personally just for you!” The purple flames on his hands started to burn brightly. Xie Qian Qiu had thought that he could avoid the crisis if he pretended to be dead, so he allowed Yue Yang to piss on his mouth and pretended to be unconscious. When he heard about roasted sausage, he was shocked and immediately turned around, running for his life.

Yue Yang laughed coldly and kicked Xie Qian Qiu’s back hard, almost breaking his spine.

Yue Yang then flipped Xie Qian Qiu, who was wailing miserably on the ground, over and stomped hard on his little bird and balls, turning them to mush. He then threw a ball of purple flames down, starting to roast it... Burnt smell spread around the area. When Hui Tai Lang looked again, it found that its roasted sausage had become burnt sausage. How was that a delicious roasted sausage? When Hui Tai Lang reached out with its paws to touch it,

it realized that only ashes was left. There wasn't anything delicious to eat at all.

It looked at its master in confusion... Yue Yang kicked it angrily, "I accidentally burnt it, so what? If you can't eat a roasted sausage, can't you just eat something else? That idiot's body is all full of meat!"

Hearing this, Hui Tai Lang no longer held back.

It opened its mouth, immediately chomping on Xie Qian Qiu's body...

The three girls had already ran far away when Yue Yang took out his Big Cannon, waiting for him on the other side. Although they were quite far away, they could still hear Xie Qian Qiu's miserable wails. They didn't think that Yue Yang was ruthless. In fact, they thought that Yue Yang was logical. They started to discuss in a whisper. The three girls all agreed that if bad guys meet Yue Yang the ruthless guy, it's really their lifetime of bad luck!

However, for someone like Xie Qian Qiu who liked to provoke others, a loathable trash of the society, it's not too much no matter how much Yue Yang bullied him.

The only thing that Yue Yu was worried of was that the Xie Clan would definitely come and get their revenge afterwards. What would they do then?

Seeing that Yue Yang had returned, Princess Qian Qian was confused as she could still seem to hear Xie Qian Qiu's miserable howls. She asked curiously, "Why didn't you kill Xie Qian Qiu? With your abilities, you could probably destroy him completely by just raising your hands. Why did you still leave him alive?"

Yue Yang first reached out to Yue Bing and rubbed her forehead, reassuring her.

Then, he turned to Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu and laughed brilliantly like the sun, "I wouldn't go around provoking others, but if someone came to me and provoke me, or if he had ideas on me or my family, I will kill them all no matter how many come to me! Xie Qian Qiu wouldn't be able to leave. I'm just letting him die a slow death, it's much more painful that way. At the same time, I'm also setting him as a warning to the others. They should never have ideas on our family, otherwise not even god could save them! What could the Xie Clan amount to, anyway? If they send people over to talk, I'll talk with them. If they send people over to fight, I'll fight them! If they dared to attack me, I will destroy their whole clan. Everyone only have one life anyway, who would be afraid of them?"

"Xiao-san, you have grown up. You have really changed a lot compared to last time! Thank you for helping your Second Sister, otherwise, today, I'll..." Yue Yu buried her face and wept emotionally.

"Brother, I support you!" Yue Bing definitely was Yue Yang's number one fan.

“The Xie Clan alone is not considered very strong, but they had a powerful backer behind them... “ Princess Qian Qian hugged Yue Yang’s shoulders as she half-teasingly, half-seriously said to Yue Yang, “This Princess here is a bit free nowadays, I can keep you company and go crazy with you! How’s that? Am I not a good bro?”

“Bro, let’s go and drink! We’ll not go home until we are completely drunk!” Yue Yang was prepared to make the tigress drunk. If she turned into a drunken cat, wouldn’t she follow his whims and wishes?

“...” Princess Qian Qian did not need her [Six Records] Inherent Skill to be able to hear this brat’s perverted thoughts. She remained silent.

Chapter 206 – The Mysterious Mother

Yue Yang was worried that the Xie clan would act at once when they heard the news, and exact revenge on Fourth Mother and the little girl.

Hence, Yue Yang hurriedly returned to White Stone City.

The numerous possessions at his home had already been emptied. Fourth Mother and the little girl had also already left with the Old Fox's men. Only a few elderly stayed to watch over the house. Yue Yang only knew that these elderlies were actually the family members of those tavern girls after asking them their identity. They were already old and they cherished the old times, so they were unwilling to leave White Stone City and move to Shang Jing. Hence, they volunteered to stay back to help Yue Yang look after this little residence. Yue Yang initially wanted to console them, but all of his words were stuck on his throat; he did not know what best to say.

(Shiro: Ivy Academy Vice Principal will be known as Old Fox from now on)

Finally, he and the three ladies – Princess Qian Qian, Yue Bing and Yue Yu, went to look around the city market. They bought a few bags of daily necessities and gave them to the elderlies as a slight show of appreciation of their efforts.

Even though the Old Fox had left them with enough money to ensure a comfortable life, the few elderly people still accepted the items happily.

What they needed was additional care and concern shown to them, and not material possessions.

Yue Yang prepared to return to the Yue Clan Castle to see if there were any moves made by the Xie Clan. He also wanted to inform Elder Yue Hai about this at the same time.

It would be bad if the Xie Clan had attacked right up to their doorstep and the Yue Clan was still unaware of what had happened.

Before leaving, Yue Yang looked at the few elderlies who saw them out, and said, “The lives of my Fourth Mother and younger sister could only be saved because the tavern big sisters had risked their lives. From now on, they are all my big sisters, and you are all my elders. Stay in this place at ease, this is your home! ”

Hearing this, tears immediately streamed down the few elderly people’s cheeks.

The leading old lady nodded her head fervently, choking with emotion. “Don’t worry, Young Master. We, these few old bones, can take care of ourselves. Young Master and Young Mistress, take care as well!”

After leaving White Stone City, the three girls’ eyes were red. Yue Yu, who was full of sentimentality and sympathy, kept wiping her tears.

These elderly people's daughters had sacrificed their all for the Yue Clan, yet they did not ask for anything in return.

When Jun Wu You offered to bring them to Shang Jing to enjoy their twilight years, they rejected, preferring to stay and look after this residence instead...

When Yue Yang and the others returned to the Yue Clan Castle again, Yue Yang did not see Fourth Mother.

She and the little girl had already been sent to a secret place to live in seclusion by the Old Fox. Nobody knew where they had been sent to.

The Substitute Clan Master Yue Shan was not around, and Second Uncle Yue Ling was not around either. Elder Yue Hai had personally sent Fourth Mother into seclusion and had yet to return. Yue Yang sweated profusely, with such an empty Yue Clan, if the skilled experts of the Xie Clan launched an attack on them, who could defend the castle?

Even though there were twelve elders, three of the Grand Elders did not partake in the running of the household, and a few of them were already very old.

As for the ones who remained, Yue Yang had even dealt with and eliminated two of them.

If two Level Seven Overlords from the Xie Clan really launched an attack on them, Yue Yang figured that the Yue Clan Castle was really going to end up as a battlefield of corpses strewn everywhere, with blood spilled across the landscape and a lone flag left fluttering in the wind.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan were at home, but they were all waiting for the Clan's Puppet's to be ready. Due to their great loss in abilities, if they did not rely on puppet beasts to keep up with their appearance, they would definitely be utterly defeated in the Hundred School Championship Tournament. To them, who had always ranked within the top 10, this was something that they would never accept! When Yue Yang returned, they had naturally avoided him, unwilling to provoke this devil. Yue Yu and Yue Bing went over to give their respects to the female elders in the Clan. When they returned, they had even brought a bad news. It seemed that Fourth Uncle's illness had gone worse, so Miss Feng had brought Fourth Uncle back to the Feng Clan.

Yue Yang was confused. Didn't they say that Fourth Uncle condition had gotten better?

Why had it gone worse now?

"How about we go there and see what really happened?" Yue Yang had a nagging feeling that something was wrong. Someone had kidnapped Fourth Mother, and just as they had managed to rescue her back, Fourth Uncle's condition had gone worse. It was all too coincidental.

"We can go and take a look now, maybe we can help them a

little,”” Princess Qian Qian knew that Yue Yang had a Medicine Encyclopedia. Although it might not be of use, they could still try their luck. Most importantly, Fourth Uncle had expended a lot of effort to get the Spirit Beast Awakening Knowledge Pill for Yue Yang. Yue Yang ought to give him a visit, this was how a filial son would behave. What worried Princess Qian Qian was that Yue Yang and Yue Bing would suffer a huge shock if they heard some kind of bad news instead. She was worried especially for Yue Bing, who definitely wouldn't be able to hold on.

Their horses didn't stop to rest as they continued to travel towards He Yang Feng's residence.

He Yang Feng's residence was not as big as the Yue Clan's Castle, but their residence was still very big, they were still considered one of the noble, distinguished families in the area.

The Feng Clan's Clan Master immediately invited Yue Yang and the others to the Main Hall when he heard that they had come. After exchanging a few pleasantries, he pulled Yue Yang to one side to talk.

Yue Yang didn't understand why this old man had done this. What was it that he couldn't say in front of Princess Qian Qian and the others? When he followed the Feng Clan's Clan Master into the Inner Halls, the old man who seemed quite healthy suddenly sighed, as if he was filled with bitterness and suffering.

“Feng Clan Master, if you have anything to say, please feel free to say it to your junior.” Yue Yang still didn't know what this old man actually wanted to say.

“You belong to the younger generation, so in reality, i shouldn’t be telling you any of this. It’s just that, aih, you are the only son of the Fourth House, so I must still tell you!” Feng Clan Master gestured Yue Yang to sit down as he muttered slightly. He then began speaking, “This thing had dragged on far too long, back and forth. I think you should be able to guess a little in your mind... My daughter and your Fourth Uncle have reached their limit. It seemed like they are not going to last very long...”

“What?” Yue Yang was so shocked that he immediately stood up.

“Aih, we have been too careless and negligent. We have fallen into the enemy’s plan, and when we finally understand the plan, it’s all too late.” Feng Clan Master’s expression was filled with sorrow as he gave out a long sigh.

“Didn’t you say that Fourth Uncle had gotten better before?” Yue Yang really couldn’t believe his own ears. Previously, they had said that Fourth Uncle had gotten better, but why did they tell him such a grievous news now?

“Yes. We had all thought your Fourth Uncle will recover. However, we never thought that the enemy had actually used two poisons on your Fourth Uncle, not one. The first poison was the Bee Emperor’s Poison, and this poison actually suppressed the effects of the second poison, Hundred Rigid Worms Poison. When the Bee Emperor’s Poison start to disappear, the second hidden Hundred Rigid Worms Poison would take effect. This type of poison does not show any strong symptoms at first, but as long as the victim sleeps, the poison’s toxicity will multiply once in their

sleep... You also knew that your Fourth Uncle had slept a lot because he needed to rest. The poison had spread to his heart, no medicine can save him. The enemies plan was extremely thorough. Now, even though we know the poison harming your Fourth Uncle, we can't heal him at all." Feng Clan Master sighed as he sat beside Yue Yang, his expression filled with grief.

Hundred Rigid Worms Poison, Yue Yang had seen it in his Medicine Encyclopedia before. He knew that it was a type of silent, deadly poison.

When it first entered the body, the poison's effects were extremely minute.

However, it could multiply and infiltrate deeper into the victim's body.

As long as the victim didn't realize it, it would rapidly spread throughout the victim's body. When the victim was unconscious or sleeping, it would multiply in an insane speed. In the end, the victim's body would turn as rigid as the Hundred Rigid Worms and die. This poison didn't exist in the Soaring Dragon Continent at first, but a few thousand years ago, a Da Xia Emperor had died from this poison, his body turned rigid all over. After Innate Rankers joined hands together to investigate the Emperor's cause of death, they finally knew of this poison.

It was said that this Hundred Rigid Worms Poison need 100 people's brain to be produced. Hundreds of parasites would be bred inside the brain. The parasites would then eat each other until the last one was left. That parasite would be called Parasite

King.

The Parasite King would then have to be cultivated in Demon's Blood, Dragon's Saliva, Voodoo and other things. It would also need to be refined with a secret technique before it was ground into powder.

The moment this powder was ingested, the victim would suffer from the Hundred Rigid Worms Poison.

Hundred Rigid Worms Poison, this should be one of the Thousand Goblin's Sect Hundred Poisons. Its only weakness was its long incubation period. Its incubation period could be as long as two years. The longer the incubation period was, the more toxic the poison would be.

Yue Yang knew it had almost been a year since Fourth Uncle was poisoned. In addition, he had slept for a long period of time, hence helping the poison growth. No wonder Feng Clan Master could only sigh in helplessness.

"Although the Hundred Rigid Worms was one of the Hundred Poisons, there must be a way out..." Yue Yang remembered from the Medicine Encyclopedia that there was a kind of medicine that could resist the poison's effects. If he could get that medicine, even if he couldn't fully heal Fourth Uncle, he believed he could still save his life. There was also another way to save Fourth Uncle, and that was to kill the one who cultivated the Parasites. There was a Thousand Poison Parasite Queen in that person's body. If he killed this person, then the effects of the Hundred Rigid Worms Poison would be weakened... Normally, the person who cultivated the

Parasites would also have the legendary Parasite Pill. Although the medicine encyclopedia did not state if the Parasite Pill would have any effects on Hundred Rigid Worms Poison, Yue Yang decided to first try out his luck.

“Are you talking about Bone Eroding Dried Fern?” Feng Clan Master sighed again, “The only place on earth that had the Bone Eroding Dried Fern had already been destroyed by someone. Dozens of the disciples of the Panacea Sect that had been collecting herbs were all annihilated. Their storage had also been completely plundered, including the Bone Eroding Dried Fern. As for the Jin Gu Miao Family that I am closed with, their elders had been killed, and the Parasite Pill that they had been passing down through the generations had all been taken away. Even his corpse was completely burnt by the enemy. If it wasn’t because I have completely left without a way, why would I feel so helpless...? An older person had to see a younger person off, what a bitter life!”

“Why would the enemy do this to Fourth Uncle?” Yue Yang was extremely confused. Fourth Uncle was ordinary and not powerful at all, why would the enemy do this to him?

There was also Fourth Mother, what was her identity actually?

Yue Yang realized that there was a huge plot here. The enemies’ had been plotting, including the pitiful guy’s engagement cancellation and drowning, Fourth Uncle’s ambush and poisoned, and Fourth Mother’s kidnapping. There must be a huge plot here, a huge wave under the calm sea, an unseen, endless whirlpool of schemes.

Feng Clan Master paused as he looked at Yue Yang. Suddenly, he said something that made Yue Yang very surprised, “Maybe the enemy suspected that your parents have not really die and have been protecting the Yue Clan all this time. Hence, they did all these to force your parents out. You must know that your mother was the only person in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent that had ever entered the God’s Ruin’s Inner Layer. Anyone who wanted to enter the God’s Ruin’s Inner Layer would have to find your mother first...”

Yue Yang was dumbstruck.

Only then did he realize the importance of the diary that the pitiful guy’s parents had left him.

The secret of the God’s Ruins must have been recorded inside the diary. There must be an answer to the mystery that the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent couldn’t crack within the information listed in the diary.

Furthermore, there was the dark, ordinary-looking Black Jade Pendant where Empress Fei Wen Li had been sealed for ten thousands of years. Now, Yue Yang finally understood everything. The reason why the pitiful guy was set up by others to cancel his engagement then drown himself, turned out that it was because of this enemy.

“My father, mother, what kind of person were they?” Yue Yang was very curious about the pitiful guy’s parents now, especially the pitiful guy’s mother. It was the first time that he heard from others that she was actually this powerful. She was actually the only

person in the world who managed to enter the God's Ruins... No wonder Elder Yue Hai did not say anything about his mother to him, turned out that there was still a mountain of secrets revolving around the pitiful guy's mother.

“Your mother was a mysterious woman, I'm not very sure about her situation. But I had seen your father before, I watch him grow up since he was still very young. You look very much like him, but you are a little prettier than him. Your skin also look better, maybe it's the traits you get from your mother. Your father was an extremely courageous man, he feared nothing. It's just that his character was a little stubborn, hence he had died early. It was really a great loss for many! Your grandfather, if it wasn't for the fact that he was so grieved by the loss of his beloved son, he wouldn't grow a head full of white hair within a night. He was consumed in depression. I have been friends with your grandfather for close to a hundred years, yet I have never seen him so depressed before... If your parents are still here on earth, there would definitely be no one so daring and brazen, bullying others to this extent!” When the old man finished speaking, he shook his hands, “I'm already old, your grandfather is also already old. You youngsters must take good care of yourself. If you can't beat your enemy, you must remember to suppress your anger. Be patient and wait for your chance, while there's life, there's hope... Go and see your Fourth Uncle, he should also have some words he wanted to say to you!”

Yue Yang took his leave, his mind still thinking about the old man's words just now.

The pitiful guy's parents turned out to be so powerful. It seemed that there were countless of secrets recorded in the two diaries.

Only if he could unseal this secrets would he be able to find out the truth. If the pitiful guy's mother was such a person, then Fourth Mother who was her sister, what kind of secrets was she hiding?

Chapter 207 – Trespassers Will Be Prosecuted Without Any Mercy!

Yue Yang, Yue Bing and the others walked towards Miss Feng's room to see Fourth Uncle.

Fourth Uncle was still sleeping, laying on a rattan chair. Two pieces of handwritten letter was right by his side, one designated for Fourth Mother and the other to Yue Yang. This Fourth Uncle's appearance turned out to look younger than what Yue Yang had thought. He looked handsome, and he had a [Lu Xiao Feng](#)-like moustache in the shape of “八” on top of his lips. He wore a white turban on his head and a green, long-robe on his body. Half of his body was covered with embroidered quilt. If it wasn't for the fact that he looked like he had a hard time to breathe, they would have thought that he was taking an afternoon nap.

His skin seemed to have lost its vitality and looked very pale and white.

Faintly, his body was even emitting a dead aura that a healthy person wouldn't have. Yue Yang reached out to sense his health, and found out that his condition was worse than what he had initially thought.

The Parasite Pill and the Bone Eroding Dried Fern might not even be able to stop his illness from worsening. If they wanted to save Fourth Uncle, looks like there was only one way, and that was to quickly kill the Parasite Cultivator and dug out the Thousand Poison Parasite Queen's Inner Pill from his body...

Miss Feng was a young mistress wearing a silk white robe. She had a beautiful appearance, but her expression looked haggard and sallow. Her eyes had also turned red from crying.

Seeing Yue Bing, she hugged her tightly, choked with emotions.

She didn't tell Yue Bing the truth about the poison, but consoled Yue Bing instead, saying that she would definitely cure Fourth Uncle and telling Yue Bing not to worry. Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu could hear the grief in Miss Feng's voice, but Yue Bing was still young and was desperately hoping for her father's recovery, so she wasn't suspicious about Miss Feng's words at all, only nodding her head instead. Miss Feng then hugged Yue Yang while wiping some tears away. Then, she asked Yue Yang to come one side. The thing that made Yue Yang baffled was that she didn't mention anything about Fourth Uncle at all. Instead, she asked about Yue Yang's daily life, vaguely hinting that Yue Yang should prepare himself to be strong for the Fourth House, and take responsibility for his family.

Yue Yang didn't need to feel Miss Feng's pulse to be able to tell that she had also been poisoned by the Hundred Rigid Worms Poison.

It was just that she found out about it early, hence she had taken preventive measures. That was why the effects of the poison was still trivial.

"It's okay, in the future, visit your Fourth Uncle again when you

have the time. He was still talking about you guys just now, but he got tired, so I will not be waking him up.” Miss Feng gave the letters to Yue Yang, vaguely hinting that these letters were some kind of will. When Yue Yang accepted the letter, he observed her bulging stomach. Miss Feng immediately shook her hands, “The baby is fine, you guys can rest easy!”

Hearing her words, Yue Yang felt that this Miss Feng would probably die after giving birth to her child.

This, this should be the reason why she allowed the Hundred Rigid Worm Poison to enter her body...

Right now, Miss Feng could clean her name. She shouldn't be the person who wanted to harm Fourth Uncle. Unfortunately, she had also fallen to the enemy's trap.

Yue Yang left the room first, taking the chance to read the letter that Fourth Uncle left him while the three girls were talking about private matters with Miss Feng. There were two kinds of handwriting on the letter. The first part of letter was written by Fourth Uncle Yue Ling, who stated that he was very happy and reassured when he heard that Yue Yang had become successful. He also told Yue Yang not to pursue this matter any further. He said, “You have to be the leader of your family and protect your family members. Take care of your Fourth Mother and your two younger sisters. Put their safety as your priority instead of seeking revenge, otherwise, more disasters will ensue if you fall into the enemy's trap. Your enemy is extremely powerful. Even the whole of Da Xia Kingdom would have difficulties fighting them. Your last way out is to escape your enemy's radar and ensure everyone's safety.”

Afterwards, Fourth Uncle had also told Yue Yang two secrets. The first secret was that Yue Qiu had left the pitiful guy a ‘present’ somewhere in the Tong Tian Tower Fifth Floor. Yue Qiu had also said that his son would probably need this ‘present’ when he went up to Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor. The second secret was something the mysterious mother of the pitiful guy had said. She said that in God’s Ruins, there was a ‘Special Passage’ that she had solved before, but was unable to enter. She hoped that her son could investigate the truth about this passage if he managed to enter it...

The later part of the letter was written by Miss Feng.

Miss Feng clarified that there wasn’t much time left, and stated that she would accompany Fourth Uncle to a tomb and bury themselves deep inside, to prevent the spread of the Hundred Rigid Worms Poison. She would wait patiently for her death there.

As for the baby in her belly, if it was a boy, he would be sent back to the Fourth House to continue the Fourth House’s legacy.

If it was a girl, she would be left with the Feng Clan.

She hoped that Yue Yang could pay more attention on his new little brother or sister on behalf of Fourth Uncle. Her letter was extremely sincere, making Yue Yang feel that Miss Feng was a good mother. Even when she had decided to die together with her loved one, she still thought about her child...

“I have never doubted that you are a good older brother before.

You could bring your Fourth Mother and your younger sister back to the Yue Clan, so I know your character... In the future, I hope that you could take good care of your siblings. Siblings should support each other!" Miss Feng's ended with these words, vaguely hinting that she would be entrusting her baby to Yue Yang in the future.

Seemed like she had already decided to die.

Yue Yang didn't speak for a long time as he thought, "Was there really no other way to save them?"

Must he watch Fourth Uncle and Miss Feng both die slowly, helpless to do anything? Think, could there be any other way?

There was still time. Even if he couldn't use his full strength now, after resting for three months and recovering his Innate Strength, wouldn't there be anything he could have done? Yue Yang didn't want to accept defeat just like this. How could the enemy defeat him with just one poison trap? There must be a way out. This was a slow poison, not a strong poison that would immediately kill the victim. There was still a few months time... As long as they could find that Parasite Cultivator fellow, there would definitely still be a strand of hope left!

Even if that fellow turned out to be an Innate Ranker, didn't he manage to kill Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, the two Innate Rankers, before?

At the very least, he must put in effort to find a way out. He

shouldn't be giving up so easily.

As he went out to the Main Hall, the Feng Clan Master patted Yue Yang's shoulders. He did not speak, but he had personally see Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu and Yue Bing out himself.

Returning back to the Yue Clan Castle, Yue Yang and the others found that the Yue Clan Village had been totally destroyed, as if a hurricane had passed by.

After asking around, they found out that the Xie Clan had come over, aggressively fighting any Yue Clan General who dared to block their way. They had also smashed a lot of shops along the way as they commanded for the Yue Clan to hand over Yue Yu and her bastard lover to them. However, the Xie Clan still had some apprehensions, hence they did not kill their way right into the Yue Clan Castle.

The Generals of the Yue Clan were extremely depressed, because the culprit who had caused this mess wasn't Yue Tian, Yue Yan, Yue Bao or even the abnormal Third Young Master Yue Yang, it was actually their most obedient, gentlest and kindest Yue Yu.

They absolutely couldn't believe that Yue Yu would have a bastard lover, because their Second Young Mistress had always been with Princess Qian Qian.

Furthermore, everyone had seen how Yue Yu had returned to the castle together with Princess Qian Qian, and there were only Seventh Young Mistress Yue Bing and the abnormal Third Young

Master Yue Yang with them. How could there be a bastard lover! They had adamantly refuted Xie Clan's slanders towards Second Young Mistress' reputation. It was widely known that the Xie and the Yue Clan were at odds with each other, even an idiot would know that these people didn't have a good intention coming here. They had definitely come here purposely with this excuse to make a scene.

The Xie Clan didn't bring their Level 7 [Overlord] expert, the 'Exterminator' Xie Tu with them, but both the Yue and the Xie Clan Generals had fought a great battle.

In the end, the Yue Clan suffered a disadvantage. Their Yue Clan Village had been smashed to bits and pieces.

When Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai heard about the news and arrived, the Xie Clan had already left the place.

"What actually happened here?" Elder Yue Hai saw Yue Yang and asked him about the destroyed Yue Clan Village.

"I don't know, I went to visit Fourth Uncle with Second Sister and Bing-er. Princess Qian Qian was also with us!" Yue Yang put up an appearance, pretending that he was a good boy who never fought and that he completely didn't know anything.

"Grandpa, it's all my fault!" Yue Yu couldn't be like Yue Yang who could lie without blinking his eyes. She immediately kneeled and explained the whole situation from the start to the end.

Princess Qian Qian was afraid that she would be punished by Elder Yue Hai, hence she reiterated Xie Qian Qiu's words to him.

When Jun Wu You heard it, his expression immediately changed.

He could sense that the Xie Clan was aggressively provoking the Yue Clan. They must definitely have enough support behind them to dare to do such things. Even without Yue Yu's matter, they would probably find another excuse. Yue Yu's accidental provocation was nonetheless a mere trigger for their attack!

Elder Yue Hai looked at Yue Yang, then said with an inquiring tone, "Xiao-san, what's your opinion with regards to this?"

Yue Yang was the embodiment of violence.

Since the enemy had bullied them all the way to their front door, what else was there to say? They would obviously need to beat the enemies up until they couldn't recognise their own mothers.

Yue Yang coughed slightly, "Everyone all knew that I'm an advocate of peace who had a good and kind heart. I would do at least one good thing every month, such as helping old grandmothers to cross the road. I'm also very forgiving. Usually, when others slap my left cheek, I would offer them my right cheek too..."

The audience started to sweat profusely. If this brat was an advocator of peace, then Soaring Dragon Continent would

probably be engulfed in endless wars.

Princess Qian Qian glared at Yue Yang.

She nodded towards Elder Yue Hai and said, “Since the Xie Clan has asked for a fight, we shall fight against them!”

Hearing this, Jun Wu You sweated hard. I didn’t say anything when you are helping him silently. You are even saying ‘we’ now! Girl, you are still not part of the Yue Clan at all!

“Your Majesty, how about you be the mediator between us two Clans?” Elder Yue Hai didn’t want to drag Jun Wu You to this matter. If the Xie Clan dared to provoke the Yue Clan, that meant that they were not afraid of the Jun Wu You that was supporting the Yue Clan behind. This matter shouldn’t involve the Da Xia’s Royal Family, otherwise the Soaring Dragon Continent’s state of affairs would be in total chaos. He could sense that the Yue Clan had reached the edge of a cliff. A simple mistake would cause their whole Clan to fall into an endless abyss.

“Big brother Hai, you don’t have to say anymore. An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth!” Jun Wu You smiled indifferently.

The Main Butler had asked for an audience, his expression seemed flustered and worried.

Seemed like the Xie Clan had made a new move.

Elder Yue Hai shook his hand, gesturing to the Main Butler not to say the matters out. He turned around towards Yue Yang and said, “Xiao-san, take your big and younger sister away from here. This is not you youngsters’ problems.”

Yue Yang nodded, “Of course, you are the Clan Master, I will obviously listen to your orders.”

He stood up and walked towards the exit. Yue Yu and Yue Bing was confused when they saw this. Eh? Has this brat’s personality changed? Why was he so obedient?

Only Princess Qian Qian ran over and shouted, “Hey, don’t try to do anything funny!” Before she could even finished her words, Yue Yang who had walked out of the room had suddenly disappeared. Elder Yue Hai and Jun Wu You looked at each other and forced a smile. Although they knew that this brat would not listen to them, they didn’t think that he would do this kind of thing...

Below the mountain, there were even more Xie Clan’s experts marching forward towards the castle.

They had passed the Yue Clan Village, and was climbing up to the Yue Clan Castle step by step.

The Yue Clan Generals couldn’t help but to retreat due to their enemy’s great power. The two Elders saw that the other side had the Level 7-Intermediate [Overlord] Xie Tu. Hence, although they were unwilling they could only sign for the Generals to retreat and wait for support.

Level 7 [Overlord] was not an enemy that they could fight against.

Xie Tu didn't attack at all.

As a Level 7 [Overlord], he could completely defeat the Yue Clan Generals with his Qi alone.

Just as he was savouring the moment, pleased with himself, a shadow suddenly appeared. The shadow flew down from the top of the mountain, followed by a trail of purple flames that set the sky ablaze, fast like a meteor. The sight of this made Xie Tu shiver with fright.

A strong enemy from the Yue Clan finally appeared... The purple flames in the sky twisted and turned into a dragon-shape, turning and revolving. Just as Xie Tu jumped up to the sky, preparing to clash against the strong enemy, his enemy suddenly disappeared. When he re-appeared again, he had already reached behind one of the Xie Clan Generals and slashed the General's head off with a slash of his purple flames...

Blood splashed all over the place!

There were at least 20 Xie Clan Generals that died on the spot, under that blade that was exuding purple flames.

On the ground, other than corpses, there was also a dividing line.

Yue Yang stood right on the dividing line that was drenched in blood, holding Hui Jin Magic Blade in his hands. He humphed out coldly, “Trespassers will be prosecuted without any mercy!”

Chapter 208 – Are They Still Human?

Xie Tu measured the youngster in front of him who looked to be around 20 years old. He was unusually young, but the Qi that he exuded was even shocking to him, who was a Level 7 [Overlord].

If that youngster had only killed a few beasts or people before, he wouldn't have such a potent killing intent.

This kind of killing intent seemed to be on the level of a General who had fought in great battlefields and narrowly escaped deaths many times.

He must have already killed more than thousands of people. His killing intent was equivalent to a Demon King's!

It was a killing intent that normal warriors wouldn't be able to exude no matter how long they train.

This youngster was still so young, yet he possessed such a ruthless and merciless killing intent. Could it be that he had started killing the moment he came out from his mother's womb? Xie Tu's heart involuntarily trembled... He had never seen anyone amongst the younger generations who had a more ruthless killing intent than himself. Even the Three Great Killing Stars, Feng Qi Sha who had killed the most, didn't have a killing aura like this youngster. In fact, his was not even worthy to be mentioned to this youngster!

If he liken Feng Qi Sha's killing intent to a wolf cub, this

youngster's killing intent was like a fierce tiger who had just ripped off a man's head from his body!

Just how many people have he killed exactly? How many strong Rankers did he kill to have that Demon King-like killing intent?

Xie Tu couldn't imagine it at all.

"Who are you?" Xie Tu had initially thought that only the Substitute Clan Master Yue Shan or the Clan Master Elder Yue Hai would be worthy to be his opponents. He never thought that the Yue Clan had a youngster this powerful. The Four Great Clans really lived up to their names. Although the Yue Clan looked like they had fallen on the outside, the strength that they were actually hiding was definitely not to be looked down upon. Xie Tu suddenly had a feeling that it would be too early for them to pick a fight with the Yue Clan now. They had also been too careless. The Xie Clan had not even finished investigating the matter thoroughly before they hurriedly stormed to the Yue Clan Castle. They had really been unwise.

"Yue Clan Guards, retreat from the line 10 metres back and I'll behead you!" Yue Yang didn't pay attention to Xie Tu, instead he glowered at the Clan Generals who were trying to retreat.

The Clan General who had retreated the furthest was stopped by Hui Tai Lang, who snarled, opened its bloody mouth wide and bared its sharp teeth.

That fellow was so frightened that he started to wet his pants and

pleaded for his life!

Seeing this, the Yue Clan Generals were absolutely horrified. Everyone was so shocked that they started trembling.

This abnormal Third Young Master was definitely not joking. Previously, he had even dared to kill his Elders when he brought Fourth Mistress and forced his way into the Yue Clan Castle. His ruthlessness had almost created a river of blood. Even after the Substitute Clan Master Yue Shan came out, he had still dared to fight him. If it wasn't for the fact that Clan Master Yue Hai had came back on time, the consequences would be unimaginable... Afterwards, in the Clan Tournament, this Third Young Master had even dared to beat one of the Floating Sect members up. Furthermore, no one dared to scold him for his brazenness.

Towards this little devil who dared to kill his own elders, the Clan General didn't want to provoke him and disobey his orders.

Furthermore, with Third Young Master supporting this battle, they would really lose face if they still retreated.

“WAHHH!” They immediately pulled themselves together and increase their battle spirits. Gathering behind Yue Yang, they confronted the Xie Clan Generals with Yue Yang as their leader.

As for the two Elders, seeing that all the Clan Generals had recognized Yue Yang as their leader, were greatly displeased.

However, they fully understand Yue Yang's exceptional performance before. Right now, this brat was no longer someone they could restrict or control. Since they did not have the great capabilities of that brat, they could only endure the humiliation gloomily.

Furthermore, with a strong enemy picking a fight right at their door, if the Yue Clan did not pull themselves together and work as one, they would really be finished.

As they thought about this, the two Elder also divided themselves into two troops, one on Yue Yang's right and the other on his left, echoing their war cry together with Yue Yang's troops.

The Xie Clan Guards had lost more than 20 people in the short moment since Yue Yang entered the fight, hence they were also a little apprehensive. However, as the Level 7 [Overlord], Xie Tu, floated down and stood right in front of them, the Xie Clan Guards' will to fight immediately increased. They roared their war cry loudly in response to Yue Clan Generals' cries.

“WOAHHH!” The Xie Clan Guards shouted loudly, wanting to show their superiority from their Qi and their numbers and intimidate the Yue Clan Generals.

“HAAHHHHH!” How could the Yue Clan Generals retreat now? Yue Yang's Magic Blade didn't have any mercy. Furthermore, the Demon Wolf that ate human flesh was also waiting for them behind. Retreating could only mean death, but they could still live if they fight forward. They would definitely not lose in terms of cries as they started to raise their voices altogether, delivering a

thundering cry. An endless flow of elite Clan Generals had also come down from the Yue Clan Castle to provide their support.

From the Yue Clan Village, there was also an endless flow of Xie Clan Guards joining the fight, climbing up the mountain as they shouted menacingly.

Elder Yue Hai finally appeared, stepping out from the Yue Clan Castle with great steps.

On the other hand, at the bottom of the mountain, the other Level 7 [Overlord] from the Xie Clan, Xie Nu, who was equally as strong and famous as Xie Tu, also made his way up the mountain step by step... The two sides forces quickly gathered in the middle of the mountain. A great battle was about to commence.

“I don’t care what kind of intention you have. Those who have invaded my castle, I order you to lay down your arms and surrender, otherwise we will fight without further ado.” Yue Yang would not waste his time on compassionate or negotiation talk with his enemy. He only had a rule: Death for all who did not surrender. The highly reputable Yue Clan Castle had been blatantly attacked by an enemy, if they did not kill their enemies now, anyone could bully them in the future. Yue Yang didn’t have a sense of belonging to the Yue Clan Castle as if it was his own ‘home’, but this was still the pitiful guy’s ancestor’s home. Since he had replaced the pitiful guy and become the Yue Clan Third Young Master, how could he face others if he couldn’t even protect the Yue Clan Castle?

“...” Xie Tu was furious. Isn’t this brat too brazen? Right now,

the Xie Clan had the upper hand be it in numbers or combat power. He didn't even offered to negotiate, but demanded them to disarm and surrender immediately! How was that possible?

Xie Nu, who had an extremely short temper, almost went berserk when he heard Yue Yang's words.

(Shiro: Xie means blood, it's their clan name. Nu means anger. I have no idea why someone would name their child anger; or slaughter, in Xie Tu's case. It's kinda like, Son: Dad~ Dad: Yes, Slaughter?)

Xie Tu, who was more meticulous to detail, signalled to the others to wait for a moment secretly and examine the situation first.

The Yue Clan had thousand years of history and a strong foundation. Even if the Xie Clan had a powerful support behind them and was attacking them with almost a hundred elite warriors, the Yue Clan wouldn't be defeated so easily. Attacking them on impulse would only spoil their plan. Furthermore, the relationship between the Four Great Clans were very close. If one was attacked without any justification, the other Three Great Clans who were all intimately related with each other would definitely lend a helping hand.

If the Xie Clan wanted to defeat this colossal enemy, the Yue Clan, not only would they need enough manpower, they would also need a strong justification.

Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to get pass the Da Xia Emperor,

Jun Wu You.

Even an idiot knew how close Jun Wu You was with Marshall Yue Hai, whom he called Brother Hai. Jun Wu You had always seen Yue Hai as his brother, so he would definitely not stand by and watch in silence.

“Greetings to Yue Clan Master, Marshall Yue Hai. Today, the reason for Xie Tu coming here is only to ask the Yue Clan to hand over some people. Marshall Yue, please hand over Second Young Mistress Yue Yu and her bastard lover who killed our clan member, Xie Qian Qiu. Before, the Yue and Xie family were related by an engagement and everyone was happy. However, the Yue Clan Second Young Mistress did not know shame and have engaged in illicit relationship with another lover before marriage. There was definitely a conspiracy to kill my nephew and her fiance, Xie Qian Qiu... Right now, we had come here to ask the highly principled Marshall Yue to hand over Yue Yu and her bastard lover to be punished by the Xie Clan and upholding our laws.” Xie Tu gave his respects towards Elder Yue Hai who was striding forward. This was his way showing propriety and laying his excuse.

“Xie City Master, as a City Master, you must not say inappropriate words. You have not investigated the truth, yet you led an army to the Yue Clan Castle. Furthermore, you have even forcefully demanded for our people. Do you think that I’m already so old that you can bully me however you like?” Elder Yue Hai exploded his Qi as his voice boomed like a thunder, shocking everyone’s eardrums to the point that their ears buzzed, almost going deaf.

Elder Yue Hai was a Great Marshall who have experienced thousands of battles. His Qi was as powerful as a mountain; sharper, heavier, and more forceful than Yue Yang's, almost as if it had substance.

The Xie Clan Guards on the opposite side had already felt an immense pressure when Elder Yue Hai first arrived.

Now that he had shouted his reply, the Xie Clan Guards couldn't help but to take a step back in fear.

The Xie Clan Guards were afraid of Elder Yue Hai's military glory. Even with Xie Tu and Xie Nu, the two Level 7 [Overlords] controlling the troops, their army arrangement started to get into disorder. Xie Tu looked calm but he secretly shivered. Fortunately he came here with Xie Nu today, if it was another person, the Xie Clan Guard army would probably be completely annihilated... Yue Hai, this old fellow, was indeed as firm as the rumours have said. He was definitely not an ordinary person.

Elder Yue Hai and Yue Yang, one old and one young, stood right in front of their troops.

However, their Qi was a complete opposite.

One was as violent and tyrannical as a ferocious tiger showing off his abilities, making others have difficulties in looking into his glaring eyes that could probably kill with one single look; The other was as calm and experienced as a rock, firm and steady like a mountain. He didn't have to be angry to cast fear on other people's

hearts. Most importantly, the old grandfather and his young grandchild's Qi both complemented each other, making them look even stronger!

This gave Xie Tu the feeling that let alone his small army, even a strong army with thousands of men and horses would not be difficult for them to defeat.

Xie Tu sighed in his heart. This was indeed the power of one of the Four Great Clans, the Yue Clan.

Even when they have fallen in power and was deteriorating day by day, they were still heroic and undying old lions. If they wanted to do anything to them, they would have to pay a heavy cost. After waging a war against the Yue Clan, would the Xie Clan even have any elite warriors left? Would other Clans take the advantage of their weakness and replace them as the new Four Great Clans? This question suddenly flashed at the bottom of Xie Tu's heart... He suddenly found out that he had only focused on defeating the Yue Clan before, and had not thought about the consequences and the price they would have to pay if they failed!

Compared to Xie Tu, Xie Nu's thinking was way simpler.

He thought that he and Xie Tu both could take one opponent each, one fighting against Yue Hai while the other against that arrogant bastard of a youngster. They should give them a surprise attack.

As long as they could force the Yue Clan to reveal their hidden

strength, then that great power that was supporting them would be able to make a move. With the hundred over elite warriors attacking the Yue Clan, they would annihilate them with one attack. From today onwards, the Xie Clan would definitely replace the Yue Clan as one of the Four Great Clans!

“Fourth Brother, we didn’t come here to fight, we come here to negotiate.” Xie Tu changed his mind. The Yue Clan wanted to fight, but the Xie Clan must not attack first. Otherwise, they might not be able to take the Yue Clan down even when their whole army was annihilated. Taking others out from the equation, even fighting against Marshall Yue Hai and that Demon King-like youngster alone would be a very difficult battle to win. There were still the Substitute Clan Master Yue Shan, Second Master Yue Ling and the Twelve Elders. They all had powers worthy of mention. Especially the Three Great Elders who had shut themselves inside and never came out before, their strength were even deeper and more immeasurable. Others might think that they were only Level 6 [Elders], but Xie Tu heard from a secret intelligence that those Three Great Elders were not warriors that the Xie Clan could fight against even when they put in all of their power. It was just that they had taken an oath not to take a step out of the Yue Clan doors at all, guarding the Yue Clan Puppet Palace to their death. Hence, common people wouldn’t know about these Three Great Elders’ true powers.

They must pull that great power supporting them from behind to the frontlines.

Otherwise, the Xie Clan would become someone else’s lackey, become someone else’s pawn or stone to be stepped on.

Xie Tu changed his plans and cupped his hands to pay respects to Elder Yue Hai, saying, “Marshall Yue, everything boils down to logic. Today, the Xie Clan had come to talk about logic with Yue Clan. The Yue Clan Second Young Mistress, Yue Yu, had conspired with someone else to kill my nephew Xie Qian Qiu, where is the logic in this? If Marshall Yue is reasonable, then we can stop fighting. We can gather our people together to discuss about this matter!”

He felt that if the Xie Clan took the ‘reasonableness’ approach and directly confronted the Yue Clan in front of Jun Wu You, Jun Wu You and the other three great clans would not have a reason to help the Yue Clan. As for the Yue Clan, he knew that they would definitely not hand Yue Yu over. Hence, at that time, he and the great power behind them would attack the Yue Clan together. As long as the elite warriors in Yue Clan die, the Yue Clan would naturally lose their qualifications as one of the Four Great Clans.

He would definitely not allow the great power supporting them to make use of the Xie Clan to open a pathway for themselves.

At least, Xie Tu wouldn’t agree to it.

It wasn’t easy for the Xie Clan to rise in power. If they face the Yue Clan head on, they would probably lose all the power they had gained and returned to their original standing. With no more powerful people in their clan, would that great power supporting them continue their support?

“The Yue Clan is definitely reasonable. Xiao-san, go back and call your older sister out. I will negotiate with the Xie Clan. If you guys

have really committed a crime, you won't be able to run from our clan's laws. However, if someone is trying to slander our names, I will also not stand by and watch ourselves being bullied by others." What kind of person was Elder Yue Hai? He was a Great Marshall who had walked through hurricanes and storms. He had played with schemes like Xie Tu's to the point that he was sick of it. With no change in his expression, he waved his hands and signalled for Yue Yang to leave.

If Yue Yang didn't go, everyone would not be able to take the next action, Jun Wu You would also not be able to appear on the scene.

Seeing that Yue Yang was finally about to leave, Xie Tu and Xie Nu sighed their relief.

Although they were Level 7 [Overlords], facing against Yue Yang's frightening killing intent made their heart shiver in fear. They felt as if they were a tiger's prey.

If their secret intelligence was right, this brat should be Yue Qiu's son, who had been hiding and was called a useless trash for ten over years. After inheriting his father's swordplay recently, he could finally bloom. At the beginning of this year, he had pulled a carriage as he killed his way through the Yue Clan in a bid to bring his foster mother and younger sisters back to the Yue Clan Castle and uphold their honours... The only thing that the Xie Clan regretted was that they did not send people over to observe during the Yue Clan New Year's Tournament. They had missed the chance to observe this brat's abilities.

From their secret intelligence, this brat seemed to have the power of at least a Level 6 [Elder], even a Level 6-Advanced [Senior Elder].

It was because this brat had suddenly become so powerful that that great power behind the Xie Clan started to suspect that Yue Qiu had not really died that year, and that he was still living and teaching his son in secret. A lot of people thought that with Yue Clan Third Young Master's outstanding capabilities, reaching the Innate rank would only be a matter of time.

If the Yue Clan gained an Innate Ranker, then no one else could shake the Yue Clan's position as one of the Four Great Clans.

This was also the reason why that great power that was supporting the Xie Clan was in a hurry to attack the Yue Clan.

They have to eliminate the Yue Clan Third Young Master and lure Yue Qiu out... Elder Yue Hai was already old, and Yue Shan and Yue Ling didn't have that much power. This pair of father and son was the real threats of the Yue Clan, no matter if it was last time or in the future.

"Yes. You are the Clan Master, I will obviously listen to you!" Yue Yang seemed to be very obedient in the surface, but his Hui Jin Magic Blade immediately spurred forward, slashing across with thunder-like, unparalleled power; His blow could probably even split a whole mountain. His attack thoroughly shocked Xie Nu. As Xie Nu hurriedly avoided Yue Yang's sneak attack, he found that Yue Yang had already threw himself into a bunch of guards like a tiger entering a flock of sheep, killing more than ten people at

once.

“Boom!” Yue Yang exchanged blows against Xie Tu who was trying to stop him. A loud, thundering clash resounded as the surrounding Xie Clan Guards were thrown away from the impact. More than half were heavily injured as Yue Yang floated back to Elder Yue Hai’s side, light as a feather.

“What nerve! You dared to kill our people right under our noses?” Xie Nu was almost driven mad with anger. Didn’t they say they were going to negotiate? This brat had actually dared to go back against his words, launching a sneak attack on them instead?

“Are they even human?” Yue Yang’s lips twitched, turning around and walking away nonchalantly.

Let alone the Xie Clan Guards, even the Yue Clan Generals all had goosebumps.

What a coldness indifference towards life! It was even colder than Thousand Years Old Ice. In this Third Young Master’s eyes, maybe those people are not even counted as ants on the road! The Yue Clan Generals hurriedly gave way to Yue Yang, respectfully seeing Yue Yang off. Their feelings were extremely complicated. They feared him but also felt a kind of spontaneous sense of pride!

Xie Nu really wanted to go berserk and use all of his power to fight this brat to death.

However, Xie Tu signalled to him to calm his anger.

When he clashed with Yue Yang previously, he had found out a shocking truth. That arrogant Third Young Master had indeed had the right to be arrogant. His power was definitely not at Level 6 [Elder], it was Level 7 [Overlord]... Xie Tu realized that even when he was prepared to clash against him, he still didn't gain the upper hand. On the other hand, his opponent seemed to still have some force to spare.

No wonder this brat could disregard everything. The reason was because he possessed extremely strong power on his own alone, he did not need to be polite with anyone.

“Second Brother, you...” Xie Nu had never felt so vexed since he became a Level 7 [Overlord].

“Don't provoke him. Go and get the Two Elders Song He here to support us!” Xie Tu quietly unfolded his palm. Xie Nu, who was standing in front of him, could see that Xie Tu's hands were scorched black, as if it was burnt by a strong flame. Xie Nu was extremely shocked. His Second Brother's strongest defense was at his hands, because he had the Thunder Fire God Arm, a precious artifact to protect his hands. Xie Nu never thought that that brat could burn his brother's hands with only one attack and a blade.

This, how could this happen?

Chapter 209 – That's Right, I AM The Adulterer!

When Yue Yang had gone to the Yue Clan Castle and brought Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu and Yue Bing in a horse carriage back to the place where the Xie Clan and Yue Clan had clashed just now, he found out that the two sides had moved to the Yue Clan Village at the foot of the mountain.

The Yue Clan's people stood on the left while the Xie Clan's people stood on the right.

Other than Elder Yue Hai and a few of other elders, there was also the Substitute Clan Master Yue Shan, as well as second uncle Yue Ling who had hurriedly rushed back upon hearing the news.

However, the eldest sons of the First Mistress, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were not present. It seemed as if they had safeguarded themselves intentionally.

Acting as the middleman and witness were Jun Wu You and the people from the Four Great Clans. It was not much different from when it was the New Year. There were the Feng Clan's Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Clan's Xue Wen Dao, Yan Clan's Yan Qian Zhong and the person who acted as Jun Wu You's left hand and commanding officer of the troops, Feng Kuang. The Four Great Sects had also sent people here. Yue Yang could only recognise one of them, and that was Yue Feng's instructor, Elder Ku Ming. As for the other two, Yue Yang did not recognise them.

Amongst the other two, one of them had red hair that resembled

a lion's, standing tall and majestic. He had a shining radiant eyes that made him even look more powerful.

On the other hand, the man who was standing beside the Lion Man looked reserved and elegant. His snow-white robe had green dragon patterns all over it. Yue Yang was slightly startled. It looked like this was the dragon ambassador from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace. Only rankers from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace would have differently coloured dragon patterns on their white clothes.

From ascending order, the colours went by the order of red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and violet. It was said that a red dragon pattern was already a small Level 6 Beginner [Elder].

This green dragon patterned dragon ambassador did not seem to be an ordinary elder either. At the very least, he would be a Level 7 [Overlord] ranker in strength.

As for that red-haired big-sized lion-like fellow, he seemed to be a ranker from Western Lion Pagoda. This was as the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion did not accept any males. The fairies from the Moon Fairy Pavilion also hardly joined any fights in the world. Yue Yang's Level 4 [Divine Vision] swept across the two people. A trace of a smile gradually formed as his lips curved at the sides. He looked around and saw Elder Ku Ming. Yue Yang felt that old man was concealing his talents a little. He was a pretty good old man. Elder Ku Ming did not sit in front of a horizontal table like the other witnesses, but rather on a slab of stone. The position he was sitting in caused Yue Yang to look twice in surprise.

There were innumerable amounts of experts at the Xie Clan side.

Yue Yang found out that excluding Xie Tu and Xie Nu, there were five other rankers at the [Overlord] level. As for Level 6 [Elders], there were close to twenty of them.

There were even two old men who had attained Level 8 [Emperor].

These two men were arrogant and lofty. They were also the only people sitting around a table and were served tea at the Xie Clan's side. All of the Xie Clan's men were incomparably respectful to them. Even when Xie Tu and Xie Nu spoke, they had lowered their heads slightly.

The two old men looked similar. They seemed like twin brothers.

Both of them had white hair and eyebrows, with their hair like cranes and a youthful face. They looked benevolent and kind-hearted, like the immortals in stories. They did not seem to be those old gods who placed themselves on a pedestal... Yue Yang thought that if the old fox, the eagled-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie and other people were not standing beside Elder Yue Hai, the Xie Clan would have already started their onslaught against them. After all, their strength was far, far greater than that of the Yue Clan's.

At the Yue Clan's side, Yue Yang found out that the two rankers that he had seen in White Stone City's Warm Cottage had come as well. They stood beside Elder Yue Hai.

(Shiro: Yue Yang's house in White Stone City is called Warm

Cottage)

One of them was as powerful as a lion, the other with a presence as hidden as a leopard.

Within the crowd, the two people were not too conspicuous, but in Yue Yang's eyes, they were pretty strong.

That Eastern Sky King who looked like a black [Zhang Fei](#) had also come. When he saw Yue Yang coming down slowly from his horse carriage, the Eastern Sky King immediately flew over to welcome him slapping Yue Yang's shoulders hard as he said, "Yue Clan's Little Three, relax. You're my daughter's person, so this emperor will definitely protect you. There won't be any opportunity for others to bully you!"

"I'm just your daughter's guard captain. If Your Highness could describe things clearly, then that would be better." Yue Yang was sweating profusely. Thankfully, this fellow didn't say that he was his person, otherwise others would have doubted his sexual orientation. However, the Eastern Sky King did not care at all, and patted Yue Yang's shoulders again. "What kind of talk is that? Little Luo Hua and you will be a pair sooner or later, it's fine even if I protect you in advance!"

These words did not seem to be spoken like a king, but rather like a mafia boss.

Of course, there didn't seem to be any ranker familiar with what kind of amazing person the Eastern Sky King was. Thus, everyone

felt that it was normal and not weird at all.

It was the two elders who were being offered tea on the other side who lightly snorted. “These words are what Your Highness has said. However, does it represent the intention of the Tian Luo Kingdom?”

“Old Qing Song, even if others fear you, I don’t give a damn about you at all. Aren’t you just a Level 8 Intermediate [Emperor]? How strong are you to be this arrogant? In my eyes, you two old farts are definitely not going to reach Level 9 [Saint] in this lifetime. You can spend your entire old life rotting in the ranks of Level 8. So what if I said I would protect them? This is my son-in-law, if you dare to lay a single finger of him, I will immediately bring my troops and attack your Zi Jin Kingdom. Let’s see if your Zi Jin Kingdom’s Wolf Army are stronger than my Storm Cavalry!” The Eastern Sky King could fight well against the ferocious Zhang Fei, his tone was as if someone had lighted a barrel of gunpowder in him.

He was Tian Luo Empire’s number two, being ranked just under the Emperor Hua Xu Ri.

Tian Luo’s emperor Hua Xu Ri did not like to bother with political affairs. He left most of them to his state officials. Thus, if one were to talk about the most energetic personality in Tian Luo Empire, it would be this Eastern Sky King.

The Eastern Sky King was originally the crown prince, but this fellow was a battle maniac. He hated meddling in political affairs even more than Hua Xu Ri. He even hated being in the royal

palace. He felt that it was a huge prison. Therefore, he relegated his position willingly and gave the position of the emperor to his younger brother Hua Xu Ri. Then, he became the Eastern Sky King, living his life freely.

It could be said that even if the Xie Clan or any other power could raze the Yue Clan's Castle to the ground, they would definitely not dare to touch the Eastern Sky King.

If the Eastern Sky King was harmed, that Tian Luo Empire would definitely do their utmost to take revenge for him by sending out their elites.

“Nothing below the sky can be more important than reason. Let's reason this out first!” The old fox hurriedly quelled the Eastern Sky King's anger. After all, the Emperor Jun Wu You was sitting and waiting at the centre of the discussion. The Four Great Clans and the Four Great Sects were also present. At least, they had to show some dignity. As for the Xie Clan, although the two old men wore a displeased expression, but they were not willing to have a dispute with the Eastern Sky King, so as to avoid having more issues cropping up.

Xie Tao, who was the the city master of Blade Mountain City, good friends with Yue Shan last time as well as the substitute Clan Master of the Xie Clan, came out from the right side of the crowd.

Alongside him, there were two guards who were carrying a stretcher.

On top of it, there was a corpse that was too horrible to look at was laid out on it...

That corpse was Xie Qian Qiu, whom Yue Yang had ruthlessly beaten up before allowing Hui Tai Lang to eat his fill. In order to make him suffer a more painful death, Yue Yang had even broke a healing stone for him, causing him to live within an inch of death. Even if Xie Qian Qiu moved back to the Xie Clan, he would not die easily. Seeing that there was an additional finger mark between Xie Qian Qiu's Eyebrows, Yue Yang reckoned that the Xie Clans' masters had broken his skull to prevent him from dying an excruciating death, delivering a blow that released him from pain.

Xie Tao's entire face was contorted with pain. He held back his tears and bowed to Jun Wu You, saying, "Your Highness, that year, you sent your humble servant to guard Blade Mountain City, your humble servant has been cautious and conscientious for the past few decades. Not one day did I ever dare to slack off. That day, Your Highness came personally to bless the engagement of the Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress to Qian Qiu. It should have been a match made in heaven, the marriage between the Yue and the Xue. It is still something that your humble servant has yearned so much for. Unexpectedly, little Qiu breathed his last after a horrific accident... Your Highness, you have to uphold justice for your humble servant! If the Yue Clan wanted to break the engagement, although it would break our laws and tradition, your humble servant would have bore the pain and agreed to it. I never thought that Qiu-er would be beaten alive just because he lost his temper after seeing the scandalous actions between the Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress and her bastard lover and denounced them a little. How could an elder send off his descendant? Your humble servant's heart is bleeding! I implore you, Your Highness, please uphold justice for your humble servant!"

Seeing his wrinkled face covered in tears, if an outsider did not know the truth, they might have really been fooled by him.

The only regret the Xie Clan had was that Xie Qian Qiu's infamy had spread far and wide. In comparison, the Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress had always been a gentle and virtuous girl. In this situation, it seemed to be a desperate action to counter-charge and suspect the victims of the incident.

Jun Wu You offered a seat to Xie Tao, but did not say anything else.

However, the dragon-robed warrior from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace looked at the corpse doubtfully and asked, "Xie Clan's Master, you said that Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress were in cahoots with the adulterer and killed your son. Do you have evidence? Could you elaborate on how he was murdered? If everything you claim is through words, where is your evidence?"

"Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo, my son and Lady Juan Juan met Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress walking along with the adulterer. The two people was fooling around with each other and showed their ugly colours. Unable to bear looking at them, my son went up to them in rage, but he could not fight them with his power. In the end, he was insulted to death by the adulterer. Before his corpse went cold, everyone had already known what kind of evil scheme he had fallen into. My Xie Clan's people are holding on to the evidence. Lady Juan Juan had one of her arms cut off by the adulterer but luckily managed to escape. She is still in an unstable state. If Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo agrees to ensure that Lady Juan

Juan does not fall into the evil schemes of the enemy, I'll invite Lady Juan Juan out to describe the tragedy that happened to my son... " Xie Tao seemed as if he was extremely sad, and cried again.

"Invite Lady Juan Juan out then. Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo, Brother Ku Ming and I, the three of us, will guarantee that the witness' safety." The red-haired big-sized fellow affirmed with his answer with booming voice.

The sexy girl whose arm was cut off by Yue Yang came out. First, she curtsied to Jun Wu You, then to the rankers of the Four Great Sects and the Four Great Clans.

Afterwards, she recounted what happened that time in a tearful voice.

Through her words, Yue Yang was a murderer whose crimes filled the heavens, who did ruthless things. His actions made people's' hairs stand on end. He could be classified as an immoral and despicable person. Conversely, Xie Qian Qiu was described completely differently, turning from a notorious ladykiller to become a great and just hero. She had almost forgot to add that Xie Qian Qiu would do a good deed every three days...

Anyway, after such a tearful accusation, even Yue Yang himself started to doubt his morals. Was he really an extremely evil person who had committed such grave offences?

Princess Qian Qian nearly applauded her performance. She had seen countless people crying as an act, but this was the first time

that someone had acted so naturally.

Hearing the sexy girl's accusations, everyone looked at each other.

They felt that it was a little unbelievable. How could Yue Clan's Second Young Mistress who was this kind and virtuous had a lover?

This kind of situation should happen on Xie Qian Qiu instead! It could still be a possibility if Xie Qian Qiu was dishonourable and abandoned his fiancée, beating Yue's Second Young Mistress to death!

What in the world was going on?

"Lady Juan Juan, your lamentations have been heard clearly by everyone! Now, facing the Yue Clan's crowd, did you see the figure of the adulterer? If that person is there, can you identify him?" Jun Wu You duly asked.

"Yes, it's that person!" That sexy girl had long seen Yue Yang, as Yue Yang was sitting on top of the carriage in a conspicuous manner.

The flirtatious girl pointed towards Yue Yang, and shot a poisonous gaze at him. She gritted her teeth and yelled, "He was the one who cut off my arm and beat Master Xie Qian Qiu to death alive! It's him, he's the adulterer, it's impossible for me to be

mistaken!”

Pointing at him, everyone who knew Yue Yang was stunned.

Yue Yang smiled, and affirmed it by nodding. “That’s right, I’m the adulterer!”

Boom!

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li brothers fell onto the ground with a thunderous sound. Even Xia Hou Wei Lie, the solemn eagle-eyed man was shocked by what Yue Yang had said.

Feng Xiao Yun and Xue Wen Dao were stunned, while Yan Qian Zhong had already covered his face, not bearing to see the sight any longer. According to his personal thinking, Yan Qian Zhong was more inclined to help the Xie Clan, as the Yue Clan had always been placed 3rd, blocking the Yan Clan’s path. Yan Qian Zhong definitely wanted to see the Xie Clan challenging the Yue Clan. No matter who won or lost, the Yan Clan could just sit idly and benefit as the third party.

Seeing now that the sexy girl identified that the adulterer was the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, Yan Qian Li almost wanted to squeeze under the desk.

Mistake, the greatest mistake ever!

The Yue Clan’s people used their utmost strength to prevent

themselves from roaring with laughter. As for the Eastern Sky King, he couldn't care less. Tears were already streaming from his eyes, he nearly lost his breath laughing!

Xie Tao did not recognise Yue Yang. At one glance, he felt that something weird was happening. Was there something wrong?

Xie Tu and Xie Nu had seen Yue Yang before. They swore in their hearts, yet they knew that it wasn't a good time to speak now. They were so fed up to the point that they kept stomping their foot on the ground. It would have been better if this Lady Juan Juan did not say anything. Of all the people to identify, this had caused the entire situation to topple over! Even if they were any faster, it was far too late to think of stopping her now. At first, they did not think that the adulterer that she identified would be that kid, otherwise, they would have killed her in a single stroke. It would have been better for her to die and not testify.

Xue Wen Dao and Feng Xiao Yun glanced at each other. Eventually, Feng Xiao Yun was the first to ask. "Lady Juan Jaun, are you absolutely certain that the adulterer is the person sitting on top of the carriage?"

"Even if he turned into ashes, I would recognise him! Furthermore, he admitted it himself, I beg Your Highness to administer justice for this weak lady!" The sexy girl cried while kowtowing to Jun Wu You.

"This matter... Xie Tao, it's not good for me to speak about it. Could this be a misunderstanding?" Jun Wu You looked at Xie Tao.

“Your Highness, how could this be a misunderstanding? My son’s corpse is in front of your eyes. Your Highness and the old general has had a deep relationship over the years. Your humble servant knows this, but this situation concerns the Xue and Yue Clan’s children killing the grooms and snatching the bride away. Your Highness can’t just stand idly and watch!” Xie Tao immediately knelt in front of Jun Wu You. He pointed at Yue Yang, accusing, “The killer is in front of your eye! If Your Highness cannot bear to do it, then please step back, and let your humble servant fight to the death with this bastard!”

“Xie City Master, the adulterer that Juan Juan pointed at... Do you know who he is?” Xue Wen Dao started to feel that the entire pack of Xie Clan’s people were collectively braindead.

“Who, who is he?” Xie Tao was shaken. Just now, he seemed to have overheard the Eastern Sky King talking about that guy being his son-in-law. This was definitely a bit of a problem. Jun Wu You not willing to offend the Eastern Sky King was something to be expected, but this guy was also the Yue Clan’s Second Young Mistress lover. Being able to establish good relations with Tian Luo and Da Xia, could this guy have some special identity?

“The adulterer whom you claim is on top of the carriage is the younger brother of Yue Clan’s Second Young Mistress, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master!” Feng Xiao Yun almost cursed at them being utter idiots. They should have found a better excuse to start a war. Such a dumb accusation caused people to be embarrassed for them after hearing it.

“Ah... “ Xie Tao was utterly dumbfounded upon hearing it.

Chapter 210 – Don't Be Happy Too Early!

“What do you mean brother? That’s a lie! That time, Qian Qiu and I witnessed that bitch pulling his hand!” The sexy girl hurriedly refuted anxiously.

“That’s right, she’s absolutely correct. At that time Second Sister was definitely pulling my arm. If not for Second Sister pulling me, I would have already punched Princess Qian Qian. When I was peacefully reading my book, Princess Qian Qian suddenly punched me twice for no reason whatsoever. Regardless of whatever happened, she did pull me back aggressively in an all too “effeminate” way. I can definitely testify this fact for her.” Yue Yang nodded his head to confirm.

“Princess Qian Qian was around at that time too?” This sudden revelation almost caused Xie Tao to fall flat on the ground.

“That’s not right! How could one of the other two bitches be Princess Qian Qian? Who doesn’t know that Princess Qian Qian carries a greatsword on her back and wears silver armour? That day, the other two bitches were both wearing warrior’s clothes, Princess Qian Qian wasn’t there at all...” That pretty and flirtatious girl’s words caused Xie Tao to be fuming mad. She should have shut her mouth long ago, yet she was babbling on without end.

“Shut up!” Xie Tao really wanted take this evil woman down with a single punch. But with a crowd watching, he could not move, and could only keep his bitterness inside.

“Was I the bitch you just spoke about?” asked Princess Qian Qian, stepping out of the carriage.

“That’s her! That day, there was another bitch too...” Before the pretty and flirtatious girl could finish her sentence, she saw Yue Bing stepping down from the carriage. She immediately pointed her finger, directing Jun Wu You and the others to her, testifying, “These two were the accomplices! There’s also Yue Yu, that slut...”

“Nonsense!” Xie Tao really wanted to punch her to oblivion, but Feng Kuang coldly gazed at Xie Tao, warning him, “City Master Xie, you’d best not move. Otherwise, we will be forced to kill you. The three sect ambassadors have already guaranteed the safety of their lives, after all.”

The Xie Clan’s wiseman Xie Tu lowered his head in disappointment. Everything was over.

Really, both success and failure were controlled by women, after all.

At first, the Xie Clan had gotten a great opportunity. However, because they were too impatient and were unable to wait before moving against the Yue Clan, they had questioned the Yue Clan without investigating clearly what happened.

Now, even if they had a thousand mouths, it was probably impossible to explain it... If they had only mistaken Yue’s Clan’s Third Young Master as an adulterer, it would still be fine. They did not expect Princess Qian Qian to also be travelling with him. Under

this kind of situation, how could the Second Miss possibly be doing something disgraceful with him?

They were siblings after all! If the Xie Clan had stubbornly identified them as an adulterous couple, the Clan would have become the world's greatest joke!

The Eastern Sky King was already rolling on the ground laughing as hard as he could.

His fist was hitting the ground repeatedly, but it was not enough to suppress his laughter.

The Yue Clan's Castle Guards could not help but roar with laughter too. However, the Xie Clan's guards dejectedly lowered their heads.

This time, they had lost too much face...

Feng Xiao Yun pointed towards Yue Yang, asking Xie Tao, "Now that all the criminals have gathered here, namely Yue Clan's Third Young Master, Second Miss, Seventh miss, and Princess Qian Qian, is there anything else you would like to add?"

Xie Tao almost wanted to find cracks on the ground so that he could squeeze into it. He hurriedly shook his head, saying, "A misunderstanding, it's a misunderstanding!"

"It's not a misunderstanding!" The two elders who had the

strength of Level 8 [Emperor]s suddenly stood up. The elder on the right laughed coldly. “No matter whether they were recognised wrongly, the fact that the Yue Clan’s children joined hands to kill the future master of the Xie Clan, Xie Qian Qiu, is an ironclad truth. The Yue Clan must compensate the Xie Clan in some way. Xie Qian Qiu is one of the children that we brothers had fancied. Now that the children of the Yue Clan have beaten him to death, we as his masters must take back some justice!”

(Shiro: Sorry, a mistranslation on chapter 208. At the bottom of chapter 208, “Xie Tu shouted “go and get the ‘two elders Song He’ here to support us.” These two elders are collectively called Two Elders Song He, because one is called Qing Song (who always stood on the left) and the other Hei He (right). They are Level 8 [Emperors], identical twins and also witnesses for the marriage between Fourth Mother and Fourth Uncle – chapter 98)

The moment he spoke, the veins on Jun Wu You’s temples popped.

Even idiots knew that Xie Qian Qiu was a trash that was could not even compare to mud that could be used to build walls. Except for abusing his power to rape women, he did not have any strengths at all.

If not for having ulterior motives, even if a young man with ten times the qualifications of Xie Qian Qiu was sent in front of the Two Elders Song He, they would probably not bat their eyelids even once. Xie Qian Qiu, let alone Level 8 [Emperor]s, he would not even impress Level 6 [Elder]s. If not for the fact that he was born in the Xie Clan as well as being the eldest son of the first wife and born with a silver spoon, he could only be trash among trashes!

The power behind the Two Elders Song He was the self-proclaimed world's Fifth Sect, the "Green Summit Sect".

The Green Summit Sect was the current guardian sect of the present Zi Jin Empire.

Originally, traitors who wanted to steal the Yue Clan's ultimate moves fled to the Zi Jin Empire and created a new sect. Under the support of Zi Jin Empire, they constantly recruited rankers, and slowly rose in power. The Yue Clan had always been suspicious of the sect leader and vice sect leader of "Green Summit Sect". They were Moqi Li Mie and Duan Mu Ke, the two great villains who had tried a thousand years ago to poison the top rankers of the Yue Clan and steal the secrets of the Innate Spear Technique. That year, the two people had been close relatives of the Yue Clan. Due to their overwhelming talent, they had obtained the utmost trust from the Yue Clan members and were viewed as kin brothers by them. However, during the time of crisis when the Clan Master was poisoned and surrounded by powerful enemies, they had disappeared without a trace. Ten years later, Moqi Li Mie and Duan Mu Ke had reappeared in the Zi Jin Empire. At that time, they were already part of the Zi Jin Empire's Five Great Shamans. They had also set up "Green Summit Sect" with the support of the Zi Jin Empire's emperor.

The present-day "Green Summit Sect" had already become the Chief Guardian Sects of Zi Jin Empire, and proclaimed themselves as the fifth sect in the world.

Since a thousand years ago, Green Summit Sect had always been

the mortal enemies of the Yue Clan and even the Da Xia Empire.

It tried to destroy the Yue Clan many times. However, the Yue Clan had always had a talented younger generation emerge and save the Yue Clan during times of crisis.

Today, even if these Two Elders Song He did not speak, everyone could already guess that these two old folks would definitely not leave the matter at that. They were definitely here to cause trouble.

Yue Yang did not know who these two old folks were, nor did he know the grudges that the Yue Clan and Green Summit Sect had against each other. If he had known, he would definitely say that their motives were painfully obvious.

To address the difficult questions raised by the Two Elders Song He, Yue Yang stood up.

He was extremely generous and admitted it in a single sentence. “That’s right, I was the one who beat him to death. So what if I beat him? I ought to beat him up after all. It would be tragic if I don’t beat him!”

Hearing the astonishing arguments that Yue Yang had raised, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others nearly banged their head on the ground.

The people on the Xie Clan side were already seething with anger

since long ago, so much that their facial expressions had already become distorted.

It would be fine if he said that it was a misunderstanding. There would be a way out of this difficult situation if that was the case. Now, this fellow had actually admitted to beating that person to death straightforwardly. Not only that, he had still displayed such an arrogant attitude!

Everyone had seen many arrogant people before. However, they had never seen someone as arrogant as this fellow! Facing dozens of experts who had already established their reputations long ago, he as a junior was still arrogant like hell. He really deserved a beating! At the Xie Clan side, you could just pick a random person and that person would be a Level 6 [Elder] and above. If not for giving some respect to Jun Wu You, the Da Xia Empire's emperor, the Xie Clan would have long since swept the Yue Clan clean...

“Yue Hai, is this your opinion too?” Elder Qing Song who stood on the left side was agitated and angry.

“What he said is not my opinion. However, my thoughts doesn't stray far from that. On the other hand, as the Clan Master, I am unable to manage him properly. If you have the capability, help me discipline him a little.” Elder Yue Hai was calm and collected. Since his grandson was already an Innate who had even killed the Thousand Goblins Sect's Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, no matter how great or experienced the Two Elders Song He were, they were destined to flop.

No matter how powerful the Two Elders Song He were, could

they be more powerful than those two Innates, Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan?

They were so arrogant and haughty, but could they consider the Thousand Goblins Sect's leader beneath them?

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader had witnessed firsthand the deaths of Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, killed by his own Clan's Third Young Master. Yet, he did not dare to seek him out to settle his debts. What does this Elder Qing Song and Elder Hei He even counted as!

“Since that's the case, then fine. I'll teach your junior the manners he should have when he sees his seniors!” Hei He who was standing on the right was prepared to take Yue Yang down. Princess Qian Qian suddenly stood forward and spoke. “Fellow seniors, I imagine that it's better if everyone is made clear on the situation. As for this esteemed senior, since everyone's still trying to reason with each other, it's not your turn to discipline this junior yet.”

Elder Hei He was shaking with anger. He really wanted to kill Princess Qian Qian with a single slap, but Xie Tu hurriedly rushed forward and whispered a few sentences to him.

Moving against Princess Qian Qian was the dumbest way of doing things.

With the Yue Clan's matters not resolved, falling out with the Da Xia Empire now was the most unwise decision to make.

If Princess Qian Qian were to lose even a strand of hair, then the Four Great Sects and the Four Great Clans would definitely extend their hands to protect her. The Heavenly Imperial Guardians would even more so arrive here upon hearing the news. If Hei He were to move, Da Xia Empire would have a reason to retaliate. By doing this, they were essentially declaring a war between the Xie Clan and the Green Summit Sect against the Four Great Sects, Four Great Clans and Da Xia Empire.

More importantly, the opposition was currently willing to be reasonable.

The more they moved, the more they would look like they were in the wrong. They would seem to be angry as a result of embarrassment.

Hearing that Princess Qian Qian was about to burst out with the truth, Xie Tao quickly waved his hands, saying, “A misunderstanding, this is a misunderstanding!” He knew what kind of trash his son was. Perhaps he was trying to take advantage of Princess Qian Qian before being beaten to a pulp by the opposition. If that was really the case, not only would the Xie Clan be unable gain an upper hand over the Yue Clan, they would also receive the stain in their reputation for taking advantage of a princess and humiliating royalty.

“This is definitely not a misunderstanding. Actually, this was what happened...” Princess Qian Qian recounted the incident to everyone, and added, “I can’t completely repeat the obscenities that Xie Qian Qiu’s spoke. Not only that, Xie Qian Qiu also

stripped. There was an intention of raping us three girls. If not for us three having the ability to protect ourselves, if not for Yue Clan's Third Young Master stepping forward to protect us, and if we were normal girls instead, that fellow who is not worthy to even be a beast would have succeeded in raping us."

"So that was what happened!" The crowd finally understood after hearing it.

Before this, everyone was puzzled. How did Xie Qian Qiu become an ally of justice? They did not expect that this was completely the Xie Clan's distorted truth. They had used this opportunity to slander people. Come to think of it, Xie Qian Qiu was originally a notorious lecher. Being unable to change his bad habits was the most possible truth!

Whether it was anger that gripped his heart, or not having the face to see people, Xie Tao suddenly spewed blood from his mouth.

With a sway of his body, he fainted.

The guards from the Xie Clan side hurriedly assisted Xie Tao back.

"Juan Juan, you slut. How dare you raise your hand against Princess Qian Qian!" Xie Tu hurriedly tried to distract everyone, roaring towards that sexy girl.

"City Master Xie Tu, please wait! For the time being, it's not your

turn to pin your blame on one of your accomplices.” Feng Kuang coldly snorted. “I hope everyone will give a satisfying explanation to Da Xia’s Royal Family regarding this matter.”

“If you want to give an explanation, the Yue Clan should give the Xie Clan a satisfying explanation first! That your Yue Clan’s child killed Xie Qian Qiu is a fact presented in front of your eyes. As for what Xie Qian Qiu did when he was alive, there is a possibility that some people intentionally fabricated the incident. Those can be ignored for now. What I can only see in front of my eyes is that my disciple, Xie Qian Qiu, has already been killed by someone!” The Elder Qing Song latched onto this notion.

“Seeing the performance of clowns for a good deal of time, I feel like it’s about time to wrap it up.” Yue Yang coughed a few times, and waved towards the Elder Qing Song, saying. “Old geezer, does it matter if Xie Qian Qiu is killed? I’ll send you to the west as well! (Shiro: Chinese beliefs – nirvana is in the west) How old are you? Why aren’t you waiting for your death at home? You even jumped out to act as if you were high and mighty. Say for yourself, are you braindead? You want to die for no reason at all? Your time has long gone, it’s currently the era of the younger generation like us, understand? After we’ve finished talking reasonably, we’ll just talk with our fists. I’ll still stick to my principles. No matter how many people you send, if you don’t surrender, I’ll kill every single one of them. I won’t stop even if I have to chase you to the ends of the earth...”

“Junior, you really are mad!” The Elder Qing Song was so angry that his lungs almost burst.

“It won’t be too late to praise me when I step on top of your head with my foot!” Yue Yang had the intention of acting high and mighty in front of the crowd. Facing these two old geezers who did not see anyone as worthy of being compared to them, this was the best offering that he could make.

As Elder Qing Song was prepared to move against Yue Yang, two silver stars suddenly flashed from above.

Just like shooting stars, they drew a beautiful arc across the sky.

Finally, they fell towards the centre of where everyone was.

Originally, everyone thought that this kind of thunderous unblockable fall would cause a world-shaking explosion. The Clan guards who were of lower levels were so scared that their faces were drained of colour.

Only those with [Elder] rank and above people were waiting calmly... As expected, the landing of the two silver stars were as light as feathers, not startling anyone at all.

The two silver stars turned into two girls with silver wings and silver armour. Silver radiance emitted from their bodies. There were profound halos flickering under their feet.

With a light draw, they took out a golden teleportation scroll each.

In that instant, a golden teleportation portal rose.

A neatly-shaved white-haired elder wearing simple yet extremely clean clothes with the temperament of a scholar walked out slowly. First, he bowed slightly to pay his respects to Jun Wu You. Then, with his unique metallic voice, he spoke. “Esteemed Da Xia Emperor, please forgive Nan Gong for coming here without an invitation.”

Almost everyone who saw this old man who came forward were shaken as they saw him.

After all, this white-haired elder who called himself Nan Gong was the Chief of the Ten Council Members of the Innate Alliance. Normally, he would reside in the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. He would not appear in the ordinary world under normal circumstances. However, if one were to approach the Innate realm in the world, he would appear to invite this ranker who was close to the Innate Realm to join the Innate Alliance.

His appearance represented the tidings of incomparably good news.

With just his appearance, that would prove that someone was being fancied by the Innate Alliance.

It could be said that the appearance of Elder Nan Gong was one of the most desired things that could happen in the lifetime of a warrior. Without his appearance, it would be impossible for the person to ever reach Innate.

Almost all of the warriors saluted this Elder Nan Gong. The action was spontaneous and sincere. This Elder Nan Gong who frequently gave people good news was worthy of everyone's respect.

Of course, a person from another world like Yue Yang would have never heard of him before. From the start, he did not understand what was going on.

The entire area was filled with excitement. However, the most emotional ones were Qing Song and Hei He.

This was because they were both Level 8 Intermediate [Emperor]s, hence they were the only warriors present who were the closest to the Innate Realm. There was only a fine line separating them from the Innate Realm. After waiting for their entire lifetime, they felt that the day where people from the Innate Alliance would receive them had come.

This, how would this not bring them a pleasant surprise?

How would they not be extremely jubilant?

Seeing Qing Song and Hei He being so emotional, the old fox nearly told them not to be too happy too soon!

“Mister Nan Gong, perhaps someone among us has fulfilled the requirements to join the Innate Alliance?” Jun Wu You was also so

excited that his entire body was shaking. A ridiculing smile erupted from Qing Song and Hei He's lips. They already knew the answer to that question.

Notes: New Characters

Witnesses

Jun Wu You (Da Xia Emperor)

Feng Kuang (Da Xia General)

Eastern Sky King

Four Great Clans

Feng: Feng Xiao Yun

Xue: Xue Wen Dao

Yan: Yan Qian Zhong

Four Great Sects

Elder Ku Ming (Yue Feng's instructor, Floating Mist Sect)

Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo (Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace Sect)

Lion-like fellow from (Western Lion Pagoda Sect)

No one from Moon Fairy Pavillion came

Xie Clan

Xie Tu & Xie Nu (slaughter and anger pair, Level 7 [Overlords].
Xie Tu is a City Master)

Xie Tao (Xie City Master, City Master of Blade Mountain City,
substitute Clan Master of Xie Clan)

Two Elders Song He (Level 8 [Emperors], identical twins, one
called Qing Song and the other Hei He)

Chapter 211 – Brat, You’re An [Innate]?

“Yes, I am here for this reason.” Elder Nan Gong gave a certain answer after he paid his respects to Jun Wu You humbly.

“Wow! Congratulations, Elders Song and He!” Xie Tu, Xie Nu and their clan were feeling extremely excited. Their Clan Master, Xie Tao also stopped pretending that he had lost consciousness. He rushed out immediately with a face full of smiles as he congratulated Elders Song and He. Although Elders Song and He both appeared outwardly calm, their flushed looks revealed their joy and happiness. Their palms which were formerly steady were trembling with excitement.

Becoming a member of the Innate Alliance was a dream for all warriors throughout their lifetime. They had waited too long for this.

The guards from the Xie Clan were cheering nonstop and their cheers appeared louder and louder.

Thunderous applause was aroused.

In contrast, the generals of Yue Clan appeared dim and dejected.

They were so near to gaining their victory after they had lowered their enemy’s morale with great difficulty yet they lost their chance to defeat their enemy due to the visit of the Innate Ranker, Elder Nan Gong.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were feeling extremely nervous in their heart. If their enemy were recruited into the Innate Alliance, then they would launch a drastic counterattack for sure. At that time, Yue Yang would definitely be in danger. Who would dare to obstruct when an Innate Ranker wanted to launch his or her attack? The Innate Rankers could just murder anyone as they wished if someone had provoked them or even if they had no right or reason. The existence of the ordinary warriors were like ants in the eyes of an Innate Ranker.

They believed that Yue Yang would be an Innate Ranker in the future for sure. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai never doubt on Yue Yang's ability considering his talent.

However, it would be a disadvantage for Yue Yang as they met this kind of situation now.

If Jun Wu You and the rest weren't ahead right now, Ye Kong and the others would have rushed out in order to let Yue Yang escape immediately.

While there is life, there is hope!

Battling with the enemy was the last thing which Yue Yang should do at the moment. Yue Yang would have no problem challenging Elders Song and He if he cultivated hard for another ten years.

However, at the moment, Yue Yang was still too young and

hadn't had enough time to cultivate. Even if he was very talented, his combat power would not be at the same level as an elder who had cultivated for two to three hundred years.

“It's a pleasure to meet you, Mr. Nan Gong.” The Elders Song and He knelt and greeted Elder Nan Gong in extreme excitement in the midst of the enthusiastic applause from the Xie Clan's guards.

Although Elders Song and He had a higher status among the ordinary warriors they were nothing when compared with Elder Nan Gong.

Elder Nan Gong was the Chief of the Ten Council Members of Innate Alliance. A thousand years ago, he was the one who had invited the Innate Rankers of Soaring Dragon Continent to join the Innate Alliance. Qing Song and Hei He who were two hundred and fifty years old were just brats compared to Elder Nan Gong.

The guards of Xie Clan burst into louder cheers as they saw Elder Nan Gong humbly reach out his hand to help both Elder Song and Elder He up.

As expected, the one whom he would invite were the most powerful Elders Song and He.

Initially, everyone were still a little worried as there were also many talented and powerful warriors on the side of the Yue Clan. For instance, there was the Eastern Sky King whose strength was nearly approaching Level 8 [Emperor].

Qing Song and Hei He were feeling so touched that they were about to cry. God would indeed blessed those who had worked hard. They had finally gotten the reciprocation after they had cultivated with all their might for more than two hundred years. The world of Innate Rankers had finally opened the door and welcomed them. They had walked the path to Innate Rankers for more than two hundred years since they were young until their hair turned gray as they grew older. They had slaved through until today, when they finally got to meet the invitor, Elder Nan Gong. As they thought about it, both of them were trembling as they were feeling so emotional. They knelt on the ground and looked at each other with their tearful eyes as if they were going to hug each other and cry bitterly.

However, Elder Nan Gong politely said something that made everyone stunned. “May I know who you are? I’m very sorry. I think both of you have some misunderstandings.”

The words came like a bolt from the blue.

Qing Song and Hei He were very upset. Could it be that Elder Nan Gong wasn’t here to invite both of them?

The cheers from the Xie Clan stopped immediately.

All of them fell silent.

A deathly silence engulfed the whole place. Almost all the warriors stared at Elder Nan Gong as though they couldn’t understand his words no matter how hard they were trying to

figure them out.

Elder Nan Gong wasn't here to invite Qing Song and Hei He?

East Sky King who was covering his face as he couldn't bear to watch the situation just now jumped out all of a sudden after hearing Elder Nan Gong's words. He pointed at Qing Song and Hei He who appeared pale and disappointed and asked Elder Nan Gong, "Aren't you here to invite them to join the Innate Alliance?"

"Their strengths and abilities are not bad. However, they still need to work harder as there's still a big gap for them to reach the Innate level." Elder Nan Gong shook his head lightly as he swept his eyes over Qing Song and Hei He. His denial threw the Xie Clan's warriors into despair and even caused Elders Song and He to collapse and faint. He then nodded his head lightly and said, "I am here to invite another person."

Eastern Sky King shouted "Wahhhh!" Excitedly as he heard the words.

He clapped his hands and shouted at Qing Song and Hei He who were about to faint. "Have you ever heard of the story of old tortoise? Let me tell you the story since I'm so merciful. There were two old tortoises in this world who had always been hallucinating on their own successes. They were obviously someone who stayed under the well, who knew nothing of the world yet they were so shameless and thought that they could climb out from the well and fly to the sky. Do you think they could fly? Could they fly with their thick face? Congratulations to Elders Song and He for getting invited by the Innate Alliance. Hahaha!

This is definitely great news! I am representing Tian Luo Kingdom to congratulate the two tortoises who have finally flown high up into the sky. No, I must compose a poem to express my excitement: Tortoises' shamelessness are undefeatable under the heavens; Nobody could beat them when they unleashed their nonsenses!"

[May: Thick face means shameless in Mandarin.]

Feng Kuang continued, "Da Xia Kingdom Army would like to congratulate both of you after the Eastern Sky King!"

The Old Cunning Fox also couldn't bear to stay silent. He nodded his head and said, "The whole of Ivy Academy would also like to congratulate Elders Song and He to return to Western Paradise- Oops, I meant ascend into the Innate Level with honour."

[Return to Western Paradise literally means die in Mandarin.]

Although Feng Xiao Yun and Xue Wen Dao didn't say a word, they had been trying hard to hold their laughter in their hearts and almost burst keeping it in while watching this since it was another unexpected mistake.

Yan Qian Zhong had been counting on Elders Song and He to show their power but now he just wished to cover his face as he couldn't bear to watch any longer.

Even he felt embarrassed for both of the old men.

If he had known this earlier, he would definitely have refused to befriend the Xie Clan. They were indeed some useless fellas. Yan

Qian Zhong made a decision in his heart in that split second. He decided to break off his relation with Xie Clan. Without relying on their secret relationship, it seemed that the Xie Clan would fall devastatingly after this incident and wouldn't be able to lay their hands on the Yue Clan anymore. There were many talents among the young generation springing up in the Yue Clan. Apparently, the Yan Clan could only stay still at the fourth place as they didn't have the fate to surpass the Yue Clan.

“

“Other than congratulating Elders Song and He, the Yue Clan would also like to thank both of you for showing our Xiao-san how the younger generation should behave. Both of you are really doing a great job!” Elder Yue Hai sneered as he clapped sarcastically. Jun Wu You, Old Cunning Fox, Feng Kuang and him already knew the result earlier. They just endured silently and only launched a fatal attack right after Elders Song and He had lost their pride and prestige to repress their arrogance.

The Yue Clan's generals were clapping their hands with all their might. The clamor was ten times louder than the Xie Clan's just before.

This time the Xie Clan's guards wished to hide themselves under the ground due to great embarrassment.

Qing Song and Hei He, who had been living a luxurious life and been flattered by countless people all their lives, couldn't bear this kind of humiliating situation. Both of them were feeling so angry and embarrassed at the same time. As they were in great anger, they couldn't control their emotions and breath. They felt dizzy

and blood was coming out from their throat.

Two puffing sound were heard.

Both of them spurted out the blood and fell to the ground almost simultaneously.

Initially, Xie Tao wanted to rush out to carry Qing Song and Hei He back. Xie Tu pulled his elder brother's clothes lightly to dissuade him.

Qing Song and Hei He had been done in. They had lost their pride. If the Xie Clan get too close with them, they might even weigh the Xie Clan down. More importantly, since Elder Nan Gong wasn't here to invite Qing Song and Hei He, he would most probably invite a warrior from Yue Clan then. The biggest possibility should be Princess Qian Qian, who had the most promising future.

Although Princess Qian Qian did not yet have the Innate Strength but with her excellent natural talents, it wouldn't be a problem for her to achieve Innate level.

Elder Nan Gong appreciated those who were talented. It was not impossible for him to invite her in advance.

When Elder Nan Gong walked towards Princess Qian Qian, Xie Tu nodded his head surreptitiously thinking that he had guessed right.

Although both Elders Song and He were at the intermediate level of Level 8 [Emperor], but their potential had reached their limits and they were old. More importantly, they hadn't improved for more than ten years. If Elder Nan Gong chose them after consideration, he should have invited them earlier. As Xie Tu recalled these things now, he felt that the Xie Clan had rejoiced too early. Just like when they launched their attack on the Yue Clan this time, they had made their moves before they carried out investigations which had led to unexpected mistakes. Although the Xie Clan had someone backing them, there was still a big gap when compared with the Yue Clan who had a strong foundation. Not to mention other aspects, by just comparing the two Clan Masters, Elder Yue Hai was far more excellent than Xie Tao.

As Xie Tu observed cautiously, he found out that even the substitute Clan Master, Yue Shan who had remained calm and silent all through was also more excellent and stronger than his elder brother.

Yue Shan remained emotionless even while everyone else was cheering for Elders Song and He. Was he the Yue Shan whom his elder brother had deemed not worth to even be mentioned?

Although the incident had not ended yet, Xie Tu knew that the Xie Clan had already been defeated in this battle. Moreover, they were completely, thoroughly, utterly defeated miserably. The Xie Clan had failed due to their impetuosity and carelessness. They had made their moves eagerly without finding out the Yue Clan's strength and their hidden trumps. Then things just got out of their hands. Xie Tu was feeling fearful in his heart as he looked at the Yue Clan's Third Young Master who was surrounded by a

murderous aura like a devil king. Apparently, this brat would not let the Xie Clan off that easily. Furthermore, he had a close relationship with Princess Qian Qian... If Princess Qian Qian was invited into the Innate Alliance, the Yue Clan would also develop accordingly. The Xie Clan was in danger now.

Xie Tu closed his eyes in pain.

“Me? Are you looking for me? I am not an [Innate] and I am still far away from that.” Princess Qian Qian looked in panic at Elder Nan Gong who was walking towards her direction. She waved her hands and said, “You must be wrong.”

“Young lady, there is indeed a gap for you to reach the Innate level but the gap is very small. It’s just that you don’t know how to unleash the Innate Strength. If the young man beside you is willing to lead you towards improvement, I believe that you can break through to Innate Strength. Young lady, I believe that I can invite you not long later. Actually I am here today to invite the young man next to you.” Elder Nan Gong smiled at Princess Qian Qian. Then he nodded his head at Yue Yang and followed by a graceful courtesy that no one had seen before.

“What?” Not only Princess Qian Qian but everyone present was completely shocked.

Of course, everyone was shocked except for Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai who had seen how Yue Yang killed Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, the two Innate Rankers.

The experts in the Xie Clan almost fainted over with shock. Elder Nan Gong was here to invite the Yue Clan's Third Young Master??!

Im...Impossible!

Xie Tu felt that his heart almost broke into pieces. A sense of danger was running wild in him that made him feel extremely fearful. The impossible and scariest thing had happened. Yue Clan had an [Innate] and the [Innate] was the ruthless, murderous-looking Yue Clan Third Young Master who hated the Xie Clan. This time the Xie Clan would be in a disaster where their whole family might be exterminated. Xie Tu recalled how Yue Yang acted and spoke just now and realized that this brat might just really be an Innate, otherwise he wouldn't be so arrogant and condescending.

If it was an ordinary younger generation instead, how would they dare to threaten to kill both Elders Song and He?

Yue Shan's gaze was cold. He seemed to know the truth that Yue Yang was an [Innate]. However, his hands still couldn't help but tremble when he watched how Elder Nan Gong evaluated Yue Yang.

Eastern Sky King was stunned as he looked at Yue Yang. He couldn't respond at all for a long time.

Suddenly, he ran to Yue Yang and lifted Yue Yang up as he grabbed Yue Yang's collar. He roared at Yue Yang like a demon, "Brat, you're an [Innate]?"

Chapter 212-Greed, Insanity, Instant Kill!

Yue Yang scratched his head as he listened to Eastern Sky King's questioning. "I think I was an [Innate] before. However, my power dropped after I killed Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan."

"You killed Tu Cheng? Mother of god!"

Eastern Sky King trembled in sudden fear. He let go of Yue Yang immediately and tidied up his collar. He laughed satisfyingly. "Although I'm not an [Innate], it is good to have a son-in-law who is an [Innate]. Son-in-law, when will you marry Xiao Luo Hua?" At first, Jun Wu You was drinking water calmly but he spurted the water as soon as he heard what Eastern Sky King had said. This Eastern Sky King was way too shameless. How could he call Yue Yang as his son-in-law in such a smooth manner?

Feng Xiao Yun and Xue Wen Dao looked at each other then turned to Elder Yue Hai at the same time. They stood up together and cupped their hands at Elder Yue Hai as they congratulated him.

As for Yan Qian Li, he could not close his mouth at all.

The envoys from the Western Lion Pagoda and the Eastern Golden Crystal Palace also stood up immediately and cupped their hands at Elder Yue Hai as they congratulated him. It was normal that they had looked down on the Yue Clan last time as the Yue Clan had no [Innate] rankers. However, it was different now. The Yue Clan not only had an [Innate] but the [Innate] was only twenty

years old. What kind of concept was this? From now on, they had to value and respect the Yue Clan much more than before, no matter how their sect had treated the Yue Clan in the past.

Elder Ku Ming also felt stunned as he looked at Yue Yang. He felt surprised but he quickly resumed his former woebegone look.

(Shiro: Ku Ming in chinese means bitter and depressed. I'm really worried about these characters' parents naming sense)

The Yue Clan's Generals were the happiest ones.

At that moment, all of them were very happy and joyful. Many of them were so excited that they cried.

Finally there was an [Innate] in the Yue Clan. This was the first [Innate] in thousands of years. Their hope had finally come true after they had hoped and waited for generations.

Yue Clan, the most vulnerable Clan amongst the Four Major Clans had finally rose in power. The ancestors of the Yue Clan had put in a lot of effort just for this day. Some of them died in the battle for their clan, some lived on as they suffered in silence, some gave up on cultivating but studied Puppet Techniques in order to revive the Yue Clan, some concentrated on cultivating and memorising mantras to make a breakthrough even though their body was about to burst... Finally, they finally had an [Innate Ranker] after so many sacrifices made by the previous generations.

Although [Innate] depended on one's efforts, the Yue Clan had paid an unestimated price in order to continue their clan bloodline

and protecting their next generations.

Thousand years of sacrifices.

Their efforts were only rewarded today.

For these thousand years, it was the first time they got the payback when they thought that all their efforts had been wasted.

Hundreds of warriors and guards as well as the servants and ex-clan disciples kneeled down as they felt touched. Some of them cried bitterly. The deer-riding Fifth Grandfather also cried at this moment. Although the most gifted Yue Qiu in their clan passed away, his son who was the most useless, always got bullied by others and was mocked by the whole Soaring Dragon Continent had followed his father's footsteps towards the path of excellence and became an [Innate Ranker].

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai hugged each other with tears in their eyes at this moment.

The Da Xia and Yue Clan had been linked together since long ago with a relationship where the existence of either one of them would affect the other one as well. If one of them received glory, the other one would also be glorified and honoured. Although the Yan Clan was in the frontier of Da Xia, they were located nearer to Zi Jin Kingdom. For the Xue Clan, they had very few male bloodlines. The Feng Clan was only good at fighting duels but had no leaders. Only the Yue Clan had been serving under the Da Xia military to protect Da Xia for these thousand years continuously,

generation after generation.

If it wasn't for the three reviving heroes from the Yue Clan, perhaps Da Xia Kingdom would have been downgraded to a third-rate small kingdom now.

At first, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai had given up all their hope after the most gifted person in these hundred years, Yue Qiu, died in battle.

They didn't expect that Yue Yang, who was still so young, had actually endured silently while cultivating secretly as he bore with the criticisms such as 'useless' and 'idiot' for these fifteen years and had finally reached the Innate Realm. Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and Feng Kuang were still feeling touched from this unexpected surprise although they drank until they were dead drunk after they got to know it on the day Yue Yang defeated Tu Cheng.

He was definitely a gifted child from God.

Although the gifted Yue Qiu had passed away, God didn't treat the Yue Clan unfairly as he compensated them with a more talented gift, Yue Yang.

"Is it true that you've reach the Innate level?" Princess Qian Qian asked as she grabbed Yue Yang's collar as soon as Eastern Sky King put Yue Yang down. She stared at Yue Yang with her fierce tigress eyes. "When did that happen? Brat, have you deceived me all this while? See if I don't beat you into a pulp!"

“How could I dare to cheat you? You know that I am very scared of tigress!” Yue Yang smiled but it was a crooked smile. Princess Qian Qian blushed and put him down immediately.

“Brat, did you really want me to beat you up? I will sort you out later!” Princess Qian Qian was about to punch Yue Yang with her fist but she hurriedly pretended to be a well-behaved child as she saw all the elders were looking at her direction. She tidied up Yue Yang’s collar exactly like how Eastern Sky King did, annoying him on purpose, “You don’t look like an [Innate] at all. How could a pervert like you be an [Innate]? The way I see it, Elder Nan Gong must have recognised the wrong person.”

”No, it can’t be wrong. Elder brother is an [Innate] for sure!” Yue Bing denied it immediately, afraid that Princess Qian Qian’s words were actually right.

“Xiao San, why didn’t you tell me about this earlier? Boo hoo...I am too happy right now!” Yue Yu’s emotions were so stirred up that she covered her face as she cried out loudly. Her tears overflowed, slipping through her fingers.

As for Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, both of them hugged each other tightly and bounced up and down to express their intense happiness.

They couldn’t believe it. It was like a dream.

However, they would rather never wake up from this dream,

hoping that this beautiful dream would continue forever.

The guards from the Xie Clan sat down dejectedly. All of them were feeling down and sad while the Yue Clan were feeling happy and joyful. They really wanted to cry, but no tears could flow out of their eyes.

Xie Tao, Xie Tu and Xie Nu looked extremely gloomy and depressed. It was too late for them to even regret their actions. If only they hadn't been impatient and used force on the Yue Clan impetuously, if only they had investigated clearly, if only they hadn't sought help from Elder Song and He from the Green Summit Clan, if only they hadn't invited all the high-ranked warriors from the Zi Jin Kingdom to besiege the Yue Clan... They had made so many mistakes and any one of these was enough to kill them. What should they do now?

Although Xie Tu was the wisest person in the Xie Clan, not even he himself could think of a way out now.

“Yue Yang, son of the Yue Clan, I, as the Chief of the Ten Council Members of the Innate Alliance, would like to invite you to join our Innate Alliance. Please go to Xuan Yuan Residence at Level Six of the Tong Tian Tower on the eighteenth in nine months time. This Innate Heavenly Badge is exclusive for you and it can prove your identity as an Innate Ranker.” Elder Nan Gong handed a dazzling Heavenly Badge to Yue Yang. There were ancient runes carved on the edge of the badge. The badge was decorated with a moon and two diamond-like stars. The radiance of the stars were so dazzling that people could barely look at it. Everyone look at it with devotion and admiration. The badge symbolized the status of

an Innate Ranker. Every person looked forward to it even if it was just Innate Level 1.

There were so many warriors in the world.

However, only very few of them could get this kind of Innate Heavenly Badge.

Usually, it took more than decades or even centuries for an [Innate] to be born. The existence of an [Innate] who was as young as Yue Yang was absolutely unprecedented in history.

Elder Yue Hai and the rest surrounded the badge. Although they couldn't reach Innate level, it wasn't bad to have a closer look at the badge.

While all of them were admiring the badge excitedly, Qing Song and Hei He suddenly threw themselves at Yue Yang with a villainous look. It seemed that they wanted to take away the badge forcibly. Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Old Cunning Fox, Feng Kuang and Hawk-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie were extremely angry. Had these two old fellas gone crazy? How could they forcibly take away the Innate Heavenly Badge? All of them gathered their maximum combat strength and prepared to give the two old fellas a fatal attack together.

Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and Yan Qian Li also gathered beside Yue Yang.

They too would attack if Qing Song and Hei He wanted to take away the badge forcibly.

Even the Dragon Ambassador Bi Bo from the Eastern Ocean Palace, the red-haired man from Western Lion Pagoda and Elder Ku Ming from the Southern Mountain Floating Mist Sect summoned their beasts out on the spot and got ready to launch their attacks to stop this kind of insane act.

If the Innate Heavenly Badge was forcibly taken by others in front of all the people here, it would be a disgrace for the Soaring Dragon Continent once the incident was spread out.

“Elders Song and He, you can’t do this!” Xie Tu and Xie Nu, the two Level 7 [Overlord]s, rushed out and held Qing Song and Hei He’s thighs tightly.

“That badge is ours! This brat only has the power of Level 6 [Elder] at most. He is not qualified to acquire the Innate Heavenly Badge. It belongs to us. We are the ones who are the nearest to Innate Realm among all the people here. Don’t tell me that both of us aren’t as capable as a kid! I refuse to accept this. The Innate Heavenly Badge is mine. I’ve cultivated for two hundred and fifty years. For what reason can this brat take away the badge which is supposed to be mine?” Qing Song’s eyes got red as he roared frantically.

As he shook his legs, an explosive shock wave was launched.

Xie Tu spat out blood due to the shock wave but he still didn’t

want to let go of Qing Song's thigh. Qing Song pulled Xie Tu's hand forcibly and threw him away without difficulty.

On the other side, Xie Nu hurriedly escaped before Hei He made his move.

He realized that Elder Song and He had gone completely crazy. Losing their opportunity to be [Innate] rankers was a huge shock for both of them. First, they had been humiliated and then they felt extreme envy. These two seniors who had been respected by the warriors couldn't control their greed anymore and turned into two madmen who acted unscrupulously.

Yue Yang pushed everyone who was trying to protect him aside lightly and walked out from the crowd.

He reached out his hands to the red-eyed Qing Song and Hei He. He opened his palm and showed them the Innate Heavenly Badge. "The badge is here. Take it if you can."

"Youngster, go to hell!" Qing Song and Hei He summoned their beasts respectively. The imposing manner was so strong that it was like being struck by a hurricane. It blew all the warriors below Level 6 [Elder] away. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers could barely stand still after they were blown to more than ten meters away. Since Yue Bing used to maintain herself in a battle ready state at all times as directed by Yue Yang, she summoned her grimoire in an extremely fast and ingenious manner as soon as Qing Song and Hei He launched their attack. Even Elder Nan Gong had glanced at her either accidentally or intentionally as he was impressed with her performance.

Qing Song and Hei He ferociously launched their attacks, packed with power as strong as a hurricane's.

Everyone realized that these two fellas had gone completely insane.

Suddenly, two silver light streaked across the sky like meteor and shot right towards Qing Song and Hei He's back just as everyone protecting Yue Yang was about to launch their attacks on the two Elders.

A small hand appeared. In the perspective of Jun Wu You and the rest, this small hand felt like a giant dragon's claw. It pressed on the back of Qing Song's head, who was charging forward to kill Yue Yang, pushing him down onto the ground easily.

On the other side, the same movement had also happened at the same time with Hei He. He was also pushed onto the ground as a small hand pushed his head from the back hard onto the ground.

The earth shook incessantly, but there was no sound of explosion.

However, the crowd could still hear a dull trembling sound from underground for a long time. It sounded like there was an ancient giant beast digging in the underground continuously.

When the smoke and dust slightly settled, the crowd of people

could see the two heroic and valiant-looking, silver-winged female Guards dressed in silver armors. Each of them were stepping on Qing Song and Hei He who had the power of Level 8 [Emperor] down onto the ground respectively.

Qing Song and Hei He who were Level 8 [Emperor] were just like a worm in front of them. Neither of them could retreat nor withstand their attacks.

They couldn't even gather the strength to struggle at all.

“Elder Nan Gong, the two of them dared to attack an [Innate]. May we ask, do you wish to kill them?” The silver-winged, silver-armoured female guard on the right stood up and threw Qing Song whose bones were all fractured onto the ground as easy as if she was just throwing rubbish on the ground before she greeted and sought permission from Elder Nan Gong.

“Let's punish them after this.” Elder Nan Gong only looked at Yue Yang as if he didn't notice Qing Song and Hei He's presence at all. He smiled as he asked, “Little friend Yue Yang, do you wish to join the Innate Alliance now or stay in Soaring Dragon Continent for a period of time and only join us nine months later? You can leave with me now if you like. You will get everything that an Innate Ranker would have. I personally wish that you can come with me now because you need to learn a lot of things. It will be better if you join us nine months in advance instead of staying here. If you stay here, your environment might not be suitable for you to cultivate and upgrade your power. Of course, I will definitely respect your decision. So, may I know what is your decision?”

Everyone was looking at Yue Yang and waiting for his reply.

In Yue Bing's thoughts, she would definitely hate to part with her elder brother. However, she didn't want to obstruct her elder brother's future. Therefore, she looked at her brother encouragingly instead.

“Do I have to pay any membership fees if I join the Innate Alliance? I don't want to join if I have to pay. Oh yea, what is the benefit of being an Innate Ranker? Are there any welcoming gifts such as artifacts and mythological beast?” Yue Yang asked after he tucked away his Innate Heavenly Badge.

Yue Yang's words was like a bolt out of the blue for everyone present.

Others dreamt of being invited to Innate Alliance their whole life, but he, on the other hand, had came out with terms and conditions instead.

Chapter 213 – Dragon Ladies? I Don't Need You, I Have Many Beauties

“There's no need to pay any fee. When new members join us, not only will we not demand anything from them, we will also provide them with some supplies for free so that the new member can quickly adapt to and experience Tong Tian Tower. At the same time, we also ask the new member to sign a contract to refrain from unleashing their power under normal circumstances. As the difference in strength between Innate Rankers and normal people is far too great, it's too easy for them to cause catastrophic harm and mass casualties of warriors on the Soaring Dragon Continent. Thus, under normal circumstances, we request that all Innate Rankers abide by the contract and try their best not to do anything in the Soaring Dragon Continent. At the upper floors of Tong Tian Tower, there's a world that's a million times bigger than the Soaring Dragon Continent. Innate Rankers will have to rely on their own strength to acquire their own territory. Over there, you can do whatever you please without being restricted. The Innate Contract is only effective on the Soaring Dragon Continent. This is also the protection that we offer as the Innate Alliance to the Soaring Dragon Continent.” Elder Nan Gong patiently explained to Yue Yang.

“That I can't do, what if someone wants to kill me just like those two maniacs? If I don't retaliate, then do I just extend my neck and let them chop it off?” Yue Yang was not happy and opposed the notion.

“Whoever conspired to harm Innate Rankers, no matter what kind of reason or purpose they have, Innate Rankers have the right to annihilate them!” Elder Nan Gong replied determinedly.

Hearing this, the Xie Clan's people trembled.

They were in deep trouble now. They were completely at the Yue Yang's mercy.

Although Yue Yang did not have the time to care about them right now, Xie Tu and the others did not dare to slip away silently. If those two silver-winged and silver-armoured female guards attacked again, the Xie Clan might turn into ashes! It was absolutely impossible for normal warriors to contend against Innate Rankers. Xie Tu had already made the decision to cut his losses and protect the Xie Clan as best as he could...

Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong and the others all perked up their ears to listen to this. It was, after all, a rare opportunity.

Normally speaking, Elder Nan Gong would silently come down to the Soaring Dragon Continent. It was an extremely rare opportunity to see him invite Yue Yang so openly in front of others.

Everyone had gained more knowledge on the Innate realm too. Although they might not be able to ascend to the Innate realm, there was at least some form of hope present there. Not only that, but the accumulation of such knowledge would be exceedingly useful for future generations.

All they longed for was for Yue Yang to ask a little more, so that

they could understand a little more.

This brat Yue Yang was already an Innate Ranker through and through. It was far too late for everyone even if they wanted to be jealous of him. If they wanted to play any tricks, they would be courting death already. The only solution was to renew and rebuild ties with the Yue Clan. The rise of the Yue Clan was already impossible to stop. Even if this Innate Ranker Yue Yang did not meddle in the affairs of the Yue Clan, the Yue Clan would be worry-free as long as he existed... Situations like today, where the Xie Clan collaborated with the Zi Jin Empire's warriors to assault the Yue Clan Castle would never happen again.

As for the Xie Clan, everyone knew that they had become pigs ready for slaughter under Yue Yang's blade.

The Xie Clan's people would die a horrifying death, but it was not at all unjust.

After all, they were just dead men walking while exposing their idiocy... Nobody had ever seen idiots who mistook siblings as an adulterous couple, nor had anyone seen suckers who called the princess a bitch in front of the emperor, not to mention the morons who dared to try snatching the Innate Heavenly Badge right in front of the Innate Ranker!

They had brought everything upon themselves with their own hands!

“What's up with these two girls?” Yue Yang's Level 4 [Divine

Vision] had identified some secrets behind those two silver-winged female guards and he was extremely curious about them.

“If a new Innate moves to the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower for the first time, they may perhaps fall into an endless string of battles, causing them to be unable to cultivate. Therefore, the Innate Alliance will introduce a few “Senior Combat Imperial Guards” to the new Innate that can be hired to support the Innate and manage various tasks. Their strength can range from the Soaring Dragon Continent’s Level 6 to Level 9 or even Innate level rankers. Every “Senior Combat Imperial Guard” has different abilities and the criteria for being able to hire each one of them is also different. Normally speaking, the stronger they are, the harder it is to hire them.” Elder Nan Gong patiently explained.

“Then, are they the mercenaries that you’re recommending me to hire? Senior Combat Imperial Guards? Then how much money are they going for?” Yue Yang was interested in hiring beauties. Furthermore, these two beauties could really fight!

“They’re priceless. They aren’t “Senior Combat Imperial Guards”; they are “War God Guards” with a far greater intellect and potential. Normally speaking, they will choose an Innate Ranker to support on their own accord based on the potential displayed by the Innate Ranker and improve alongside them. It’s impossible for ordinary Innate Rankers to own a “War God Guard”!” Elder Nan Gong’s words caused the crowd to drool with envy.

From Elder Nan Gong’s words, a conclusion could be reached.

That was... this brat Yue Yang was not an ordinary Innate, but an Innate with extremely great potential. After all, Elder Nan Gong had brought with him War God Guards that even other Innates didn't have!

The only person who felt a little jealous was Princess Qian Qian. This brat was originally a casanova and completely a huge pervert.

Now that two absolutely beautiful War God Guards was going to be given to him, what would happen?

If this went on, it would be weird if he didn't forget the person that was originally in his heart... This was extremely bad. Were there no ugly ones among the ranks of the War God Guards?

Princess Qian Qian was imagining things in her head, causing her to feel sour. Originally, she wanted to reject them in Yue Yang's stead. However, she wasn't related to him in any way at all, causing her to feel frustrated.

"Then have they fancied me? Are they free of charge?" Yue Yang had a perverted delusion and was feeling great already. All this time, he had always been most loved by little lolis while oneesans looked upon him with hostility. Never once had he seen an oneesan who had fallen in love with him at first sight. His charm could only win over little lolis.

Now, his luck had finally turned.

Onesans finally came to him!

The Innate Realm was really powerful! Without even going in, beauties had already come knocking on his door. This kind of life was really too blissful (TL: Sexual innuendo)...Yue Yang was so moved to the point where he was almost going to cry.

“Yue Yang, my little friend, these two are the War God Guards that the Zhi Zun has personally picked for you. I think they probably don’t know you at all. If you have any questions, you can ask them directly.” Elder Nan Gong coughed lightly. He really wanted to remind this fellow not to have such a wild imagination. Even if he had potential, at Tong Tian Tower’s sixth floor and above, who would know that there was a young Innate below on the Soaring Dragon Continent who had great potential? If not for “her” giving him two of the War God Guards she had by her side, how would he have gotten War God Guards before even entering the Innate Alliance? That was definitely impossible!

(Shiro: Zhi Zun is Yue Yang’s Introducer, Phoenix Fairy’s sister. I’m going to call her Zhi Zun for now, but I think Zhi Zun is more of her title, instead of her real name. But I’m just going to use Zhi Zun for simplicity’s sake.)

“Both of us are dragon ladies from the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Although we have Zhi Zun orders, we are not completely sure that you are the master that we have to follow. We have to find an Innate Ranker that could help us improve our own powers. Right now, we still couldn’t confirm that you have that kind of capabilities. Hence, we will not form a contract with you immediately right now, unless you could prove to us that your abilities are stronger than ours!” The heroic-looking War God Guard on the left spoke up, pouring cold water on Yue Yang’s

spirits in an instant. Seemed like they still didn't want to follow orders, they had their own thought.

“We won't necessarily contract with you, you know!” The right War God Guard's character was not as serious as the left; she was cuter.

“Only if you test your potential on the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower and verify that you are helpful to us later on will we consider.” The left War God Guard stated another condition.

“We'll only consider, you know!” The right War God Guard added cutely again.

“Annoying, that's so troublesome! Ah... Forget it. You can go back now, I have a lot of beauties by my side. I don't care about War God Guards or whatever... Aren't they just two dragon ladies? There's nothing for you to be so arrogant about! I will only say one sentence: This Young Master don't need you!” Yue Yang waved his hands very manlily. However, although he looked carefree on the outside, his heart was bleeding profusely. They were two high-quality Dragon Ladies! He was really a fool to send them back home just like that!

“Ah...” Fatty Hai and Ye Kong was thoroughly shaken. Why didn't he want those War God Guards when they were given to him?

“This...” Let alone them, even Elder Yue Hai, Jun Wu You and the others also felt extremely confused. What was wrong with this

brat? How could he even push War God Guards away?

“What a useless manly pride!” Princess Qian Qian had her super sensitive [Six Records] Inherent Skill, she could hear from Yue Yang’s tone that he was saying that without meaning it. It was not that this brat wanted to ignore the War god Guards, it was just that those War God Guards’ words had hurt his manly pride. Hence, he would rather reject them than listen to their conditions. Even if they wanted to talk about conditions, he as the master should be the one to decide them. Otherwise, he would rather not have them. Right now, Princess Qian Qian finally could understand what kind of person Yue Yang was a little. She revealed a small smile on her mouth. She wanted to laugh, but she was afraid that he would get angry with her. She nudged him with her fist a little, and when Yue Yang glared at her, Princess Qian Qian smiled gently at him, “I support you. Even though you lost two girls, I shall compensate you with Luo Hua, Wu Xia, and one more additional girl, Yi Nan!”

“Those girls were originally mine...” Thinking that he still had City Mistress Luo Hua, the mysterious beauty and Sister Yi Nan, Yue Yang felt better inside.

“Since you have said that, can we go back? You really don’t want to follow us back to Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor to test your potential? Can we really go?” The left side War God Guard asked Yue yang, looking as if she was surprised at his hostile behaviour, driving them away.

“Not gonna send you off!” Yue Yang acted strong and stubborn till the end on the outside, but he really wanted to beat himself up in his heart.

They were such a high quality Dragon Ladies onesies! He was about to give them up just like that.

Princess Qian Qian had really guessed his heart right. All for the sake of his useless manly pride, he had given up the two Dragon Ladies. He could have gotten the both of them, but there was no hope for it now!

Elder Nan Gong suddenly clapped his hands and praised Yue Yang, “Yue Yang, Zhi Zun has mentioned you a few times to me before. She said that you are someone who likes freedom. Your actions are unpredictable, your thoughts are flexible, you are determined to be free and hated binding rules and regulations. Now that I see you in person, she has really described you correctly. However, I can guarantee you that the contract in the Innate Alliance is definitely not a regulation that binds Innate Rankers. They are some kind of protection for the Soaring Dragon Continent... Let me put it this way, before you become an Innate, if it wasn't for the Innate Contract, countless enemies would have tried to kill you. Would you still be here today then? Hence, we have to restrict Innate Ranker's actions in the Soaring Dragon Continent. If it is on another place instead, Innate Rankers could act as they wish. As long as they have the strength, Innates can do whatever they wished to do, there are no limitations at all. It would be freer than staying in the Soaring Dragon Continent.”

Although Yue Yang's resolution was a little bit shaken, he would definitely not want to be bullied in Tong Tian Tower Sixth Level.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, he would not meet a lot of

enemies.

Other than Heavenly Imperial Guardians, those strong rankers, others wouldn't even be able to pose as a threat to his life. But it was different at Tong Tian Tower Sixth Level. The Thousand Goblins Sect were waiting to pick a fight with him there. Before he had the strength of an Innate Level 5, he would definitely not go to Tong Tian Tower Sixth Level. Otherwise, he might even fall into that Thousand Goblins Sect Leader's sinister trap.

Although chasing girls are important, his safety comes first!

Only when there is life, there are girls. If he died, then Luo Hua and the others would become widows, wouldn't that be sad...

The more serious and strict looking War God Guard on the left flew over to his side and gave Yue Yang a crescent-shaped platinum ornament thing, and said, "Zhi Zun said that if you rejected our request, then we should give this to you!" Yue Yang sweated. Could it be that that mysterious Introducer oneesan had already known that he would reject them from the beginning?

"What is this?"

Yue Yang realized that although this thing looked as simple and ordinary as his Black Jade Pendant, in reality, it was an Artifact that he couldn't see through even with his Level 4 [Divine Vision].

The War God Guard on the right with a cuter personality nodded

and said with her usual way of speaking, “It’s a nice thing, you know!”

Chapter 214 – Girl, I’ll Give You A Smile!

Nice thing?

Of course he must receive it! Yue Yang didn’t hesitate for even a second.

Princess Qian Qian was actually very curious about the Crescent Platinum Ornament. Just as she was about to take a closer look, the stingy brat had immediately tucked it away. She really wanted to throttle him.

Elder Nan Gong paid respect to Jun Wu You slightly before turning towards Yue Yang and gracefully spoke to him, with a manner as if he regarded Yue Yang as a fellow Innate Ranker, “Yue Yang, since you have decided to stay in the Soaring Dragon Continent, I shall see you again in nine months!”

Yue Yang thought, nine months later, if his powers had not reached Innate Level 5, he would not go and sign whatever Innate Alliance Contract he should be signing.

It was not a must to sign it anyway, who would have time for that?

On the Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor, there was sinister-looking Thousand Goblin Sect Leader looking for a fight with him, like a tiger watching its prey.

However, it was a different case if that mysterious oneesan Introducer could personally send him off to sign the contract... At that time, he might even be able to see Night Empress' real face and smell Phoenix Fairy's body closely! Was that smell on her body really a virgin's smell? He must make sure of this matter no matter what. If it was really a virgin smell, he might as well push Phoenix Fairy down too. It was her own fault for always making fun of him all this time.

Even if he didn't push her down, she would probably push him down sooner or later...

At this time, while Yue Yang was lost in his imagination, Elder Nan Gong had already bid farewell to the rest of the people and was about to leave

The two War God Guards also each opened a teleportation scroll. Before they left, both of them turned towards Yue Yang at the same time, coincidentally.

They had complicated expressions on their faces.

Princess Qian Qian felt that she must be alert with this kind of expressions in the future. This brat already had too many girls at his side, if these two dragon girls joined in too, she wouldn't even have a position to stand. Hence, she had to warn him not to turn out like her father, that incapable monarch who had three or four wives. If it were only her friends, she could still bear with it, but she hoped he wouldn't build a large harem in the future. Otherwise, she would definitely fight him to death!

“What are you daydreaming about? They are already gone!” Princess Qian Qian nudged Yue Yang’s forehead with her fingers lightly.

“I was thinking how much is the reward for the winner of Hundred Schools Elite Tournament...” When Yue Yang said this, the crowd of people was immediately shaken. This brat was already an Innate, why would he join the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament? How would others even fight against him? They would probably only be bullied to death!

“Rest assured, I have signed your name up since long ago, one for the Team Matches and the other for Individual Overall Matches... It was a pity that you had no interest at that time, otherwise, you could also participate in the Individual Combat Skills matches or Individual Beast Matches. This way, you could snag all three championships.” Fatty Hai reported without any regrets. He had already known that Yue Yang had the power to win the tournament, but at that time, Yue Yang had no interest whatsoever to participate in the competition. Hence, he had signed Yue Yang’s name up on his behalf.

“Brat, are you really going to compete?” Even the old cunning fox disapproved that notion.

Although the cunning fox really wanted Ivy Academy to win, he felt that it would be really unfair if Yue Yang, an Innate, participated in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. It was practically bullying.

What would happen if he bullied other kids too much and made them cry?

When Yue Yang heard this, he immediately refuted, “Hey, am I not a student? I also have the rights to participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, you know? As long as I am a student, I have the rights to participate. There are no rules stating that Innates can’t participate! Furthermore, I currently don’t have Innate powers, I have overused my powers too much when I killed Tu Cheng. Right now, even that Xie Clan Master’s son Xie Qian Qiu, that upholder of justice, could easily kill me in an instant. I have risked my life to participate in the competition, how could you disapprove of me instead of supporting me?”

Everyone started sweating speechlessly. Let alone Xie Qian Qiu, even if all the Xie Clan banded together, they would probably not be able to pinch one of this brat’s fingers.

He probably said all this in order to pick a fight with the Xie Clan.

Right now, the Xie Clan was like a stray dog. Nobody wanted to speak up and help them.

Going against an Innate, were they tired of living? Let alone others, even the Zi Jin warriors that were helping the Xie Clan, those Level 6 [Elders] and Level 7 [Overlords] had all quietly left the Xie Clan, drawing a line separating themselves and the Xie Clan.

The Yue Clan that did not have an Innate Ranker would be easy

to bully, but the Yue Clan who had an Innate Ranker now was like a ferocious tiger that preys on humans. Whoever went against them would definitely be killed.

Even a fool wouldn't help the Xie Clan fight against the Yue Clan.

“I was wrong! Boo hoo... I have a pig-heart, I forget my benefactors, I am not a person... Old Marshall, on behalf of that time where you lead us all in wars, please spare the Xie Clan and leave us with a way to survive. I beg for your forgiveness, I will kowtow to you!” Xie Tao suddenly kneeled and wept bitterly, then started slapping his face left and right continuously. His face that was continuously slapped began to swell like a pig's face. With blood streaming down from his nose, Xie Tao crawled towards Elder Yue Hai's feet and kowtowed non-stop. Even he, who held a high status as a Clan Master, had behaved in a “If you don't forgive me, I'll cry to my death in front of you” manner.

Xie Tu and Xie Nu signalled to the whole of Xie Clan members and guards to kneel down.

The shame of kneeling down was insignificant compared to the annihilation of their clan.

With so many warriors present, even if Elder Yue Hai was ruthless, he wouldn't order his army to annihilate the Xie Clan. No matter how harsh their punishment would be, it wouldn't be as harsh as annihilation of the whole clan!

On the contrary, if they stayed resistant and stubborn to the end,

they believed that Yue Yang, that Innate, would not even need to attack them personally, as the warriors amongst the audience would take the initiative to attack them instead. They would probably get rid of Xie Clan in a short while... The annihilation of Xie Clan was not a bad thing to them anyway. This way, they would have one less rival to fight with.

“Grandpa, I’ll leave it to you to settle this. Personally, I feel that you should punish them severely.” Yue Yang clutched the barely breathing Qing Song and Hei He flower fertiliser, turned around and left.

Yue Yang’s manners and actions were extremely appropriate.

As an Innate, his words were regarded as important. Elder Yue Hai could use his words as an excuse. The Xie Clan wanted to escape their punishment completely? That’s impossible! However, Yue Yang was of the younger generation. If he personally butchered the Xie Clan under the watch of so many people, the older generations would definitely feel awkward. It would also leave the others with a dark impression of the Yue Clan that would not be changed very easily. Right now, by turning away and leaving, he showed that he, as an Innate, would not care about managing these simple matters. This action of his had saved a lot of people their honour and reputation. The crowd would definitely be grateful to him.

Elder Yue Hai glanced at Yue Yang and nodded quietly.

This matter, if Yue Qiu, his son, were the one to handle it, he would definitely not be able to handle it in such a way. He had a

very upright personality, so he did not understand and also did not like to use his position to his advantage.

Xiao-san, on the other hand, was definitely more outstanding than his father... Jun Wu You and the old fox nodded their heads at each other quietly. Even the Zhang Fei-like Eastern Sky King's lighted up. Other than them, those who had realized what had happened included Xue Wen Dao from the Xue Clan, Feng Shao Yun from the Feng Clan and Yan Qian Zhong from the Yan Clan.

In the Xie Clan, only Xie Tu felt joyful when he heard Yue Yang's words, instead of feeling bitter.

If Yue Yang simply left without saying anything, Xie Tu believed that Yue Yang would get involved with the Xie Clan in the near future and annihilate their whole Clan. Xie Tu truly believed that this Yue Clan Third Young Master was someone who was ruthless enough to destroy his enemies from their roots... Now that he had said "punish them severely" instead, other than taking into consideration the Xie Clan's position, he had also left them with a way to survive. He showed them the kindness and benevolence of the Yue Clan.

Leaving this matter to Marshall Yue to settle was his biggest kindness.

If it was left up to Marshall Yue, the Xie Clan would definitely not be annihilated. Xie Tu sighed in relief as he looked at Yue Yang's retreating back, a strand of gratitude surfaced in his eyes.

If he was the Innate instead, he would definitely not let his enemies get away so easily.

This might just be the reason why Yue Yang could be an Innate at such a young age; and the reason why he, who had trained and cultivated for many years, could only amount to a Level 7 [Overlord]!

Elder Yue Hai stated his first condition, and that was to ask everyone present to keep the fact that Yue Yang was an Innate a secret. Elder Yue Hai knew that he wouldn't be able to hide this matter for long, but he would try to hide this secret for as long as he could. His precious grandson still had a lot of things to do in the Soaring Dragon Continent, announcing his powers publicly would not be a good thing. At least, Elder Yue Hai thought that he should prevent this matter from being publicly announced to the world. As for the people secretly passing this information to the others, he knew that he couldn't control it 100%. He could only prohibit them from doing it...

Princess Qian Qian and the others did not stay at the Yue Clan Village to see how Elder Yue Hai would punish the Xie Clan. Instead, they quickly followed Yue Yang.

They were all very curious. How could Yue Yang be an innate at such a young age?

Yue Bing and Yue Yu couldn't understand at all, but Princess Qian Qian thought that Yue Yang becoming an Innate must have something to do with the Ancient Runes on the cliff at the Cloud Peak Lake. Of course, it would also have something to do with Yue

Yang's own talents and strength. Countless people had tried to climb that steep cliff, but only he himself could trigger the activation of the Ancient Runes Magic Circle. He had even helped the others to benefit from the Runes!

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers almost went insane with happiness. They couldn't imagine how Yue Yang could turn into an innate ranker, but they couldn't be bothered to ask.

They only knew that they would definitely have a bright future if they followed Yue Yang!

"Are you really going to participate in that Hundred Schools Elite Tournament? Isn't that really boring? Why don't we go and complete the World's Tree Quest instead? Also, are you not going to clear the Gemini Temple Trial anymore?" Princess Qian Qian didn't want to participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, because her powers was already unrivalled amongst the competitors.

"Qian Qian, this year's tournament will be different from last year's. The champion this year will not be one of the Three Great Killing Stars anymore, but the Three New Stars instead! The one with the highest odds of winning is a Junior [Elder] from the Floating Mist Sect; the second is a prince from the Zi Jin Kingdom, a favourite disciple from the Western Lion Pagoda Sect. It is said that he is an extremely gifted and strong warrior, the first person who is able to defeat three elders from the Western Lion Pagoda. His powers should not be belittled." Yue Yu's words was to secretly hint at Princess Qian Qian that her pursuer would be coming too, so she should not be fighting with Yue Yang about this matter

later.

“Alright then, I will also participate... However, I will only participate in the Team Match!” Princess Qian Qian looked at Yue Yu full of gratitude, and the two girls smiled at each other.

“Who is the third new star then?” Yue Bing asked enthusiastically.

“He’s the prince of the Tian Luo Kingdom. It was said that the whole female student body voted him as the most handsome-looking man on earth. His smile could make girls faint on the spot, and when he walks on the street, he could make a lot of people bump into carriages, walls, poles etc. In any case, no matter if it is a girl or a guy, everyone will not be able to help but sigh in adoration at his sight. It’s a pity that the Tian Luo Prince is an Ice Prince. He did not have any interest in anyone, he only cared about cultivating and training his beasts. Otherwise, girls would probably have lined up in front of him to offer themselves on a platter, allowing him to choose whoever he liked!” Yue Yu’s words faintly reminded Princess Qian Qian not to look at handsome guys. Yue Yu could see that her little brother’s jealousy was even more deadly than a tsunami.

“Aren’t you over-exaggerating?” Princess Qian Qian expressed her disbelief, but she had also caught Yue Yu’s signal and made a mental note not to talk about handsome guys in front of Yue Yang in the future. This brat’s tolerance was really weak. Furthermore, this brat didn’t look that bad appearance wise. Although his looks were not that handsome to the point where he could make people faint on the spot, his looks grew on people. People would like him

more and more the more they look at him. Yue Yang's handsomeness belong to the 'bad boy' type and was well worth a second look!

Princess Qian Qian felt that if only this brat wouldn't act like a big pervert every single day, if only he could act serious and honorable, his handsomeness level would immediately shot up ten times higher.

Yue Yang didn't know what was going on within Yue Yu's and Princess Qian Qian's minds, he couldn't tell the hidden conversation between the close friends.

However, he was immediately unhappy upon hearing that someone was more handsome than him, "I hate anyone who could be more handsome than me. I will kill him on the spot!" When Fatty Hai heard Yue Yang's words that was full of jealousy and killing intent, he jumped in fright. Patting his chest, he said, "Fortunately, I looked like this. Seems like looking like this is also a form of fortune!"

But Ye Kong was suspicious, "I think handsomeness is subjective? Girls' definition of handsome boys are more often the weaker, more refined scholars. We, as guys, wouldn't think that those guys are handsome."

"Three Great Killing Stars and Three Great New Stars, this year's Hundred Schools Elite Tournament will definitely be fun!" Yue Bing felt that the more skilled warriors there were, the better it would be for her brother's reputation when he managed to defeat all of them.

“It’s not only those 6 experts, there is also the Holy Spear Female Knights Team from the Tian Luo Fragrance Academy, Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace and the others. They are all favourites for the winner of the championship. At the thief guild’s bets, their odds of winning are almost as high as the Three Great Killing Stars.” Yue Yang didn’t doubt Yue Yu’s words at all, but he was a little confused. How could there be so many appearances of strong, young warriors suddenly?

“People would usually cultivate their strong, young warriors in secret, but due to the worsening situation in the Soaring Dragon Continent, as the battle between Kingdoms became even more heated, Kingdoms started to dispatch their younger generations... They considered this championship as a test of skills!” Princess Qian Qian was aware that the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament wasn’t that simple.

It had secretly become the chessboard for various Kingdoms to play their pawns.

Their strongest younger generations had instead become their Kingdoms pawn to try out other Kingdom’s abilities.

The only ones who joined the tournament without any political motives might only just be Yue Yang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Clan Brothers and the others.

Yue Yang thought quietly. Not many days was left before the

start of Tournament, if he start preparing today, maybe he could still make it. Yue Yang didn't have to prepare much for himself, but he needed to train Yue Bing, and he would also need to give a few pointers to Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others.

Returning back to the First Floor of tong Tian tower, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai went to complete the Bison's Grain Quest. They had to collect 10 Bison's King horns.

Yue Bing followed Yue Yang and entered the Gemini Temple multiple times. Although they had to quickly escape from Gemini Temple afterwards, Yue Yang had confirmed a lot of things in his heart. He had even discovered that Yue Yu's Grandmaster had not noticed one tiny problem. With regards to the matter of clearing Gemini Temple, Yue Yang started to have confidence in clearing it. But he had to prepare a lot of stuff to truly clear it. He had to spend 100 times more the effort to prepare for the gemini Temple than to prepare for the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament.

For example, one important thing was to ask Luo Hua City Mistress to teach him how to train his body to enter into a death-like coma state.

If he couldn't do this, he wouldn't be able to defeat the Shadow.

My dear Luo Hua City Mistress: The most beautiful Luo Hua of my heart, I miss you. Time passed so quickly, it has almost been one month without you. Your servant would like to remind Her Highness, the most beautiful City Mistress, that you haven't paid my salary yet... I hope that before I died of hunger or of missing you in the Windchime Inn, I could see your beautiful figure again.

Yue Yang wrote a letter to Luo Hua City Mistress, and even signed off with “Your most trusted, loyal Personal Guard who is willing to work overtime to warm your bed”.

Princess Qian Qian didn't have any opinion on Yue Yang's sign off, but she was deeply unsatisfied with three words from the letter's first sentence.

She felt that it would be better to strike off “the most beautiful” or change that phrase to something else.

Towards this opinion, Yue Yang's reply was, “Shoo, shoo. Stay away from this Young Master, don't hinder me from chasing after girls! If you want, I can also chase after you, but you always put on your princess airs. It's not easy for me to write a love letter to chase girls, you know?”

“What did you say?” Princess Qian Qian immediately raised her fist. She didn't care if Yue Yang was an Innate. Whoever dared to take liberties with herself, she would first beat them up and hear their explanation later on.

“Don't be angry, girl. I'll give you a smile!” Yue Yang saw that the situation was not good. He didn't know about the vinegar jars on the outside, but the vinegar jar right over here was about to overflow. He immediately utilised thirty-six ways of undressing, ah, no, he meant thirty-six ways of flattering, deciding to first capture the tigress for his future blissful sexual life and think about the consequences later. It was indeed effective, once Yue Yang

unleashed his Flattery Technique, Princess Qian Qian immediately spurted out a giggle, amused by him.

In the end, she used her tigress eyes to grant him a magnificent roll-eye.

Her girlish actions almost made Yue Yang's bones crumble on the spot... Goodness, if this tigress could act cutely like this, she was really undefeatable!

Chapter 215 – Using Wisdom To Clear Gemini Temple

Luo Hua City Mistress really came, although she had been hiding from Yue Yang since they rescued Fourth Mother.

However, when Yue Yang needed her help, she didn't hesitate to come immediately, teaching him death-like coma without a second thought.

Although all the girls felt that Yue Yang was a big pervert, they couldn't deny that he was a talented and skillful combat skills expert. Before Yue Bing could even understand a tenth of the death-like coma concept, Yue Yang that brat had already mastered the skill. However, Yue Yang still needed Yue Bing's help to clear the Gemini Temple Trial, so it wouldn't do if Yue Bing hadn't mastered it. With regards to this, Yue Yang hesitated for the whole day before finally deciding to tell the other girls about his [Body Fusion] skill...

Of course, he didn't say that he could read the encrypted information on his parents' diary because he had his [Divine Vision].

That brat pretended to be the pitiful guy instead, saying that his mother had taught him when he was young.

"[Body Fusion]?" Princess Qian Qian's initial reaction was to suspect that Yue Yang was planning to take advantage of everyone.

“Brother’s [Body Fusion] is extremely effective. He only held my hands and channelled his Spirit Qi to me, and I was immediately able to summon my Treant without spending any effort at all.” Yue Bing had always been the most supportive of Yue Yang, and she also didn’t see anything wrong with it. Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress was looking at Yue Yang with a “you sis-con” look, while Yue Yu was blushing a little. However, she pretended ignorance and switched the topic, asking Yue Yang and Yue Bing about the details on how they cleared the Taurus Temple instead. Yue Bing was very honest, she filled them in with every single detail. Everyone trusted her, so after a short discussion, everyone decided to allow Yue Yang to try this [Body Fusion] on themselves.

“You guys are overthinking it...” Yue Yang tried to show that he wasn’t hiding anything, but, the girls became even more suspicious of Yue Yang when they heard his words.

After the three girls felt Yue Yang’s Innate Qi channeled into their body from the [Body Fusion], they gathered again to discuss.

They couldn’t deny its effectiveness.

It was definitely beneficial to them; it could even be extremely advantageous to them.

It was just that they felt strange with Yue Yang’s Innate Qi flowing in their body. It was as if that brat could see through their whole body, it was a little embarrassing.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian fared better, because they had Yue Yang in their hearts. Although they denied it on their mouths, they understood what they truly feel in their hearts. Yue Yu the cousin on the other hand, felt a little awkward. She was in a dilemma as it wouldn't be right for her to reject nor accept Yue Yang's Innate Qi... Rejecting it would cause Yue Bing to suspect that something was wrong, and she might lose this special opportunity to improve. The secret technique was a technique passed from Ancient Ancestors ten thousand years ago, a skill that everyone would yearn even in their own dreams. It would really be a pity for her to give up on it.

However, if she didn't reject it, with her status as his cousin, it would be quite awkward.

In the end, only Luo Hua City Mistress was the most liberal, "Everyone, don't think too much. Training is training. If our heart is pure and honourable, what's so wrong about this? This is a skill that had been lost for ten thousands of years, we must not miss the opportunity to learn it... Most importantly, Yue Yu, you are the only healer amongst us. Although healing skills might not be used frequently at lower levels of Tong Tian Tower, when we get to Fourth Floor and above, we will get caught in countless of fights and battles. There are countless monsters over there, and if there are no healer amongst us, it will be very tiring and dangerous... With this [Body Fusion], Yue Yang can amplify your capabilities and also connect all our bodies together. We can safeguard each other's safety if everyone can heal altogether!"

With her speech, Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu felt relieved.

It was not a bad thing anyway, it was only a matter of a sister and a brother teaming up together to fight. Why would she be so bothered about it?

After the discussion, everyone received the [Body Fusion] with a clear conscience. However, they did not mention this matter anymore to prevent others feeling awkward.

Before Yue Yang delve into the secrets of [Body Fusion], Luo Hua City Mistress wrote a letter. Yue Yang believed that that letter was written for that mysterious beauty who liked to read books, but Luo Hua City Mistress would not let him see the letter no matter what. She rejected him at once, leaving Yue Yang with a very curious heart.

[Body Fusion] was an extremely profound technique. Moreover, in the end, there were some moves that only couples or husbands and wives could do. Yue Yang didn't dare to say those things right now.

He only told them the most basic, the most obvious, the most initial stage of body fusion, demonstrating it first with Yue Bing.

As Yue Bing's heart was pure, with no other thoughts at all, she could very easily empty her mind. In a few seconds, Yue Yang was able to take control of her body. Amongst the four girls, she had the most successful and most effective [Body Fusion].

Luo Hua City Mistress was also quite good. After failing ten over

times, she finally managed to fuse her [Aurora Light] with Yue Yang. Her power increased by a whole ten times, making Princess Qian Qian so envious that she almost squealed. As for Yue Yu, after failing over thirty times, she could finally fuse her powers with Yue Yang and summoned a healing water that was twice more effective than her usual. Her [Spirit Spring] Inherent Skill had also risen a level when it successfully fused with Yue Yang's Qi.

Her Level 2 [Cloudy Spring] had risen to Level 3 [Spirit Qi Fountain].

With the Spirit Qi Fountain, she could heal other's Spirit Qi at least three times more quickly. The time she needed to summon her beast had also been greatly shortened.

However, this was not very useful for Yue Yang. This was because Yue Yang's skills were all abnormal existences. He could summon his Phantom Shadow and made it last for ten days. As for Xiao Wen Li and the others, they would always be present, there was no time limit for their summoning. The [Spirit Qi Fountain]'s biggest usefulness for Yue Yang was that it helped him to understand the power of water from his [Yin Pole].

(Shiro: Yue Yang's fire ability came from his [Yang Pole])

Amongst the four women, the worst one was Princess Qian Qian.

Due to her sensitive [Six Records] Inherent skill, she was very sensitive and not used to losing control of her own body. She couldn't adapt to having Yue Yang's Innate Qi within her body.

After failing for more than 50 times, they finally succeeded once... Yue Yang was so tired that he almost fell flat to the ground.

The result from Princess Qian Qian's successful fusion was even more frightening than Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora Light]. She became an undefeatable killing machine in Yue Yang's hands. Her beast's strengthening power could be used on Yue Yang. On the other hand, Princess Qian Qian could display Yue Yang's [Yang Pole] fire ability, [Spherical Beheader], [Space Teleportation] and other unique skills.

It was just that after that first success, Princess Qian Qian would not let Yue Yang touch her body anymore no matter what, even if it was only her arms.

"Bing-er is still the best. What am I slaving away for? Isn't it so that you guys could improve?" Yue Yang had been secretly taking advantage of these girls these few days. With his Innate Qi flowing through their blood channels, it was no wonder that they would feel a little awkward.

"Yeah, yeah!" Yue Bing was very happy when her brother praised her.

Although Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress always retaliated with everything Yue Yang said at normal times, when it comes to training, they had obediently yielded to his rude and unreasonable ways.

Even Yue Yang's cousin Yue Yu had endured the awkwardness

and cooperated with the training.

They had long realized that they had achieved a month's worth of improvement just by training for a day with Yue Yang.

No wonder this brat was already an Innate at 20 years old. His secret training method was really deep and profound, it was not something that an ordinary warrior could think off easily.

Hundred Schools Elite Tournament was about to start, but Yue Yang decided to clear the Gemini Temple before joining the tournament. If he didn't clear the Gemini Temple, Yue Yang would feel a burden in his heart...

Star Domain, in front of the teleportation gate to the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

"Be careful, if you really can't do it, we will think of other ways again. Don't you still have that girl who likes to read books? She had quite a good brain on her head, so we can try to ask for her opinion!" Princess Qian Qian had unexpectedly advised Yue Yang not to act too rashly. Gemini Temple was indeed the hardest trial to clear, nobody had managed to clear it in the past ten thousands of years. It was normal not to pass that trial.

"We will definitely succeed, I have confidence in it." Yue Yang at least had an 80% confidence in succeeding.

He felt that if he didn't guess wrongly, the crucial point for

clearing this trial lies on the word “Gemini”.

(Shiro: Gemini in Chinese is 双子 – which could also mean two people)

A single person would not be able to clear the trial alone. There must be two people, furthermore, they must be two people whose heart was interlinked with each other. The person whose heart was most interlinked with Yue Yang was Yue Bing. Although Yue Bing couldn't guess what Yue Yang was thinking, she trusted in her brother completely. Furthermore, she could allow Yue Yang to enter into her Spirit Realm, thus allowing Yue Yang could control her body and turn their two bodies into one body.

This point would be the main point to solve the Gemini Temple...

Luo Hua City Mistress didn't say anything. She hugged Yue Yang, feeling grateful to him.

That day, this was where she first met him. Time passed so quickly, when they came here again, they already had completely different identities than last time. From completely unknown strangers, they had slowly become lovers.

Yue Yang also felt a burst of tender emotions surfacing in his heart. He patted Luo Hua City Mistress' back softly, “Wait for me to come back. I will definitely succeed!”

Yue Yu on the other side also hugged her sister Yue Bing as she warned her repeatedly to be careful and to follow her brother closely.

Returning to the Gemini Temple, everything looked just like before.

“Bing-er, close your eye.” Yue Yang held Yue Bing’s hands as he used [Body Fusion] to control her body into death-like coma state. Then, he summoned the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice that did not have any combat power and hostility and hence, would not be attacked by its shadow. This Quintet Golden Puppet Mice was a part of Yue Yang’s plan to success.

Yue Bing slowly fell into Yue Yang’s embrace as her breathing stopped.

A minute later, Yue Yang, hugging Yue Bing, similarly crouched in front of the Gemini Temple just like Yue Bing...

The shadow on the fighting arena had similarly fallen to the ground. As Yue Yang’s heartbeat stopped and his thoughts disappeared, Yue Yang’s shadow also disappeared. The laws within the trial had thought that the Trial challenger was dead, hence it also applied the same effects on the shadow, making it disappear. Yue Bing’s shadow had also disappeared along with Yue Yang’s shadow.

In the end, only a Golden Mask that was half crying and half smiling was left, lying quietly in the middle of the fighting arena.

The Quintet Golden Puppet Mice worked together to drag the Golden Mask over, as per Yue Yang’s orders before he entered into

death-like coma.

There were Quintet Golden Puppet Mice shadows, but as they had no orders, they only stayed silently, unmoving.

After around half an hour, they finally managed to return to Yue Yang's side.

They took another ten minutes before they managed to put the mask on Yue Yang's face with great difficulties. In that instant, the doors leading to the Rear Hall of the Gemini Temple immediately opened. Yue Yang's second shadow immediately charged out, flying straight towards Yue Yang. The second shadow looked like a smiling girl, a polar opposite from the first shadow, a sinister looking guy with a Golden mask. She was the other half of Gemini, the kind Gemini... From Yue Yu's Grandmaster's diary and his own observations of the Gemini Temple, Yue Yang discovered that the first shadow was the cruel Gemini. It had an existence that was sort of similar to Yue Yang when he was on a berserk state, going around slaughtering people without any hesitation at all.

On the other hand, the second shadow was the kind Gemini. She would stop the challenger from entering the Rear Hall, but she would definitely not harm them. She would also try to snatch the Golden Mask to recall the first shadow back.

The first key part to clearing this trial successfully was to capture the Golden Mask.

Yue Yang had used the death-like coma method and Quintet

Golden Puppet Mice to get the Golden Mask at first. The moment he wore the Golden mask, that cruel Gemini shadow would not reappear again. As long as the Golden Mask returned to that big round fighting arena and Yue Yang woke up, that cruel Gemini shadow would immediately respawned again, maintaining the same amount of strength as Yue Yang.

The second kind Gemini shadow only had the responsibility of guarding the Rear Hall at normal times.

However, when the Golden Mask had fallen on to the hands of the challenger, when the first cruel Gemini shadow had completely disappeared, she would then abandon the Hall and come out.

The second part to clearing this trial successfully was to stop that second kind Gemini shadow... Originally, a Gold-ranked Level 6 monster such as the kind Gemini shadow would be very difficult to defeat, but it would not harm the challenger, and that was its weakness.

Xiao Wen Li floated out of Yue Yang's body. She first cast a ball of pure light onto Yue Yang's body, helping him to recover quickly. At the same time, she immediately welcomed the second kind Gemini shadow's attack. Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] shot out as she brandished her Dual Icicle Blades, freezing her opponent. Stone-element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and Thunder Naga were also all summoned to help fighting in the battle to stop the second kind Gemini shadow.

On the other hand, Yue Yang who had just woken up immediately carried Yue Bing and flew straight towards the

Gemini Temple Rear Hall...

The third part to clearing this trial successfully lied with Yue Bing. As long as this last part was successful, the Gemini Temple which had made so many warriors despair for so many years would finally be taken down.

“We will definitely succeed!”

The Gemini Temple that no one managed to clear in ten thousands of years would be cleared very soon. Yue Yang's heartbeat rose up by a hundred, unable to stop his own excitement.

Chapter 216 – Reward, [Gemini] Inherent Skill

Yue Yang carried Yue Bing as he rushed into the Gemini Temple Rear Hall.

The second kind Gemini shadow tried with all her might to stop him, but she was completely chained by Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains]. With Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] and Dual Icicle Blades attack, the shadow could hardly move at all. On the other hand, the Stone-element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and Thunder Naga immediately rushed towards the hallway leading to the Rear Hall and unleashed their strongest skills, blocking the path and helping Yue Yang to gain more time to enter the Rear Hall.

The [Storm Conch] resounded... and with the Stone-element Medusa and Thunder Naga's help, the Storm Mermaid summoned a storm that engulfed every single corner of the Gemini Temple.

Thunder filled the whole place. As long as the kind Gemini shadow gained an inch of movement, she would be struck down by the thunder.

Xiao Wen Li spent her utmost effort to hold the second kind Gemini shadow back in place. She knew that the shadow in front of her wouldn't be injured. No matter how she was beaten up or heavily injured, she would recover within a short period of time. However, Xiao Wen Li still attacked her with her strongest attacks, because the shadow's capabilities wouldn't increase, she would still be a Gold-ranked Level 6... This was the reason why Yue Yang had risked this plan. As a Gold-ranked Level 6, although she had a

high wisdom and was a Holy Beast, Xiao Wen Li should still be able to handle her. The current Yue Yang didn't care about what was happening in the surrounding, he only cared about getting to the Rear Hall. As he entered the Rear Hall, he saw a painting of a warrior god hung on the wall. There was a pair of sculptures underneath the painting, one was a smiling face while the other had a dark expression...

“It's you guys!” Yue Yang hurriedly placed Yue Bing near the statue with the smiling expression, then took out his Crystal Card, preparing to receive the reward for clearing the trial.

Suddenly, a ray of light flashed from behind him.

From an empty space, in a flash, a figure had teleported towards them.

It was that kind Gemini shadow, who was bounded by Xiao Wen Li just now. The burst of strength that she unleashed was actually equivalent to Yue Yang when he lifted the ban on his Innate strength. She teleported immediately into the Hall, striking Yue Yang's back with her fist. Yue Yang never imagined that this shadow would also know how to teleport and unleash his Innate strength. When the shadow attacked him, he did not have time to lift his Innate restriction to defend himself

The strike from the shadow caused Yue Yang to see stars and almost fainted, his inner organs completely messed up.

Yue Yang finally tasted the taste of his own punches.

In theory, the kind Gemini shadow would be as strong as him... Her terrifying punching power had broken Yue Yang's spine and ribs. Fresh blood spurted out from his throat, sprinkling on the Golden Mask, as some drops of blood fell onto Yue Bing's face.

Yue Yang was afraid that the impact of the blow on his body would crush his sister, hence he gritted his teeth and endured the punch. If it weren't for the fact that he had learnt the Force Neutralizing skill to "use gentleness to counter strength" with the loli in his dreams, he would have died with that one punch. Only now did Yue Yang realise that his punch really felt horrible... On the other hand, when Yue Yang spurted blood, the kind Gemini shadow had also vomited blood.

That's weird, why does she look more injured than him?

Yue Yang was confused.

He immediately realized that whatever he learnt in his dreams, such as the Force Neutralizing skill that uses gentleness to counter strength or Innate Invisible Sword Qi, were skills that the Ancient Laws could not copy.

The kind Gemini would also receive the same injury that Yue Yang had, but she didn't know how to neutralize the force, hence she would obviously be much more injured than Yue Yang.

However, the Ancient Laws immediately healed her heavy injuries. Not only were her injuries healed, she had also recovered

Yue Yang's full strength.

As Yue Yang watched in shock, the kind Gemini once again lifted the ban on her Innate strength. Raising her left hand up, she seemed to be summoning [Nirvana's Flame], the skill that Yue Yang had used to kill Tu Cheng. Her right hand seemed to be summoning [World Exterminating Wheel], the skill that Yue Yang used to kill Kuang Zhan... A frightening Ancient Law Runic Circle appeared on her body... The only thing that was different from Yue Yang was she couldn't manage to summon [Nirvana's Flame] on her left hand, it was merely a normal flame. However, it was enough to alarm Yue Yang to the point that his heart rate shot up to 300.

Could he withstood this attack now?

That time, even Tu Cheng, who had a power close to Innate Level 3, wasn't able to withstand it. Kuang Zhan, who was hiding far away was also unable to withstand it. Furthermore, he couldn't even lift the ban on his Innate strength now, how could he withstand this fatal attack?

Let alone Yue Yang, even Xiao Wen Li who was rushing across the hallway let out a shocked, alarmed cry.

Although the [Nirvana's Flame] was fake, the [World Exterminating Wheel] was real.

When the two attacks fused together into a destructive attack, Yue Yang had zero chance of escaping nor defending... He really

did not think that although he had guessed everything correctly, he had guessed the second kind Gemini shadow wrongly. She actually possessed all of his skills, it was just that she would not use them at normal times, she wouldn't attack the challenger fatally. However, right at the end of the Trial, she would finally make her move... Maybe in this ten thousands of years, this was the first time that she attacked. Yue Yang could only sigh in helplessness at his own over-abnormal abilities. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been defeated in his own battle.

That kind Gemini shadow charged towards Yue Yang with tears streaming down her face, her left hand controlling the fake [Nirvana's Flame] while her right the [World Exterminating Wheel], prepared to die herself.

Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill could only stop her for a second.

In the end, Xiao Wen Li helplessly hugged Yue Yang. She had tried her best, but this was all she could do currently. This was because the kind Gemini shadow had Yue Yang's strongest abilities, even if her [Nirvana's Flame] wasn't real, all her other skills were completely identical to Yue Yang.

Just as the destructive skill were about to hit Yue Yang's body, Yue Bing suddenly woke up from her death-like coma. Her eyelids moved slightly as she opened her eyes.

The two Gemini statues suddenly glowed with a brilliant, radiant golden light. The Gemini statue on the left shot out a pillar of light that entered into Yue Bing's forehead and a beam of golden light

that shot into Yue Yang's back. It even bathed Xiao Wen Li with its golden radiance. That kind Gemini shadow broke into pieces in that instant, turning into black and white rays of lights. The white light brought fragments of the [World Exterminating Wheel] and floated into Yue Bing's body.

On the other hand, the black light floated past Xiao Wen Li's body and entered into Yue Yang's chest.

That fake [Nirvana's Flame] also smashed into pieces. A ball of fire flew towards the Stone-element Medusa who was charging towards Yue Yang and the others to help, floating on top of her snakes hair. Immediately, her snake hair became flaming snakes hair.

Yue Yang and Yue Bing's summoning grimoire floated out as their pages turned...

Before they managed to see the rewards for clearing the trial, Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li weakly sat on the ground, hugging each other tightly.

They had just narrowly escaped a life and death situation just now.

If Yue Bing had not woken up to complete the mission needed to clear the trial, then everyone would have died. Yue Yang had almost died in the hands of his own unique skills. Yue Yang was really so terrified that his body was drenched in cold sweat. This Gemini Temple was really abnormal... Fortunately he had brought

Yue Bing along as he guessed that the Gemini Temple Trial required two people to complete. Otherwise, he would have definitely died. This battle was the most frightening one that Yue Yang had ever faced, even more dangerous than when he was fighting against that Dark Specter that was sealed inside the White Jade Beetle. This was because his enemy was not anyone else but a shadow who had exactly the same skills and abilities as himself.

When Yue Yang thought about it again, he felt that he was really lucky.

Fortunately that kind Gemini shadow didn't know how to shoot Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Otherwise, he would have died in an instant with one shot of her Sword Qi.

Xiao Wen Li released a burst of pure white light to heal Yue Yang's injuries.

On the other side, the Storm Mermaid carried Yue Bing, who had passed out again, gently and brought her to Yue Yang's side. Yue Yang froze when he realized that there was a fragment of [World Exterminating Wheel]'s Runic Circle on Yue Bing's back. That shattered fragment of [World Exterminating Wheel] slowly disappeared into her body. Yue Yang immediately felt that this lass was perhaps very lucky. If she could reach Innate strength in the future and understood how to use this [World Exterminating Wheel], even if it was only a shattered fragment, it would definitely have a frightening amount of power, enough to completely annihilate her opponents.

Yue Yang was afraid that Yue Bing would wake up, so he

immediately put on new clothes on her, whose clothes had turned into dust. He then started to look at her grimoire.

“[Gemini] Inherent Skill?”

Yue Yang discovered that on the main page of Yue Bing’s summoning grimoire, there was actually an additional Inherent Skill.

Immediately, he was filled with an indescribable feeling of gratitude.

Clearing the Twelve Zodiac Temples could actually reward them with an Inherent Skill! No wonder the Gemini Temple was so abnormal, so difficult to clear!

There was a saying, “With great risk comes great reward”. That was indeed true. Facing against a danger where he almost died had rewarded him with an Inherent Skill. This was definitely a reward that all warriors would yearn for in their dreams but would never be able to get it...

[Gemini] Inherent Skill: Level 1. Summons a double that has a spiritual connection with the summoner. The double could perform [Spiritual Telepathy] and [Vision Exchange] from a certain distance with the summoner.

Maybe this [Gemini] Inherent Skill didn’t look very powerful on the outside.

However, it was actually a very powerful skill. Yue Yang thought that if this Inherent Skill was used well, it would be a hundred times better than whatever Flame, Ice, Poison Inherent Skills. Of course, to others, it might not be very useful, but for Yue Yang, this was definitely a deadly killing machine! [Spiritual Telepathy] was already very powerful, it could even do a [Vision Exchange]... This, this was definitely the most abnormal skill amongst abnormal skills!

Yue Yang looked at his own summoning grimoire and also found an additional [Gemini] Inherent Skill.

The strange thing was that the description for his [Gemini] Inherent Skill was different than Yue Bing's.

Behind the description of the [Gemini] Inherent Skill, there was actually an additional word "Innate" written in dark golden colour. What does this mean? Could it be that his [Gemini] Inherent Skill had another hidden abilities?

Yue Yang couldn't understand what was happening at this moment of time.

The thing that made Yue Yang extremely surprised was that Xiao Wen Li's Diamond Grimoire had also been summoned. When he turned over the pages, there was also a [Gemini] Inherent Skill.

How could the reward system even count Xiao Wen Li in? There must be some kind of bug! Yue Yang hugged Xiao Wen Li as he

gave her an excited kiss. He would definitely not report this bug to Heaven Gaming Company, he was extremely satisfied with this bug, so he would definitely not file a complaint. Furthermore, even if he wanted to report the bug, he wouldn't know how to call the gods. There was also the possibility that this was how the Ancient Laws supposed to give their rewards!

Yue Yang accepted the rewards with a clear conscience. In any case, he wouldn't reject an extra reward.

Xiao Wen Li raised her hands and pointed at Yue Yang's Golden Mask.

“This thing? This could actually summon my own shadow?” Yue Yang realized that today was his lucky day. Not only did he receive an extra [Gemini] Inherent Skill, he also gotten the most awesome Golden Mask amongst all Gold-ranked items.

Golden Mask: “Good and Evil Gemini”. Warrior's Accessory. Dark-type, Gold-ranked. Contains 7 Level of sealed curses. First seal has been lifted, skill: [Evil Shadow]. Rank: Gold 6 Stars.

[Evil Shadow]: Summons an evil shadow with half of the abilities as the summoner for an hour. Evil Shadow will disappear automatically when it has used up its abilities.

Yue Yang tried to summon it and discovered that what he summoned was actually the first shadow on the fighting arena that he encountered just now! However, the shadow's abilities now have been weakened a lot, it was only half as strong as Yue Yang.

Furthermore, it didn't have intelligence, it only had combat and slaughtering skills. It would need the summoner's control if it were to unleash other types of skills.

In conclusion, this shadow didn't have life or intelligence, it was only a cannon fodder.

Of course, Yue Yang was quite satisfied with it. With this shadow as a cannon fodder, it would also be good to use it to deceive people. It was definitely a beautiful, perfect existence!

Boom!

Yue Yang was too happy with his loots that he had stayed inside the Gemini Temple Rear Hall far too long, forgetting to go out.

As a result, the door to the Rear Hall had closed. There's no other way, he could only continue towards the Cancer Temple. In any case, he could also leave the Trial from the Cancer Temple.

Carrying Yue Bing, Yue Yang decided to go to the Cancer Temple. He discovered that this Cancer Temple was completely different than the first three temples. It wasn't a temple, but an endless marshland instead. There was only a small mud path extending forward, probably leading to the domain of the Cancer Temple's Guardian Beast. Yue Yang immediately changed his plans. He had a cannon fodder now anyway, and Xiao Wen Li and the others could properly display their skills in this place. He should just go and see if the Gold-ranked Guardian Beast of the Cancer Temple was a gigantic crab or a lobster...

Chapter 217 – Bandage, Ribbon Knot

Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yu waited for one whole night and day, but Yue Yang and Yue Bing had not come back out. They were worried out of their wits.

Let alone the three of them, even Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers who came afterwards were all restless and fidgety. They had never seen anyone staying for so long inside. If it was another person other than Yue Yang, everyone would have felt despair and hopeless. Yue Yang and Yue Bing had originally entered the Gemini Temple yesterday afternoon, but even until sunset today, the two people still had not come back out.

According to their initial plans, clearing the Gemini Temple shouldn't take more than two hours.

However, they were still not done even after one full day and night.

The Gold-armoured Guard Captain gave Princess Qian Qian and the others some food and drink to eat, but the three girls didn't have any appetite to eat at all. They only held each other's hands and encouraged each other, standing in front of the teleportation gate and continued to wait.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were so worried that they walked around in circles. However, they didn't dare to comfort the girls, they were afraid that the three girls' reason would collapse the moment they started talking. Until sunset the next day, Yue Yang and Yue

Bing still had not come out, but that mysterious beauty who liked to read books had arrived, her eyes filled with worry. When she came, the four girls immediately hugged each other, and comforted Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yu whose eyes had turned red from crying, “It’s okay, we must have confidence that he will definitely be able to clear the trial!”

“It was all my fault for asking him to challenge the Twelve Zodiac Temples. Knowing fully well that he was challenging the Gemini Temple, I still encouraged him to clear it...” Princess Qian Qian hugged the mysterious beauty’s shoulders tightly. No matter how strong she was, she needed consolation from the mysterious beauty.

“If a man doesn’t face some trials in his life, how could he be successful in the future? Qian Qian, it’s not your fault. If it were me instead, I will also do the same, supporting his decision.” The mysterious beauty patted Princess Qian Qian’s back and said with an extremely determined and certain voice, “Maybe some problems occurred, but I believe that he will be able to overcome them. Everyone, believe in me. He will definitely come back with his sister, he will!”

With such an affirmation from her, even Yue Yu who had the weakest willpower was greatly encouraged.

Luo Hua City Mistress slowly recovered the confidence she had with Yue Yang. She nodded towards the mysterious beauty, affirming her that she is okay now.

Princess Qian Qian secretly wiped away the tears on her face. She

was about to say something when she saw rays of light suddenly shining from the teleportation gate. She immediately shouted happily, “They are back, they are finally back!”

A person covered in blood and injured all over suddenly charged out. As he had charged forward with too much force, he collided into Princess Qian Qian who was welcoming them and fell onto the ground.

The person who was covered in blood was Yue Yang indeed.

He was carrying Yue Bing on his back, whose face was also covered in blood. Some parts of the flesh at her thigh and back was completely disfigured, but her injuries was much better than Yue Yang’s. Furthermore, unlike Yue Yang, she didn’t immediately faint the moment they charged out. She was more clear-headed. When she saw Luo Hua City Mistress and her Second Sister Yue Yu, she immediately burst into tears. The mysterious beauty hurriedly carried her away and looked over Yue Yang’s wounds. She discovered that Yue Yang was heavily injured, and hurriedly signaled to Yue Yu, “Quick, heal him. Sister Luo Hua, here, carry Yue Bing. I will help Sister Yu... Ye Kong, you guys stay away and don’t make things worse. Give us space to save him... Okay, his heart rate and pulse is normal, he is not in danger of losing his life... Sister Yu, can you summon a [Healing Waterball]?”

Everyone was completely anxious and panicked, only the mysterious beauty was calm enough to handle the situation.

Yue Yu’s hands trembled as she summoned a [Healing Waterball], but Yue Yang’s injuries were far too severe. Her two or three

[Healing Waterballs] were merely a cup of water thrown into a burning forest.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were about to break a Healing Crystal, but the mysterious beauty stopped them. This was because she discovered that forcefully healing Yue Yang's injuries would not be good for his body. What he needed was healing from inside. As long as he had enough strength, his body had his own strong recovery abilities. Using the Healing Crystal to heal his wounds might even spoil his recovery later, which would not be a good thing.

The mysterious beauty slowly laid Yue Yang on the ground, carefully inspecting his wounds. She discovered claw marks, bite marks, stabbing marks, sting marks, blunt-weapon marks and other kinds of injuries. Other than his face, his whole body, chest and back, was all filled with injuries.

Princess Qian Qian calm her anxiety as she started to examine Yue Yang's body up and down. She shouted happily, "His bones are all fine, he only had superficial injuries and suffered a shock on his internal organs!"

Luo Hua City Mistress also examined Yue Bing quickly and nodded, "Bing-er is also okay... What had actually happened? Bing-er, why did you guys stayed inside for so long? What had actually happened?"

Yue Bing cried out when she heard Luo Hua City Mistress' question, "In the Virgo Temple, there are doubles of mom, Shuang-er and myself. They are all similar to the shadows in the

Gemini Temple, they are the ones who turned brother into this! The moment we entered, the Virgo Temple's teleportation gate immediately disappeared. We have no way to leave, so brother carried me continuously as we ran away. We don't know how long had passed before the teleportation gate finally re-appeared again. Brother hurriedly escaped while carrying me!"

"What?" Princess Qian Qian and the others froze when they heard her.

Didn't Yue Yang and Yue Bing challenged the Gemini Temple?

How did they go to the Virgo Temple? Could it be that this brat had cleared the Gemini Temple, Cancer Temple and Leo Temple, before charging towards the Virgo Temple straight away?

The mysterious beauty immediately carried Yue Yang and gave Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian a glance. It would not be good for them to discuss this matter in public. Yue Yu quickly reacted and covered Yue Bing's mouth as she consoled her, "Bing-er, good girl, let's go back first and we can discuss this again at home!"

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were completely frozen, they could only come back to their senses after a long time.

In the end, when they saw the mysterious beauty carrying Yue Yang and walking away, they immediately followed behind.

The Gold-armoured Guard Captain approached them quickly and said, “You guys, leave this place quickly and forget everything that happened here!”

Fatty Hai had wanted to shout “Stop meddling into our business”, but seeing the serious expression on the Gold-armoured Guard Captain’s face gave him a fright, and he hurriedly nodded.

When Ye Kong and the others left, the Silver-armoured Guards couldn’t help but to start talking, “Which Temple did they challenge? Why did they say Virgo Temple? Didn’t they challenge the Gemini Temple at first?”

“What are you guys gossiping about? Is this kind of thing something you can talk about?” The Gold-armoured Guard Captain shouted at them sternly.

“No, we are just...” Some of the Silver-armoured Guards were so frightened that they started to stutter.

“Forget everything here!” The Gold-armoured Guard Captain suddenly took out a Crystal Staff that was specially carved with a rune and raised it up high. In an instant, a white light a thousand times stronger than sunlight engulfed the whole area outside the Twelve Zodiac Temples in its sea of light. Ten seconds later, the Gold-armoured Guard Captain’s Crystal Staff disappeared without a trace along with the blinding white light.

On the other hand, all the silver-armoured Guards collapsed onto the ground.

The Gold-armoured Guard Captain kicked them awake one by one, shouting loudly, “What the heck are you guys doing? How dare you sleep during your duty?”

The Silver-armoured Guards hurriedly got up, their faces filled with panic and confusion as they completely couldn't remember how they fell asleep on the ground during their duty. However, they didn't dare to ask much and hurriedly went to their designated post, continuing to guard the Twelve Zodiac Temple's entrance diligently.

Despite this, the Gold-armoured Guard Captain was still insecure, attentively observing each and everyone of the Silver-armoured Guards eyes, afraid that their memories had not been erased completely.

At the Windchime Inn, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers all circled around outside the residence.

Inside the residence, they couldn't be of help at all.

However, they wouldn't feel assured if they didn't stay here to wait for news.

After a long while, the mysterious beauty and Princess Qian Qian finally came out. When they saw Ye Kong and the others quickly approaching them, the mysterious beauty immediately shook her hands, “You guys, don't worry. Yue Yang is alright now. However, it seemed like he would need more time to completely recover.

Now, you guys should immediately return to the Ivy Academy and train yourselves as per norm. Go and participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, we will also quickly return back as soon as possible. Other than Grandma Wu Teng, Principal and Vice Principal, don't tell anyone else about Yue Yang clearing the trials. It would be best if less people know about this matter. If you can find Yi Nan, tell her to come here quickly. She seemed to be an expert in healing too, so she should be able to help to heal Yue Yang's injuries and speed up his recovery."

"Understood." When Ye Kong heard this, he was extremely moved.

As long as Yue Yang was fine, then everything was fine.

Fatty Hai was even more touched. It seemed like whatever Yue Bing said just now was true. Yue Yang had really cleared the Gemini Temple all the way to the Virgo Temple.

Otherwise, Yue Yang would not receive such serious injuries.

Of course, Fatty Hai believed in Yue Yang's abnormal body and abilities. Such injuries was nothing much to him, maybe it actually meant nothing to him. He should just go back and wait for Yue Yang's good news!

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong looked at each other for a moment before hurriedly turning around and making their way out.

The Li Clan Brothers were more respectful, bowing towards the mysterious beauty and Princess Qian Qian before they left.

Their bow also had a hidden meaning of leaving Yue Yang's safety to their care.

Returning to the residence, the mysterious beauty made a shocking declaration, "Yue Yu will take care of Bing-er while the three of us will help Yue Yang to bandage his injuries... His internal injury has almost recovered due to his good foundation as an Innate. It's just that his superficial injuries are a little troublesome. We must quickly clean his wounds and bandage it up. Luo Hua, Qian Qian, let's not hesitate anymore. Let's throw our reservations and modesty out for a moment. All of us have a clear conscience anyway. Come here and help!"

Seeing the mysterious beauty carrying Yue Yang into the bathroom, Luo Hua City Mistress gritted her teeth lightly and followed in.

Princess Qian Qian, on the other hand, was still hesitating, unable to make her decision.

She went out to the door, then turned around again and sat on the chair, then stood up again.

Yue Yu had just carried Yue Bing into her room to bandage her wounds, but when she saw Princess Qian Qian's worried expression, she hurriedly came out. Princess Qian Qian lowered her head and refused to look Yue Yu in the eyes as she spoke her

words without meaning it, “Sister Yu, I think it will be better for me to help you instead!”

“Qian Qian, what are you still hesitating about in this situation? Quickly go and save Yue Yang!” Seeing Princess Qian Qian’s sad expression made Yue Yu sad too.

“Yue Yang and I, we are not even engaged. Furthermore, he is more or less okay. I won’t help him to bandage his wounds, let me help you instead!” Princess Qian Qian had a tomboy personality, she was outspoken and straightforward. However, she was actually very shy inside, and she couldn’t throw away her face easily. It wasn’t that she didn’t have any feelings towards Yue Yang, but Yue Yang didn’t even promise her anything officially. She was afraid that she would become enemies with her sisters because of Yue Yang. She didn’t want to become a shameless woman who stole others’ husbands.

“You are thinking too much. Didn’t we agree that our sisterhood is stronger than anything? It’s all my little brother’s fault, he is stubborn and he has the mentality to get whatever he wanted. How long do you think you can avoid him for? Qian Qian, be a good girl, just go and save my little brother now, I beg you!” Yue Yu knew that Qian Qian was very shy, she needed herself to give her a push. She hurriedly tried to coax Qian Qian and pushed her towards the bathroom.

When they opened the door, the two girls realized that Luo Hua was trying to take off Yue Yang’s trousers with trembling hands.

Yue Yu immediately turned around and left, leaving Princess

Qian Qian staring at the scene foolishly, dumbstruck.

The mysterious beauty was examining Yue Yang's head. She was extremely focused as she called out to Princess Qian Qian to ask for her help without even turning to look at her, "Sister Luo Hua is in charge of cleaning the wounds, Qian Qian, go and check his crucial parts, see if he was injured at those parts..."

Princess Qian Qian almost fainted when she heard that, "You are asking me to check? Wu Xia, why don't you ask Sister Luo Hua to do that? I don't understand how to check it at all!"

"I also don't!" Luo Hua City Mistress blushed furiously as she waved her hands panickedly.

"You both, you make me speechless." The mysterious beauty took in a deep breath as she calmed her trembling heart. She quickly took off Yue Yang's last piece of clothing and resist her shame with great difficulties to touch him for a while. She then spoke out with an uncertain voice, "Seems like he was not injured here at all. I have no knowledge about this part, so I couldn't be 100% sure. You two come and examine this for a while, everyone should verify together to ensure that this part of his is alright!"

"Wu Xia, if you say he wasn't injured then we'll believe you. We really don't understand at all!" Luo Hua City Mistress was as red as a lobster, but out of concern and curiosity, she still stole a few glances.

"What if I'm not here? There will be only the two of you. Would

you just let him die? Come over here and help. No matter how you two try to resist, this brat will also take advantage of you sooner or later. Don't be difficult now, I beg you two to learn to have the responsibility of becoming his future wife... Your precious darling is seriously injured, why are you still clinging to your pride? Come over here, quick!" The mysterious beauty rolled her eyes as she covered Yue Yang's waist with a towel. She then quickly use [Healing Water] to cleanse Yue Yang's wound-covered body.

Seeing that Yue Yang had been covered with a towel, Luo Hua City Mistress hurriedly went over to help.

Princess Qian Qian watched dumbstruck for a while, only returning to her senses after a while later as she quickly went over to help.

The three girls worked together, but at the start, their teamwork was not very good.

They were completely flustered.

But as Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian slowly calmed down, the three girls co-operated more smoothly. One washed Yue Yang's wounds, the other wiped it clean slowly, while the last one quickly bandaged it... In the end, even though the towel was put away, the three girls still busily treat Yue Yang's wounds, ignoring that part of him. When mysterious beauty finally carried Yue Yang, whose wounds had all been bandaged well, back into the room, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress could finally sigh a breath of relief as they leaned against each other and sat on the bathroom floor weakly.

Their face had continued to blush for a long time.

Previously, they didn't have time to think because they were focused on treating Yue Yang.

Now that they had finished treating Yue Yang, when they remembered everything that they had seen just now, when they remembered Yue Yang's male part which was completely different from a girl's, they couldn't help but to feel an embarrassment that caused them to blush to their ears.

Yue Yang slept very soundly, not knowing that Luo Hua, Qian Qian and the mysterious beauty had seen every nook and corner of his body.

Of course, even if he knew about it, he would probably not mind it at all.

Go ahead and see if you want, we would need to see each other sooner or later anyway...

On the second day, when Yue Yang woke up, he discovered Luo Hua City Mistress's head lying right on his bedside, sleeping. Princess Qian Qian, on the other hand, was sleeping with her body against the wall. On the floor, Yue Bing was sleeping on top of a snow-white rug, her legs even kicking her blanket away. His cousin Yue Yu seemed to be busy cooking in the kitchen. Yue Yang swept a glance across the room, feeling as if someone was missing. He remembered that before he passed out yesterday, he seemed to see

that mysterious beauty who liked to read books amongst the people waiting for him outside. Where did she go?

In the morning, Yue Yang was still feeling very weak. He had lost a lot of blood after all.

However, in the afternoon, after drinking three huge bowls of meat broth, Yue Yang felt his body recovering better, especially after Xiao Wen Li came out and released a ball of pure light to him. Yue Yang immediately stood up from the bed and rushed into the bathroom, feeling an urgent nature's call. When he took off his pants, he immediately screamed in alarm, "Who bandaged this part of mine? My god, that person even tied a ribbon knot! This part of mine was not injured at all, you know!"

Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian who heard Yue Yang's screams from inside the room started to blush furiously.

Seems like the bandage was their masterpiece.

On the other hand, Yue Bing didn't understand anything at all. She blinked her eyes as if she was curious and wanted to ask which part of Yue Yang was not injured but was bandaged. Seeing Yue Bing's pure, innocent and curious expression, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yu were greatly distressed.

For the sake of changing the topic, Yue Yu immediately asked Yue Bing, "Bing-er, what actually happened yesterday? Tell us quickly!"

Chapter 218 – Bet

Although the three girls had already prepared their hearts, when they listened to Yue Bing's story, they couldn't help but to be shocked right through their souls.

Yue Bing didn't know how they managed to clear the Gemini Temple, but she said that when they were clearing the Gemini Temple, she caught a glimpse of her brother being heavily injured. However, when they reached the Cancer Temple, not only had her brother recovered most of his wounds, he had also dove alone into the Cancer Temple that was underwater and killed a giant, ten thousand years old crab that was as big as a house. From that Guardian Beast, he obtained the Tidal Pearl, an item dropped from the giant crab's body.

She didn't know how Yue Yang managed to do it, but she had personally seen her brother pull the giant ten thousand years old crab's corpse out of the water.

“After killing the ten thousand years old crab, we rested for around 1 hour. Then brother took me along and continued towards the fifth Leo Temple...” When Yue Bing said this, the three girls all started to curse Yue Yang secretly. Why was he so reckless? Why must he insist on clearing the trials back-to-back? Couldn't he come out first and inform the others of his plans, before continuing to clear the trials?

“I'm not gonna care about him anymore in the future!” Princess Qian Qian humphed annoyedly as she clenched her fists, wishing that she could beat Yue Yang into a pulp.

“What did you say?” Yue Yang, who was trying to untie the ribbon knot bandage and let out his stored up water, was unable to hear them clearly.

“It’s nothing to do with you!” Luo Hua City Mistress quickly replied.

“Bing-er, continue your story. When you reached the Leo Temple, what did you see?” Yue Yu requested Yue Bing to continue.

“The Leo Temple was completely different from the Cancer Temple. The Cancer Temple was filled with marshland and lakes, and the Cancer Temple was located right at the bottom of the water. I couldn’t help brother at all. The Leo Temple, on the other hand, was a piece of grassland. It wasn’t very wide. There was some kind of canyon, and the Leo Temple was located on top of a high cliff. There were a lot of Bronze-ranked Lions and some Silver-ranked Lions on the grassland. Brother helped me to kill all the lions and the silver-ranked lioness and dug out their Magic Crystals. In the end, brother who was only supporting me realized that he had killed a giant Lion King, and even obtained a Golden Shield that had a lion and an Ancient Rune engraved on it... We were both very tired and we had to rest in the Leo Temple for quite a while before we recovered our strength. Then, brother said that we wouldn’t be able to clear the Virgo Temple, but we might as well explore it to gain more information... Who would have known that the teleportation gate would immediately disappear the moment we entered the Virgo Temple? The one that appeared in front of us was instead our house in White Stone City. There were mom’s, Shuang-er’s and my shadows inside the house. After saying

a bunch of really hurtful words, they had even attacked us. Brother carried me as we tried to escape, but we couldn't find the escape route no matter what... Brother's injuries were mostly caused by mom's, Shuang-er's and my shadows... I couldn't do anything at all..." Yue Bing started to cry as she told the story.

Princess Qian Qian and the others finally understood now. The Virgo Temple was a trial that made use of the challengers' weaknesses in their hearts.

Who does Yue Yang care most in this world?

It is definitely his family.

He cared for his Fourth Mother and two sisters the most, hence in the Virgo Temple, the shadows that appeared were the three of them. Even if Yue Yang was strong and even if he knew perfectly that the Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and little Shuang-er in the Virgo Temple were fakes, he wouldn't be able to attack them. Besides, they were all shadows with extremely strong powers. Other than defending himself, Yue Yang still had to protect his sister. That was the reason for his heavy injuries.

Fortunately they managed to endure until the teleportation gate re-opened again. Otherwise it would probably be hard for Yue Yang and Yue Bing to safeguard their lives.

When Luo Hua City Mistress and the others thought this way, they secretly felt glad.

Yue Yang took a long nap and slept all the way until the evening. Other than his wounds that were not fully healed yet, he was as healthy as a horse, full of energy and spirit.

If the four girls did not see him with their own eyes, they wouldn't have believed his recovery speed.

Princess Qian Qian gave Yue Yang a light punch happily, "As the saying goes, 'the good live a short life while the wicked live a thousand years'. This brat is completely wicked and treacherous, how could something happen to him?" Although she said those words with her mouth, her heart was admiring Yue Yang's abnormal recovery speed. He had suffered severe injuries that normal warriors would need half a month to recover. However, he had completely recovered after sleeping for a night. Even if they helped to heal his injuries, wasn't this recovery speed far too quick? Of course, she didn't know that Yue Yang's Innate Qi had effects on the recovery speed of his injuries.

Furthermore, after breaking through the Innate Realm, Yue Yang had been learning a lot of healing techniques from the loli in his dreams.

With the addition of his originally healthy body, it was not weird for him to completely recover after one day.

"Aren't we going to participate in the Hundred School's Elite Tournament? Let's go!" Yue Yang wasn't used to lying on the bed like a sick patient. Challenging the Virgo Temple would be equivalent to fighting the demons in his heart, it would be difficult to clear it right now. He decided to give up clearing the Virgo

Temple for the moment.

He decided to bring Yue Bing back to participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, so that his sister could further her training and show-off her skills.

After clearing the Taurus, Cancer and Leo Temples, Yue Yang felt that Yue Bing had improved a lot, almost as if she was born anew.

In addition, she had also received some mental training in the Gemini and Virgo Temples, so Yue Yang was certain that his sister could definitely amaze the whole audience in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. As for Yue Yang himself, if he did not meet an extremely strong enemy, he wouldn't fight them at all. He was too lazy to fight against those weak enemies... Of course, if he could meet that Junior [Elder] from the Floating Mist Sect or the Prince from the Zhi Jin Kingdom, Yue Yang wouldn't mind to go all out and teach them a lesson, showing-off his abilities to them!

Did he think he was truly strong being a Junior [Elder]?

Did he think he was cool if he was a Prince?

A tsunami of jealousy filled Yue Yang's heart. He didn't care who these people were, as long as they were his rivals in love, he would beat them all down!

Although he still hadn't managed to capture Princess Qian Qian's heart, he had already decided that this tigress would be his future

wife. If other people dared to have any ideas about her, then they would be seeking death. Yue Yang wouldn't be as sappy and foolish as those drama guys who would let the love of their lives go and fight for them in a fair competition with other guys... He would leave that kind of foolish, selfless act to other guys. He, on the other hand, would obviously want to dominate all the girls whom he loved!

90% of the reason that Yue Yang wanted to participate in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament was to beat up his love rivals. The other 10% was to enjoy the show.

As for the championship rewards, Yue Yang didn't think that the number 1 prize would even compare to the rewards from the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

"Are you really okay?" Luo Hua City Mistress also thought that this brat's body was really abnormal. He practically had the resilience of a cockroach. Yue Yang smiled like a rogue as he moved closer to Luo Hua City Mistress' ear and whispered, "I'm okay, there won't even be a problem if we do 'it' tonight!"

"You are asking for a beating!" Luo Hua City Mistress blushed furiously and tried to pinch his mouth.

But she suddenly remembered a certain body part of his and immediately felt weak in her knees. Hands trembling, she didn't manage to pinch his mouth, instead, Yue Yang had grabbed her small hand with his. Luo Hua City Mistress felt that his hand was very hot. When he held her hands for a prolonged period of time, she would feel this kind of uneasy, yet comfortable, strange

sensation. Her whole body started to tremble as she hurriedly struggled free, “Don’t pull my hand!”

Having succeeded in taking advantage of her, Yue Yang immediately pretended to be a good boy, “Whoever tried to touch my City Mistress, I will fight him to the end!”

Princess Qian Qian almost punched Yue Yang to ninth clouds and above when she heard this. Was he trying to flirt with Luo Hua right in front of her? He was really too much!

Yue Yu hurriedly became the middleman and pulled on Princess Qian Qian’s shoulders, “Let’s go, we are already very late. I think we won’t make it to the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament opening ceremony!”

In reality, not only had Yue Yang and the others missed the opening ceremony, they had also missed the first match. Since they still had not arrived during the first match, they were marked as having forfeited the match.

In other words, Yue Yang and Yue Bing had already lost a match although they had not started fighting.

Right now, Yue Yang and Yue Bing would have to go through three secondary matches and win at least two out of the three matches to qualify for the Elite Tournament. With regards to the matter of whether Yue Yang could join the Elite Tournament again, the old fox who led his Ivy Academy team didn’t have any doubts about that. It was just that he had been embarrassed in

front of his old friends, because his disciple had ran away and forfeited the match right at the last minute.

Fortunately the Ivy Academy was always known for its bad results, hence everyone didn't feel that Ivy Academy students giving up their matches was a strange thing to do.

If this was a Shang Jing Academy student instead, the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent would probably be shocked by the news.

This year's Hundred Schools Elite Tournament was not held on Da Xia Kingdom like usual.

The location was changed to the Champion Island in Tian Luo Kingdom.

When Yue Yang and the others finally reached the Champion Island which was located in the middle of a wide ocean, an island covered with water and corals at all four-sides, it was almost dawnbreak. Yue Yang and the others casually entered into a Warrior's Lodge to rest. Everyone slept all the way until late morning before finally waking up to eat some late breakfast. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai that came to visit had brought Yue Yang one good news and one bad news.

The good news was, Ye Kong and the others had worked very hard, they had won the Team Match without Yue Yang.

The bad news was that because Yue Yang had been too lazy to get out of bed, he was absent for the first secondary match. As a result, he was disqualified for the first secondary match.

As Yue Yang had made a record in history for forfeiting two matches in a row, right now, almost all of the elite students in Champion Island had heard about the great name of Ivy Academy. Everyone had also given Yue Yang who had registered with the name of 'Titan' a nickname of 'Coward'.

"I didn't show off my power and you guys have taken me as a pushover." Yue Yang did not take bullying very well. He didn't have a magnanimous heart to let small matters go, so he was thinking about how to bully others during the afternoon match. As for Yue Bing who was similarly absent in her match, she felt extremely guilty and shameful for embarrassing Ivy Academy. However, she would still listen to her brother no matter what. If her brother didn't go for his match, she would also rather be absent for hers.

"Hui Tai Lang is not a contracted beast, so it couldn't participate in the match. Are you planning to use your Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen to scare your opponents to death?" Princess Qian Qian who had just woken up from her beauty sleep stretched her beautiful body.

"Ah..."

Yue Yang thought again and realized that Princess Qian Qian was right. He didn't have any beast that was suitable to show to others.

Bloody Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow, Thorny Flower Demoness, Golden Beast... He didn't have any beasts that would be suitable to display to the rest of the world. As for Xiao Wen Li, that was even more impossible, Yue Yang wouldn't let others know about her at all. Yue Yang was greatly distressed. The Quintet Golden Puppet Mice didn't have any combat power at all, while the Spirit of Flame and Smoke wouldn't listen to his orders. What would he do? Should he buy a trash beast on the streets at the last minute?

What would he need trash beast for? Yue Yang suddenly whacked his head. Didn't he still have that baby Reaper Mantis?

Although it was still an egg, it was still a Gold-ranked beast.

When Yue Yang took out the Reaper Mantis' egg, everyone sweated profusely. Would he make it in time if he only started to breed it now?

Even if he succeeded in breeding, what could a baby Reaper Mantis do?

"Don't we still have two more hours? If I make use of this time properly to cultivate it I would probably be able to take care of the situation!" When Yue Yang said this, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others all fell flat to the ground. Even the two Yue Clan sisters who trusted Yue Yang the most didn't have any confidence in him.

"Student Yue Yang, if you can incubate it within 2 hours, I'll

change my surname to yours!” Princess Qian Qian laughed out loud when she heard him.

“I’ll bet against her. I support you!” Luo Hua City Mistress tried to encourage Yue Yang with all her might. In any case, it wouldn’t matter if she won or lost the bet. She wouldn’t be at a disadvantage as she was only a spectator.

“If you lose, you shall... If you lose, you must run around naked!” Princess Qian Qian had wanted to tell Yue Yang would have to change his surname to hers if he lose at first, but when she thought again, she felt that it was inappropriate. She didn’t want her joke to be taken as real, she was afraid that this brat would really do that if he couldn’t admit his defeat. Hence, she requested for Yue Yang to run around naked instead. This running around naked was something that Yue Yang had used to tease her before, so she had used this chance to get back at him for making fun of her.

“Looking down on me, aren’t you?” Yue Yang pulled up a haughty expression of ‘if I say it’s possible, it’s possible’.

“Can you incubate a beast within 2 hours?” Seeing that he was filled with confidence, everyone was a little unsure. Since it was this abnormal brat, that might even just be possible.

Chapter 219 – Lifelong Nemesis

In two hours, it was impossible for a baby beast to be cultivated into an adult beast, no matter what type of beast it was.

Let alone the beast egg in Yue Yang's hands, who was not even incubated.

Yue Yang was only half-joking when he said that, he didn't really mean it when he said he would cultivate the Reaper Mantis egg into a beast that could fight in two hours. However, after making a bet with Princess Qian Qian, he had the mind to try it. In the pitiful guy's mother's diary, she had written five types of cultivating beasts, but she had also written some alternate, secret cultivating methods.

One of them was especially related to insect-type beasts.

Of course, those secret cultivating methods would only be applicable to a few or one type of beasts. These methods were all very specialized, furthermore, the cultivation results would vary, depending on the person cultivating it. Some people could cultivate a holy beast using this secret method to cultivate his beast, while some others would only be able to cultivate trash!

In other words, the beast owner who was cultivating the beast must fulfil certain special conditions before the secret method would be able to take effect.

The Reaper Mantis fulfils the insect-type beast requirement, and

with Yue Yang as its master, there shouldn't be any problems too. Hence he wanted to give it a go.

At first, Yue Yang planned to give the Reaper Mantis to Yue Shuang after he helped her contract her grimoire right in front of all his Clan members. Who would know that just as he thought about this idea, Yue Yang realized that the Reaper Mantis already absorbed his blood. Although it had not hatched, it had already recognized himself as its master... Yue Yang could only set aside his intentions of giving Yue Shuang a Gold-ranked beast. The Reaper Mantis had been incubating all this while. Yue Yang had been observing its growth all this while, channeling Innate Qi to it at times. He also hoped that it could be more perfect before it breaks out of its egg shell.

After absorbing all the energy from its brothers and sisters' broken eggs and Yue Yang's Innate Qi, the Reaper Mantis egg had been changing everyday.

If Yue Yang had not been controlling its condition, it would have hatched out long ago.

"Alright, I'll show you guys my awesomeness!" Yue Yang cut a wound on his fingers with the Eye Destroyer Dagger (Chp. 198) and drew a Contract Circle on the egg with his blood. Although they had formed a contract before, it wasn't recognized by the secret cultivating method. Yue Yang has to contract it seriously. Of course, this would also act as double insurance.

A burst of golden light emitted from the Reaper Mantis egg, releasing a dazzling light.

It was so radiant, just like a tiny sun.

At this time, the contract had been completed. If it were other warriors, they would have taken their hands off at this moment.

However, the secret method requested the beast master to continue channeling their Spirit Qi, the more the better. It also requested the beast owner to prepare at least a glass of their fresh blood for their beast to feed...

Yue Yang channelled his Innate Qi continuously into the egg, making it shine even more brilliantly. He channelled his Qi incessantly, so much that the light from the contract agreement which should have subsided within 3-10 seconds continued to shine for one whole minute without stopping. Princess Qian Qian and the others were surprised at Yue Yang's actions, and started to believe that he might just be able to cultivate a beast within 2 hours.

When the light subsided, the egg had hatched.

The Reaper Mantis that hatched out was extremely small, its body only as big as a normal person's fingers. Its colour was similar to white jade, a little transparent.

The moment it hatched, it immediately looked around the people surrounding it.

When it discovered Yue Yang, it immediately climbed up to its master eagerly.

If it was another person, they would have given the baby beast something to eat at this time. It would be best if it was a magic crystal with the same attribute as the beast. If they didn't feed their baby beasts for two to three days, the baby beasts might die. Of course, beasts such as the special-type or the element-type wouldn't die, but their future growth would be heavily affected. Cultivating the beast when it was still young was very important, furthermore, the higher the quality of the magic crystals would determine the better future growth of the beast. For example, if a baby beast consumed a Level 6 Magic Crystal, its growth would be much better than baby beast who only consumed a Level 3 Magic Crystal. As for baby beasts that were not fed any Magic Crystals or were only fed Level 1 or 2 Magic Crystals, they would be useless in the future, they would only amount to beasts that could only do hard labour at the most!

“Ah? You are giving it your blood?” Princess Qian Qian couldn't help but feel sorry for Yue Yang when she saw Yue Yang's cultivation method for the Reaper Mantis.

She thought that even if this brat loses the bet, she wouldn't really insisted for him to run around naked.

She was only trying to provoke him. This idiot, he really took them for real!

He was really an idiot...

Princess Qian Qian really wanted to give Yue Yang a nudge, but she knew that this was a crucial juncture for Yue Yang, so she didn't dare to disturb him. She clenched her fist and continued to watch.

The girls could see clearly that after the Reaper Mantis drank Yue Yang's fresh blood, those blood turned into a thread-like string and coiled around its body, as if it was about to form a Runic Circle, or as if it was about to draw a circle of blood channel. In the end, the thread of blood became thicker and thicker and turned into a blood ribbon. Then, the Reaper Mantis suddenly turned into pink colour, and then scarlet red. When it had completely turned scarlet red, another golden light burst forth... With the energy from Yue Yang's fresh blood and his constant Innate Qi, the Reaper Mantis' body quickly grew bigger and bigger right in front of Princess Qian Qian's and the other's eyes.

Ten minutes later, the Reaper Mantis nymph that was originally only as big as a person's finger, was now as big as a baby.

Yue Yang fed it with his blood again as he channeled Spirit Qi constantly into its body.

"You are still giving it blood?" Princess Qian Qian felt that this brat really didn't want to live anymore. He had just lost a great amount of blood a few days ago, and now he was even feeding this Reaper Mantis with his blood. Was winning the bet really that important for him?

“Brother?” Yue Bing was even more worried for Yue Yang.

“I’m alright!” Yue Yang smiled at her.

After feeding it blood and channeling Innate Qi to it in the third round, Yue Yang finally felt tired and stopped. He took out the Gold Dragon Magic Crystal from inside his Lich Ring and gave it to the Reaper Mantis. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai almost fell to the ground when they saw this. How could Yue Yang give a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon Magic Crystal to feed a baby beast? With all that Yue Yang had given it, it would be difficult for the Reaper Mantis not to become strong! They thought that in this world there would only be Yue Yang, this prodigal son, who would use a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon Magic Crystal to cultivate a Reaper mantis... If the Reaper Mantis couldn’t ascend above Gold-ranked Level 7, then Yue Yang would have suffered a great loss!

Princess Qian Qian was so annoyed that her teeth itch, she really wanted to bite this brat to death.

For the sake of winning their bet, he had even used his Gold Dragon Magic Crystal.

Wouldn’t this count as cheating?

On the other hand, Luo Hua City Mistress’ reaction was completely the opposite of Princess Qian Qian. She only paid attention to the end result, hoping with all her heart that the Reaper Mantis could work hard and evolve. It would be best if it could go through an extremely strong evolution and turn into a

Platinum-ranked beast or level up multiple times to become a Gold-ranked Level 5 strong monster.

Of course, this was only her wish. In reality, it wouldn't be possible for that kind of thing to happen. Even if there was, it wouldn't happen within a span of two hours.

Almost half an hour had already passed.

The Reaper Mantis that was as big as a finger had already grown as big as a man's arm after three rounds of blood. It was almost a metre long. Its colour was crimson red right now, and although it was still a nymph, it gave out an air of might and power. After Yue Yang fed the Reaper Mantis nymph the Gold Dragon Magic Crystal, he yawned and went back to his room to sleep for another hour. When he came back out, the Reaper Mantis nymph had already grown two metres long, its body was as thick as a person's thighs. The two scythe blades on its front legs almost had the terrifying look of an adult Reaper Mantis already... The Reaper Mantis nymph's wings had also slowly grew out, and it had started to learn how to fly. It was still fumbling and tumbling, knocking into walls or other objects in the room at times. Its flying posture also looked extremely awkward.

Once again, Yue Yang took out a few Wyvern Magic Crystals and fed it to the Reaper Mantis.

Originally, the diary did not tell him to feed the baby beast using the best quality Magic Crystals or to feed it with a lot of Magic Crystals. However, Yue Yang felt that it was fine if he wasn't cultivating it, but if he was seriously trying to cultivate it, he

would definitely give it the best items!

When the Reaper Mantis finished feeding on the Magic Crystals, another twenty minutes had passed. Right now, only ten minutes were left from the two hours time limit. Princess Qian Qian already knew that this bet had lost its meaning long ago, but on the surface, she would definitely not concede her defeat.

“Time is almost up! Your Reaper Mantis is still a nymph!” Princess Qian Qian didn’t want to remind Yue Yang in reality, but in front of the crowd, she just couldn’t concede her defeat and lose her face.

“There’s no other way, I must use my ultimate move then.” Yue Yang rolled up his sleeves and drew an Ancient Runic Circle on the Reaper Mantis’ body.

A terrifying amount of energy burst forth from the Reaper Mantis’ body. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had even fallen to the ground from the impact of the energy.

A dark purple pillar of light burst straight to the sky, reaching a few metres of height before falling back down right into the Reaper Mantis’ body.

Everyone watched dumbstruck as the Ancient Runic Circle swivelled as if it was alive inside the Ancient Mantis body. When it finally disappeared, the previously crimson Reaper Mantis had not only changed its colour, it had evolved to look like its mother, who was dark purple in colour. However, there was two additional

spots on its body, one crimson red while the other was dark golden in colour. Although the Reaper Mantis belonged to the insect-category that did not have any intelligence, from its huge eyeballs, everyone could feel a special kind of intelligence hidden beneath it. This was an aura that only living things with intelligence would have.

The Reaper Mantis continued to grow. From its nymphal state, it had slowly evolved into an adult state, but its growth rate was very slow.

After ten minutes, it had not fully matured into an adult.

According to the terms of the bet, Yue Yang had lost.

However, if in accordance with the initial goal of cultivating baby beasts to adult beasts, Yue Yang had actually won big time. Everyone could see now that the reason that the Reaper Mantis had grown so slowly was because it was evolving into a Gold-ranked beast. If it were to turn into a Bronze-ranked or Silver-ranked beasts instead, Yue Yang would probably not need two hours to finish cultivating it!

Princess Qian Qian didn't want to say anything. She didn't want to remind Yue Yang, so as to avoid Yue Yang getting angry at her.

The bet was only a joke, they shouldn't be too serious about it.

At the most, she could just use this as a shield in the future if Yue

Yang was angry at her... Princess Qian Qian decided to change the topic and said, “The afternoon matches are about to start, we should get going immediately, otherwise you would miss your third match!”

“Of course we would need to go to the competition, but before we go, I would need to execute a noble deed: run around naked!” Yue Yang straightforwardly took off his clothes and then started undoing his pants.

“You dare? Who would let you run around naked?” Princess Qian Qian quickly grabbed onto Yue Yang’s hands that were trying to undo his leather belt.

She definitely didn’t want to see a naked Yue Yang following her behind stark naked.

Wouldn’t that be a disaster?

If others heard about this, then she would become the whole world’s joke. Others who didn’t know the truth might even think that she had some sort of weird, perverted fetish, that she liked a naked man following her around in public... Princess Qian Qian was extremely fearful of that consequence, hence she immediately pulled Yue Yang’s hands away, re-fastened his belt and helped him to wear his clothes back, “I’ve never seen a roguelike you before. I won’t hold you to your bargain this time, we’ll discuss it next time!”

Yue Yang chuckled perversically as he hugged Princess Qian

Qian's shoulders, "Bro, just call me anytime you want to see me! I'm more than willing to hold my end of the bargain since I've lost the bet!"

Princess Qian Qian was completely speechless when she heard him.

Why did his words sounded like she had purposely set those terms of the bet because she wanted to see his naked body?

Seeing that Princess Qian Qian was so angry that she was literally emitting smoke from her ears and eyes, but was completely speechless and could only pout in silence, Luo Hua City Mistress couldn't help but to burst into laughter. She laughed until her whole shoulders shook violently.

Even Yue Yu and Yue Bing couldn't hide their smiles.

Nobody in this world could control Princess Qian Qian. The only one who could do it would probably only be Yue Yang, her lifelong nemesis!

-At this moment, on the secondary matches fighting arena.-

The old cunning fox was walking back and forth, anxious to the point that he was about to scratch his scalp off. Why is Yue Yang that brat late again? Why can't he just say that he don't want to participate? He had registered himself but didn't turn up for the match. He was really going to be the death of him! There were only

a few more minutes left before the match starts. If he still had not come, then Yue Yang would be the first student in history who gave up the tournament because he didn't dare to face the competition, an ultimate coward... The old fox really wanted to march onto the stage and fight on Yue Yang's behalf instead. Yue Yang would definitely win the match anyway.

“Your leading elite student is about to abandon his match... Not bad, your student would set a new world record, he might even be the first and the last in all history!” A few of the old fox's friends started laughing out loud, purposely jeering in the old fox's face.

“...” The old fox was speechless. In his heart, he thought, you should be grateful that that brat was not here. Otherwise, with his status as an Innate, he would bash all your smug faces until you all cried!

He was about to leave in a huff.

Suddenly, he saw Yue Yang bringing Yue Bing, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others along as they walked very calmly and determinedly. The old fox was immediately very happy.

My god, finally. At last it's Ivy Academy's turn to show off!

Chapter 220 – Yue Bing Is On A Roll!

“Ivy Academy, Contestant Yue Bing! If you are not on stage by ten seconds, you will be deemed to have forfeited!”

The referee and another contestant was already up on stage. However, they had not seen the other participant after waiting for so long. On the other side, Yue Yang and Yue Bing had just entered the box that they had booked a long time ago, and had not made it to the stage.

It was the secondary knockout matches and not many people were spectating today. Out of all the thousands of seats for spectators, only a few hundred people were present. It could even be said that the students who were preparing for a rematch below were greater than the crowd. In reality, 90% of the people who came to watch the matches were the students’ friends or relatives. They were all here to root for them. The boxes now were cheap too, and could be rented for three silver coins. Not only that, it also came with free beverages.

If it was the Top 100 Tournament instead, those VIP boxes that could hold over a dozen people would definitely cost at least ten gold coins.

As for the Top 10 Team and Individual Finals, the price would probably be twofold or greater than that.

Ye Kong hurried to the bottom of the stage and raised his voice towards the referee, saying, “Contestant Yue Bing only managed to

arrive after rushing here. Please wait a minute so that she can catch her breath!”

The face of the referee who was wearing black clothes turned even darker than his clothes after hearing this.

She was already late, but she still needed time to catch her breath?

He immediately started counting down: Ten, nine, eight, seven, six...

Not only that, the speed of the countdown was faster than usual. Yue Bing wouldn't make it in time to enter from the outside aisle into the contestant's area, so she immediately jumped down from the VIP box. As the referee counted down to one, she barely landed onto the stage. Due to being strapped for time, her face was flushed red with nervousness, and her heart was beating rapidly. The very moment she was on stage, she quickly bowed to the referee and anxiously apologised, saying, “Referee, I-I'm Yue Bing.”

Originally, the referee in black clothes did not have a good expression. However, the moment he saw the person who dared to come late, Contestant Yue Bing who had made him wait so long, he realised that she was actually a cute girl.

His iron heart instantly softened.

Could this lady be lost while trying to find the competition

grounds? He thought. She did not seem to be the lazy type who loved to be late.

“Once you’re ready, the competition will begin!” The black-clothed referee tried his best to act in a stern manner. Unknowingly, his voice had softened greatly. If it were a male contestant instead, he would probably be sternly criticised. Towards elders and teachers, Yue Bing had always been respectful and bowed to acknowledge his words.

“It’s a little chick...” The opponent was a tall and skinny boy. Seeing that he was facing Yue Bing, his heart leapt for joy, thinking that victory was already in his hands.

“In the Combined Matches, battle techniques are not restricted. You may use summoned beasts or other means to battle. However, the requirement is that there must be a beast joining the fight. You may summon your beasts now. The match is split into three rounds. Each round is restricted to three minutes. If you hit the opponent out of the field, render the opponent unconscious or force the opponent to surrender, you will immediately win. If a winner is not decided in three rounds, the contestants will then be judged according to the effectiveness of their attacks and their energy. The person who lands more effective attacks and has greater energy will win. The conduct of maliciously killing people is strictly forbidden. Our aim is to cultivate the spirit of competition and not slaughter. Are you clear on these rules?” The black-clothed referee quickly and clearly stated the rules.

“Mm, I’m clear.” Yue Bing nodded her head obediently.

“Cheh...” The tall and skinny boy, however, was disdainful. Who wouldn’t know all of these rules? Every time a match was held, it would be said once. Hearing this being repeated over and over again, it was truly annoying.

The students who were supporting the tall and skinny boy yelled from below the stage. “Xiao Liu, don’t be softhearted! Take down that little chick! After winning this you can return to the elite’s competition! Don’t hold back just because she’s a girl, fight properly! After you win, we’ll go find some big-breasted girls! This poorly endowed little chick isn’t worth looking at, hurry up and take her down!”

These words riled up Ye Kong and the others.

A competition was a competition, why would you need to talk such nonsense?

It was fine if they talked nonsense, but talking about the size of the breasts, were these people born to take a beating? How dare they say these to Yue Bing?

Yue Yang had just sat down on his seat. Before he even had time to drink his tea, he heard the crazy words from the other side.

He was enraged and threw his cup of tea, ready to cut down those few brats.

Princess Qian Qian hugged him with all her force and reproached

Yue Yang, “Stupid, it’s none of your business. Don’t care about what they say, just let Bing-er fight and win against that brat! Winning is the most important thing here. Just sit back here!” Luo Hua City Mistress, on the other hand, was laughing wildly. She realized that Yue Yang was really a person who was overprotective of his family. Of course, the feeling of being protected wouldn’t be bad at all.

Although he wasn’t protecting herself right now, Luo Hua City Mistress knew that if someone dared to make fun of her like this, he would be so angry that his face would turn red like this too.

Below, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai was ready to rush over and beat up those brats.

Seeing that something was amiss, the two linesmen rushed over to stop their impulsive actions.

Fatty Hai was blocked, but his temper did not simmer down so easily. He pointed at the group of students and started cursing at them, saying, “Trash, remember this! Don’t ever face me on the stage, otherwise this Boss will punch your face until you’re looking for your teeth all scattered on the floor!” Seeing that there were only four people on Ye Kong’s side, himself, the Li Brothers, and Fatty Hai, while there were ten people on their side, the group of ten boys felt that these people had exceptionally big guts. The boy who was leading the group arrogantly sneered at them. “Fat pig, you should be celebrating that you’re over here. If you were outside, we would have made roasted pig out of you... I am Gu Chi Jin, from Zi Jin Empire’s Golden Wolf Academy. I’ll leave these words with you, fat pig. If you have talent, then we’ll meet at the

Top 100 Tournament!”

Before Fatty Hai could retort, the two linesmen had already chased him back.

The two linesmen only said a sentence and Ye Kong and the others had no choice but to obediently return to their seats. This was because the linesman had said: “If the relatives and friends below the stage fight, the contestants on the stage will be disqualified’.

“Haha, a little chick like you made a perfect team with a fat pig like him!” The tall and skinny boy laughed at this sight. He seemed to not care what kind of strength Yue Bing had.

Especially since he knew his opponent had already lost two rounds in a row.

He looked down upon her even more.

He did not feel that he was weak; he was just more unlucky than others. On the very first round of the elite competition, he had faced Xue Tan Lang, one of the Three Great Killing Stars. It was normal not to win against people of that caliber.

As for Yue Bing, he did not even see her in his eyes.

The tall and skinny boy summoned a Black Bear. It was Bronze-ranked Level 3, and it looked very powerful.

The black-clothed referee secretly shook his head.

It seemed like this fight was already the little lady, Yue Bing's loss. Facing against a Black Bear that was Bronze-ranked Level 3 and possessed powerful strength to boot... The black-clothed referee did not wave his hand to start the match, but asked in a low voice, "Do you want to give up or continue?" He seemed to be slightly worried for Yue Bing. One blow from the opponent's Black Bear could cause danger to this lady's life.

"Continue the competition." Yue Bing was already not the Yue Bing of the past. Fighting alongside her brother had caused her to change completely, becoming a ranker.

At Taurus Temple, Pisces Temple and Leo Temple, she had killed dozens of Bronze-ranked beasts.

She had killed many Bronze-ranked Level 5 Ox-head Warriors and Bronze Barbaric Bulls, Bronze-ranked Level 5 Giant Tidal Grabs and Bronze-ranked Lions as well. Now, in her eyes, a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Black Bear did not count as much. She really wanted to get past the Hundred School Elite Competition and prove to her brother that she had put in effort to cultivate and improve. Also, she wanted to prove that she could use the various techniques that her brother had taught in live battles.

This Hundred School Elite Competition was equivalent to reporting the results of her cultivation efforts to her brother...

That was why she had decided to give the best results to her brother.

Yue Bing nodded to Yue Yang who was sitting in the box. Her eyes were firm.

The black-clothed referee waved to let the two contestants bow in front of each other. Yue Bing did not summon her grimoire nor her Hundred Year Treeman War Guard. She bowed towards the opponent in an extremely polite fashion.

That tall and skinny boy did not have Yue Bing's good manners. He took the opportunity to order the Black Bear to attack as Yue Bing bowed.

“Despicable!” Ye Kong was infuriated. It was fine if he attacked while they were talking, but what kind of person was this? While they were bowing to each other, he dared to mount a sneak attack? Not only that, the opponent was a girl... Ye Kong nearly wanted to jump up the stage and rip this brat into pieces.

“Idiot!” Yue Yang, however, ridiculed the tall and skinny boy while laughing.

The Black Bear's roar was like thunder.

It stood up on its hind legs and swung down with one of its giant paws.

With just a flash of Yue Bing's shadow, she suddenly appeared on top of the tall and skinny boy's head. While he was thinking that his plan had succeeded, she threw a roundhouse kick right into the boy's face.

Boom!

The tall and skinny boy flew out of the stage. Fresh blood flowed continuously from his mouth and nose.

Aside from the people who knew Yue Bing's strength, everyone was shocked by this scene.

Even Ye Kong and Fatty Hai didn't know that Yue Bing was this strong. Under Yue Yang's guidance, Yue Bing had truly become strong, Ye Kong and the others knew that. However, they did not know that even her combat techniques had improved significantly to the point where she could instantly kill her opponents.

"Haha!" Yue Yang was laughing proudly.

He knew that Yue Bing was kind and law-abiding. She would normally obey every single rule. Not only that, due to her pure heart, she easily trusted others due to her inexperience.

This way, she would easily be ambushed or deceived mid-battle.

To counter her weaknesses, he especially created a set of techniques that would allow her to strike fast and adapt to

emergencies. Before teaching Yue Bing, Yue Yang would constantly remind her to watch the movements of her enemy at any point of time. Then, at the time when the enemy moves, there was no need to think, but rather to react with her body and counterattack. He trained her to the point where “If the enemy doesn’t move, I won’t move; If the enemy moves, I’ll move first” was a natural reaction for her.

Although Yue Bing was unable to meet Yue Yang’s demands of being able to reach the level of “Moving later, but reaching first” right now, mounting a sneak attack on her would already be an impossible thing to do.

The strongest advantage that Yue Bing had was that she was obedient.

Whatever Yue Yang said, she remembered it word for word. Hence, she would be able to use it whenever the situation required it... Yue Yang may not have been a good teacher, but Yue Bing was definitely a good student.

Towards the result of the tall and skinny boy being KO’d by one kick from Yue Bing, Yue Yang was not surprised at all.

Conversely, it was as he had expected!

“Ah... Ivy Academy’s Yue Bing wins!” The black-clothed referee was stunned for a while, but reacted quickly and hurriedly waved his hands to signal that Yue Bing had won.

“Impossible, she sneak attacked Xiao Liu!” The group of students on the other side obviously could not accept this kind of result.

“Roar!” The Bronze-ranked Level 3 Black Bear suddenly pounced towards Yue Bing with its mouth wide open, showing its razor sharp teeth. It was in fact the tall and skinny boy who was not willing to fail, continuing to order the Black Bear to attack. The black-clothed referee was infuriated. He still wanted to violate the competition rules like this? He dared to challenge the dignity of a referee like himself? When he was preparing to punch the Black Bear down the stage, he suddenly saw Yue Bing’s body move, easily dodging the Black Bear’s bite.

Boom!

With a chain of eighteen roundhouse kicks, she knocked back the Black Bear’s giant figure.

With a final kick, she sent the Black Bear flying two metres away, causing it to fall on the tall and skinny boy’s body who was preparing to climb back up.

The black-clothed referee’s jaw dropped... It couldn’t be possible?

The crowd’s who was watching the match also almost popped out their eyes in surprise. Ye Kong and the others could only stare at Yue Bing, whose full-power attack had caused her to be slightly short of breath and red in the face, dumbstruck. This, was this still the Yue Bing they knew?

Chapter 221 – Wringing The Old Fox Dry

“She hit him with a surprise attack! It was a shameless sneak attack!” The group of people supporting Yue Bing’s opponent started to become anxious. They had never thought that Yue Bing was such a strong combat expert who could even roundhouse-kick a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Black Bear off the stage.

“Linesmen, chase these bunch of rowdy boys out. Also, arrest that fellow who had broken the rules of the competition and violated warrior’s ethics!” The black-clothed referee hated it the most when others challenged his authority and power in matches. Not mentioning the matter of that Golden Wolf Academy student mounting a sneak attack when the opponent was bowing, he had ordered his Black Bear to continue attacking even after getting knocked out off the stage. He was really seeking death!

“We can’t accept this! She was obviously in the wrong. She only used combat skills. She didn’t summon any beast at all!” The tall and skinny boy immediately tried to argue with this point.

“That’s right, this is not a Combat Skills Match, this is a Combined Match. You are required to use a beast! Since she didn’t have any, she violated the rules first!”

“This match is invalid!”

The group of boys on the opposite side started a ruckus.

When the black-clothed referee thought again, what they said

seemed to be really true. The little lady in the arena really did not summon any beasts.

Of course, this was not her fault. This was because she had not managed to summon her beast before her opponent mounted a sneak attack on her. Seeing the strong and obedient little lady, the referee couldn't help but sigh in admiration. He was about to forgive Yue Bing and not pursue this matter any further.

Who could have guessed that Yue Bing would actually bow in respect, before nodding calmly and unhurriedly as she smiled, "I have a beast, it's just that you guys couldn't see it!"

She lifted her hands slightly as a glowing ball of green light slowly appeared from her body.

Finally, it took on a human form slowly.

Of course, this was Yue Bing's second Guardian Beast, Green Light Tree Demoness. Yue Yang had seen how the mysterious beauty fused her element-type beast with her body just like a strengthening-type beast. Furthermore, after fighting a battle with Tu Cheng, Yue Yang had also learnt how to fuse an element-type beast with the summoner's body just like a strengthening-type beast. In order to help Yue Bing fuse with her Green Light Tree Demoness better, Yue Yang had especially taught this skill to her.

As a result, let alone normal people, even the black-clothed referee couldn't see through the fusion.

Seeing this, the black-clothed referee felt ashamed of himself secretly, thinking that he had really made a blunder. However, he didn't show it on the outside and continued to put on his stern, angry look as he said, "You guys have been deliberately making a commotion without reason and doubted my authority as a referee. Guards, arrest them all for me and hand them over to the Tournament Disciplinary Office to be punished!"

Some of the silver-armoured guards quickly thudded over to arrest the boys. The two linesmen even threatened to disqualify anyone who tried to retaliate.

The Golden Wolf Academy's students couldn't do anything but follow the silver-armoured guards to the small, dark hut outside and stay there till they were released.

They could only pray that their Academy teachers would come over quickly and bail them out. Otherwise, they might even miss their next matches. When Ye Kong and Fatty Hai walked past these dejected fellows, they stuck up their middle fingers to show their contempt. The Golden Wolf Academy students were extremely angry at the gesture, but they didn't dare to do anything under the watchful eyes of the black-clothed referee. If they dared to strike back, the penalty wouldn't be as simple as just being disqualified from their matches. They would probably need to crouch in the small, dark hut even longer and might even be reported to the Tournament and lose their reputation.

"Thin monkey, fat pig, you just wait and see!" The leader of the group of boys, Gu Chi Jin, sneered coldly and sinisterly. They would never forget this grudge.

“Did you think we would be afraid of you?” If Fatty Hai were still the same person as before, he might be a little afraid.

However, Fatty Hai had now gone through countless life and death battles, killed various monsters and gigantic monsters, killed mercenaries that had gone insane and undergone harsh training under the hawk-eyed man for two whole months. Most importantly, under Yue Yang’s guidance, he had focused on improving the hidden strength in his body and cultivating his Guardian Beast, Ironback Rhinoceros. Now, he was completely different from his old self.

Something like being knocked out of the fighting arena within ten seconds by his opponent would not happen again this time.

Fatty Hai’s combat power had greatly increased, and after experiencing life and death trials, he had become more confident in his own abilities. An opponent like Gu Chi Jin didn’t even matter at all to him.

Although he didn’t say it out loud, Fatty Hai secretly wanted to fight against the Three Great Killing Stars to test his limits and capabilities.

If he were still the same as before, he wouldn’t even have dared to dream about this!

The old fox who was spectating outside the arena immediately became smug. Yue Bing had really worked hard. She had instantly

knocked her opponent out without even using any of her beasts. He thought evilly that if this little lady had actually summoned her Bronze-ranked Level 5 Hundred Years Old Treant Defender, her opponent would probably have wet his pants in fright. It was a pity that her opponent had been too weak. She hadn't even needed to summon her Hundred Years Old Treant Defender and had only needed to use her combat skills to instantly knock him out...

“You seem to have a good student this year. Since her surname is Yue, is she a member of the Yue Clan?” One of the teachers asked curiously.

“It's a pity that that child is only proficient in combat. If she had a powerful beast, she would definitely be able to rank amongst the top 50.” Another teacher purposely commented this way wanting to test the old fox's reaction. The old fox had obviously seen through these fellows' thoughts, so he only revealed a cold smile to them as he pretended to be humble and replied sarcastically, “How could our students have powerful beasts? She only had two Bronze-ranked Level 5 Treants. They are plant-type beasts and trashy as hell. Her beast could never compare to your student's Bronze-ranked Level 3 Black Bear!”

“...” Those people that had previously been ridiculing the old fox were so depressed that they wanted to vomit blood. They never thought that the old fox would really find a genius in cultivating plant-type beasts. They had really lost face.

The uproar quickly died down as the secondary knockout matches continued on.

Ten minutes later, it was finally Yue Yang's turn to fight on stage.

Yue Yang was too lazy to fight. He put on the Gemini Golden Mask and immediately summoned an 'Evil Shadow' to fight on his behalf.

On the surface, the Evil Shadow only had half of Yue Yang's abilities and its summoning time was extremely short, it could only exist for an hour. However, it was more than enough to participate in this stage of the tournament. Yue Yang was afraid that others would easily see that the Evil Shadow was a fake because of its lifeless expression that lacked intelligence. Hence, he quickly put a wig and a black towel on the Evil Shadow, covering its eyes.

In any case, the Evil Shadow fought with its instincts and didn't need to use its eyes at all.

When the Evil Shadow showed up on stage, no one realized that it was actually a copy. Everyone thought that this student called 'Titan' was blind.

The old fox could only gape in dumbfoundment.

However, after observing for ten seconds, he finally realized that the Yue Yang standing on stage was only a copy. However, it was extremely lifelike, it's just that there was no blood, flesh or breath in its body.

“Don’t you have any elite students other than that little lady just now? Why would you send a blind student to fight?” Some of the old fox’s friends started to laugh out loud.

“...” It was the old fox’s turn to be speechless now. Who were the blind ones here?

How could they, as knowledgeable teachers, not be able to discover that it was only a copy? How dare they call themselves teachers with that kind of ability? Weren’t they afraid of teaching their students wrongly?

Seeing that the old fox didn’t reply, the old fox’s friends all thought that he was lacking in confidence. Secretly, they sniggered even more.

When it was Yue Yang’s turn to compete, the referee was changed to a white-clothed referee.

Due to Yue Bing’s case, he didn’t want to make the same mistake. So he demanded to check the two sides’ beasts right at the first moment. Yue Yang didn’t want to summon the Reaper Mantis now. What a joke, summoning a Gold-ranked beast in a secondary knockout match, it would be weird if he didn’t make his opponents cry in fright! Hence, he sent the one of the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice. The whole audience was completely shocked by Yue Yang’s actions. What could a small little puppet mouse do in a battle?

The old fox’s friends all immediately burst out laughing until tears formed in their eyes. They started patting the old fox’s

shoulders, “This student of yours is really of top quality!”

With regards to their short-sightedness, the old fox only sneered in his heart.

Were they looking down on him?

They wouldn’t even have the time to cry later on!

As soon as the white-clothed referee waved his hand to signal the start of the match, before the opponent’s Wind Leopard could even manage to charge forward, the Evil Shadow had already grabbed the Wind Leopard’s jaws and torn them apart forcefully, splitting the Wind Leopard’s mouth all the way to its neck... Such a forceful and bloodthirsty action shocked even the white-clothed referee.

He had actually torn a Normal-ranked Level 4 Wind Leopard’s mouth with his bare hands?

When the Evil Shadow, whose hands were dripping with fresh blood, walked step by step closer to the opponent who was utterly dumbfounded, that fellow immediately started crying and escaped from the fighting arena, completely horrified.

“This blind boy is also a combat expert? Where did you find so many combat experts?” The old fox’s friends were completely jealous. Ivy Academy students were usually the worst of the worst, getting knocked off the stage before ten seconds even passed. This brat, the new world record setter, was also a joke that everyone

had previously been discussing enthusiastically. Who could have known that the Ivy Academy would send out two extremely abnormal students this year! They were all such experts in combat skills. One was a little lady who could send a Black Bear flying with her legs, and the other was a blind boy who could tear a Wind Leopard's body apart with his bare hands... This, isn't this too great of an overkill?

“Student Titan, you are in the wrong here. Didn't I tell you not to be so violent? It's wrong to make your fellow friends cry out of fright!” The old fox's words was like a slap to his other friends' face.

“Don't be too full of yourself, let's wait and see at the elite tournament!” The old fox's friends immediately brushed off their sleeves and turned around, feeling extremely depressed in their hearts.

“Alright, at that time, please tell your elite students to have mercy on us. Our Ivy Academy's students only participated for the experience, we don't have the capabilities to compete for the championship with you guys. Everyone, take care. I shall console the crying student first. Remember, please have mercy on us, HAHAHA!” Seeing that student who was crying from fright and almost fainted from the Evil Shadow's killing intent, the old fox laughed out loud happily.

Fortunately Yue Yang and Yue Bing had come back. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to clear the resentment in his heart.

Yue Bing and Yue Yang's Evil Shadow had both won another

match, they could finally return to the elite tournament's preliminary match.

The old fox then smugly walked towards the box and sat down leisuredly. He received the tea that Luo Hua City Mistress gave him as he glanced at Yue Yang and criticised, "Brat, those who don't know might think you came here to chase after girls. Aren't you leading a comfortable life? You don't participate personally in your battles, and even have beauties to accompany you here. Isn't this life too good for you? Where did you get that Golden Mask? Seems like it's quite the good stuff..."

Yue Yang pointed his middle finger at him and said, "I got it after a bloody battle in Gemini Temple where I almost died. Don't even think about it. I say, old geezer, don't even think about it, or I'll report you to the Principal..."

The old fox burst out laughing, "I didn't accept any bribery nor perform corruption, what are you going to report me for?"

Of course, Yue Yang had a way to deal with him as he whispered in his ears, "I know of a certain someone who has a very nice coloured illustration book, where there are a lot of pictures of beautiful women who doesn't seem to wear any clothes. I remember that a certain person said that he even had a picture of the current Principal, although I don't know if that is really the case. If I give those pictures to the Principal, I think she will be very happy to see the illustration of her naked self! I believe that she will change her opinion completely, with regards to a certain Vice Principal who did not accept bribery nor perform corruption."

“Pu!” The old fox spurted out the tea he just sipped and hurriedly smiled apologetically, “What do you mean by coloured illustration? Student Titan, you have definitely misunderstood. By the way, I know of a restaurant that serves really good seafood. The dishes are of top quality, and the price is not cheap either. I was about to invite you and Yue Bing to eat there and celebrate your wins... Let’s go, let’s drink and forget the things of the past!”

“Of course, I’m always forgetful!” Yue Yang smiled and nodded, “If a certain generous Vice Principal could also reward my sister and I with a Space Crystal Staff, my forgetfulness will definitely act up again!” When the girls heard this, they were really speechless. They had seen ruthless people before, but they had never seen such a ruthless person who would even wring his own teacher dry!

Chapter 222 – I Apologize... There Was A Traffic Jam!

After a few days of the Elite Tournament, Yue Bing had smoothly passed through her matches. This was because the opponents she faced weren't very strong and she hadn't even needed to summon her Hundred Years Old Treant Defender to win yet. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Clan Brothers had also succeeded in entering the Top 100 Tournament. As for Yue Yang, he had also managed to enter the Top 100 by sending the Evil Shadow to participate in the matches for him.

This year, the Ivy Academy team was really powerful. The Academy which had suffered complete defeat last year, had 6 people entering into the Top 100 this year.

With this kind of show of strength, the Ivy Academy had attracted a lot of attention.

Other than the three top schools in Soaring Dragon Continent, Shang Jing Academy, Fragrance Academy and Gray Wolf Academy, the Ivy Academy had also attracted the attention of the masses as the dark horse with the greatest improvement.

The blind, bloodthirsty 'Titan' was one of the students that was most hated by everyone.

Privately, a lot of students thought that this Titan had only become so abnormal because he was blind and that was why he was so ruthless in his attacks... Of course, only a handful of people

could tell that “Titan” was actually a copy, a beast-type shadow.

“I really look forward to fighting Student Titan one on one.” The ice cold Xue Tan Lang seemed to know that Titan was in fact Yue Yang. He requested to fight Yue Yang at almost every single drawing of lots.

“He only has minor accomplishments. He’s not worth your attention.” The Prince of Zi Jin who had the most odds of winning the championship looked down upon Yue Yang instead.

“My rivals? I would really like to fight with the Sheng Qian Nu from the Fragrance Academy or the Prince of Tian Luo in the Finals. It would also be great if I could fight the Prince of Zi Jin. Sorry, you said Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu from Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace? No, how could I forget about them? I think they would be my lifelong, formidable opponents! As for the Three Great Killing Stars, if they can have such famous reputations, then they must have great capabilities. I’m not very familiar with them, but I really want to try sparring with them in the Tournament! Titan? Who is he? I’ve never heard of him before!” The Floating Mist Sect Junior [Elder] called Bai Yun Fei, although he was arrogant, no one could doubt his capabilities. In the short two months since he had come out of the mountains, he had defeated countless strong opponents. He was most famous for his shocking act of stopping an all-out punch from Tian Luo’s Level 6 Senior-[Elder], Lie Zhang Tian, with only one finger.

Lie Zhang Tian’s all-out power was extremely frightening. Not only had he used it to kill a Demon Commander instantly but he had previously also injured a Demon Marshall with it.

However, he had actually been stopped by Bai Yun Fei's single finger. When this shocking news spread to the world, the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent was in an uproar and was thoroughly shocked.

If Bai Yun Fei had not been a Junior [Elder] from the Southern Floating Mist Sect, the commoners would definitely not believe it. However, as a Junior [Elder] from one of the Four Great Sects in this world, there was no reason for others to not believe this news.

Within two months of coming out of the mountains, Bai Yun Fei was already considered to be the most promising young warrior in Soaring Dragon Continent.

The title of the most promising young warrior that was held by Xue Tan Lang originally had been snatched away by Bai Yun Fei.

Not only him, but even Yan Po Jun, the all-around most promising student, was defeated by the Prince of Zi Jin, whose fame had resounded through the whole world... The Prince of Zi Jin had appeared a few days after Bai Yun Fei, but he had defeated many more warriors than Bai Yun Fei. He knew how to speak 8 and write 6 languages. He was also said to have a vast collection of beasts. No matter if it was element-type, strengthening-type or special-type, he had it all. He was even said to have 5 Gold-ranked beasts. Most frighteningly, the Prince of Zi Jin was also a combat genius, who was said to have defeated the 'Supreme Archer God' in a ten-round archery competition and the 'Great Desert Storm' in an eight moves sword competition.

He had first worked with the Supreme Archer God and killed Gong Wen Ke, a bandit that was said to be number one in archery in the whole of Da Xia. He had also worked with the Great Desert Storm to kill Bo Li Kuo, the leader of the Wolves Gang in Zi Jin Kingdom.

However, people placed the Prince of Zi Jin below the Junior [Elder] Bai Yun Fei. It wasn't because they thought his strength was lacking. rather they just thought that Bai Yun Fei was more of an expert.

He had stopped Lie Zhang Tian's all-out punch with a single finger after all. That kind of capability was simply too frightening!

With the two of them participating in the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, although the Three Great Killing Stars were famous and renowned, Bai Yun Fei and the Prince of Zi Jin had become the most likely contestants to be the winner of the Tournament in most people's speculations.

Everything would depend on the ballots drawing for the Top 8 contestants.

Bai Yun Fei and the Prince of Zi Jin were speculated to have the highest possibility of seizing the championship, followed by Xue Tan Lang. He was after all the three time champion whose strong capabilities were well-known.

As for Yue Tian, Yue Yan, Xie Qian Ren and the others, people did not think that they would clinch the championship. However,

they believe that these young warriors would be the greatest challenges for Bai Yun Fei and the Prince of Zi Jin on their journey to the championship. As for Titan, the abnormal blind student from Ivy Academy, who the heck was he? Not a single one of the audience knew about him. Could he be stronger than the Level 6 Senior [Elder] Lie Zhang Tian? Even if he had a capability like Lie Zhang Tian, what could he do? Lie Zhang Tian's strongest move had been stopped by a single finger of Bai Yun Fei's.

The most gossipy students also asked Sheng Qiang Nu, whose body was completely covered in armor and even her face was completely covered with her helmet, on who she wanted to fight the most.

Sheng Qiang Nu gave them a simple and curt answer, "Titan."

"Did you want to teach that abnormal blind student a lesson because you thought that his attacks were simply too cruel?" Someone didn't understand the reason behind her answer and asked.

"You can say it that way. He looks like he deserves a beating." Sheng Qiang Nu didn't quite agree with others' opinion of Student Titan, but she had her own opinions that she didn't speak out.

"Bai Yun Fei said that he hoped to fight with you in the finals. He seemed to be interested in you and had publicly displayed his love for you many times before. May we ask what's your opinion in this?" Asked another person who wanted to dig out a scandal to attract others' attentions.

“Seems like I will disappoint Bai Yun Fei again. I don’t have any feelings for him at all.” Sheng Qiang Nu was completely blunt when she spoke, curtly rejecting Bai Yun Fei’s public display of love.

The most disappointed person was actually the one who asked this question. Sheng Qiang Nu’s one sentence had completely dashed the audience’s hopes away.

After getting disappointed by her answer, the reporters immediately went to find the Tian Luo Prince, who was considered to be the most handsome man on earth by the female students. “May we ask who is the opponent you want to fight the most? Could it be one of the Three Great Killing Stars, Junior [Elder] Bai Yun Fei, or the Prince of Zi Jin? Do you think you can clinch the championship in the end? Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin had always said that they couldn’t compare to your handsome looks. What do you think about this?”

The Tian Luo Prince whose face was as white and smooth as jade was indeed very handsome. Even if he was a man, he also had the elegance of a woman.

Those extremely clear pair of crystal eyes that could probably see through people’s soul revealed a tinge of sadness, a sadness that could make others feel sad for him.

Even the most arrogant girl or the most boorish guy in the world would not be able to resist his charm... His voice was as smooth as

spring water flowing through rocks. Even though it was a male's voice, it was similar to a sound of nature, pleasing to the ear, making others feel intoxicated in its presence. If this perfect Tian Luo Prince could be said to have a weakness, there could only be one thing, and that was that he didn't smile enough.

Almost a thousand girls grouped themselves into his supporting cheerleaders, singing and dancing for him. They only hoped that they could lessen the bitterness in his eyes even by a little bit.

None of them understood why this Tian Luo Prince was filled with so much sadness. However, no one could ask him about it, afraid that they would hurt him even more.

No girl in this world could resist Tian Luo Prince's smile... No one would doubt this statement, not even Yue Yang. This morning, Yue Yang had coincidentally seen the picture of the Tian Luo Prince when Ye Kong was looking at the Tournament news but he didn't tear or burn the newspaper like Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had thought he would. Instead, he had hugged the picture in his embrace as if it was a very precious thing.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had sighed secretly. They were finished. Even Yue Yang couldn't resist the Tian Luo Prince's charm! Seemed like his sexual preference would turn to a different direction.

"Are you really interested in anal?" Fatty Hai was curious. Didn't Yue Yang only like beauties?

“It depends on the person!” Yue Yang replied evilly.

“Really? You pervert...” Fatty Hai and the others started sweating out of fright.

“What kind of expressions are you guys having? Go and die, my sexual preferences are perfectly normal!” Yue Yang kicked Fatty Hai in a towering rage. Ye Kong and the others immediately felt relieved at this. They had thought that if Yue Yang really liked men, he would not be able to bear injuring the Tian Luo Prince, a man who had incomparably handsome looks. It seemed like he had only admired something beautiful and didn’t fall in love with him.

The tournament today started extremely early in the morning. They had to reach the venue before 7 am.

Luo Hua City Mistress was still in bed having her beauty sleep, but Princess Qian Qian had already woken up to have her morning sword practice, trying to break through a new realm in her combat skill.

They all thought that Yue Yang would win for sure, that it would be alright even if they didn’t go to support him. Yue Yu and Yue Bing on the other hand, had woken up earlier and helped Yue Yang to draw the competition ballots.

When Yue Yang, Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the Li Clan Brothers arrived at the tournament arena, they discovered Yue Yu and Yue Bing running towards them, a little out of breath, as if there was an army chasing after them. Yue Yang hurriedly tried to calm

them down saying, “Don’t be too anxious, I woke up on time today, I didn’t come late.” Yue Yu shook her head, but just as she was about to speak, Yue Bing chimed in ahead of her, “Brother, not good. Your opponent... your opponent today is the Tian Luo Prince... I never thought that I would pick him when I drew the ballots!”

“Ah?” Fatty Hai and Ye Kong were immediately frozen when they heard that, thinking in their hearts that the situation was not good. Yue Yang might really have mercy on the Tian Luo Prince. Why did he have to face the Tian Luo Prince out of all opponents?

“Really? Isn’t that a good thing?” Yue Yang seemed to be delighted.

“What do you mean good? Right now, the girls who supported the Tian Luo Prince have picked up their weapons and are chasing after us. They are preparing to kill you, brother. To prevent you from harming their beloved Tian Luo Prince, those girls have really gone insane!” When Yue Bing said this, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong sweated even more. They were definitely finished. That Tian Luo Prince had thousands of fans and when those crazy fangirls become mad together, their herd force would be as frightening as the force of 300,000 bulls!

“Are you kidding me!” Yue Yang was also dumbfounded.

From a distance, countless women carrying frightening-looking arms were charging towards them like thousands of galloping horses.

There were some riding their beasts, some flying in the sky, some carrying clubs, some carrying huge blades with demon engravings... In a short while, even those few silver-armoured guards who wanted to stop them had been trampled over easily like flies.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai would rather fight one hundred thousand demons in the Demon Abyss than face these crazy fangirls.

Even the quiet, expressionless Li Clan Brothers were wiping off their sweat at this situation.

Yue Yang realized that he would really face a tragic fate if he didn't start running now. He immediately pulled Yue Bing and Yue Yu, turned around and ran. Before he escaped, he had even pointed to Fatty Hai and shouted, "Catch him, he is the fat sex fiend of Ivy Academy, Titan! Everyone, charge! Teach him a lesson and uphold the law!"

"Are you for real? Where's your loyalty?" Fatty Hai let out a miserable scream.

"What is loyalty? I don't have that, but I have fart for you. The situation is not good right now and you are the boss. If you don't step forward bravely, how could you still be a good boss?" When Yue Yang saw that Fatty Hai had run after him, and furthermore, that he ran extremely fast, almost overtaking himself, Yue Yang immediately kicked Fatty Hai down and continued to pull Yue Bing and Yue Yu, escaping from that place in a hurry.

When Fatty Hai crawled back up with great difficulty, he realized that he had been surrounded by the thousands of crazy fangirls.

It was too late for him to think of escaping. He could only reveal a bitter smile and ask, “Beauties, could you at least spare my face?”

His reply was hundreds of beautiful women’s legs trampling on him mercilessly.

When Ye Kong and Li Clan Brothers saw this scene, they immediately escaped frantically in fright. If they continued to stay, they would also lose their lives. Li Ge asked Ye Kong, “Ye Kong, is it really okay if we run away just like this?”

“Then do you want to stay?” Ye Kong rolled his eyes in annoyance. In a situation where they were heavily outnumbered, the most important thing was to protect themselves and conserve their strength. As for Fatty Hai, he would die for sure. If they tried to save him, they would also have a tragic fate. Li Ge shivered, but before he managed to answer, Li Qie immediately interrupted, “No. I think we should think of a way to take back Fatty Hai’s corpse later. Oh no, those crazy girls had divided their forces, they are chasing after us now. Run!”

Yue Yang led Yue Bing and Yue Yu to run one whole big round before sneaking into the tournament arena secretly in the end.

Countless Tian Luo Prince’s supporters surrounded the stage. There were girls and guys. They seemed to want to use their bodies

to protect their beloved Tian Luo Prince from being injured by the abnormal blind student.

“Handsome Tian Luo Prince, awesome Tian Luo Prince, long live Tian Luo Prince! Of course we are Tian Luo Prince’s fans. All three of us siblings had decided to come personally to protect Tian Luo Prince. Everyone of us has tightened our surveillance. Let’s see if that abnormal blind guy would dare to enter here and seek death!” The shameless Yue Yang had disguised himself as one of the Tian Luo Prince’s fans as he shouted and blend himself into the crowd.

Although his face was unfamiliar, his catchphrase was loud and clear, as if he was truly one of the crazy fans.

Furthermore, he had also brought his two sisters along. It didn’t seem like he was a bad person.

The crazy fangirls of the Roses Fan Group didn’t see through his disguise.

The Tian Luo Prince Roses Fan Group fans were all busy looking for the figure of that ‘abnormal blind guy’, not realizing that Yue Yang had approached closer and closer. Then, Yue Yang suddenly leapt up onto the stage. That red-clothed referee who was waiting helplessly immediately waved his hand, “This student over here, I have allowed you to shout below the stage, why are you even trying to come on stage? Go back down!” The red-clothed referee then turned towards the Tian Luo Prince who was waiting calmly on the stage, “Your highness, you have waited for more than ten minutes. Please don’t wait anymore, that abnormal blind guy would not come for sure!”

“Didn’t he already come?” The Tian Luo Prince pointed to Yue Yang.

“Ah?” The red-clothed referee was dumbfounded. He pointed at Yue Yang and asked surprisedly, “You are that abnormal blind guy? Ah, I mean, you are that Titan? You, are you really Student Titan? Your eyes, aren’t you blind... Are you really Student Titan?”

“Yes, you are right! It’s a pity I can’t give you a reward for your correct answer.” Yue Yang revealed a bright smile.

“Ah!” The Roses Fan Group below the stage was completely driven mad.

This bloodthirsty, abnormal blind guy was actually not blind, and he had actually shamelessly disguised himself as one of the Tian Luo Prince’s fans, blending into the crowd before jumping onto the stage.

Would there be anyone more shameless, more wicked than this person on earth?

The answer is no!

Seeing that Yue Yang was smiling, the group of girls were even more enraged. Was this a joke to him?

If it weren't for the Tian Luo Prince stopping them, the hundred over fangirls would have rushed up the stage and tore Yue Yang into pieces. Tian Luo Prince extended his hand to stop their uproar, making them all silent immediately. He looked at Yue Yang with his lake-like eyes and said with a voice as smooth as the night wind blowing through willow trees, "You are late!"

"I apologize, there's a traffic jam!" Yue Yang patted his shoulders leisuredly, but in the eyes of those crazy fangirls, he simply needed a spanking.

Chapter 223 – A Smile And A Scowl, World's Number One

“I hope to fight with you. This is my wish.” Tian Luo Prince’s words shocked everyone present, including Yue Yu and Yue Bing. Had this Tian Luo Prince known Yue Yang before? In his previous matches, Yue Yang had been ordering the masked Evil Shadow to fight on his behalf, so how did the Tian Luo Prince know that the Evil Shadow was actually Yue Yang’s double?

Yue Yu frowned her brows as she started to think.

Yue Bing, on the other hand, didn’t think too much. She only knew that her brother was extremely powerful, so she didn’t feel the least bit anxious for him in her heart.

When the Tian Luo Prince finished speaking, he turned towards the red-clothed referee and nodded, “I concede defeat in this match. He can immediately move on to the next stage of the competition. Please get down from the stage. I need to fight him with all my power and not limited by the rules of the competition...” He then turned towards his Roses Fan Group below the stage and waved his hands, signalling them to quieten down, “Everyone, please move one hundred metres back so that you won’t get hurt. I don’t want anyone to stop me from fighting him. Everyone, if you want to support me, please let me fight an all-out battle with him!”

Seeing the Tian Luo Prince’s sad eyes and listening to him plead with his nature-like voice, everyone’s heart almost broke for him.

The fangirls tried to keep their tears in as they slowly fell back step by step.

The red-clothed referee wanted to speak, but he understood the determination in Tian Luo Prince's heart. He sighed slightly and waved his hand, signalling the linesmen and silver-armoured guards below the stage to fall back.

Yue Yang also looked at Yue Yu and Yue Bing who were standing below the stage, nodding to them sternly and seriously, "You guys should also retreat to a safe place. Later, no matter how intense the battle gets, you shouldn't come near!"

"Alright!" Yue Bing had never seen her brother so serious before. She obediently pulled her Second Sister and left the arena quickly.

When everyone had retreated hundred meters away, Yue Yang and Tian Luo Prince suddenly summoned their grimoires at the same time.

Yue Yang summoned a Silver Grimoire, while the Tian Luo Prince summoned a Platinum Grimoire.

With the additional strength from two Giant Phantom Shadows and with the fire ability from his [Yang Pole] skill, Yue Yang first released a strength that was lower than but almost approaching Innate strength. His aura was like a Demon King, exploding all of a sudden, the shockwave impact from his Qi could even thoroughly shook the red-clothed referee who was 50 meters away. The red-

clothed referee immediately paled. The two linesmen had it even worse. They were knocked back a few steps by the shockwave of Yue Yang's aura.

As for the more than a dozen silver-armoured guards, they were blown away by Yue Yang's hurricane-like aura.

Hundred meters apart, the Roses Fan Group went pale out of fright. A few of the Flower Protection Ambassadors who was standing right in front collapsed to the ground from the shock.

Yue Yang who was holding his Hui Jin Magic Blade was as cold as a Demon King. Purple flames burst out from his hand that was holding the blade.

His other hand was forming a fiery wheel that looked like the [World Exterminating Wheel].

In front of Yue Yang, the Tian Luo Prince had turned himself into a crystal doll-like figure, making his whole body transparent. He closed his eyes under the bright, radiant light illuminating his body, as he summoned bursts of colourful lights that entered into his body and increased his strength. Behind his back, a pair of crystal wings that looked like a butterfly's wings had also slowly formed. Those crystal wings were transparent and flawless. It looked like it was without substance, but it was actually extremely powerful. Every time they flapped beautifully, the whole area seemed to shake.

A fairy that was only as big as a person's thumb was summoned

by Tian Luo Prince. It flew towards his forehead and entered into his body.

In an instant, the Tian Luo Prince's body started to form weird-shaped, silver-coloured Runes, a little similar but different from the dark golden Rune that had appeared on Yue Yang's body before.

Then, the Tian Luo Prince slowly and beautifully opened his arms as the light emitting out from his body radiated out even more brightly.

Countless crystals quickly condensed around him and covered his body, forming a flawless, incomparably beautiful crystal armour on his body. More amazingly, the silver Ancient Rune on Tian Luo Prince's body had seeped through the crystal armour, forming new, more complicated and profound Runic Circles.

Everyone watched dumbstruck.

No one could imagine that that bloodthirsty 'Titan' was actually this strong. The energy he had released was at least at the level of a Level 7 [Overlord].

The thing that others found it hard to believe was also the fact that Tian Luo Prince was actually this strong.

He actually had a Platinum Grimoire, crystal wings and crystal armour. He could even turn his beast completely into a set of

armour. What realm was he at? It was said that only Level 7 [Overlords] could cultivate beast-to-armour transformations. Furthermore, even Level 8 [Emperors] could only cover 30% of their body with beast-to-armor transformation. Most people wouldn't be able to complete the beast-to-armor transformation their whole life. At most, they could only transform their beast to look like a weapon...

Apart from the special beasts that were designed to turn into armours, other beasts would never be able to transform into armours completely.

Only if the summoner managed to grasp the concept to [Awaken] the strength of beasts that was described in Ancient times would the beast be able to match its summoner and turn into armour.

Right now, other than the Tian Luo Prince's perfect, flawless face, his whole body had been covered with a crystal armour.

He even had a pair of beautiful crystal wings.

People had never heard of beasts that could transform into wings before. If they had not seen it with their own eyes, everyone would probably not believe it at all.

“Your highness...” All the members of the Rose Fan Group were brimming with tears and excitement. They loved him, supported him, completely because of his handsome looks, not because he was strong. His looks made others unable to not fall in love with him. Because of this point, everyone felt a faint feeling of regret

right now. The surprise that the Tian Luo Prince had given them was simply too sudden.

It turned out that he was a hundred times, a thousand times stronger than what people had imagined him to be.

Seeing the Prince who was wearing a crystal armour and possessed crystal wings, how could they not cry in happiness...

“My Crystal Battle Armour is not yet perfect. It’s a pity that I didn’t have the time to perfect it.” The Tian Luo Prince sighed with a tinge of regret as he put away his Platinum Grimoire, “Let’s start. I’m really looking forward to fight with you!”

“Let’s have a good battle!” Yue Yang also put away his Silver Grimoire. He raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade as he charged towards Tian Luo Prince, shouting loudly.

Flames burst towards the sky.

Far away, people could see that the purple flames had formed a frightening giant blade in the sky.

An extremely powerful, unavoidable slash striked at Tian Luo Prince’s chest.

In that instant of the strike, killing intent, fire ability and sword blade all fused together to form a huge vortex of explosion, releasing a light that was as strong as a sun, emitting from Yue

Yang's hands.

The red-clothed referee's expression changed. He had the added defense from his beast and was a Level 6 Junior-[Elder]. However, even when standing 70 metres away, he was still pushed by this huge shockwave of energy from the impact of the strike a few steps back... He completely couldn't imagine the level of power and strength packed in that blade point, at the center of the fighting arena. That, that was definitely a destructive, fatal attack!

A slash capable of splitting mountains and rivers – [First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash]. The red-clothed referee immediately knew whose famous sword skill was this.

Yue Qiu, this was the Yue Clan's genius warrior, Yue Qiu's creation.

Since Yue Qiu had died, then the one who was using it must be his descendant... The red-clothed referee didn't recognise Yue Yang, but he felt that this slash wasn't any weaker than Yue Qiu's. It was even infused with a scorching fire ability.

Boom!

The loud impact sound almost deafened the crowd. Everyone heard buzzing in their head that lasted for a long time.

However, the scene on the arena had shocked everyone.

Tian Luo Prince had stopped Yue Yang's [First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash] with just a single hand.

“My God...” The red-clothed referee started to question if he had already gone insane. How could this be? It was such a frightening slash, yet the Tian Luo Prince did not even need to avoid it, he had received that destructive slash with a single hand. The defense of that crystal armour was simply too frightening! He knew about beast-to-armor transformation and had seen their super strong defense before. However, he had never seen such a strong defense like the Tian Luo Prince's!

The crystal armour that the Prince had [Awaken], what kind of beast and how high was its level actually?

The Roses Fan Group started screaming in excitement, feeling wild with joy when their highness the Prince had managed to block the heavy slash with a simple move.

Yue Yu and Yue Bing's expression took a huge turn as they muttered, “Impossible...”

“One more time, [Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse]!” Yue Yang didn't use Hui Jin Magic Blade, he immediately condensed a fire wheel on his left hand and use it to attack the Tian Luo Prince. At the same time, he unleashed [Second Slash: Heaven and Earth Collapse], fusing the fire wheel with his blade. The explosion power from this move was much more than his previous one.

This time, everyone could see clearly the Tian Luo Prince extending his hand and stopping the rotating fire wheel in front of him.

The Tian Luo Prince had stopped the fire wheel.

However, he was also pushed back to the edge of the stage from the momentum of the fire wheel. The Roses Fan Group was immediately anxious. He had indeed stopped the wheel, but once he went out from the edge, according to the rules, he would have already lost.

Hiss...

The rotating fire wheel continued to revolve furiously, but it slowly disappeared.

The Tian Luo Prince's right leg had already been pushed out of the stage, but his left leg stopped at the edge of the stage.

He walked forward and started to walk towards Yue Yang again.

Due to the crystal armour's protection, there was almost no scars on his palm at all.

When the red-clothed referee saw this, he had a feeling like his knees were about to give out. This was really unimaginable. That crystal armour really had an impregnable defense. Perhaps, even an Innate Ranker or a Level 8 [Emperor] at full-strength could

barely put a scratch on it. No attacks would be of any effect to that armor.

That revolving fire blade wheel was definitely an attack that could kill himself instantly.

However, that mighty attack did not even manage to harm a strand of the Prince's hair.

“[Third Slash: Lord of Rivers and Mountains]!” Yue Yang's hands slowly moved and formed the Level 2 Yin and Yang Mysterious Sphere, condensing his purple flames to its limits before turning it into a giant dragon. With thousands of blades as its scales and a power as strong as the heaven and earth, the dragon charged towards the Tian Luo Prince ferociously.

“[Crystal Dream]!”

The crystal wings on the Tian Luo Prince's back immediately gathered to protect its master. His body also emitted a rainbow like crystal barrier.

The purple flame dragon collided ruthlessly into the crystal barrier.

Raging flames engulfed the whole stage, no one could see clearly the battle situation amidst the flame and smoke.

The sparks that shot out from the collision made the red-clothed

referee who was protecting the Roses Fan Group battered and exhausted. As for the two linesman, they were even more tired than the referee. With all their power, they could only block a part of the sparks. If not for Yue Yu and Yue Bing jumping to the front, summoned their grimoire and erected their shield on time to block the sparks of purple flames, the audience today would have been heavily injured, the consequences would be far too horrible to think of.

When the smoke and fire dispersed, everyone could see that the Tian Luo Prince was safe and sound.

He didn't seem to be injured at all.

On the contrary, Yue Yang was already out of breath, his face showing the exhaustion of a fierce battle. The three great slashes had exhausted his Innate Qi and stamina.

He understood that his opponent was someone with an extremely high defense, but he didn't know that the defense of this crystal armour would be so abnormal.

"I really want to fight with you on your strongest state, it's a pity that I don't have much time..." The Tian Luo Prince raised his hand and showed that there was a small hole on his palm, although he had the protection of the crystal armour. Fresh blood dripped down from that hole, forming a small stream of blood, flowing through the Tian Luo Prince's arm and elbow.

The fresh blood and crystal contrasted each other perfectly,

looking extremely enchanting.

This, this was the result of Yue Yang using his Innate Invisible Sword Qi from the purple flame dragon's tongue that he shot towards the Tian Luo Prince just now. Only that skill could break through [Crystal Dream] and shot through the crystal armour, injuring the Tian Luo Prince's palm.

On the Tian Luo Prince's flawless face, a smile suddenly surfaced. That smile was as clear as a morning snow, it felt as warm as sunlight. It was light, yet it had the ability to penetrate through a person's deepest heart and illuminate their whole mind. Yue Yang had seen many beautiful smiles before, including Luo Hua City mistress' unique laughter, Princess Qian Qian's pouty, angry smile, Yi Nan's joyful, but bashful smile, they were all smiles that could bring down kingdoms and steal other's soul. However, at this moment, this slight smile had actually eclipse all of their smiles.

Yue Yang was dumbstruck.

“Do you still have strength?” The Tian Luo Prince smiled slightly as he gently asked, his voice sounded like wind blowing through a lake, as if it had the capability of causing a ripple in people's heart.

“I can still unleash my [Fourth Slash: Universe Reverse]...” Yue Yang nodded and said determinedly, “This slash would have a power that is ten times more than my Third Slash. If you can receive it, then I could only admit defeat.”

“Not bad. I also had the last bit of energy left. Although I had not

fought you in your optimal condition, I have no more regrets.” The Tian Luo Prince suddenly summoned his Platinum Grimoire, and then called forth a burst of rainbow coloured light. Like a radiant, lustrous meteor shower, the balls of light entered his body one by one. The hole in the Tian Luo Prince’s crystal armor slowly disappeared. Furthermore, as more crystals condensed in his hands, it slowly formed a giant, transparent crystal shield. The Tian Luo Prince placed the shield beside him as a Silver Runic Circle appeared in his eyes. The crystal armour and crystal shield immediately glowed with the silver runic circle too, even the crystal wings on his back was also covered with silver runic circles...

In such a strong defense, Yue Yang felt that even if it was an Innate Ranker like Tu Cheng who was delivering his strongest blow, he wouldn’t be able to shatter the crystal shield.

Yue Yang didn’t know if he could break that crystal shield if he lifted the ban on his Innate strength and unleashed [Nirvana’s Flame] and [World Exterminating Wheel].

A tinge of regret seeped through his heart.

It was a pity that he couldn’t lift the ban on his Innate strength now.

Yue Yang couldn’t unleash [Nirvana’s Flame] and [World Exterminating Wheel] in front of the audience, otherwise the audience wouldn’t probably be able to survive. Even Yue Yu and Yue Bing would also be in grave danger.

“It’s the last slash!” Yue Yang had to force himself to unleash the Fourth Slash: Universe Reverse right now, because he had not fully comprehend the sword skill. However, this was not important, because Yue Yang knew that the Fourth Slash would also not be able to penetrate through the crystal shield. The only thing that would have any effect is his Innate Invisible Sword Qi. The Fourth Slash was just a cover, the move that he was going to use against his opponent was actually the Innate Invisible Sword Qi which cuts through everything!

“Yes, this is the last battle.” The Tian Luo Prince eyes that was filled with silver runic circles flashed with a trace of sadness. Although this sadness holds no power at all, it was more formidable than the Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

When it was released, Yue Yang felt a strong pang of pain in his heart.

The Tian Luo Prince’s smiling and scowling expression was the world’s number one, like a short-lived beauty, that would inspire many sad songs in the future...

Yue Yang suddenly roared, violent like a mad tiger.

He jumped high up from the ground.

The raging flames that emitted from his body followed Yue Yang’s figure as he soared to the sky.

As Yue Yang reached a height of around 10 meters up in the sky, he suddenly shot down with a very quick speed.

The purple flames and Yue Yang morphed into a godly dragon that had the power to destroy the universe, plunging down towards the Tian Luo Prince who was holding his crystal shield in the fighting arena.

“Ah, idiot! Stop quickly!” Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian suddenly appeared, the two girls looking extremely worried. Princess Qian Qian even released her greatest strength, unleashing countless Sword Qi and shooting forward like a comet, intent on stopping the two people’s decisive battle.

Chapter 224 – I Want You To Become A Bad Person For A While

When the head of the godly dragon and the Crystal Shield clashed against each other, it gave out a magnificent and bright light like the explosion of the galaxy.

Although the purple flame and sword blade were very strong, they still failed to incur even a slight damage to the crystal shield.

Only the Innate Invisible Sword Qi could bring out the impact. When Yue Yang brandished his Innate Invisible Sword Qi upon the Crystal Shield, a few Ancient Runes appeared immediately on the Crystal Shield. These Ancient Runes formed a whole new Runic Circle when it fused with the Silver Runes on the Crystal Shield. The Tian Luo Prince who was raising the Crystal Shield to defend against Yue Yang's attack with all his might suddenly smiled again... His smile was brimming with relief as if a person who was seriously ill and about to die was feeling perfectly satisfied after he had fulfilled his last will.

The Crystal Shield disintegrated in silence as he smiled. It was broken into countless pieces and swirled in the air.

The pieces then immediately transformed back into colourful, radiant balls of light and returned into the body of Tian Luo Prince.

Yue Yang's finger was pointed at Tian Luo Prince's forehead, but in the end, he decided to take back his Sword Qi and not kill his

enemy. Princess Qian Qian rushed forward with a speed that was even faster than the lightning, holding her sword as she burst through Yue Yang's residual purple flames and sword blades. In mid air, as her body passed by Yue Yang's, she waved her fist and punched Yue Yang who was pressing his fingers on the Tian Luo Prince's forehead. Yue Yang was flown away due to the impact.

Luo Hua City Mistress was pulling Yue Bing and Yue Yu along, as the three of them rushed to the fighting arena swiftly at the same time after the shock wave from the explosion subsided.

Tian Luo Prince covered his mouth with his hand. Blood was seen between his fingers.

Blood was dripping on the crystal armour in front of his chest.

It was a fearsome sight.

Princess Qian Qian hurriedly carried Tian Luo Prince as soon as she landed. Yue Yang had already teleported and rushed right before Princess Qian Qian and reached out his hands to carry Tian Luo Prince who was about to collapse. He sighed and asked, "Why are you doing this?"

"Although I don't like to battle but battling against you is my wish." Tian Luo Prince's blue eyes were smiling but his lips was covered with blood.

"Stop talking already. We got to leave now. You guys are acting

too recklessly!” Princess Qian Qian launched a silver teleportation scroll quickly.

When the teleportation portal rose up, Princess Qian Qian turned and brought Yue Yu and Yue Bing who had leapt onto the fighting arena into the portal.

Luo Hua City Mistress also followed hurriedly while she hinted at Yue Yang to hurry up.

As Yue Yang, who was carrying the Tian Luo Prince entered the portal, the Old Cunning Fox appeared suddenly. He lifted a Crystal Staff. “Memory Removal!” A bright light which was as bright as the sun sparkled on everyone. The girls from the Rose Fan Group as well as the red-clothed referee, linesmen and silver-armoured guards fell onto the ground. When they awakened after a while, they noticed that the fighting area had been razed while the unique and good-looking Tian Luo Prince was standing on a shallow concave at the centre.

Even the most careful person would not be able to tell the difference between this Tian Luo Prince and the ‘Tian Luo Prince’ whom Yue Yang carried.

The only difference between the two of them was that this Tian Luo Prince’s eyes weren’t sorrowful.

This Tian Luo Prince summoned a Golden Grimoire and summoned a light ball which had a fairy’s illustration hidden in it. He then tossed the light ball to the sky until it reached the top of

the cloud.

Countless dim white light raindrop fell.

The white light raindrop comforted everyone who suffered from headaches and helped to ease their pain.

Tian Luo Prince paid his respect gracefully to everyone. “Thank you for your support. However, I am regret that this is where I stop for the Top 100 Tournament. If all of you don’t mind, I will be an audience with you. I suggest that all of us go to take a walk at the seaside and enjoy the comfortable sea breeze in the days without any tournament...” The girls from the Rose Fans Group had already started to cheer excitedly before Tian Luo Prince could finish his sentence.

This was something rare.

The previous Tian Luo Prince who always looked distressed would never suggest to bring everyone to have fun. Even when everyone invited him to various type of events, he would always reject them indirectly and politely and continued to refuse to attend those events.

However, his pressure seemed to have disappeared and his mood gotten better after he gave up competing in the Top 100 Tournament. Instead, he had taken the initiative and suggested everyone to take a walk at the seaside with him. How could they not be in exhilaration? Everyone was happy, except the red-clothed referee who had the most capability. He faintly remembered the

Tian Luo Prince had used a Platinum Grimoire. How did it become a Gold Grimoire instead? Moreover, this prince seemed to be a little... The red-clothed referee slapped the back of his head. He was probably thinking too much. How on earth could the prince be a fake? He must have had suffered from concussion due to the blast wave after the great explosion. That's why he was confused.

The Old Cunning Fox stood beside the red-clothed referee and observed his eyes. He suddenly smiled when he saw that the red-clothed referee wasn't feeling suspicious anymore. "The Prince has let our Ivy Academy's student win. Please announce the result immediately. Oh, the place is destroyed. It has to be cleared."

"The next match will be delayed. We have to repair the battlefield first. Has Student Titan gained victory? My battle records..." The red-clothed referee was confused.

How come he couldn't remember anything about the fight that he had watched?

This was bad. If anyone knew that he had lost his memory of the whole tournament just now due to the concussion, he would probably have to leave his position as a referee.

The Old Cunning Fox smiled and handed over a record book. "Is this the one you're looking for? You dropped it on the floor."

The red-clothed referee was in exaltation when he saw that it was his handwriting. Luckily he had recorded down the whole battle process. He roughly went through the battle record and found out

that the battle between student Titan and the Prince was marvellous. Both of them had summoned lion, tiger and golden eagle. At the end, student Titan had won the match with his fantastic skill. He used the skill which had been handed down in his family, [First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash] to push the prince out of the fighting arena, hence gaining him victory.

This record made the red-clothed referee felt a sense of deja vu and puzzlement. He couldn't remember anything about the lion, tiger and golden eagle but he could slightly remember the [First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash]. Sigh, forget it. Anyhow, he had gotten back his record.

The red-clothed referee signed his name on the record and marked the victory symbol on Titan's name.

The Old Cunning Fox smiled as he looked at it.

He smiled like a fox which had successfully stolen some chicks...

Tian Luo Prince who was leading the crowd of people to leave seemed to turn his head inadvertently towards the Old Cunning Fox's direction while he asked the girls from the Rose Fans Group to follow him. Both of them nodded their heads to each other in a far distance and left respectively.

Yue Yang carried 'Tian Luo Prince' whose crystal armour and wings were disappearing gradually as he followed Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress to enter a beautiful world which was full of butterflies and flowers through the portal. The soft

wind was blowing on the land and the sounds of nature could be heard indistinctly as it seemed to echoed from the bottom of the heart. It seemed like thousands of floral fairies were singing together. Princess Qian Qian was leading the way at the front. Luo Hua City Mistress indicated Yue Yang to follow them. They reached a small manor after walking for a short while. A nice and mind-refreshing sweet scent could be smelled when they entered the manor. The sweet scene gave a refreshing effect on them.

“What place is this?” Yue Yang was curious. The place was full of Spiritual Qi. It was a good place to cultivate. Why wasn’t there anyone staying here?

“Stupid! This is the garden that leads to the Heaven Stairway. We are right inside the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers, it is a whole other dimension. It is a little similar to the Dimension of Duel, but much larger. It is around the size of one tenth of the Soaring Dragon Continent. To be exact, this is the entrance to the Heaven Stairway.” Princess Qian Qian scrambled to open the door and entered familiarly. Yue Yang also followed behind her and put the person whom he was carrying in his arms on the bed. Yue Bing cried out in fear as she looked at the person. “How did the Prince become an elder sister?”

“She is not the Prince.” Yue Yang knew who she was once he looked at her. No one would have such glance like hers in this world.

“You knew it was her right? Then why did you fight with her?” Princess Qian Qian was very angry.

“It’s me...I am the one who asked him to launch his attack. I’ve always wanted to fight with him. It is meaningless for me whether I could live for few more days or less. The Seal Rune has always been my biggest will. My guess wasn’t wrong...I don’t have any regrets now.” The Tian Luo Prince who laid on the bed gradually transformed into a beauty with soft black hair who looked pale but splendidly beautiful even with her weak body. Her appearance was even ten times more gorgeous than her appearance when she was cross-dressing like a man. She was indeed so devastatingly beautiful that people could hardly breathe looking at her. Her eyes were so lovely and appealing that people could get heart-broken just from looking at them. She had a beautiful and fair neck as well as a pair of sparkling, translucent arms. Her tiny fingers were covered in her blood but it didn’t affect her charisma. It was so breathtaking for Yue Yang to think that beauty had always been disappearing at her most beautiful moments.

“Couldn’t you start sealing after you are recovered from your illness? Both of you are really reckless!” Princess Qian Qian wanted to blame them at first but she managed to control and stared at Yue Yang angrily.

“Enough, Qian Qian. You have to calm down.” Luo Hua City Mistress appeased Princess Qian Qian immediately.

“Yue Yang, can you please go out for a while? I need to say a few words to them.” A special smiling expression could be seen in her eyes. She reached out her fair hand and hinted Yue Yang not to say anything first. Her voice was like the heavily scented cold breeze outside the garden making people hard to reject her request. “Just for a while. You go out first. If Wu Xia comes, tell her to wait outside for a while.”

Yue Yang nodded his head lightly. When he walked to the small living room outside, he noticed that the mysterious beauty who loved reading was already standing outside quietly.

The mysterious beauty seemed like she was waiting for him but also seemed to wait for the beauty in the room to call her in to meet her.

Both of them were looking at each other without saying anything.

After a long while, the mysterious beauty started the conversation. "I've seen it but I won't blame you. The only thing that we have to do now is to think of a way to save her life."

Yue Yang muttered to himself irresolutely and asked softly, "[Nirvana's Flame]. This is the only solution that I know. Does it work?"

"....." The mysterious beauty didn't answer but she agreed tacitly to Yue Yang's solution.

"What is the relationship between all of you?" The relationship between the mysterious beauty, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress really confused Yue Yang. They certainly knew each other and they had obviously known each other since they were young. They were not sisters but they were as close as if they were sisters. Maybe they were relatives. However, their real statuses were actually so different that had made Yue Yang even more

confused.

“Why do you want to botherer about this? Just mind your own business!” The mysterious beauty glanced at Yue Yang.

The expression in the mysterious beauty’s eyes was very similar to the sickly beauty’s inside.

The only difference was that the mysterious beauty’s expression was more energetic and active. On the other hand the expression of the sickly beauty inside the room was more serene and elegant. It showed the hidden sadness when she was lonely.

In fact, Yue Yang wanted to ask the mysterious beauty about her identity but he was worried that the answer would make him disappointed.

“I think I can help you a little with the Virgo Temple Trial. You should finish the Hundred Elite School Tournament first! As the Four Great Clans are gradually rising in power all of a sudden, the Four Major Sects are worried that their influence will get smaller. Therefore, the Four Major Sects will definitely take the Hundred School Elite Tournament as an opportunity to improve their standing. So I am not going to participate in this tournament. You must defeat the Junior [Elder] and Prince Zi Jin and send them back home!” Then, suddenly, the mysterious beauty whispered to Yue Yang. “Can you do me a favour? I want you to be a bad person for while.”

“What?” Yue Yang sweated as he heard her. This girl was acting

mysteriously. Did she want him to rob the bank or assassinate the king?

“Stop pretending to be dumb!” The mysterious beauty thought that he was acting confused while he understood what she meant as she looked at his stunned expression. She was so angry that she picked up a book and got ready to hit him to send him flying to an unimaginably far place. However, she stopped all of a sudden when she discovered that Yue Yang really didn’t understand. She warned and hinted Yue Yang with a very soft voice, “Never tell anyone that this is my idea. You just have to admit that you are a bad guy and you are the one who wanted to do bad things, understand?”

“Honestly, what are you trying to say?” Yue Yang really couldn’t understand a word.

“I’ve seen so many idiots but I’ve never seen someone who are as stupid as you!” The mysterious beauty was about to lose control.

“Don’t tell me that you want me to...” Yue Yang realized it all of a sudden. He was immediately dumbstruck by the mysterious beauty’s idea. “If...if I really do that, then wouldn’t I be doomed to be a sinner throughout all ages?”

Chapter 225 – Resolving Heart’s Conflict, Loving As Much As One Likes

The beautiful sickly person asked Yue Yang to enter, but she only continued to look at him without speaking.

Yue Yang felt a little bit guilty under her stare. He actually didn’t have a guilty conscience, but after hearing the mysterious beauty’s suggestion that was as beguiling and tempting as the snake in the Garden of Eden, Yue Yang continued to have this bad thought in his head that continued to haunt his mind. Furthermore, the sickly beauty seemed to have eyes that could see through people’s hearts, hence he felt quite guilty.

“What did Wu Xia tell you?” The sickly beauty asked.

“She said something about the Floating Mist Junior [Elder] and Prince of Zi Jin.” Yue Yang wouldn’t tell the truth in normal times. Even if he said the truth, that would mean that he was trying to hide an even bigger secret.

“Anything else?” The sickly beauty looked at Yue Yang with a hint of amusement.

“We talked about your condition. We were discussing about the way to cure you.” Yue Yang was pretending to be an obedient child now. In reality, he was thinking about what the mysterious beauty said, “I want you to be a bad person for a while” in his heart.

What she meant by ‘bad person’, Yue Yang of course understood it.

The sickly beauty’s doe eyes that was covered with beautiful, long eyelashes flashed open, and she quickly blurted out thoughtlessly, “It’s useless to do that, it would only make matters more complicated. Don’t listen to her.”

Yue Yang didn’t understand, “What?”

The sickly beauty lightly shook her hands, “Have you learnedt beast-to-armour transformation?”

Hearing that she had changed the topic, the heavy burden in Yue Yang’s heart was finally lifted. He hurriedly shook his head and said, “I have understood some parts of it, but I would probably need to fumble and research longer to practice armour transformation in reality. Furthermore, I don’t know which beast-transformation would be best for me.”

The sickly beauty replied him with the best answer, “A humanoid beast with the highest potential and wisdom would have a higher chance of fusing successfully. A beast with higher combat power would have a higher difficulty of fusing. You can try with a lower-levelled beast first. Actually, your spirit has already [Awaken] well, you just don’t know how to use it. Maybe you need someone to guide you... Come again when I recover after a few days! Oh, right, Qian Qian and the others said that every word from your mouth is lies, but I think you are actually very honest and frank. You just like to pretend that you are a cheater. It’s not very good for you to continue closing your soul like this, it will

affect your cultivation... That's why you'll encounter strong enemies in the Virgo Temple. If you could understand this point, Virgo Temple would actually be the easiest Trial to go through!"

Yue Yang was stunned when he heard it.

"Come again after a few days, I'm too tired right now..." The sickly beauty closed her eyes exhaustedly. Yue Yang covered her with a blanket slowly, and as he prepared to turn around and go out after tucking her in, the sickly beauty suddenly asked without opening her eyes, "Don't you think Wu Xia and I look similar?"

"What?" Yue Yang didn't understand why she asked that. Was it a test?

"It's nothing, you can go!" The sickly beauty didn't open her eyes, but there was a hint of smile on her mouth, as if she was laughing secretly.

This made Yue Yang become even more confused. What did she actually mean by asking him these random questions?

After all that, she had even laughed secretly. She was really puzzling.

When he went out the door, the mysterious beauty was waiting outside.

She didn't wait for Yue Yang to speak, her eyes shone with the

same glint that the sickly beauty inside the room had as she asked Yue Yang with a soft voice, “Let’s go and take a walk?”

Yue Yang obviously agreed happily.

Princess Qian Qian and the others didn’t cause any problems, they were all sitting in another room discussing something.

Seeing Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty going out, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu all looked at them absent-mindedly.

After accompanying the mysterious beauty while walking around the garden quietly for a while, Yue Yang was preparing himself to ask about her identity as he really was very curious about her. However, the mysterious beauty suddenly turned towards him and asked, “You actually know who I am, right?”

“No, I don’t know.” Yue Yang hurriedly pretended ignorance.

“Then how do you explain that matter?” The mysterious beauty had immediately switched to another question.

“What matter?” Yue Yang’s heart suddenly jumped. It was here, the time had finally come. He had not finished investigating that matter thoroughly, hence he couldn’t answer at all.

“Forget it, we were not acquainted at that time. Even if it was true, I wouldn’t blame you. Moreover, that matter was fake.” The

mysterious beauty didn't seem to want to continue the topic. Yue Yang immediately felt relieved. Fortunately she didn't want to pursue the topic anymore. However, the mysterious beauty's next words almost made Yue Yang's heart jumped out of his throat, as she asked, "Who do you like more, Sister Luo Hua or Qian Qian?"

This question was a trap! It wouldn't lead to a good ending if he answered any one of them.

Yue Yang could only pretend not to hear the question.

If it was possible, Yue Yang wanted to tell her that he actually liked the mysterious her more... Yue Yang opened his mouth, but in the end, the words were stuck in his throat. Now was not yet the time to say it. He was someone from another world, his identity was constantly at risk. If Yue Qiu really did not die, or if the pitiful guy's mother really came back, would he be able to hide his identity from the pitiful guy's parents? At that time, what would his relationship with these girls be? Unless they really liked him for who he was and not for his identity as Yue Qiu's son, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to promise them anything... This was also the reason why Yue Yang was more willing to accept Yi Nan.

Yi Nan liked him for who he was, her feelings had not had anything to do with his status.

The two of them had not known each other, they were complete strangers who met accidentally and had slowly fallen in love with each other. Although their feelings towards each other weren't so strong that they could move heaven and earth, Yi Nan was definitely in love with him.

Even if he wasn't the pitiful guy, even if he didn't have the Four Great Clans as his Ancestor and even if he didn't have his status as Yue Qiu's son, she would still like him. Yue Yang definitely believed in Yi Nan. On the other hand, if there was a day when the others found out the truth about his identity and he wasn't the pitiful guy anymore, would Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty still treat him like this?

They might, but Yue Yang wasn't 100% sure.

He had too little time to interact with them after all. He had to spend more time with them, experience new things with them before he feel assured for their feelings for him.

"You are thinking too much. Actually I'm not what you think I am..." The mysterious beauty's voice slowly drifted off, barely audible, "We are all simple girls, we don't involve ourselves in politics and we don't wish for fame. Other than cultivating, we don't have anything else... We, we are all loners like you. Maybe we got together because of that, because we felt we had the same circumstances... No matter if it was Luo Hua, Qian Qian or me, we are not good in expressing ourselves. We are all clumsy with our feelings. Of course, you are the same. We are both guarding ourselves against each other, afraid of hurting the other party, yet afraid of being hurt at the same time... Let's not talk about this anymore. We still have a long way ahead of us. Let's take a step each time!"

"Actually, I have my own reasons." Yue Yang knew that the mysterious beauty was hinting at him that as a man, he was not

initiative enough. Actually, Yue Yang was extremely initiative, for example, he spared no effort when he was chasing after Yi Nan. However, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the mysterious beauty all had very extraordinary identities. There might not be any problems being with them right now, but in the future, when they knew the truth, Yue Yang could not imagine the consequences that would happen.

He could not say that he was not from this world, that he was only replacing someone's identity in this world.

If he said this, he would be done for.

When the mysterious beauty heard it, she looked at Yue Yang with her eyes that was as clear as spring water, before letting out a giggle that was as smooth as flowing stream of water, "A secret? Who doesn't have secrets? One day you will understand that those things are not important at all... Let's go back, you still have a match in the afternoon!"

Yue Yang could better understand the mysterious beauty's heart now. She was secretly hinting at him that no matter what secret Yue Yang had, she would not care about it at all.

However, would she not even care if he told her that he was a guy from another world and was actually replacing someone else's identity here?

Yue Yang really did not have confidence at all when he thought about it that way.

He looked at the mysterious beauty's face that was covered with a veil. Looked at her forgiving eyes, Yue Yang felt a warm feeling in his heart. There were a lot of beautiful girls in the Soaring Dragon Continent, but she was the best girl he had seen in his life... She had this chemistry with him, they could understand each other's hearts without communicating. She had experienced life and death situations with him. Seeing her like this, Yue Yang felt a special kind of feeling, as if she was someone that he was destined to be with even in their past lives...

But because of that, Yue Yang was even more afraid of losing her, afraid that she would leave his side.

Hence, he would rather keep the secret that he was a guy from another world to his grave, he would not tell her the truth even if he die.

When the time is ripe, he would bring her, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua all to Tong Tian Tower, and leave the Soaring Dragon Continent. He would abandon his former identity and lead a brand new life.

Of course, that was under the assumption that he would already have a very strong power.

"You are not saying anything, but I know what you are thinking!" The mysterious beauty nodded as she waved her hands at Yue Yang, "I'll go first. Go and keep Qian Qian and the others company. I shall go back and think about ways to let you pass the

Virgo Temple Trial...”

“Can I call you Wu Xia?” Yue Yang asked her before she went into the teleportation gate.

“Your mouth belongs to you alone, can I even stop it?” The mysterious beauty smiled as she turned around. Her smile was like a ray of sunlight peeking through the cloudy sky, completely illuminating Yue Yang’s heart. It untangled the burdens in his heart, making him feel relaxed and brimming with confidence. Yes, he would definitely have this girl who liked to read books. It did not matter what identity he had, he would never let her go. She belonged to him alone!

She had even given him her permission to chase after her. Why would he hesitate then? He should just give his all to have a romantic love affair with her!

To hell with his identity!

All that matters was he liked her. He would not care about her identity or how the people around would react. He would receive divine punishment if he let such a good girl just pass him by!

He would definitely not let go. Since he liked her, he must succeed in taking her down, keeping her as his for her whole life.

Until forever!

As the conflict in Yue Yang's heart was resolved, his face recovered his leisured smile as he waved to the mysterious beauty, "Girl, just wait patiently. I'll say it to you one day!"

Looking at Yue Yang who had recovered his confident and easygoing smile, Princess Qian Qian felt a pang of jealousy in her heart.

She pulled Yue Yang to one side and asked, "What have you guys been talking about?"

"Do you want to know?" Yue Yang asked for a condition, "If a certain tigress girl can kiss me gently for a bit, I can consider telling you."

"Dream on!" Princess Qian Qian felt an itch on her teeth again, wanting to bite and beat this brat into a pulp. However, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and Yue Bing were all secretly watching them, so she couldn't do it. She could only warn him in a very small voice, "Stinky brat, don't give me a chance or I would definitely thoroughly beat you up!"

Yue Yang laughed when he heard her, "Your Highness, other than you 'attacking' me, I'm not afraid of anything!"

Luo Hua City Mistress burst into laughter seeing Princess Qian Qian whose face was completely red, driven mad with anger. Her shoulders shook as she laughed.

Secretly, she gave Yue Yang a thumbs up.

Princess Qian Qian and Yue Yu stayed behind to take care of the sickly beauty and to master the [Awakening] for beast-to-armor transformation. They didn't follow Yue Yang back to the Champion Island.

Luo Hua City Mistress was extremely generous, she said that as a good City Mistress she should be present to support her personal bodyguard on his matches. Hence, she accompanied Yue Yang back. Yue Bing, who had not realize that she was the third wheel, had also followed them back.

Yue Bing had displayed her good luck once again when the ballot she drew allocated her in Group D that had almost no strong opponents.

However, Yue Yang's luck was bad.

Amongst the four groups A, B, C, D, he had picked Group B, which was dubbed the 'deathly group'.

Amongst the ten people in Group B, there were Xue Tan Lang from the Xue Clan, Floating Mist Sect Junior [Elder] Bai Yun Fei, Western Lion Pagoda's number one disciple Prince of Zi Jin, Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu from Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace, Xie Qian Ren from the Xie Clan and Lie Ban from the Lie Clan... When this deathly group lots was drawn, all participating contestants inadvertently sucked in a breath. Fighting in this group would probably be harder than the finals.

The audience, on the other hand, went wild with joy. The more experts fighting, the more exciting the match would be.

The first match that Yue Yang drew was to face Xie Qian Ren from the Xie Clan. If he won, he would face the winner between Xue Tan Lang versus Lie Ban. Luo Hua City Mistress laughed out loud as she patted his shoulders, “I think I know what’s going on. Qian Qian’s curse must have worked on you, hahaha...”

Notes:

sickly beauty: Xue Wu Hen (the principal, Xue Wu Xia’s older sister, disguised herself as Tian Luo Prince)

mysterious beauty: Xue Wu Xia (Yue Yang’s former fiancée)

Chapter 226 – Hippo Meteor Punch!

After Group B's drawing of lots, Yue Yang was matched with his love rival Xue Qian Ren in the fifth battle.

Yue Bing was placed in the fourth battle with Group D. However, her opponent wasn't strong, so Yue Yang was not worried that she would lose. Instead, he and Luo Hua was about to watch the match between the Floating Mist Sect's Junior [Elder] Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin, to see how strong they were. Unexpectedly, before they left the box, they saw Ye Kong and Fatty Hai walking over dejectedly, with expressions as if they were a widow losing her only son. Yue Yang curiously asked, "What happened to you, Boss? Weren't you really pumped up about having a fight with the Junior [Elder] or the Prince of Zi Jin?"

"He doesn't have a chance anymore." Ye Kong shrugged his shoulders. "He drew Yan Po Jun with his stinky hands for his first round."

"Really?" Yue Yang felt sorrow for Fatty Hai already.

If the opponent wasn't Yan Po Jun, perhaps Fatty Hai might still be able to fight two more rounds. However, no matter how hard Fatty Hai worked, he would never be able to match up to Yan Po Jun, one of the Three Great Killing Stars.

Behind, the Li brothers added, "Even if Fatty Hai didn't fight against Yan Po Jun, he wouldn't pass the next round either, because the next round would be against the 'Dragon Spear Lady'."

Yue Yang suddenly realised the reason behind Fatty Hai's deadpan expression.

Turned out he was in despair from being placed in the group of death.

Fatty Hai's backbone seemed to be taken out of him. He sat paralysed on the chair, talking dispiritedly, "You don't know that I'm preparing to woo a cute girl, I even give her tickets to watch my competition. If she sees that I'm beaten up to a pulp by Yan Po Jun, that cute girl will probably never look me in the eyes again. As your boss, it's really not easy, it wasn't easy for a cute girl to be willing to accept my ticket, I can't believe that my fate would be so cruel..."

"This eh... If you use the Hippo Meteor Punch that I taught you, perhaps..." Yue Yang starting talking, then stopped abruptly.

"Perhaps I might be able to defeat Yan Po Jun?" Fatty Hai jumped up like a bullet and asked, surprised.

"Perhaps you might lose a little slower..." With Yue Yang's words, Fatty Hai's huge body fell onto the floor, lying straight on the floor unconscious.

In order to soothe that broken heart that Fatty Hai had, everyone decided to watch his match and support him.

Of course, Fatty Hai felt that everyone was just there to see him fail, and vehemently refused.

With a big shake of Yue Yang's hands, they set out.

Fatty Hai's vehement refusal was completely ignored by everyone. This caused him to fall deeper into despair, especially when he saw that cute girl with a bunch of other girls crowding around Yan Po Jun for his signatures. Their excited squeals were as if they were climaxing, causing Fatty Hai's tears to roll down his face.

Before they even fought, he had already utterly lost!

Of course, the reason why Yan Po Jun was so welcomed was because Tian Luo's Prince had already been eliminated early on, bringing his Pink Rose Group back to Tian Luo's Imperial Capital. Otherwise, Fatty Hai would not be the only person crying, Yan Po Jun would also be crying... Now that Tian Luo's Prince had left, not every single girl could follow the Pink Rose Group and leave like that. They could only find another handsome guy to support. Since Yan Po Jun was one of the Three Great Killing Stars, the girls would definitely squeal excitedly when they saw him.

"Everyone, let me enter the stage for my competition, I'll give out my signatures later!" Yan Po Jun waved his hands elegantly to the girls.

"What's there to compete against a fat pig? Hurry up and turn him into roast pig, we can't wait!" The little girl who was given a

pass by Fatty Hai was trying to suck up as much as possible to Yan Po Jun.

Fatty Hai fell onto the ground spitting white foam, his legs convulsing.

Seeing this, Luo Hua City Mistress was a bit worried. She told Yue Yang to advise Fatty Hai to get over it.

Yue Yang shook his hands saying, “Don’t worry, he has been rejected by girls on an average of once a day. This kind of blow is nothing to him. Don’t bother about him, we need to find a place to sit to watch the match...”

Luo Hua City Mistress was curious. “Does Fatty Hai still want to compete?”

Yue Yang laughed and nodded. “The more this happens, the more he can display his abilities in battle!” When Luo Hua City Mistress looked again, Fatty Hai was really like those crazy gamblers who lost all of their family’s assets while gambling. His eyes were bloodshot and rushed up to stage. He rubbed his palms, prepared to stake his life against Yan Po Jun. It was as if he was a mad dog, who wanted bite off a piece of Yan Po Jun even if he could not defeat him.

Yan Po Jun went up on stage with the dozens of girls cheering for him. When he found out that this opponent was Fatty Hai, he elegantly raised his finger and pointed at him. “Against you, I only need to use one move. You’ll be dead in ten seconds!”

“Is that so?” Fatty Hai was not angry, but rather laughed. He summoned his Bronze Grimoire and his Halo Shield went up.

Instantly, Yan Po Jun’s expression became distressed. He didn’t expect Fatty Hai to possess a grimoire.

In the past, Fatty Hai’s speed of summoning his grimoire was extremely slow that Yan Po Jun’s brother could knock Fatty Hai off in ten seconds. This also broke the record for the fastest match.

Yan Po Jun did not expect that in such a short period of time, Fatty Hai had such a drastic improvement. The speed of him summoning his grimoire was extremely close to his. However, Yan Po Jun did not summon his grimoire. He only took out two summoning stones and summoned a Blazing Lion and a Raging Leopard. He did not feel the need to use his true strength. He felt that two Bronze-ranked Level 3 beasts were more than sufficient against Fatty Hai. If it were before, these beasts would definitely be able to roast Fatty Hai alive...

What about now?

Yue Yang slightly grinned. If Fatty Hai used his full strength, then Yan Po Jun would have quite a problem in his hands.

Luo Hua City Mistress saw Fatty Hai summoning a strengthening-type Iron-Skinned Rhino, and then another Strengthening-type Little Hippo. With both of them strengthening him, Fatty Hai’s body bulked up in a short moment of time. His

muscles flared and even the bulging stomach of his had huge amounts of muscles pop out. Luo Hua City Mistress asked Yue Yang surprisedly, “You taught him how to use Double Strengthening?”

(Shiro: For those who have already forgotten, after defeating thousands of mercenaries and Ant Soldiers, Fatty Hai’s Bronze Grimoire evolved from Beginner-ranked to Intermediate-ranked. The Ancient Code had also gifted him with a young Female Hippopotamus beast.)

Yue Yang shook his head. “He still hasn’t learned the true Double Strengthening. At the very most, this only counts as Strengthening Stacking. If Double Strengthening could allow him to use ten times his power, this can only at most allow him to use twice of his power. He still has a long way to go.”

“That’s still not bad. Stacking two strengthening-types would normally cause negative reactions in ordinary warriors. Being able to eliminate those influences is already pretty good.” Luo Hua City Mistress praised him.

“Little girl, that’s because I taught him well!” Yue Yang reminded her to praise himself as well while at it.

On stage, Fatty Hai’s body was like a rhinoceros’.

His entire body was full of muscles bursting with power. At this time, his body grew even larger, as if he were a giant animal. He looked like a blood-thirsty giant with his imposing manner.

Although Yan Po Jun looked relaxed on the surface, alarm bells were ringing inside.

With the referee's signal, the match officially began.

Fatty Hai put away his grimoire. Before the Blazing Lion and Raging Panther leapt in front of him, he jumped high up like a toad, smashing his body towards Yan Po Jun.

Yan Po Jun's gaze grew slightly colder. Innumerable blazes of fire rushed up to the air as if a volcano were spewing it.

“Hippo Meteor Punch! “ Fatty Hai roared as he used the momentum from his giant body to increase the strength of his punch. Just like a meteor, he smashed down with great force.

“This must be a tortoise's sissy punch right?” Yan Po Jun sneered. How could such a slow punch hit anybody! He nimbly somersaulted backwards to dodge it. In the soaring flames, the Raging Panther's speed was the fastest. It had already soared up into the sky, pouncing straight towards Fatty Hai in midair. It fiercely went for Fatty Hai's throat. With its strong bite, it could easily break a bison's leg. Yan Po Jun felt that as long as this fatty was caught by it, the battle would be over. That was not even mentioning the even more powerful Blazing Lion following on the panther's heels.

However, Fatty Hai suddenly moved his hands.

His hands pressed down on the head of the Raging Panther with astounding speed and clever timing.

The acceleration of the body was truly like a meteor. With just a ten metre distance, he instantly caught up to Yan Po Jun who was flipping backwards.

His fist, which had stored up enough energy, planted itself onto Yan Po Jun's little stomach with a force that could not be stopped.

Boom!

A huge explosion was heard.

Yan Po Jun's entire body was like a human cannonball being flung out. With a single move, he had shot out to the edge of the stage.

The Blazing Lion and the Raging Panther turned around and pounced. However, Fatty Hai, using the ordinary mercenary's skill "Bison Punch", easily punched them both to midair.

Looking at this scene, everyone could not believe their own eyes, including the referee on stage who was dumbfounded. Yan Po Jun was actually defeated by a nameless fatty? How could this be possible... Yan Po Jun was one of the Three Great Killing Stars, one of the competitors for the crown. How could he lose to the likes of a fatty?

Yan Po Jun waved his hands in midair, causing flames to spread.

His entire body was floating. In that few instances where he nearly fell to the ground, he flew back up. Yan Po Jun rode his flames and flew back onto the stage.

Before Fatty Hai could rush over, Yan Po Jun took the opportunity and summoned his Silver Grimoire first.

Some spectators who did not know what was happening still thought that Yan Po Jun had easily returned to the stage, and was cheering for him. However, those warriors whose eyes were sharp understood that Yan Po Jun at this instant had already lost his ability to battle. Otherwise, he wouldn't need a summoning grimoire to raise a barrier and protect himself...

As much as possible, Yan Po Jun was trying to hide this fact by swallowing the fresh blood that came into his mouth. However, there was still a trace of fresh blood flowing down his mouth.

It dripped onto the Silver Grimoire.

Everyone was stunned as they looked.

Did the force of a single punch from Fatty hai manage to deal severe injuries to Yan Po Jun?

Inside the box, Yue Yang was smiling.

This tactic was something that Yue Yang developed meticulously.

At first, it was not specifically tailored towards Yan Po Jun. However, Fatty Hai altered it slightly so that he could use it against him.

Because Yan Po Jun underestimated Fatty Hai, he fell for the trap and lost big time. It was regrettable that Fatty Hai could not use “Double Strengthening” at this point of time. Otherwise, Yan Po Jun would be even more heavily injured.

“This fatty is really crafty, but tactics like these can only be used once. It won’t work the next time. That’s right, the previous Bison Punch that he used to hit the lion and panther just now seems rather different. It doesn’t require him to turn his body, right? Not only that, its power isn’t that strong either. Is it a new move that you made up?” Luo Hua City Mistress’s eyes were sharp. She immediately saw that Fatty Hai’s new move, although it seemed ordinary, was actually brimming with power. With the level of stupidity that Fatty Hai had she was doubtful that he had the capability to improve on this move like that. Therefore, she was 90% certain that it was improved on by Yue Yang.

“That move is called Full Moon Rhinoceros. Fatty Hai’s right hand holds the power of a rhino, while his left holds the power of a hippo. The effectiveness of this move was so-so. However, if he’s able to merge their powers into one, I believe that the effectiveness of this move would increase tenfold. If the Raging Panther and Blazing Lion were hit by the Double Strengthened fists, it’s definitely an instant kill!”

Yue Yang was happy that Fatty Hai's had learnt the techniques pretty well. However, the amount of time taken to practise it was too short. It did not reach the standard that he expected.

Only after a full two minutes did Yan Po Jun finally recovered fully.

First, he summoned his Guardian Beast Raging Lion King, then chain summoned an Explosion Elemental and Fire-Spitting Snake, buffing himself with one each at his sides. Then, he coldly stared at Fatty Hai and snorted. "I didn't think that student Hai would be as good at deception as the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. Yan Po Jun almost lost this battle. This lesson I learnt from underestimating my foe, I will remember for the rest of my life. After which, I request that brother Hai to take good care of me!"

The Raging Panther and Blazing Lion which Fatty Hai had injured hobbled back to their master's side, letting out a low roar towards Fatty Hai.

When everyone thought that Fatty Hai would be tortured to death by Yan Po Jun whose embarrassment had turned into rage, they suddenly saw Fatty Hai jumping down from the stage and land with a 'pa' sound onto the ground. Then, he used the same gesture that Yan Po Jun had just now. "This young master admits his loss. Student Po Jun, you can go on and perform at your own pace..."

Yan Po Jun's face contorted with anger.

The little girls spectating all jeered, scolding Fatty Hai for being despicable and vulgar. However, Fatty Hai immediately shoved his middle finger up as an answer.

“Wasn’t this fatty really timid before? How would he dare to do this? I bet you brought him up the wrong way as his boss!” Luo Hua City Mistress could not stop laughing heartily at this scene. She was laughing until she felt weak and needed to lean on Yue Yang’s shoulder for support. Yue Yang hurriedly hugged her, taking advantage by holding onto her slender waist while correcting her, “He’s the big boss, that is, if we’re going by weight...”

Chapter 227 – Challenging Virgo Temple

One More Time

Fatty Hai had originally wanted to fight Yan Po Jun to the death.

However, as he released his punch, his mind had cleared of his anger. He realized that fighting Yan Po Jun to death at the moment was meaningless, as there would be Team Matches later on.

After all, he knew that Yue Yang would definitely exhaust his strength when fighting against Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin later. Moreover, Yue Yang would still have to Trial the Virgo Temple afterwards. Whether Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and the rest could participate in the Team Match was uncertain. Therefore, he himself, Ye Kong and the rest would have to fight harder in the Team Match of the Hundred School's Elite Tournament. The reason as to why the Li Brothers had given up on their Individual Matches was to preserve their strength for the Team Match later on. When Fatty Hai thought of this, he certainly knew when to stop. Hence, he gave up on fighting with Yan Po Jun to the bitter end. If everyone had fought to the bitter end and reached their limits in their Individual Matches, then Yue Bing would be the only one with the energy to fight during the most difficult and challenging Team Match. Wouldn't that be ridiculous?

Although everyone looked down upon Fatty Hai, he still remained smiling as he returned to Ye Kong and Li Brothers in a good mood.

He started to brag once he opened his mouth. "What do you think about my Hippo Meteor Punch? Is it cool? I also can't help

but to start adoring myself. Haha! Even Yan Po Jun, one of the Three Great Killing Stars, was sent flying away after he got hit by my punch. What a nice feeling. There's nothing better than this feeling! “

‘You're nothing if Yue Yang didn't teach you.’ Ye Kong scorned Fatty Hai as he thought to himself, ‘Last time you were just a good-for-nothing fella.’

“Let's go! As the big boss, I should treat you guys to lunch. Where is Yue Yang that brat?” Fatty Hai magnanimously decided to treat all of them to a great lunch.

“He is flirting with Luo Hua City Mistress and enjoying their own good time. Don't say that I didn't warn you. You'll be throwing your life away if you disturb them now.” In Ye Kong's opinion, not only would Yue Yang get mad, if this fatty disturbed him while he was having his sweet moment with his girlfriend, he would definitely kill Fatty Hai.

“Then it's fine. He might probably forget that he has to eat since he has a beauty with him.” Fatty Hai corrected himself as he trembled.

Just as Fatty Hai finished speaking, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai saw Yue Bing running towards them with a blushing face.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai thought Yue Bing was being harassed by other guys. They got angry immediately and asked, “What's going on? Which blind fella is so daring to make fun of you?”

Yue Bing shook her hands hurriedly, “No. I just knocked down my opponent and wanted to share the good news with elder brother, but I didn’t expect that sister Luo Hua and him were...” When Yue Bing said this, Fatty Hai’s saliva was dripping out from his mouth. He started become nosy and asked, “What are they doing? Are they kissing? Yue Yang has improved a lot and becoming more expert in picking up with girls with my guidance. I never thought that it will be this fast for him to make Luo Hua City Mistress his.”

A teacup was smashed on his head before he could finish feeling proud of himself.

Fatty Hai saw the blushing Luo Hua City Mistress staring at him angrily when he raised his head. He begged for her forgiveness immediately. “Madam, you can hit me but can you please not hit my face?”

“[Aurora Light]!” It seemed that Luo Hua City Mistress was preparing to kill Fatty Hai in an instant with [Aurora Light].

“I’m going to pass out.” Fatty Hai was so scared that he was about to go into shock.

“Fatty, do you have a last wish? As your brother, I will try my best to help you to fulfill them.” Ye Kong didn’t help Fatty Hai but give him another blow when he was down.

“We didn’t see anything.” Li Brothers also decided to stand by

the sidelines without lending a hand to save Fatty Hai who was in crisis.

“Luo Hua elder sister, please don’t!” Only the kindhearted Yue Bing little girl plead for leniency for Fatty Hai. Of course, the evil Yue Yang had already taken out his Silver Dagger and handed it over to Luo Hua City Mistress. “It will be too comfortable for him to die if you kill him with [Aurora Light]. I think you should slowly stab him with the dagger and cut his flesh into pieces one after another. After his blood drain out completely, you can apply some honey on the bones to attract two nests of ants to gnaw at his bone slowly. He will die in a more perfect way like this.”

“Mommy...!!” Fatty Hai who was pretending to have lost consciousness quickly bounced up and scampered away. His running speed was ten times faster than when he launched Hippo Meteor Punch in the arena.

When Yan Po Jun looked at Yue Yang, his lips were moving. It seemed that he wanted to say something.

However, he didn’t say anything in the end.

On the other hand, Xue Tan Lang walked from the audience to Yue Yang and nodded his head to Yue Yang. “Bai Yun Fei will be battling with Prince Zi Jin in the first round of Group B’s Round-Robin Match. It is said that Bai Yun Fei has decided to give up on the match. He is reserving his strength to deal with Cang Lan, you and me. If you don’t mind, I will give up on the match with you but you will have to battle against Bai Yun Fei later. What do you think?”

Of course Yue Yang agreed with Xue Tan Lang.

Battling with Xue Tan Lang wasn't his aim. His real purpose was to defeat Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin.

In Yue Bing's opinion, it was too early to talk about this. After all, Yue Yang had not even battled against Xie Qian Ren for the first round of knock-out matches to determine the top twenty.

"Elder brother, let's wait at the arena." Yue Bing insisted to drag Yue Yang to standby on the arena as she was worried that her elder brother would be late again. However, she noticed that Prince Zi Jin, who was the first to fight, was actually still fighting. He smashed the floor and decimated the whole fighting arena cockily as he heard the crowd cheering for him... Seeing this, Yue Yang felt that what Prince of Zi Jin was doing was senseless as he yawned and retreated back. The top twenty knock-out match for Group B would not end tomorrow at this rate.

"Look at that sissy! What a disgusting fella!" Although the arrogant Prince Zi Jin was an eyesore to Fatty Hai, he couldn't deny that Prince Zi Jin was very strong and he had the means to act arrogantly.

"You haven't seen that Bai Yun Fei yet, or else you would realize what the most disgusting thing in the world is." A man who stood next to Fatty Hai groaned agreeably with Fatty Hai.

"Brother, I can tell that you are a person with sense of justice

when I first saw you. As a friend of justice, let me introduce myself. My name is Hai Da Fu. Everyone call me Master Hai. I am their big boss. May I know how should I address you?" Fatty Hai immediately had a strong feeling that the person knew him well. He shook his hand with the person and hugged the person several time like old friends. Both of them communicated with each other enthusiastically. The scene gave Yue Yang and the rest goosebumps. All of them decided to return to the Warrior's Inn to rest. Otherwise, they felt like they would vomit if they continued to watch it.

Fatty Hai came back happily after quite a while.

Although everyone looked down on him, he wasn't angry at all. He even brought news back for Yue Yang. "According to that young fella, Bai Yun Fei had given an ordinary Level 7 Mammoth and a Level 6 Bronze Saber-Toothed Tiger to Xie Qian Ren. Hehe, I think I bring this news to you in time."

"Is it true?" Luo Hua City Mistress was really doubtful. Even if it was the young Junior [Elder] of the Floating Mist Sect, he couldn't possibly simply gave out Level 6 Bronze Beasts to anyone.

"Is Xie Qian Ren brainless? Don't tell me that Xie Tao and Xie Tu didn't tell him that Yue Yang is an [Innate]. Giving him a Level 6 Saber-Toothed Tiger will not help. Isn't he going to throw his life away since Yue Yang could even kill the Level 6 Golden King Beasts like Cancer and Leo which were the from the Twelve Temple Zodiacs? Does he think that he can stop Yue Yang from getting to the next match? He must have eaten some stupid stuff." Ye Kong got really angry when he heard what Fatty Hai said.

If he knew that Xie Qian Ren was such a ungrateful wretch, he would have persuaded Yue Yang to kill the whole Xie Clan during the family assembly.

Then they could have avoided seeing such an ungrateful rubbish.

Luo Hua City Mistress slightly knitted her beautiful brows and shook her head. “No, Xie Qian Ren is very smart. He knows that he can’t beat Yue Yang that’s why he accepted the gift from Bai Yun Fei and pretends that he wants to have a death fight with Yue Yang. If Xie Qian Ren reveals Yue Yang’s real identity as an [Innate], do you think Bai Yun Fei will still battle against Yue Yang? He will definitely withdraw from the match. He won’t even give the two powerful beasts to Xie Qian Ren. Since Xie Qian Ren received the beasts, it proves that Xie Qian Ren not only didn’t reveal the truth that Yue Yang is an [Innate]. Furthermore, he also wanted to confuse Bai Yun Fei by showing his loyalty and pretended that he wants to fight Yue Yang to the end, so that Bai Yun Fei will underestimate the Yue Yang’s strength. He is a very treacherous person. If I am not mistaken, he wants Yue Yang to battle against Floating Mist Sect. As for Bai Yun Fei, Xie Qian Ren is just using him to achieve his goal.”

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai gasped as they listened to Luo Hua City Mistress.

Obviously, Xie Qian Ren was extremely cunning.

“It is useless if he doesn’t have the strength even if he is very

good in plotting his conspiracy. No matter how wise an ant is, it will never get to trick a tiger!” Yue Yang waved his hands in dismissal, signalling to the others not to worry about this problem, “What does Xie Qian Ren even worth? The fact that the Thousand Goblin’s Sect Leader did not do anything even after watching me kill his disciples Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan with his own eyes is the scary thing that we should be afraid of!”

What Yue Yang said gave Luo Hua City Mistress a shudder.

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was indeed a frightening threat.

If one were to compare Xie Qian Ren with the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Xie Qian Ren was just an insignificant ant. With a breath from the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, the whole of Xie Clan would be devastated, let alone Xie Qian Ren.

Fortunately, he couldn’t attack in the Soaring Dragon Continent due to the restriction of Innate Contract. He also did not dare to attack Yue Yang lightly or else all of them would be in an extremely dangerous situation. Of course he couldn’t launch the attack himself but that didn’t mean that he wouldn’t try to stab Yue Yang in the back. Perhaps he would take the Hundred School Elite Tournament this time as an opportunity for him to rise a revolt. If he supported someone surreptitiously, it would be a problem since the Thousand Goblins Sect’s power was only slightly lower than Demonic Palace’s and their strength were way too strong. The situation would turn into chaos even if they simply sent one of them to come by.

Moreover, it was believed that the Demonic Palace would make their move too since the Thousand Goblins Sect was here.

No one seemed to have a clue as they were currently hiding themselves behind the dazzling light of the Three Major Sects.

On the surface, people only saw the mighty side of Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin but no one knew that the strength of the Demonic Palace and Thousand Goblins Sect were actually as strong as the Four Major Sects.

Since they didn't have any matches the next day, all of them were preparing to look for a place to have a great meal. Suddenly, the mysterious beauty came by. "Ye Kong, you guys stay here. Please bring Grandma Wu Teng to the Twelve Zodiacs Temple if we don't come back tomorrow night. Bing-er, this time, as we Trial the Virgo Temple, you would play a very important role. Therefore, you must also come along and be strong. I will tell you what to do later. Older sister Luo Hua, please follow us as well."

"I've passed Level 5." Luo Hua City Mistress wished to help too but she and Princess Qian Qian couldn't enter the temple anymore.

"If we still don't come out the next morning, Qian Qian and you have to use [Hearts' Cry]. This is also the last thing that 'she' insisted on. That's enough talking for now. Let's go!" When the mysterious beauty talked about the sick beauty, her eyes indistinctly showed sorrow but she resumed to her usual self very quickly.

Yue Yang also thought that passing the Trial of Inner Heart's Demons at the Virgo Temple was extremely important.

He must get through this Trial or else he couldn't improve himself after he reached a certain level in the Innate Realm.

As they rushed to the Twelve Zodiacs Temple in Star's Domain, Yue Yang was startled when he found out that not only the thief-disguised Yi Nan was there, the sick beauty who covered her face with light muslin was also there. Could it be that Yi Nan would also be one of them who played a crucial role in assisting him to overcome his Inner Heart's Demons?

Yi Nan's eyes showed happiness when she raised her head and looked at Yue Yang

However, she lowered her head bashfully, feeling shy. She was so different from the usual tomboy Yi Nan.

"Bing Er and Yi Nan, both of you play the most crucial role. It is a must to pass the Trial of Virgo Temple or else Yue Yang will never pass the Trial as he is worried about both of you. Both of you come here. Let me tell you the way that I've thought of to complete the Trial. At first, there's no need for us to rush but something might happen tomorrow. We must pass the Trial of Virgo Temple by today or else Yue Yang will get more obstructed by his Inner Heart's Demons." The mysterious beauty didn't tell Yue Yang what would happen the next day but Yue Yang was pretty sure that the incident must be related to him.

So what was the incident that would happen tomorrow but he had no clue of at the moment?

Chapter 228 – Overcoming The Inner Demons

The mysterious beauty looked at Yue Yang. Her beautiful eyes were heart-warming although she didn't comfort Yue Yang verbally.

However, her silent support had explained her attitude.

She would always support him.

Yue Yang realized this and his confidence was higher now. He nodded his head to her.

The mysterious beauty started to explain her solution to unravel the challenge to the ladies. “Bing Er and Yi Nan, both of you will be in a death-like coma state when you enter the Virgo Temple. You must remember that what you will be seeing is just a dream and it is not real. I don't know what your inner demons are but both of you can only walk away from the Virgo Temple after you defeat your inner demons. If the two of you don't pass the challenge, it will make it even more difficult for Yue Yang to pass the challenge. Both of you are going to pass the challenge in a death-like coma state while Yue Yang and I will make our moves to pass the challenge. Yue Yang, your mission is to go forward. Everything is fake regardless of what you see and hear. You don't have to bother about anything, you just need to bravely charge forward and go with your instincts to the Rear Hall of the Virgo Temple and pass the challenge according to your reaction as long as you advance bravely. As for me, I will stay behind to look after Yue Bing and Yi Nan!”

“Understood.” Yue Bing and Yi Nan answered together. They had the confidence if they were not required to battle in a sober state.

“Come here please.” The sickly beauty waved her hand to Yue Yang.

She cut her fair finger slightly and drew an Ancient Rune on Yue Yang’s left arm.

Then she summoned an rainbow-coloured light and let it entered Yue Yang’s left arm which was stained with blood.

The crystal armour which appeared on her body last time was covering up Yue Yang’s arm slowly and became a unique crystal arm. The sickly beauty smiled at Yue Yang. “No matter how the inner demons influence you, you must never forget who you are. Just recall your identity when you look at the crystal arm.”

Yue Yang hugged her as he felt touched.

Princess Qian Qian hugged them from the back tightly. “You must not lose yourself. Always remember that we will always wait for you outside.”

Luo Hua City Mistress held Yue Yang’s cheek and kissed his lips softly without bordering about the girls beside him.

She didn't say a word but her eyes were so gentle that they could melt Yue Yang's heart.

The girls pretended that they didn't see anything.

Although they also wished to do something special to encourage Yue Yang but they weren't as daring as Luo Hua City Mistress. They could only felt envy of her in their hearts.

As Yue Yang used [Body Fusion] to put Yue Bing and Yi Nan into death-like coma state, he carried Yue Bing on his back and entered the Virgo Temple once more together with the mysterious beauty who carried Yi Nan in her arms. Their goal was to pass the challenge.

When Luo Hua City Mistress saw the four of them disappearing into the Teleportation Gate, her tears dropped as she couldn't hold her tears any longer. To overcome the challenge of inner demons in the Virgo Temple was the toughest challenge. It was even scarier than the duplicated shadow of Gemini Temple. Let alone ordinary warriors, even super strong [Innate]s wouldn't be able to overcome their inner demons. Towards ordinary warriors who couldn't overcome their inner demons and couldn't advance, not passing the Trial would not be of any matter to them, because they were unable to reach that state yet. However, it would become the biggest obstacle on Yue Yang's path of cultivation if he couldn't overcome his inner demons.

One could only become the most excellent warrior after they cast off their old self completely by overcoming their inner demons.

Yue Yang could only advance to the peak of [Innate] level after he could eliminate his flaws, breakthrough his heart as a mortal, and cut off his ordinary feelings as he got to overcome his inner demons completely.

“It is still too early to challenge the Virgo Temple. However, Yue Yang and Wu Xia will succeed no matter how tough it is.” The sickly beauty eyes were as warm as the spring.

“Unfortunately, Luo Hua-sis and I are unable to help them.” Said Princess Qian Qian as she sighed regretfully.

“Qian Qian, you still have chance all the time to help him in the future. There’s no need to care so much on this trifling Virgo Temple. There might be lots of tougher challenges awaiting for all of you. It will not be too late for you to help him at that moment.” The sickly beauty reached out her hands and stroked Princess Qian Qian’s head softly. Her voice was as soft as the breeze at night.

“Wu Hen-sis, you will definitely get better. Just let Yue Yang try it with his [Nirvana Flame]. We will stay together with each other forever just like those happy years at Valley of Hundred Flowers. Isn’t this good? Why do we have to separate with each other after we have grown up?” Luo Hua City Mistress couldn’t stop her tears from dropping.

“It was my fault for being too eager to win in those years. My body was affected due to the research of Ancient Runes. I should’ve be realistic in advancing myself like Qian Qian and Wu Xia. Luo

Hua, I also miss those times... When Qian Qian and you were chasing after each other in the garden...and Wu Xia, who has liked reading since young was reading her books quietly under the tree's shade... Since I was slightly older than all of you, I would rather act like the adult and took care of Yi Nan, who was still a baby then, instead. I would carry her nice-scented, soft and tiny body and kissed her as I walked as the Valley Mistress and the Night Empress would smile as they watched over us. More than ten years seems to pass in a blink of eyes. Even Yi Nan who had not learn to speak and only knew that she wanted to drink milk and cry has grown up now. When I look at her, I feel like I am going back to my childhood. Luo Hua, if God ever let me choose all over again, I will never want to give up such a cheerful and wonderful life." A glimpse of sadness could be caught deep in the sickly beauty's eyes but it disappeared after she gave them a warm smile, as if the storm was over.

Meanwhile in the Virgo Temple.

The mysterious beauty and Yue Yang looked at each other and hugged together as a form of encouragement.

At this moment, the scene appeared before them wasn't the warm little house in White Stone City but the little garden at the Valley of Hundred Flowers.

The mysterious beauty nodded her head and said, "Close your eyes and set off according to your instinct. I will take good care of them. Yue Yang, once you have left the teleportation area, anything that you hear and see are not real. I will only be here."

The mysterious beauty summoned her grimoire and raised a protective shield to protect Yue Bing and Yi Nan after Yue Yang blindfolded his eyes and set off.

Several blurred shadows suddenly appeared in front of the mysterious beauty right after she summoned the grimoire. As the shadows walked nearer to her, the mysterious beauty discovered that they were Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the sickly beauty. The mysterious beauty's expression didn't change at all. She spoke calmly, "My inner demons are unexpectedly a lot. Fine. What do you want to say?"

"Wu Xia, I never deny the fact that you are the smartest among all of us." Princess Qian Qian that was transformed by the inner demons stepped forward and raised her fists fiercely. "But what I want to say is you cannot have him as yours because I love him more than you."

"Is this my inner demons? So do I have selfish intentions to have Yue Yang as mine alone? Or am I just jealous of Qian Qian?" The mysterious beauty laughed and asked the Luo Hua City Mistress that was transformed by the inner demons. "How about you?" This Luo Hua City Mistress also laughed heartily in her unique way. "Wu Xia, although you've been trying hard to pretend to be calm and not care about anything, stop lying to yourself already. Did you think that you're very strong? No. Wu Xia, I know you. Actually you're the weakest, emotionally, amongst all of us. That's why you have always isolated yourself and read your books quietly. You're just avoiding your problems and concealing yourself, trying to protect yourself... It's useless, it's completely useless!"

“So I am the weakest?” The mysterious beauty nodded her head slowly and asked, “What other weaknesses do I have?”

“No. Wu Xia, I’ll give you my blessing. In those years, the Valley Mistress and Night Empress said that you have the greatest potential among all of us. I couldn’t accept that. That’s why I started to study the Ancient Runes. I’ve surpassed you all these years but I am not happy at all. I’ve even paid my life as the ultimate price for doing so. If possible, I wish to go back to that little garden and watch you reading your books under the tree quietly. I would carry Yi Nan who was still a baby and watch over Luo Hua and Qian Qian who were chasing after each other happily. I would sit at your side and boast to you about how I know about taking care of a child. I would tell you that Yi Nan never cries when I carried her...” The sickly beauty that was transformed by the inner demons slowly walked towards the mysterious beauty, seemingly reaching out her hands to caress the mysterious beauty’s beautiful face gently.

The mysterious beauty sat still as if she hadn’t heard what the sickly beauty said.

The sickly beauty that was transformed by the inner demons took out an exquisite dagger. Her hands were trembling as she pricked it into her heart. She then fell down weakly in front of the mysterious beauty. She smiled with relief while she was withstanding the pain. “Wu Xia, I used to compete with you those days. I’ve always wanted to surpass you no matter how but now I know that I was wrong. I don’t want to get in the way between you and him anymore. I give you my blessing. I love this exquisite dagger that you gave me as my birthday present last time. It is good to use it to end my life since I won’t live any longer anyway.

If there is a next life, I wish I could still be your elder sister, but this time I will definitely not try to compete with you... “

The mysterious beauty trembled as she watched the scene.

However, she regained her usual expression very quickly. “Please allow me to correct you. You’re my elder cousin but not my elder sister. I purposely hypnotised myself about your identity as my elder sister before I entered the Virgo Temple. As expected, the inner demons of the Virgo Temple would magnify the challenger’s weaknesses exaggeratedly. I admit that I am a little jealous of Qian Qian because she has always been one of the most formidable opponents in my life. I also did ignore Luo Hua a little because she has always liked flowers and plants since young and never has any conflicting views with me. As for Wu Hen elder cousin, she is my role model. Transforming this way to knock me down was indeed heartbreaking for me but you’re wrong if you think you can influence me with this alone.”

“You’re right. The one that you are concerned about the most is me.” A man’s voice was heard behind the mysterious beauty.

“No. The one that I am concern about isn’t you. You’re just a shadow that duplicated that person’s appearance. What do you want to tell me, my biggest inner demon?” An inner demon who had transformed into Yue Yang stood outside the protective shield three meters away behind the mysterious beauty.

“You will cry in despair if I say it out.” The Yue Yang that was transformed by the inner demons sneered.

“Why don’t you just say it out.” The mysterious beauty raised her brows as she answered calmly.

“You don’t need me to say, don’t you? You’ve long suspected that the Yue Yang you know is fake.” The Yue Yang Inner demon said coldly.

“Do you think I will believe the inner demons that was created by the Virgo Temple?” The mysterious beauty laughed.

“I don’t think you will still remain calm after you see the proof. Do you want to see how the man you love lies to you? Come on. Have a look at this. You will see his evil and ugly face immediately...” As the Yue Yang inner demon waved his hands, the little garden in front of the mysterious beauty disappeared in fragments. The scene that appeared right in front of the mysterious beauty was the warm little house in White Stone City. Two Yue Yang were standing opposite each other in the garden while Fourth Mother was burying her face in cries as she held the little girl.

“So this is what he was worrying about? He is indeed a fool who likes to trouble himself.” The mysterious beauty smiled unexpectedly as she watched.

Chapter 229 – True Love, Clearing Virgo Temple

In front of the mysterious beauty, two Yue Yangs were quarrelling.

However, her eyes were locked only on the one whose arm was a crystal arm.

Within her eyes, a tender expression formed.

However, in front of Yue Yang, there were only three Inner Demon Shadows of Yue Yang, Fourth Mother and the little girl. The mysterious beauty, Yue Bing and Yi Nan shadows were not present.

The Inner Demon who had transformed into Yue Yang stood in front of him while Fourth Mother hugged little Shuang Er, who was covering her face and crying... Yue Yang knew well that all these were fake, they were just a figment of his Inner Demon. However, it was still difficult for him to control his own emotions. He really wanted to soothe Fourth Mother's broken heart, telling her that he did not have any evil intentions when lying to her and that it was all just a misunderstanding...

“Just kill me. You can only take over my identity completely after killing me!” The Inner Demon Yue Yang was laughing coldly.

“Get lost! You're just an Hallucination . Did you think you can

stop me from passing the Virgo Temple with just this?” Yue Yang was angry. He did want to kill the enemy. However, Yue Yang eventually endured it. After all, the person in front of him was merely an Hallucination . If he admitted the existence of the enemy, he would be unable to break through the Inner Demon.

“I do not deny that I am an Hallucination , but what are you? You’re an imposter, a liar, someone that falsely his own identity as me! Did you think you could hide this fact from everyone by not saying anything about it? Impossible, no matter what, there would bound to be people with Inherent Skills in this world that can see through your existence! In the bottom of your heart, it’s also impossible for you to deny this truth. You’re not me, you’ll never be me!” The Inner Demon Yue Yang hit the bullseye in his heart.

“San Er, how could you deceive me... “ Fourth Mother was crying, heartbroken.

“Despicable baddie, return my Brother Xiao San back to me!” Shuang Er was crying while hitting Yue Yang.

Yue Yang’s hands were trembling.

He lightly caressed Shuang Er’s head and suppressed his emotions. With a voice so soft that it could not be heard, he said, “Shuang Er, I’m your brother, Xiao San, do you still remember catching butterflies and riding the wooden horse in the garden? Do you still remember the red sugar glutinous rice cakes that I bought for you? I didn’t lie to you, I’m really your brother Xiao San...”

Suddenly, he saw Shuang Er throw the red sugar glutinous rice cakes on the floor and trampled on it while crying, “I don’t want it, I hate these, I hate you!”

Fourth Mother covered her face while crying, “San Er, just go, and don’t ever come back!”

Yue Yang slowly turned around and took a deep breath. “Fourth Mother, Shuang Er, you’re all Hallucinations. You’re all my Hallucinations from the Inner Demon. This isn’t what the real person is saying, I won’t be mindful of it. I’m Yue Yang, I’m your Xiao San and brother Xiao San, this point is undeniable. You need San Er, and I’m him. I’ll restore and bring the Yue Family to glory; You need a brother Xiao San, and I’m him. I’ll protect the both of you so that you aren’t bullied by bad people. I’ll bring you glory and hope. You have to believe me, I’m your kin...”

The Inner Demon Yue Yang pounced in front of Yue Yang, grasping his collars with both of his hands and roared, “You’re fake! You’re a liar! All those things that you said – it should have been me! You impersonated me, stole away my relatives and even stole away my future wife! Did you think that nobody in this world would know about it? One day, people will know the truth. In the end you’ll have nothing at all! You’re just an imposter, but you have the audacity to call yourself San Er! Pei!” He spat on the ground.

“Disappear, I’m not going to care about the shit that an Hallucination says. Go to hell!” With a shove from Yue Yang’s hands, he forced the Inner Demon Yue Yang to fly ten metres away.

The Inner Demon Yue Yang fell on the floor, coughing blood violently.

Fourth Mother and Shuang Er cried with misery as they went to his side, trying to save the Inner Demon Yue Yang while blaming Yue Yang on the other.

Yue Yang shook his head. “No matter what you say or do, I won’t sway. You’re all Hallucination s!”

Suddenly, the mysterious beauty appeared in front of Yue Yang. Her beautiful face was completely cold and unfeeling as she sneered, “I’m not an Hallucination . I’ve seen it all, this truth that you have been hiding. I was right after all, proposing to go through the Virgo Temple with you. You were really an imposter... “

Yue Yang’s body trembled slightly, but he grinned at the very end. “You’re also an Hallucination too. Wu Xia isn’t like you at all. Perhaps my Inner Demon Hallucination joined with Wu Xia’s. Whatever you Hallucination s say were on purpose to show her right...? Then you’d show her reaction to me. Guardian of Virgo Temple, you’re really amazing. Perhaps you don’t have any power, but you can easily cause people to go mad or kill each other... But, I would like to say, Guardian of Virgo Temple, you’re going to be disappointed! We can pass this test. This Virgo Temple, we can definitely pass through it successfully!”

As Yue Yang finished his speech, the mysterious beauty in front of him, the crying Fourth Mother and Shuang Er along with the

Inner Demon Yue Yang vanished in an instant.

Everything returned to pitch black darkness.

In front of the mysterious beauty, Yue Yang's figure had disappeared. The only one in front of her was the Inner Demon Yue Yang.

As if he was slightly intrigued, the Inner Demon Yue Yang looked towards the mysterious beauty. "Why don't you say something since you've seen the hidden truth?"

"There was no hidden truth. You're just an Hallucination , I won't trust your words. Furthermore, even if this was the truth, why would it matter? The guy I like is him, I will live and die with him, fight with him on the battlefield. One of us will be attacking, and the other defending, as if we are a pair made in heaven... What I like about him is not his identity, but rather because he is different from the others! Love, unlike fame and wealth, is not a product, but an amazing feeling that can't be expressed through words! Let alone the words from you, Inner Demon, even if there is another Yue Clan Third Young Master who told me that he was my real fiance, I will tell him that the guy I like is him, the idiot who would fight to the bloody end for our lives; The good son who would stake his life to battle his way up the Yue Clan Castle while pulling a carriage bathed in blood; The Innate Ranker, who's also a good brother that would carry his younger sister ride on his neck and bought her red sugar glutinous rice cakes... I don't care who he is or what he is. I like him. There doesn't need to be a reason for someone to like another person, nor is there a need to doubt! You're a just a shadow full of negativity, you'll never have his

other side of kindness. You'll never understand what kind of person he is, nor will you ever understand my heart!" The mysterious beauty slowly closed her eyes. "You can disappear now. Whatever you say won't sway my heart!"

"You'll regret this one day, especially when you realise that the one he loves the most in his heart is not you!" The Inner Demon Yue Yang sneered.

"I won't regret it. If the person he likes the most is not me, that proves that I'm the one that is not good enough, that I have to work even harder!" The mysterious beauty answered with a steady voice. "If the person he likes the most isn't me, then I'll work harder and do better until he likes me the most!"

The Inner Demon Yue Yang suddenly shattered into a million pieces and vanished.

Everything returned to pitch black darkness.

Yi Nan felt someone lightly patting her own face. When she opened her eyes, she found that the mysterious beauty was crying out with joy. "Sister Wu Xia, did you and Yue Yang successfully defeat the Inner Demon? We can pass the Virgo Temple? Where's Yue Bing?"

"Yue Bing can go, but you have to stay... The reason is that I won't allow a rival in love to stay at my side. His fiancée could only be me alone." The mysterious beauty pointed her index finger towards Yi Nan. Suddenly, Yi Nan felt her darkness shrouding her

vision and she fell onto the ground unconscious, again. Only this time, she was not completely unconscious and could still hear her voice.

She heard the mysterious beauty's footsteps going further away with Yue Bing.

Tears flowed out from her eyes without end.

Yi Nan was grieving right now. Suddenly, hot raindrops fell drop by drop onto her face.

Two of the drops went into her mouth. A bitter taste entered her mouth, causing Yi Nan's heart to have a great shock... This, this was tears! She had not woken up yet, that was only a Inner Demon Hallucination ! What happened just now was fake, Sister Wu Xia didn't take Yue Bing and leave, one of them was even crying...

"Wake up, I need to wake up now!" Yi Nan was anxious. However, after exhausting all her efforts, she was still unable to wake up. While she was still panicking, she heard a faint voice crying beside her ear, "Brother, don't leave me behind, no..."

This was Yue Bing's crying voice, Yue Bing was still around.

Everything that happened just now was fake!

With such a thought, the darkness in front of Yi Nan shattered with a resounding boom. Everything disappeared in a flash in front

of her eyes. Finally, she woke up with an “Ah!”, and opened her eyes.

She found out that she was sleeping in the arms of Sister Wu Xia.

Aside from herself, Yue Yang, Yue Bing and Sister Wu Xia were still in deep sleep. Everyone was snuggled up against each other. Beside her, Yue Bing was crying in Yue Yang’s arms. Her tears fell drop by drop, and in the end they fell onto her own face... She seemed to still be under the control of the Inner Demon and was unable to free herself. As for Yue Yang and Sister Wu Xia, a wound would appear from time to time on their bodies. They seemed to be suffering the attacks of the Inner Demon right now.

“Everyone, hurry up and wake up! We’re all dreaming, everything there is fake, hurry up and wake up!” Yi Nan patted their faces, but nothing happened. There was no reaction at all from the three people.

“I did not think that your Inner Demon would be this weak. However, there is no use doing anything. It is impossible to ever get out of the Inner Demon’s world.” An unknown voice resounded in the dark space. Yi Nan was frightened when she heard it at first, but she understood it after a while and laughed. “Is that so?”

Yi Nan immediately summoned her grimoire. A beautiful Hallucination Butterfly was summoned from it.

A Hallucination Butterfly was the evolution of the Confusion

Butterfly. Its ability to control minds was even stronger. Although it was unable to control humans, but there was definitely no problem to disturb the thoughts of humans.

As Yi Nan was controlling the Hallucination Butterfly to disturb Yue Yang's dream world to make him wake up, a huge wave of mental strength locked down Yi Nan's thoughts, causing her to have a headache and unable to concentrate. She was unable to solidify her commands...

In the Inner Demon's world, the mysterious beauty had already awakened. She was currently carrying Yi Nan, and was trying to escape along with Yue Yang who was carrying Yue Bing. Behind them, the Gold-ranked Level 6 Inner Demon Yue Yang was chasing them.

She wanted to retaliate, but found that she was completely unable to attack the enemy, and could only run for her life.

After defending against the Inner Demon Yue Yang's First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash, the mysterious beauty suddenly put Yi Nan down from her back, and muttered to herself. "So I still haven't truly woken up, I'm still dreaming..."

"What?" The Inner Demon Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade was right above the mysterious beauty's head, but stopped in bewilderment.

"If I believe that you don't exist, then I wouldn't be hurt at all. It was only because I affirmed that your attack was effective so my

body would be hurt. It must be either Yi Nan or Yue Bing who woke up. Your power of control is failing , I have a real sensation of pain right now.” The mysterious beauty raised her hand and pulled her sleeves up. A small wound with blood flowing out was present on her arm. She grinned. “You’d never have thought of what use the wound I made before I entered the Virgo Temple had. It’s a hint, a sign for us. My cousin and I suspect that previously, Yue Yang had only been dreaming the whole time. This is because, with his strength, a Golden-ranked Level 6 Guardian Beast would not be able to inflict serious injuries... Only the power of the mind would cause that kind of hurt. Besides, there is more than one kind of beast like you who use mental attacks to kill people. In the Valley of Butterflies and Hundred Flowers, there are at least ten kinds of beasts that could unleash mental attacks on humans and make them commit suicide... Disappear, despicable Inner Demon World, this dream is really boring!”

With these words, the Inner Demon Yue Yang and the darkness shattered with a bang.

Opening her eyes, the mysterious beauty found that Yi Nan was holding on as hard as she could. The formless mind battle was almost causing Yi Nan to be completely defeated.

“You can end the game now, Guardian of Virgo Temple.” The mysterious beauty jumped midair and summoned her grimoire. She gathered a storm, with each of her hands holding ice and lightning. Then, she mercilessly let loose against the darkness in front of her.

Cracks formed all over the darkness in front of them, as if it was

a crystal wall.

It had lost the mind battle by a huge part...

Yi Nan was jubilant as she prepared to fly above and help. Suddenly, a crystal arm extended out and embraced her. “Yi Nan, you did well. I’ll do the rest from here on!” It was Yue Yang who had just awoken. Like a meteor, he shot towards the pitch-black crystal wall. With the force of a thousand suns, the crystal arm smashed onto the dark crystal wall.

The whole area was shaking uncontrollably. Even larger cracks formed all over the dark crystal wall, but it still did not fall, blocking their exit.

“Brother, I knew that brother wouldn’t abandon Bing Er!” Yue Bing was the fourth to awaken. With pleasant surprise, she crawled back up, jumping towards Yue Yang who had rebounded back.

The fresh blood that dripped from Yue Yang’s and the mysterious beauty’s body had already mixed and smeared all over the ground before Yue Bing even woke up. In that instant when Yue Bing was jumping towards Yue Yang, a rainbow-coloured light flashed, and a pure fire that was like nirvana’s flame appeared. It was as white as snow, soaring and raging ferociously towards the sky. Along with Yue Bing, the pure fire ignited upon Yue Yang, Yi Nan and the mysterious beauty’s body.

Among them, Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty’s flames

burned the brightest.

Having caught fire in such a bizarre manner, the three girls were greatly shaken. They rushed to hug Yue Yang together.

Even if they died, they hoped that they would at least die together with Yue Yang...

However, the flames did not burn them. It was quite the opposite. It continuously purified their bodies. In this pure and gentle flames, the four of them had a feeling of rebirth. Their clothes were completely destroyed, turning into ashes. Not only that, Yue Yang and the mysterious beauty's wounds had also disappeared quickly. Following this, countless runes appeared on Yue Yang's body.

Slowly, they expanded towards the white flames.

Finally, they extended to the arms, shoulders, back and chest of the three girls.

The bloodstains on the dark crystal wall formed from Yue Yang's and the mysterious beauty's wounds burned as well. The dark crystal wall that was full of cracks turned into nothing as if it was a light fog that had been dissipated by the white flames.

Dozens of metres away, a Crystal Mirror adorned with gold and jewels appeared.

A hundred metres behind the Crystal Mirror, there was an enormous War God statue in the Rear Hall. At the foot of the War God statue, there was a Goddess statue with a forlorn expression. She was holding different ball of lights in both of her hands.

Those two points of light seemed to be as crystal clear as Yue Bing's tears that were shed just now...

The Virgo Temple, which the world has dubbed as the hardest Temple to pass, was finally cleared with the combined efforts of Yue Yang and the three girls!

Chapter 230 – Goddess' Tear

Even after changing into Yue Bing's clothes, Yi Nan still felt very embarrassed, keeping her head low and not daring to look at Yue Yang.

Especially when she thought about that embarrassing scene, she really wanted to dig a hole and hide herself. All along, she had appeared in front of Yue Yang with the identity of 'Brother Yi Nan'. She had even pretended to be her own brother to give him her necklace on behalf of 'his sister' as a personal token to signify the promise of marriage. Instead, her identity as a girl was exposed to Yue Yang here. She really didn't know what to do.

Yue Bing was also blushing.

She was his sister, yet her clothes was completely burnt in front of her brother. Obviously, she was extremely embarrassed.

The thing that made her felt restless the most was that it seemed like this ridiculously big fire was started by her. As to how that happen, she had no clue at all.

Taking the chance as Yue Bing and Yi Nan went somewhere to put on their clothes, Yue Yang approached the mysterious beauty, whose body was wholly covered in ice, "Just now, what Inner Demon did you face? Did you see an Inner Demon like me? What did he say to you?"

"He mentioned some nonsense..." The mysterious beauty

revealed a gentle expression in her eyes, her voice soft and tender, “That nonsense might be about a little secret, but I don’t care about it at all. If you are worried about it, I can tell you what it was about. It is a secret that only you and I will know. In the future, there will never be a third person who will know about it. You don’t have to be worried about this secret anymore, just treat Fourth Mother and your sister well!”

“Did you suspect it from the beginning?” Happiness filled Yue Yang’s heart, before he asked her again.

“Everyone has their own secrets. If you can’t share your secret with me, I will not be curious about it. Even if I knew about it, I will also bury the secret deep in my heart.” The mysterious beauty’s eyes that was as clear as lake water revealed a smiling expression that was unique to her alone, “Yue Yang, there might not be many people who are worthy of your trust, but you could try trusting me!”

“Thank you, Wu Xia.” Yue Yang felt that his heart was lifted from a very heavy burden that had been weighing on his heart since the first time he was transported into this world. He felt extremely relieved and relaxed.

His mental state also started to change without him knowing.

Faintly, he felt that there was an opportunity for his cultivation to break through into a new realm.

If it wasn’t for him wanting to see the reward for clearing Virgo

Temple, Yue Yang would have tried to break through the Fifth Stage of Innate Invisible Sword Qi. After defeating his Inner Demon and relieved from his heart's burden, Yue Yang felt like he was born anew. Right now, he started to believe that he had the capability to climb the ranks and become a top innate ranker. When he had a lot of troubles in his heart, he couldn't give his 100% concentration in cultivating. How could he climb onto the peak of innate realm like that?

The mysterious beauty's smiling expression was like crystal clear spring water, completely melting Yue Yang's heart, "Although you are a stupid idiot, I think... you are more or less okay!"

Yue Yang was delighted. "Really? I have some time tomorrow, would you like to row a boat with me on the lakeside?"

"No, rowing boats might suit Qian Qian, but that's not what I like." The mysterious beauty immediately rejected him.

"Then I can accompany you to read some books under the Thousand Years Oak Tree..." Yue Yang's reaction speed was extremely fast.

"Just reading books?" The mysterious beauty asked in cautiousness.

"I guarantee that we will only be reading books. I will definitely not cause any trouble." Hearing that there might be a chance, Yue Yang immediately pretended to be a good boy as he patted his chest and gave her a guarantee, hoping that she would agree.

“No.” The mysterious beauty still rejected him in the end.

“Why don’t you want to go?” Yue Yang showed his sincerity, “Girl, give me a chance! It’s rare for me to pretend to be a good boy, you know!”

“Let me think about it...” The mysterious beauty smiled gently.

When Yue Yang heard it, he excitedly jumped in exhilaration.

In one’s life, if he met such a girl, how could he not pursue her as his wife?

Yi Nan and Yue Bing were quietly returning to them. Yi Nan, whose clothes were extremely tight as she had borrowed Yue Bing’s clothes that were too small for her, hid herself behind Yue Bing, afraid that Yue Yang would see her. Yue Yang was afraid that she would feel too distressed, hence he did not pay any attention to her. Instead, he reached out his hands to caress Yue Bing’s head, “Bing er, let’s go. We should collect our reward for clearing the Trial!” As he said that, he also patted Yi Nan’s head and signalled her to follow along.

Although he had discovered the truth about her, he was still so calm and normal. Yi Nan felt completely embarrassed.

With a blushing face, she hid behind his back and quietly followed along.

The Crystal Mirror that was adorned with gold and diamond looked like a treasure mirror on the surface, but with Yue Yang's Level 4 Divine Vision, he could see that it was actually a beast.

It was a special-type beast.

When Yue Yang and the three girls walked closer to it, the figure of a Compassionate Goddess appeared on the mirror's surface. That faint, indistinct voice resounded once again, "Young fellow and pure maidens, congratulations to your team on clearing the Virgo Temple of the Twelve Zodiac Temples. You have unconditional trust towards each other. It was much more difficult to win against your Inner Demons in a team than coming here alone... As the Guardian of the Virgo Temple, other than congratulating you on your success, I would also like to give you all a special reward!"

Light shone out from the Crystal Mirror, the pure light illuminating the whole space incomparably, blinding Yue Yang and the others.

In the moment when the light was at its brightest, four balls of crystal clear light floated towards and entered into Yue Yang, Yue Bing, Yi Nan and the mysterious beauty's forehead. At the same time, the four people felt like there was new information that bloomed inside their heads. A skill called [Inner Mirror] appeared in their minds, just as if it was an Inherent Skill that was given to them the moment they made a grimoire contract.

Afterwards, cracks quickly formed on the surface of the Crystal Mirror as it broke into pieces.

A pillar of light shot out from Yi Nan's body and streaked across the sky, forming the figure of that Compassionate Goddess. She smiled towards Yi Nan and said, "This girl has the best affinity with me, hence, I shall give you the the "Spirit Mirror" skill! My job is done here, goodbye!"

The Compassionate Goddess' figure turned into a pillar of light that shot through the sky, finally disappearing into nothingness, as if she had never existed before.

Only the pieces of broken Crystal Mirror scattered on the the ground were left to prove that they had cleared the Trial, that they had created a record in the history.

Yue Yang kept the pieces of Crystal Mirror.

He realized that there was actually still some use for these broken pieces of the mirror. The Rune Pattern that was engraved on them looked completely unfamiliar to him. If he could duplicate it, he could probably make another Crystal Mirror that had Inner Demon Mental power... if he could use such a weapon to fight his opponents, his opponents would probably die miserably! When Yue Yang was tidying up those broken pieces of Crystal Mirror, Yi Nan impatiently summoned her grimoire and opened it. She realized that on an initially empty page, a new beast had appeared.

Spirit Mirror: Special-type beasts. Gold-ranked Level 1. Has a

spiritual, illusionary body. Has no Spiritual Knowledge. Special Skills: “Spirit Transformation”, “Spirit Absorption”, “Spirit Mirror Fusion”.

The mysterious beauty and Yue Bing were very happy for Yi Nan when they went over to look.

It was not the Gold-ranked Level 1 Beast that made them all very happy, it was the fact that the Compassionate Goddess had given Yi Nan a path for her cultivation, and that is the path to cultivating Mental Power. With this ‘Spirit Mirror’ that had the most affinity with Yi Nan, her future would be unlimited. Especially when she managed to reach the realm where she was able to create an Inner Demon world. Her unlucky opponents who couldn’t overcome their Inner Demon would probably meet their miserable ending...

Just as what those Ancient Peak Rankers had said before: What beast is the best? It’s a beast that is most suited to yourself!

Yi Nan didn’t know what beast was best suited for herself before. However, not only she knew what beast suits her the most right now, she also owned a beast called the ‘Spirit Mirror’ which was best suited for her cultivation path.

“Congrats, Sister Yi Nan!” Yue Bing immediately congratulated Yi Nan. She could finally call her Sister Yi Nan publicly without having to worry if Yue Yang would hear her. Hence, her voice was extremely delighted and loud.

“Thank you, Bing-er...” Yi Nan was thanking her with her

mouth, but her eyes were checking out Yue Yang's reaction.

Seeing Yue Yang's smiling face looking back at her, she immediately lowered her head, afraid that he would make fun of her.

Hearing him congratulating her, a kind of sweet feeling surfaced on Yi Nan's embarrassed heart. With Spirit Mirror, it seemed like she would be able to help him in the future. She would be happy even if she could only help him a little, it would still be better than being a burden. Seeing Yi Nan looking at her worriedly, the mysterious beauty smiled and said, "This Spirit Mirror is very good. Yue Yang has never given you any presents before, you should ask him to give you a beast that you could use for Spirit Mirror Fusion. When your Spirit Mirror finally possesses Spiritual Knowledge, I believe that you will not be far from the Inner Demon world!"

Yi Nan's voice was softer than an ant's, "There's no need for that,"

Although she said no need, she actually wished that Yue Yang would give her a beast that could be used for Spirit Mirror Fusion.

She didn't care when he would give it to her, as long as he gave it to her himself.

Yue Yang didn't say anything, he only reached out and patted Yi Nan's head as a reply.

Of course, Yi Nan understood Yue Yang's silent reply. She felt embarrassed yet happy at the same time. She wanted to act like a wise and virtuous lady on the outside, but the corners of her mouth couldn't help but to curl up in delight.

In front of the Compassionate Goddess' statue, those two hands were holding balls of sparkling, translucent lights that looked like pearls of tears... Yue Yang observed it with his Level 4 Divine Vision and immediately shouted in surprise, "This is 'Goddess' Tears'! The Goddess Tears, a legendary item written in the Medicine Encyclopedia that could revive a dead person was actually these two little things!"

"The hardest challenge has returned the greatest rewards!" The mysterious beauty was the one who was most excited. With this Goddess' Tears, her cousin could be saved.

Goddess Tears. It was not known how it was made, but one could only acquire it from the higher floors in Tong Tian Tower.

Thousands of years ago, it had been recorded in the Medicine Encyclopedia that the Goddess' Tears was the most important ingredient needed to create the godly medicine that was called 'Rebirth Pill'. The first person to consume the Rebirth Pill was a figure that was as famous as the Starlight Princess, who was called the Sweet Sleeping Princess. The common folks often called her Sleeping Princess. It was said that she was poisoned by someone and was placed in a crystal coffin where she slept for hundreds of years. In the end, after consuming the Rebirth Pill, she woke up slowly, as if she had just woken up from her sleep. Her appearance had not changed at all from the time when she was poisoned

hundreds of years ago. Her face was glowing as all the poison in her body was dispersed... Furthermore, after consuming the Rebirth Pill, she had maintained her youth for two hundred more years. If it weren't for some evil warriors who were jealous of her youth and wanted to kill and snatch the Rebirth Pill from the Sleeping Princess, she would probably still be the most beautiful woman in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent for hundreds of years to come.

The most important ingredient that gave the Rebirth Pill this immortality power was the Goddess' Tears.

Even if the pill refining process was successful, a Rebirth Pill without Goddess Tears wouldn't be much different from a normal Healing Pill.

It was said that even without refining, a girl would have eternal youth even if she only consumed the Goddess' Tears alone.

In the list of the Rarest and Most Precious Herbs in the Medicine Encyclopedia, the Goddess Tears was ranked the fifth. The only herb that could match it was the 'God's Blood' that was said to be able to advance a man's cultivation to a hundred years worth of time.

No one thought that such a rare, high quality treasure, could actually appear as a reward inside the Virgo Temple.

Furthermore, there wasn't just a single drop, there were actually two drops of Goddess' Tears!

No wonder the Virgo Temple was dubbed as the hardest trial to clear. The rewards for clearing the Trial was even more rewarding than the Gemini Temple. This two drops of Goddess Tears would definitely be the most sought-after goods amongst the girls.

Most importantly, Yue Yang could only leave it up to this thing to save the Sickly Beauty!

If he could refine a Rebirth Pill with the Goddess' Tears, the Sickly Beauty would have hope for recovery!

Chapter 231 – An Overabundance Of Yue Yang's Luck!

Yue Yang and the three girls continued their victorious journey and rushed into the Libra Temple.

It was different from the previous Temples before it. The Libra Temple had a sight limitation enforced by the Ancient Law. Even Yue Yang who had the Night-Vision skill and Level 4 Divine Vision couldn't see anything with his eyes in this place. Under the situation where they couldn't see their enemies, it was really difficult for Yue Yang and the three girls to clear the Libra Temple. Fortunately, with Xiao Wen Li, Barbarian Cow Shadow and the Thorny Flower Demoness working altogether, they managed to clear the Libra Temple successfully.

Yue Yang received a Golden Scale as a reward, an Artifact.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and the Thorny Flower Demoness also received the reward of intelligence.

As for Xiao Wen Li, after breaking the Guardian of Libra Temple's 'Cutting Evil' Gold-ranked sword, her weapon, Dual Icicle Blades, had absorbed the power of the sword and rose from its Platinum – Dark Gold-rank to Diamond-rank.

Platinum-rank was called Dark Gold-rank in Demon Abyss, a little different from what it was called in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Scorpio Temple.

The eighth temple, Scorpio Temple, was located in a desert, surrounded by countless Bronze-ranked and Silver-ranked Scorpions all hiding in the sand.

Furthermore, the Scorpio Temple itself was buried underneath a sand dune. Due to the disadvantageous location, Yue Yang was unable to kill the Guardian of the Scorpio Temple, the Golden Scorpio. However, he was successful in injuring it fatally, and managed to acquire the Gold-ranked Artifact, “Scorpio Gloves”. Yue Bing received the most reward in this Trial. Her [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill had levelled up, and furthermore, she had acquired a new skill, [Antiaris]. If beasts under Gold-rank were attacked by this skill, there would be almost no cure for them; If warriors under Level 6 [Elder] were attacked by this skill, they would also immediately lose their lives... Fortunately it was the kind Yue Bing who possessed this skill. If it were another person who acquired such a terrifying skill, the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent would probably be swept up in a storm!

After resting for two hours, Yue Yang led the three girls and entered the Sagittarius Temple.

The ninth temple, Sagittarius Temple was located within a mountain forest that was filled with countless centaurs.

Arrows, javelins, battle-axes...

The centaurs attacked rabidly without stopping from the moment Yue Yang and the others stepped into the grounds.

After going through hundreds of battles and raids, Yue Bing and Yi Nan who couldn't afford not to summon their grimoire couldn't help but to level up continuously. Yi Nan had levelled up to Level 5 [Grandmaster] while Yue Bing to Level 4 [Hero]. Only Yue Yang was still the same old Level 2 [Braveman].

When Yue Yang led the three girls into the Sagittarius Temple, a Golden Centaur King, whose body was as humongous as a building, was waiting for them inside.

In order to help Yue Yang to preserve his strength, the mysterious beauty took the initiative to charge forward and fought a great battle with the Golden Centaur King.

With Yue Yang's help, after a difficult battle, the three girls finally ended victorious against the strong enemy.

The Golden Centaur King had turned into a huge stone statue after it died from serious injuries. Its soul turned into golden light that shot up to the sky.

At first, Yue Yang thought that they would acquire the Golden Bow in the Golden Centaur King's hands as a reward. Who would have known that it would turn into stone too. On the battle floor, there were only four small, exquisite Golden Horse Hoofs left in the end... As the leader in the fight, the mysterious beauty decided to give the fortune-bringing Golden Horse Hoofs to Yi Nan. In the

end, after acquiring the Golden Horse Hoof's fortune and luck, and the intelligence reward from clearing the Trial, Yi Nan's Pegasus had levelled up from its Silver-rank to Gold-rank.

It could be said that although the mysterious beauty had fought the hardest, the fortunate Yi Nan had become the person who reaped the greatest rewards in clearing the Sagittarius Temple.

“We have stayed inside for far too long. Qian Qian and Luo Hua would definitely be worried about us. We are also already far too exhausted with our battles. Yue Yang, you should continue to advance. I will go out and update Qian Qian and Luo Hua about it, so as to avoid having them waiting for us in worry!” The exhausted mysterious beauty decided to go out and give Qian Qian and the others news about their well-being.

“If that is so, I will also return with Sister Wu Xia. I have reached my limit.”

Yi Nan really hoped to be able to fight by Yue Yang's side, but she was completely exhausted by the Sagittarius Temple. If she still continued to stay, she would only become Yue Yang's burden.

Yue Yang might still be fine if he only needed to protect Yue Bing, but it would definitely be too strenuous for him to protect her too. Hence, Yi Nan decided to leave. The Twelve Zodiac Temples were filled with abnormal battles, not a single Temple was easy to clear. Virgo Temple was originally the hardest to clear, but the tanker for that wasn't her, hence she managed to clear it even without giving her all. She didn't need to fight in the Libra Temple, so that wasn't counted too. It was only at the Scorpio

Temple and Sagittarius Temple that Yi Nan realized how tormenting clearing the Temples could be. If it weren't for Yue Yang clearing them together with her, she would have long withdrew from the Trial.

Although the rewards from the Trials were extremely rewarding, how could she continue to fight if she lacked the capabilities to do so?

It was already a miracle for her to persevere until now.

Yue Bing, on the other hand, was a little reluctant. She still had some strength left, but since the mysterious beauty and Yi Nan all wanted to leave, she also quietly said, "I, I will also go back!"

Yue Yang thought that this girl still had some strength, hence he advised, "Bing-er, how about going back after the next Trial? If you are tired, I can carry you on my back..."

The mysterious beauty and Yi Nan also advised Yue Bing to stay.

They felt that Yue Bing had unlimited potential. She still had a huge room to improve, hence she should stay and train with Yue Yang.

"No, it's fine. If I stayed behind, I wouldn't be able to help brother. Instead, I will only just be his burden. Furthermore, I had already levelled up a lot just now, I haven't fully digested all the improvements that I've made!" Yue Bing's real thoughts were

actually if she were to stay behind and receive the rewards from clearing Trials, she would definitely snatch away her brother's share of rewards. If her brother could acquire all the rewards for himself alone, then his powers would definitely rise greatly.

Yue Bing felt that the most important thing was to increase her brother's powers. She had already received plenty of rewards, she should know when to be satisfied.

Under her determination, Yue Yang couldn't force her to stay.

Anyway, they could still do the Sky, Earth and Humanity Three Shrines Quest when they cleared the Twelve Zodiac Temples and went up to the Tong Tian Tower Second Floor. After the Three Shrines Quest, there was still the World's Tree Quest in Tong Tian Tower Third Floor. As for the Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Floor, there were even more, countless quests waiting for them. There was no need to worry for missing a cultivation opportunity.

The mysterious beauty couldn't oppose Yi Nan and Yue Bing's decision when she saw their determination.

She quietly said a few words of caution to Yue Yang, that he should be careful, and that if he couldn't beat his opponents, he should come out first and fight again in the next opportunity. After all, the hardest temples, Gemini and Virgo Temples, had already been cleared.

Yi Nan also wanted to speak to Yue Yang alone, but she was a little embarrassed. She kept her head low, her eyes unable to meet

with Yue Yang's.

Soundlessly, with a blushing face and heated ears, she pulled on Yue Bing's hands and chased after the mysterious beauty to leave the place together.

After sending the three girls off, Yue Yang advanced into the Capricorn Temple.

The Capricorn Temple was located in a giant river that was infested with mermaids, frogmen, lizardmen and water monsters that continuously swarmed and attacked Yue Yang. Xiao Wen Li did not need to fight at all, the Stone Medusa and Storm Mermaid were more than able to fill the river with corpses of mermaids and water monsters. The thing that made Yue Yang felt most surprised was the fact that the Stone Medusa had even summoned a Gold-ranked Tiger Shark. She ordered the Tiger Shark to throw the mermaids and other water monsters all above the waters. Facing a pincer attack from below and above the water, the mermaids and the water monsters were completely defeated and suffered countless casualties. In the huge Palace near the riverside, the Guardian of the Capricorn Temple resided. It could switch its appearance from a mermaid into a Golden Sheep back and forth, furthermore, it had a terrifying ability of summoning sorcery. Its special summoning sorcery could turn its opponent into a sheep that had zero fighting abilities.

At first, the Gold-ranked Tiger Shark was extremely powerful. However, after the Guardian of the Capricorn Temple summoned its skill [Sphere of Sheep's Shadow], it immediately turned into a harmless little sheep.

It, who was originally the king of the seas, had almost drowned to its death!

The Guardian of the Capricorn Temple provoked Xiao Wen Li's anger. She personally led the Stone Medusa, Storm Mermaid and Thunder Naga and pursued the Guardian of the Capricorn Temple underwater, finally inflicting fatal injuries on it.

The Guardian quickly returned to the riverside.

When it had only just turned into a Golden Sheep, it was unfortunately stabbed by the Bloody Queen with her Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger who was lying in ambush. It almost met its miserable end.

If Yue Yang fought personally, it would definitely die even if it had two lives. But Yue Yang was restricted by the Ancient Law, hence he couldn't fight personally. The Guardian who had turned into a Golden Sheep was almost killed by the Bloody Queen's attack, but it successfully escaped in the end. Maybe it had already accepted the fact that Yue Yang had successfully cleared the Trial, hence, in the moment when the Bloody Queen was about to swoop down and kill the Guardian, it immediately turned into a pillar of golden light and disappeared, leaving a bunch of Golden Sheep Wools on the floor.

Does Golden Sheep Wool also count as a Gold-ranked Artifact?

Yue Yang was greatly astonished.

Under his Level 4 [Divine Vision] observation, he realized that this soft Golden Sheep Wool was really an Artifact.

Maybe it was because the Bloody Queen's last attack had almost killed the Guardian of the Capricorn Temple, she had received the Guardian's skill [Sheep Transformation] sorcery skill as a reward.

Of course, her new skill reward was only Level 1, it still couldn't compare to the Guardian of Capricorn Temple's [Sheep Transformation] skill. The Bloody Queen's current [Sheep Transformation] could only be used against beasts under Gold-ranked Level 6...

Although it was physically weak, Yue Yang felt that this skill was actually pretty good. It had a lot of potential.

In the future when its level had risen, he could perhaps use it on his opponents and finish his battles very quickly.

Just think about it, his enemies had spent a huge effort in summoning a strong beast, but the Bloody Queen could immediately turn it into a harmless sheep in an instant. Wouldn't his enemies cry to their death?

After acquiring the Capricorn Temple's power, Yue Yang continued to charge into the eleventh temple, the Aquarius Temple.

The monsters guarding outside the Aquarius Temple and the Guardian were not really strong, its difficulty would only be average at most compared to the other Twelve Zodiac Temples. However, the beast summoned by the Guardian who had a humanoid appearance almost tired Yue Yang to death. The first beast that the Guardian of the Aquarius Temple summoned was a Shadow Goddess that was holding a Golden Pitcher. Whenever Xiao Wen Li, Ah Man, Thorny Flower Demoness and the others spent their effort to injure the Guardian of Aquarius Temple fatally, that Shadow Goddess would use the powers of the Pitcher to heal its master completely. Furthermore, it would increase its master's abilities to twice of its original... Yue Yang felt that this situation was as if he had met a tanker with large reserve of HP and a healer in a game. They could really make their opponents die of depression!

Unfortunately, the Shadow Goddess was immune to all kinds of attacks. It really drove Yue Yang mad.

Finally, they won because of a skill that Yue Yang had never used before, [Bloodeye Double Kill].

(Shiro: Chapter 201 – [Bloodeye Double Kill]: When [Doom's Eyes] is triggered to kill an enemy, there is a small chance that a related enemy will be killed too. This skill will not work on non-living beasts or undead beasts who don't have souls.)

It was only at this moment that Yue Yang realized the abnormal strength of the [Bloodeye Double Kill].

The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man had unleashed [Doom's Eyes] and it had triggered [Bloodeye Double Kill] by chance.

Although the Guardian of the Aquarius Temple did not immediately die, its soul was gravely injured. Hence, the Ancient Law recognised the death of the Guardian. [Bloodeye Double Kill] had immediately killed the Shadow Goddess that was immune to any attacks.

Yue Yang immediately grabbed the Golden Pitcher that fell from the sky, his face sporting a smile so wide that a fist could be stuffed inside.

He never thought that the [Bloodeye Double Kill] would have such a fantastic effect. He had always thought that the [Bloodeye Double Kill] could only be used when the Barbarian Cow Shadow glared twice. He never thought that the Shadow Goddess would also die even when it was not glared at, just because its master had been. Although this abnormal skill would need a lot of luck to be triggered, the moment it appeared, their enemies wouldn't even have time to cry, they would die immediately!

Just imagine, if Barbarian Cow Shadow managed to kill a beast with its [Doom's Eyes] and triggered [Bloodeye Double Kill] by chance, then the beast's master would really be unlucky...

Of course, Ah Man had never tried whether she could really kill the beast's master when she killed the beast. It was only Yue Yang's guess at this time.

If it were really possible, then that skill would become the number one amongst all abnormal skills!

What is abnormal?

This skill is abnormal!

Other than receiving the reward for clearing the Trial, Ah Man and the Thorny Flower Demoness also received intelligence reward. Furthermore, Yue Yang had also received the Golden Pitcher. Inside, there was a smaller pitcher that contained Godly Nectar that could heal someone completely with just a single drop.

Originally, the Guardian of the Aquarius Temple would only die after the Godly Nectar was completely consumed. Instead, as it was killed by the [Bloodeye Double Kill], the remaining Godly Nectar that wasn't consumed became Yue Yang's spoils of war.

What is overabundance of luck? This is an overabundance of luck, a great explosion of luck!

Chapter 232 – Who Is Fake Goods?

Yue Yang really wished to clear the Trial of Pisces Temple in one go in order to complete all Trials of the Twelve Zodiac Temple.

No one knew what would happen after one had cleared all the Trials of the Twelve Zodiac Temple since no one had completed the the Twelve Zodiac Temple Trials in the past ten thousand years. Based on the ample rewards given after clearing each Temple, there must be a surprising reward that he would acquire after clearing all the Trials due to the great difficulty of the Twelve Zodiac Temples. As a result of clearing the Trials of the six Temples continuously since he completed the Trial of the Virgo Temple, Yue Yang's mental was extremely exhausted though his body still had the energy after he defeated the Guardian of the Aquarius Temple. Since he also worried about Luo Hua, Qian Qian and the rest, he had decided to leave and take a rest before he continued with the Trial of the Pisces Temple.

Most importantly, Yue Yang couldn't wait to share his happiness and excitement of getting the Goddess' Tears and Godly Nectar with all the girls.

They could save the life of the sickly beauty with the Goddess' Tears and Godly Nectar.

Yue Yang noticed that the mysterious beauty and the sickly beauty were missing besides of Luo Hua, Qian Qian, Yue Yu, Yi Nan and Yue Bing after he got out from the Teleportation Gate. Princess Qian Qian was the first to approach Yue Yang as soon as he got out from the Teleportation Gate. She did a gesture to Yue

Yang without asking him regarding the battling process. “Quick! We have to leave now!”

“What is happening?” Yue Yang was curious.

Could it be that what was told by the little girl, Wu Xia was real?

She said something hideous might happen on the next day and he won't be able to clear the Trial of the Virgo Temple as it would aroused his inner demons if he knew it. One day had already passed which meant the incident that was mentioned by Wu Xia might had happened today.

Princess Qian Qian pulled Yue Yang and left without answering Yue Yang's question.

When they were back to the Windchime Inn, Yue Yu and Yue Bing's eye sockets were reddish. They looked at Yue Yang as if they had something to tell him but they didn't say anything.

Yue Yang was puzzled. Could it be that something bad happened to Fourth Mother?

This was quite impossible because Yue Bing would definitely cry if something bad happened to Fourth Mother. Furthermore, Jun Wu You and the Old Cunning Fox had promised him that they would send Fourth Mother to an absolutely safe place where the enemies wouldn't be able to find her. If nothing happened to Fourth Mother, then what else could have happened? Yue Yang

looked at Luo Hua City Mistress, hoping that she would give him an explanation.

Luo Hua City Mistress didn't try to hide it from Yue Yang, she walked towards Yue Yang and sat beside him. "Someone wrote to Jun Wu You and the Old Marshall Yue disclosing that the substitute Clan Master, Yue Shan is a puppet possessed by a demon..."

"Are you kidding me?" Yue Yang was startled. Although Uncle Yue Shan was very treacherous, his body and aura didn't seem like a demon.

He might not be able to sense it as he was not close with Yue Shan, but it was impossible if Elder Yue Hai did not know about the changes with his own son. In addition, it was impossible for Yue Shan's wife who had been sleeping with him on the same bed and staying with him all the time not to notice about the changes in her husband's body. Yue Yang also didn't think that his sons and daughters like Yue Tian, Yue Ting, Yue Yu and the rest were unable to tell that their father was being possessed by a demon. If Yue Shan was possessed by a demon, it would be impossible for the Heavenly Imperial Guardians and the Innate Rankers not finding out that he was a demon since Yue Shan used to enter and leave the palace as he was serving for Da Xia Empire.

As Yue Yang thought about it, he really couldn't believe in such a ridiculous speculation. Yue Yang would have believed it if someone said Yue Shan was an extremely treacherous hypocrite or he was the murderer who had killed Yue Qiu, the tragic guy's father.

However, in Yue Yang's opinion, if Yue Shan was said to be possessed by demon, it was impossible for none of them to notice about it unless all the warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent were blind!

Yue Yang didn't believe in this kind of disclosure. The person who revealed this must be lying.

Yue Yang would approve if someone wanted to smear Yue Shan's reputation. He wouldn't object no matter who that person was. However, that person had actually used such a method, he was really speechless. This would only make more people to sympathize with Yue Shan. Hearing this news, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai would probably comfort Yue Shan after knowing this. It looks like Yue Shan's position as a substitute Clan Master would not be shaken in this short period of time.

Yue Yang asked curiously, "Which dreary person wrote this kind of letter?"

Yue Yu's lips trembled as she answered. "'It...it was Third Uncle. He came back yesterday.....'

The answer was like a bolt from the blue. Yue Yang trembled after he heard the answer. Oh my God! It was actually the tragic guy's father who came back!

Yue Yang had no interest in exploring the truth on whether Yue Shan was a demon or not. He started to worry about himself. If Yue Qiu happened to notice that he wasn't his son by any chance,

it would be over!

“When did he come back?” Yue Yang realized that his voice was a little stuttering.

“Don’t get too stirred up...’ Princess Qian Qian held Yue Yang’s hands as she sat beside Yue Yang. “We still can’t confirm whether he is the real Yue Qiu for the time being. After all, your father had died in the war for fifteen years. Now just as you started to help Yue Clan to rise in power, he suddenly came back out of the blue... Most importantly, everyone thought that the mysterious expert who taught you combat skills was your father, and that the one who came back now is a fake... The old marshal Yue had shown a fake portrait of you which had been slightly altered from your father. In the end, he nodded his head and said that you look just like him. That means he couldn’t even recognize his own son. Of course, it was just a portrait, it couldn’t explain anything. However, this is enough to make him suspicious... At the moment, we hope that you can stay calm. It will be best if he is the real one. If he is a fake Yue Qiu then we will definitely investigate this matter.”

“Did you mean that you want me to identify whether he is the real Yue Qiu?” Yue Yang cried in bitterness in his heart. The mysterious expert who taught him combat skills wasn’t Yue Qiu at all, it was the Heavenly Sword Goddess. It would be fine if he, a guy from another world, had met the fake Yue Qiu. He would definitely be done for if the Yue Qiu that he was going to meet was the real one!

“No. It is the opposite from what you think. We hope that you

don't meet him at the moment in order to prevent him to know everything about you... If your father is the one who taught you the combat skills then it is impossible for him to not know what you are expert in. We don't have the proof now. We need to find more proofs to prove that he is the fake one." Princess Qian Qian hinted Yue Yang to stay calm. "I know you want to meet your father very badly. However, this guy, who had never came back before, had suddenly accused his own elder brother being possessed by a demon right after he came back. Something was definitely wrong... My father and Old Marshal Yue are suspecting that this fake Yue Qiu is actually a demon in disguise. In other words, there might be a Demon King or a Lich King who used some kind of secret method to transfer another soul into your father's body after he died in the war, before releasing him back to Yue Clan... Now the elders were suspecting that the target of the fake Yue Qiu is you!"

"Can't we expose him?" Yue Yang was anxious.

He wished to prove that this Yue Qiu was the fake one. He would be safe then.

If he was the real Yue Qiu, the one who was out of luck wouldn't be the hypocrite Yue Shan alone, but himself too as well.

Yue Yu's eye sockets were reddish and her tears was about to drop. "I heard that the person looks exactly like Third Uncle. His appearance, voice, beasts and combat skills are exactly the same. He could also tell the various battling experiences... I hope that Third Uncle could come back, but I hope that what he said isn't true. Although my father love power and authority, he is not a

demon... I am really confused with this matter!’

Yue Bing had the similar thought. She was even worried that the fake Third Uncle would kill her elder brother.

Yue Yang felt a little fidgety. “That means he is the real one?”

Princess Qian Qian waved her hands as she disagreed with Yue Yang. “No. As I see it goes the opposite way... He took initiative to talk about the past to gain the trust of everyone. What does it means? This means he wanted to prove that he is the real Yue Qiu. There’s no need for him to do so if he is the real one. Moreover, if the substitute Clan Master is the fake one, why is he so anxious to expose him? Why don’t he expose him after he gathers more proofs? There are also a few of doubtful points. First, he said that he had been taken as prisoner of war in the Demon Abyss for the past fifteen years. It was only after gaining the trust of a Demon Abyss Countess that he managed to escape the “Raging Inferno Prison” and escaped back to the Soaring Dragon Continent... Your father is an upright and outspoken person, I don’t think he would sell himself for his life. Second, the one who most probably has been teaching you the combat skills since you were young was your father. If he had been in the Abyss all these years, how could he teach you that? Furthermore, the most suspicious thing is that he was anxious to see you once he is back. He did not even mention about missing your mother...”

“So what do you want me to do? Confront him directly?” Yue Yang still felt that he was in danger. Even if they could prove that this Yue Qiu was the fake one, maybe they would also uncover the truth that he was actually from another dimension... The

mysterious beauty knew his secret. At least she knew what was his inner demons.

Where did she go at this moment?

She seemed to know about this yesterday and wanted him to clear the Virgo Temple immediately.

This showed that she was supporting him..... It seemed that she was willing to keep his secret. This Wu Xia little girl, what was she thinking about in her heart?

Yue Yang felt that he had to ask her about this if she was here now.

So that his heart wouldn't be in a mess and in confusion like now.

Luo Hua City Mistress pressed her hands on Yue Yang's arm lightly. "We have discussed about it before. We also think that you shouldn't go back to meet him. If he is the real one, it shouldn't be a problem for you to meet him later. He won't blame you for that either. If he is the fake one, you should not go back to meet him so the enemy doesn't have any chance to take advantage on you. Anyway, it will not be too late for us to go back until elders finished investigating the matter in secret and everything becomes clear."

"Alright." Yue Yang felt extremely happy in his heart though he

seemed to agree about the suggestion in reluctance on the outside.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress felt relieved when they heard Yue Yang promise that he wouldn't go back to Yue Clan. They were worried that his bad temper would act out again, that he would refuse to listen to their advice and went back to investigate the matter instead. Everyone would be very worried if thing happened this way.

It was still not the time to fight the fake Yue Qiu at the moment.

Moreover, they didn't have any proof yet.....

As for the things such as the fact that Yue Yang was actually the fake one, they had never thought about this at all.

Only the mysterious beauty seemed to doubt about Yue Yang's identity before. but she didn't seem to perform any deep investigation about it. She even decided to support Yue Yang unconditionally by helping him to overcome his inner demons and cleared the Trial of Virgo Temple successfully. This meant in the Soaring Dragon Continent, only Yue Yang and her knew about this little secret. Even the mysterious beauty was unable to be certain of Yue Yang's real identity. It was just that the Inner Demons had exaggerated the suspicion that had brushed across her mind. They could only clear the Virgo Temple because the mysterious beauty had long chosen to forget about Yue Yang's real identity and gave him her hundred percent of trust and support. She also didn't concern herself about this question anymore.

“We could just pretend that we don’t know anything about this. Now we should go to participate in the Hundred School Elite Tournament. After we complete the tournament, we should search for the ingredients to refine the Rebirth Pill. Then we can explore the God’s Ruins after we cure Wu Hen’s disease.” Princess Qian Qian looked at Yue Yang. This was the first time she looked at him with a pleading gaze.

She didn’t want something bad to happen to Yue Yang. If that was the fake Yue Qiu then the enemy must be coming for Yue Yang.

He was just promoted to be an [Innate] not long ago. The Rankers from the Abyss would not have the chance later if they didn’t make their move before Yue Yang grew stronger.

As long as they gained more time over this period now, Yue Yang could advance to a higher level. It would be difficult for the enemy to succeed even with their treacherous tricks. In conclusion, Yue Yang needed time because the enemy was preying on Yue Yang.

Yue Yu handed over a letter to Yue Yang. It was jointly written by Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai.

There were just a few sentences in the letter but Yue Yang could feel their love and protection.

“San Er, you don’t have to worry about the family. Although there are many riddles in this world and it is hard to distinguish clearly between right and wrong, the truth will be unveiled one

day. Please take good care of yourself. Do not easily trust what you hear no matter what is happening in the family. The most important thing is to take care of yourself regardless of any circumstances.....”

Since Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai had told Yue Yang not to go back to meet ‘Yue Qiu’, of course Yue Yang was willing to follow their instruction.

Yue Yang didn’t care whether Yue Shan or Yue Qiu was the demon.

If Yue Yang analysed the whole incident without bothering about his identity, there were indeed many doubts in this matter.

“Let’s go. Since we are unable to take care of those matters, let’s concentrate on the tournament.” At first, Princess Qian Qian was not interested in the tournament but now she just wanted to drag Yue Yang to participate the Hundred School Elite Tournament so that he didn’t have time to think about his father’s matter.

After they went back to the Champion Island, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong were happy to see Yue Yang. “Quick! It will be too late if you don’t come back. We rather you lose to anyone but not Xie Qian Ren!”

Yue Yang just remembered that he still had another knock-out match!

Chapter 233 – Formidable Opponent, Enemy, Encounter

By the time Yue Yang rushed to the battlefield, Xie Qian Ren who had been waiting on the battle arena had given up on the battle immediately.

This was because he had suffered a serious injury from the Team Match with the disciple of the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace, Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu. He was only waiting on the battle arena hoping that Yue Yang would absent from the match so that he could advance to the next level. Since Yue Yang had rushed and managed to get there in time, Xie Qian Ren had decided to give up on the match after he exchanged his glance with Bai Yun Fei, the Junior [Elder] of the Floating Mist Sect. Finally Yue Yang got to see the appearance of the tragic guy's former love rival, Xie Qian Ren and new formidable enemy, Bai Yun Fei.

Xie Qian Ren didn't really looked identical to his father, Xie Tao. Instead, he looked more like with his uncle, Xie Tu. Although he was as wise as Xie Tu, he was not as experienced and stable as Xie Tu.

His eyes and brows looked fierce. He seemed to hold a grudge against Yue Yang.

Under the battle arena, Bai Yun Fei was the center of attraction. Although he was not the one who stood on the battle arena, the people just couldn't help but look and pay attention to him. The presence of Bai Yun Fei in the crowd was like a bright moon surrounded by the stars. He was emitting the light that was hardly

ignored by others. Each and every of his movement were attracting others' attention. As for his appearance, he had the handsome appearance that was envied by many men. The way he wore his white clothes with a silver belt and purple jade on his slender body was full of sense of nobility. Even the princes from all over the world would feel inferior if they look at him.

The other thing that people couldn't help but notice was the Golden Dragon which had shrunken its body into a smaller size with some secret magic. The grandeur dragon race, the King of the dragon race which was supposed to soar in the sky arrogantly was unexpectedly resting tamely next to his legs, waiting for his order.

One of the beasts of Bai Yun Fei was the Level 7 Gold-ranked Golden Dragon King.

This was an existence that made others despair upon the thought of fighting him. Most of the warriors couldn't even get a Gold-ranked beast in their life let alone a Level 7 Gold-ranked Golden Dragon King.

"He is showing off his power to you." Luo Hua City mistress laughed. "Why don't you show off your Golden King Beasts to him too?"

"算了，如果泡小MM这样卖力还好说，对方是个男的，我跟一个臭男人较什么劲啊！"岳阳摊摊手。

"Forget it. If I was trying to impress girls I would probably do that, but he's a guy. Why would I want to show off to a guy?" Yue Yang shrugged.

The referee hinted Yue Yang to go up to the battle arena. Although Xie Qian Ren had given up the match, he still had to carry out his duty to record information about Yue Yang's participation in the match, such as the beast that he used and so on. He was shocked when he saw Yue Yang summoning the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice. These puppet mice did not have any battle strength, how could this brat had the nerve to summon it? Was he really supposed to report to the top management that this brat had defeated Xie Qian Ren with the puppet mice?

Would others suspect that they faked the match?

The blue-clothed referee really wished that Yue Yang had summoned a stronger beast. If he didn't have a Gold-ranked one at least a Silver-ranked or a Bronze-ranked one would do. Summoning the puppet mice would only make others suspect that they were cheating in the match. He couldn't report it to the top management with this...

The referee hurriedly asked Yue Yang when he saw that Yue Yang was getting ready to go down from the battle arena. "Student Titan, can you please summon a stronger beast? The puppet mice isn't in the combat category. "

Yue Yang then summoned a Normal-ranked [Level 1] Spitting Thorny Flower. The referee was about to vomit the blood and die.

Puppet mice and Spitting Thorny Flower... Was this brat actually a lunatic lover of rubbish beasts, a madman whose life goal was to collect all those rubbish beasts?

The audiences outside the battle arena were roaring with laughter. They had seen many bizarre beasts summoned in the Hundred School Elite Tournament before, but they had never seen a contestant who summoned rubbish beasts like the puppet mice and Spitting Thorny Flower. Especially when these beasts were to compare with the majestic Golden Dragon King of the Junior [Elder], Bai Yun Fei, they appeared to be even more unsuitable and insignificant.

“Don’t you have other combat-type beasts? ” The blue-clothed referee asked patiently for the last time.

“I do have some, but the Thorny Flower is considered better if compared with the rest of my beasts. Moreover, I am just a Level 2 [Braveman]. I have already reached my limit to summon two beasts today. ” Yue Yang shrugged his shoulder, pretending that he wanted to help but was unable to do so. The audiences laughed even louder after Yue Yang said so.

“.....” The blue-clothed referee was speechless.

Level 2 [Braveman]?

He doubted how this brat could even enter the Top 20 Group Round-robin Tournament.

Could it be that he was just a lucky bastard who advanced to the Group Match with his bunch of rubbish beasts since each of every opponent gave up on the match all the way?

As the referee looked over his record, to his surprise he found out that this brat had actually defeated Tian Luo Prince..... His heart was a little relieved. So this brat was a warrior who was major in combat skill. No wonder he could enter the Group Match just with those rubbish beasts.

Bai Yun Fei who was outside the battlefield smirked a little. He didn't think that the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan whom Xie Qian Ren was afraid of only had two rubbish beasts. Although everyone had called this Yue Clan Third Young Master a loser last time, during the Clan's New Year Tournament this year, he had defeated a lot of strong warriors. He had even defeated the two disciples of the Floating Mist Sect. How could Xie Qian Ren be so fearful of him if he was only a fool who cultivated in combat skill?

In Bai Yun Fei's opinion, the Yue Clan Third Young Master didn't want to reveal his strength. He smiled. "So he is the Yue Clan Third Young Master? Not bad."

Bai Yun Fei thought to himself: You know how to hide your strength and your strongest trump card. Same goes for me as well... Revealing my Golden Dragon King is just a tactic to exert pressure and divert people's attention. "

A shadowy figure in a private box was watching the whole scene through the narrow slit of the window at the other side.

Bai Yun Fei knew that it must be Prince Zi Jin.

Although Prince Zi Jin looked arrogant, this fella was definitely a careful, smart and formidable opponent.

In Bai Yun Fei's opinion, if he had to choose which opponent was the strongest and most formidable, he would have chosen the Prince Zi Jin first, followed by the Yue Clan Third Young Master and the Dragon Spear Lady.

The audience didn't leave even though the knockout matches for Team B had ended. This was because there were other kind of matches later on, including the Team Matches, which was everyone's favourite show. Unlike the hot-blooded Individual Match, the most interesting part of the Team Match was the excitement of the intense battle and the difficulty of predicting the winner of these matches. Teamwork was very crucial in Team Matches. No matter how strong a single individual was, he could sometimes be eliminated mercilessly in Team Matches.

There were two different styles of Team Matches. Both teams must have mutual agreement on the battle style, otherwise, the referee would toss the gold coin to decide on the battle style

The first style was Unrestricted Battle. At the beginning, both teams would have to report five participants for the battle. Then, each team would need to send one contestant to fight a one-versus-one battle. If a contestant was strong enough, he could continue to fight the next contestant after he won the one-versus-one battle and defeat all five people on the opponent's team, therefore achieving victory. In Unrestricted Battle, both team could change their contestant whenever they wished. However, the team that won the first five rounds would win.

If the battle turned out to be long-drawn, there would be a chance that the score would end as 5 against 4. In that case, both teams would really have a hard time.

The other style was the Restricted Battle. Both teams would have to assign five participants to battle but they had to enter the battle arena strictly according to their sequence. For example, Vanguard could only fight against Vanguard, General against General, and Marshal against Marshal..... They could only substitute participants when it was the second participant's, Deputy General, and the fourth participant's, the Deputy Marshal turn to fight. This kind of Restricted Battle was more intense and cruel. A team had to win 3 battles over 5 battles to gain victory. It would be a tragedy for a strong contestant if his or her rubbish teammate lose three times in a row. Usually, the teams with a single, extremely strong contestant would decide to pick the Unrestricted Battle while the team who were good in strategizing and had average strength amongst the team members would pick the Restricted Battle..

(Shiro: Order from first to fight: Vanguard, Deputy General, General, Deputy Marshal, Marshal)

The audiences prefer the second type of battle if compared with the first one.

This was because the second type of battle with restriction was more intense and cruel.

For instance, if Bai Yun Fei's teammate were all very weak and he picked the second type of Restricted Battle, wouldn't his life be very tragic?

This kind of Restricted Battle could also reflect on the strength and strategizing ability of a team even more because the contestants who would be assigned to battle on the arena wouldn't be leaked before the battle. For Bai Yun Fei's team, if their opponent could guess which order Bai Yun Fei would be fighting in, they could simply assign the weakest contestant as his opponent. That way, they could simply throw the match against Bai Yun Fei use their stronger team members to fight against the weaker participants in Bai Yun Fei's team..... Of course, expecting Bai Yun Fei's teammates to be a pile of rubbish was definitely just a fantasy.

Among Bai Yun Fei's teammates, three of them were disciples of the Floating Mist Sect. They were extremely strong. The last team member was Xie Qian Ren while their reserve team member was a mysterious person who had yet to appear on the stage before.

However, people believed that the strength of this reserve team member was only second to Bai Yun Fei.

When Bai Yun Fei's team fought against the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace's team that was led by Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu, besides Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu who had inflicted heavy injuries on the weakest member, Xie Qian Ren, the other three teammates had been defeated completely. Bai Yun Fei's team gained victory even without Bai Yun Fei participating in the battle.

It was Team Yue Yang's turn to battle. Before this, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers had been the ones who battled all the way.

Today, Fatty Hai's stinky hand drew the jackpot again.

The "Shang Jing Academy Team" which consisted of powerful enemies such as Yan Po Jun, Yue Tian, Yue Yan, Lie Ban, Feng Qi Sha and the others would clash against the "Ivy Academy Team", which consisted of Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Li Qi, Li Ge and Yue Bing. This was indeed an inevitable clash between two sworn enemies. If Yue Yang wasn't there as their reserve team member, all of them would definitely suffered a complete defeat. The result wouldn't turn out so bad if Yue Bing didn't end up having to fight Yan Po Jun or Feng Qi Sha.

If she had to battle with either of them, it would be hard to guarantee that she could win the battle, but she probably wouldn't suffer a crushing defeat.

However, it would be a tragedy for Fatty Hai and Ye Kong because it would be really tough for them no matter who they would have to battle with.

"I am not going to enter the battle arena this time. I am so exhausted after coming out from the Twelve Zodiac Temple. I haven't replenish my energy yet so you guys just fight to the best that you can. Just let me know if you guys lose the battle. I would inform the Eagle-eyed Teacher to settle with you guys. " Yue Yang was very merciless. He had not only refused to participate in the battle, he had even threatened to punish them if they lost.

"No worries. I will definitely try my best in the match! " Other

than Yue Bing who was maintained a strong fighting spirit, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the rest were dispirited.

“Goodbye, beauties of the Soaring Dragon Continent! I hope to see you in my next life...” Fatty Hai was the Vanguard of his team. Since they would be fighting the second style of battle, the Restricted Battle, after the referee tossed the gold coin, Fatty Hai as the vanguard of his team would have to battle with his old enemy, Yan Po Jun. Fatty Hai knew that he was done for. He was utterly, completely and unconditionally done for. Not mentioning Yue Yang’s refusal to participate in the battle, even if Yue Yang agreed to fight, according to the rules, he wouldn’t be able to replace Fatty Hai because he was the Vanguard.

Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin didn’t leave but observed the strength of Yue Yang’s team quietly.

Bai Yun Fei, especially, sneaked many glances at Princess Qian Qian, who was sitting beside Yue Yang. His eyes seemed to glitter in a strange light that seemed like greed and bloodthirst. Princess Qian Qian remained calm as she ignored Bai Yun Fei’s stare. Luo Hua City Mistress, on the other hand, disliked such a gaze. She covered up her side by drawing one of the curtain in the private box.

Fatty Hai was trembling in fear as he entered the battle arena, where Yan Po Jun had already stood on standby.

“We meet again, Classmate Hai. Your Hippo Meteor Punch is really unforgettable. Hopefully you won’t give up on the battle today so that we can have a good fight.” Yan Po Jun was smiling on

the surface but he really wished that he could burn Fatty Hai into a roasted pig in his heart. He had never been so humiliated before. On top of that, Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin's powerful strength had set him back, making him feel dejected and depressed for the past two days. He couldn't hold his head up as people were wagging their tongues behind him.

"I had nothing to lose. Do you think I will be afraid of you? I am just a useless person. It won't be embarrassing if I lose but you are different. You are a noble. I bet you were crying miserably when I beat you up previously." Fatty Hai went beyond everyone's expectations, deciding to fight a 'Bloody Battle' instead of giving up the match.

The 'Bloody Battle' was divided into three rounds. Each round lasted for three minutes. In between the three rounds, one minute would be provided for the contestants to rest and arrange their tactics.

The contestant was not allowed to give up on the battle unless they were on the verge of dying or losing his or her consciousness.

Yan Po Jun saw Fatty Hai choosing the 'Bloody Battle' which people would not choose under normal circumstances. His look changed a little but a touch of irony was seen on his lips. He appeared to compliment Fatty Hai with modesty but in his heart he was thinking that Fatty Hai was courting death. "You have a bold spirit, as expected. I will definitely try my best in the battle since I admire your choice for picking the 'Bloody Battle'."

Choosing a 'Bloody Battle' instead of giving up?

Ye Kong and the rest who were waiting outside the battle arena were shocked by Fatty Hai's ridiculous decision. All of them were stunned and shared the same thought that Fatty Hai must have taken some kind of stupidity pill.

Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian begun their bet. The bet seemed to be related to running around naked...

Chapter 234 – Fight, Fatty Hai!

Apart from Yue Yang, there was probably nobody else who would think highly of Fatty Hai.

Everyone felt that this Fatty Hai would definitely die in a very miserable way. Although Yan Po Jun was under the influence of Bai Yun Fei and Prince Zi Jin, the two New Stars, and that the glorious Three Great Killing Stars were already a history, he was still one of the former Three Great Killing Stars. He was someone that a normal person wouldn't be able to hope to defeat.

Before this, no one knew who Fatty Hai was. It was only after he used the Hippo Meteor Punch to ambush and get the upperhand of Yan Po Jun that people realized the existence of this wretched fatty. As for Fatty Hai's record of being the fastest person to be knocked out of stage previously, it had also become a hot topic of discussion. There was even someone who wanted to gather all the materials from the Hundred School Elite Tournament records and write a book about Fatty Hai.

A failure like Fatty Hai who had such an embarrassing record of being knocked out within 10 seconds would probably not be able to climb up the top rankings. Furthermore, there might be a chance that he was ranked within the top ten of the ranking board.

Yan Po Jun didn't want to defeat Fatty Hai in an instant this time. He planned to bully and torture this fatty in front of the audience. He would definitely turn this fatty into a roasted pig!

“Start!” The blue-clothed referee signaled.

Fatty Hai didn't manage to summon his grimoire before Yan Po Jun pounced on him.

His [Blazing Flame] exploded right on top of Fatty Hai's head.

Fatty Hai didn't have the control ability of summoning his grimoire in an instant. Summoning the grimoire had always been his weakness. After going through special training, he had become much better, but he was still slower than Yan Po Jun's lightning fast grimoire summoning speed. Fatty Hai's whole body was lighted on fire, but it was not a fatal injury. Yan Po Jun was not in a hurry to unleash his ultimate move to kill him in an instant, he wanted him to die a slow death.

With the Rhinoceros and little Hippopotamus' support, although Fatty Hai was howling miserably, he wouldn't end up being beaten up by Yan Po Jun continuous and unable to retaliate.

He was charging his Hippo Meteor Punch again.

Yan Po Jun's kicks were lightning fast, hitting Fatty Hai's face, head, shoulder, back continuously in a rain of kicks.

The fire from the [Blazing Flames] continued to burn on Fatty Hai's skin as he continued to prepare his punch.

In the instant when Fatty Hai unleashed Hippo Meteor Punch,

Yan Po Jun, who had already prepared for the attack retreated like falling leaves, completely avoiding Fatty Hai's brute punch.

"[Fire Crane Dance]!" Yan Po Jun summoned a Fire Crane to buff his body. His arms that were as graceful as cranes extended out as flames soared up to the sky. Fatty Hai's body was completely engulfed in flames as he unleashed the Hippo Meteor Punch into thin air.

"Mommy!" Fatty Hai was roasted to the point that he was calling out for his parents. However, no matter how much he rolled on the ground in pain, he was unable to put out the raging flames on his body.

The audience laughed as they watched Fatty Hai, thinking that he had overestimated his own abilities to have the nerve to fight against Yan Po Jun.

Within a minute, Fatty Hai was set on fire by Yan Po Jun's [Blazing Flames] at least ten times. Amongst that, eight were head-on attack and two were barely avoided. Fatty Hai had also unleashed his Hippo Meteor Punch thrice, but none were fatal, they only hit empty air. If it weren't for the fact that he had successfully summoned his grimoire and erected his protective shield, Fatty Hai would have already been turned into a roasted pig. When the blue-clothed referee saw Fatty Hai erecting his protective shield, he immediately ordered the timing to be stopped. He also went over to Fatty Hai and warned him that he couldn't put up his protective shield for too long, he was not allowed to be inactive in this competition.

Fatty Hai only came out of his protective shield after putting out the fire on his body with great difficulties. His face had already beaten up beyond recognition.

His face was more or less the same as a miner's, blackened with ashes. His clothes were also torn to shreds.

In the first round, during the three minutes, Fatty Hai was knocked down at least twenty times. His face was beaten up to the point that it was heavily swollen, just like a pig's head. His head, chest and arms were all charred. The smell of burning flesh could be smelled in the air.

If it weren't for Ye Kong who carried him down from the fighting arena, Fatty Hai wouldn't be able to walk down alone.

“Have you gone insane? Why don't you give up the match?” Ye Kong really wanted to slap Fatty Hai awake. He knew that Fatty Hai wanted to become strong, and that he had already put in all his effort to cultivate. However, he would be dreaming if he wanted to defeat Yan Po Jun with only a few months of training! Previously, his Hippo Meteor Punch had only hit Yan Po Jun because his guard was down. It was not because of Fatty Hai's own abilities.

“Nonsense, I am the big boss, how could I give up my match!” Although Fatty Hai's face had already been beaten up to the point that it looked like a pig's face, he still had his cheeky mouth even in the face of death, reluctant to admit his mistake.

Yue Yu immediately condensed two [Healing Waterballs] in her

hands. Otherwise, Fatty Hai wouldn't be able to recover if he used the little healing powers from the rays in Healing Crystals. Even after being healed by the [Healing Waterballs], Fatty Hai's skin was still charred black. However, it looked much better than just now. At the very least, his life was not in danger.

In the second round, Yan Po Jun beat him up even more ruthlessly.

Right before the round ended, in order to humiliate Fatty Hai even more, Yan Po Jun interlocked his fingers with Fatty Hai's and unleashed his [Blazing Flames]. Fatty Hai's fingers were burnt to the point that his flesh was exposed. His fingers were also broken from trying to struggle free from Yan Po Jun's grasp. However, Yan Po Jun still did not let go... until the blue-clothed referee charged forward and shouted, "Time's up! Let go immediately!" Yan Po Jun only let Fatty Hai go then, as he pretended to be refined and courteous and bowed to Fatty Hai. Of course, even an idiot could see the contempt in his eyes.

"What? You still want to fight?" Ye Kong felt that Fatty Hai had gone completely insane or he himself had gone mad and delusional.

"I still have my final move... If I didn't land a single punch on him, I will never give up... I am your big boss, so I must act like a big boss. Even if I won't be able to win, I will still try my best. Otherwise, how could you all, as my subordinates, respect me as your big boss... I am the BIG BOSS!" Fatty Hai gasped for breath as he vomited blood. Yan Po Jun had also crushed his ribs.

“Because you are the big boss, you shouldn’t die! If you die, we won’t have anyone to bully anymore.” Yue Yu who was in charge of healing Fatty Hai almost fainted when she heard Ye Kong’s words.

Luo Hua City Mistress was also unable to bear the situation. She pulled on Yue Yang and said, “Say something to him so that he will admit defeat and stop fighting. It’s not right for him to be beaten up like this!”

Yue Yang stood up in his private box and revealed half of his body out, raising his thumbs up high into the air.

Fatty Hai had been looking at the private box all along. When his eyes that was swollen from bruises to the point that he almost couldn’t open his eyes saw Yue Yang’s thumbs up, his bruised mouth suddenly revealed a smile. A light that eerily seemed like a dying flash appeared on his face, making Yue Yu, Yue Bing and Yi Nan really worried about him. They thought, this Fatty wouldn’t die just like this, right?

Princess Qian Qian looked at Yue Yang with a complicated expression, “Do you still think he would be able to defeat Yan Po Jun?”

Yue Yang laughed, “If he loses, I’ll immediately strip naked in front of you...”

Luo Hua City Mistress chuckled, “Then if Qian Qian loses, she would also strip naked in front of you. Haha, I’m starting to hope

that Fatty Hai would create a miracle!”

Princess Qian Qian immediately blushed, but she didn't believe that Fatty Hai would be able to win in this kind of disadvantageous situation. She humphed at Yue Yang and shook her head, “That's impossible, Fatty Hai will definitely lose. In any case, I never asked you to strip naked, just forget about that matter before!”

“You can't do that, this and that are different things...” Luo Hua City Mistress helped Yue Yang to argue, opposing Princess Qian Qian with all her might as she said, “You haven't honoured your promise when you lost previously. If you guys lose this time, you will strip naked. I'll be the judge!” Before she even finished her words, Princess Qian Qian had already pounced on her and pinned her down, forcefully stripping Luo Hua City Mistress' clothes and said, “Why don't you strip naked first?”

“If Your Highness the Princess needs a hand, I am more than willing to offer my help for free!” Yue Yang gulped down his saliva as he watched the two girls fooling around playfully.

“Pervert!” The two girls retorted at the same time as they pounced on Yue Yang altogether, pinning him down and stripping his clothes.

“A pervert has met two female perverts... My dear two heroines, could you be gentler with me? It's actually my first time on a threesome...” Yue Yang decided not to resist them. Wasn't this a threesome? He would welcome a fierce threesome anytime!

Seeing his perverted face, the two girls couldn't help but to feel an itch in their teeth as both of them pounced on him and bit him at the same time.

Afterwards, they didn't wait for Yue Yang to react as they jumped up and returned to their seats beside the windows gracefully like virtuous ladies.

No matter how thick skinned Yue Yang was, he wouldn't dare to try strip the two girls' clothes when the crowd of audience could see them from the window.

It would also be impossible for him to bite them back.

Although the two girls succeeded with their trick, Yue Yang didn't want to be at a disadvantage. He settled himself in between the two girls, looking all respectable and good as he watched the competition below, but below, both of his hands were hugging at the two girls' waists. Towards Yue Yang's perverted action, Princess Qian Qian's immediate reaction was to slap his wolfy paws away. Luo Hua City Mistress, on the other hand, only trembled slightly as she hurriedly held Yue Yang's naughty hands that was inching down. She held Yue Yang hands down on her slender waist. As long as his hands obediently stayed on her waist, she didn't mind being held by him.

Seeing this, Princess Qian Qian mouthed some words to Luo Hua City Mistress.

Luo Hua City Mistress also mouthed some words in reply.

Yue Yang didn't understand at all. Did these two girls know how to read lips?

When he looked at Princess Qian Qian with an inquiring look, he noticed her face was a little gloomy, as if she was seething in anger. He couldn't help but to caress her face, wanting to comfort her. But Princess Qian Qian's reaction made him jump in fright. She was glaring furiously at him, as if saying 'You dared to touch my face when I'm angry at you?!' She immediately caught his hands on hers. Yue Yang wanted to struggle free, but Princess Qian Qian was afraid that Yue Yang would not behave again, hence she determinedly held his hands down, refusing to let go.

Seeing this scene, Luo Hua City Mistress laughed out loud as she hit Yue Yang's chest lightly with her hands.

The happier Luo Hua City Mistress looked, the gloomier Princess Qian Qian's expression became. But she still did not let Yue Yang's hand go... In the end, she simply looked down to the fighting arena, not caring about the other two anymore, paying attention to the next round of match. She could guarantee that Yue Yang's hand gesture just now was not to praise Fatty Hai for his courage. It must be some kind of signal to execute a combat technique, or a counterattack technique... Afterwards, Fatty Hai would definitely counterattack. They would have to see if Yue Yang's counterattack strategy was effective.

Yan Po Jun charged forward again, with [Blazing Flames] in his hand, punching Fatty Hai hard on the nose.

The heavy punch broke Fatty Hai's nose as the fire from [Blazing Flames] ignited and poured into his mouth and nose... Fatty Hai's eyes rolled up as he fell to the ground with a thud.

Princess Qian Qian was stunned. Was this the combat technique that Yue Yang signalled to Fatty Hai?

Trying to pretend to be dead after being hit?

Or had Fatty Hai exhausted all of his strength?

She looked at Yue Yang and realized that the scoundrel was actually smiling. His expression was like a little fox who managed to steal a chick. She immediately calmed down. Seemed like there was still hope. Maybe tricking the enemy was included in the secret counterattack plan...

Indeed, when Yan Po Jun saw Fatty Hai unmoving, his face broke out into a smug smile.

He was not in a hurry to throw Fatty Hai down the fighting arena, intending to humiliate him even further.

Yan Po Jun stepped on Fatty Hai's head and said to the referee, "He is already on the verge of death. If you don't announce my victory, I will kick him off the stage."

However, just as the blue-clothed referee was about to announce Fatty hai's defeat, there was a sound from beneath Yan Po Jun's

feet.

“Who says I’m on the verge of death? I just fell asleep for a while. I won’t even have a problem sleeping with seven girls tonight, what do you mean I’m on the verge of death?” Fatty Hai’s hands grabbed onto Yan Po Jun’s legs, lifting it up from his head inch by inch. His bloodied pig face revealed a strange smile as he said, “Student Po Jun, did you have fun beating me up? Now it’s my turn to pay you back ten times greater...”

“Dream on!” Yan Po Jun never imagined that this Fatty Hai could still say something so firm even with one foot in the grave. He suddenly felt furious and ignited flames beneath his feet.

Within the [Blazing Flame], Fatty Hai lifted Yan Po Jun and smashed him down on the ground hard.

Yan Po Jun felt a little pain as he immediately shot up and summoned a [Flaming Lion] for support.

A presence like a Lion King’s exploded as blazing flames shot through the sky. Fire exploded everywhere, even to the point of reaching the audiences.

Even the audience outside the arena all felt the blazing heat. The blue-clothed referee was also cornered to the sides of the fighting arena from the heat, almost falling off the arena. However, Fatty Hai was still pouncing towards Yan Po Jun in the midst of the [Blazing Flame], his bloodied and swollen face was calm, “It’s no use. My Guardian Beast is a water-type, do you understand? Did

you think you can roast the great Master Hai with this little, insignificant fire?”

Fatty Hai reached out his hands, and under the gaze of the astonished audience, received Yan Po Jun’s incoming punch on his palm easily.

A loud boom resounded as he swung Yan Po Jun down, smashing him to the ground the second time.

His flying body was like a big rock crashing onto the ground.

Boom!

The whole audience felt a strong quake.

It was the first time Yan Po Jun showed a pained expression on his face...

When Princess Qian Qian saw this, she happily grabbed onto Yue Yang’s arms. “You were the one who taught him, definitely! What secret move did you teach Fatty? Normal attacks wouldn’t work on Yan Po Jun, but it’s very effective now. What kind of secret move is that?”

Chapter 235 – Transformation, Re-Appearance Of The Hideous Monster!

Yue Yang acted all strange and mysterious as he smiled without answering.

Looking at this brat smiling so smugly, Princess Qian Qian was deeply enraged. She reached out her hands, wanting to pinch his cheeks. However, the moment she raised her hands, she felt that this gesture was too intimate, thus she withdrew her hands quickly.

On the fighting arena, Fatty Hai was giving his all in fighting Yan Po Jun. Before, he had allowed Yan Po Jun to beat him into a pulp, but it was different now. He had started to counterattack and returned Yan Po Jun's punches. Yan Po Jun had the support of his element-type Fire Crane, that gave him the ability to avoid attacks easily. Even if he was hit, he would be able to cancel the effects off with his fire. However, at this time, all of Fatty Hai's attack had struck him completely without missing Yan Po Jun at all. Yan Po Jun's element-type Fire Crane's defense had completely lost its effect.

Under the setback, Yan Po Jun could only make use of his Fire Lion King's vitality to fight Fatty Hai to the end.

“This Fatty Hai's beast is the direct opposite of Yan Po Jun's. Furthermore, he had a special trick that could infuse the power of his water attribute into Yan Po Jun's body...” Bai Yu Fei's eyes lighted up, as if he had seen through Fatty Hai's power.

“Does Your Honour think that Yan Po Jun will lose?” Xie Qian Ren asked in astonishment.

“No, even if this fatty is Yan Po Jun’s direct nemesis, he still loses to Yan Po Jun in terms of beasts and abilities. It is difficult for a cup to defeat a vase, he was only fighting him in a deathly struggle. The only good thing he had was that secret trick that could infuse Yan Po Jun’s body with water. If I didn’t guess wrongly, this method should have been taught to him by the Yue Clan Third Young Master. I heard that there was some kind of combat technique that had been lost for a thousand years in the Yue Clan, called [Step-siblings Beating Cows]. I suspect that the secret trick is this said [Step-siblings Beating Cows].” The light in Bai Yun Fei’s eyes become even deeper when he talked about the [Step-siblings Beating Cows].

“A skill lost for a thousand years, [Step-siblings Beating Cows]?” Xie Qian Ren swept a glance to Yue Yang who was sitting inside his private box on the opposite side. Seeing Yue Yang’s smiling expression, he felt a little shaken.

Right now, he understand a little why Miss Xue still rejected his proposal even after being turned down from her engagement with Yue Clan Third Young Master.

They were far too different... Yue Clan Third Young Master was an Innate, and he had also managed to revive a lost combat technique, the [Step-siblings Beating Cows]. How about himself? He couldn’t even defeat Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu. He was practically heaven and earth compared to Yue Yang. No wonder

Miss Xue would look down on him! However, the stronger this Yue Clan Third Young Master was, the better it would be. The Junior [Elder] of the Floating Mist Sect Bai Yun Fei was extremely arrogant. He would definitely not accept the fact if he was defeated by the Yue Clan Third Young Master. He would most likely find ways to exact revenge.

Fight, you both! It would be best if this arrogant Bai Yun Fei be killed by the abnormal Yue yang. If that happened, the Floating Mist Sect's experts would definitely come in full strength to attack the Yue Clan Castle...

If the Floating Mist Sect fought a war with the Yue Clan, the Xie Clan would only stand to benefit. No matter if it was Bai Yun Fei or Yue Yang, if either one of them dies, it would only be a good thing for himself. It would be best if Bai Yun Fei could do his best and dragged Yue Yang down with him.

Xie Qian Ren remained calm and collected on the outside, but his feelings were actually in turmoil.

Fatty Hai received at least 10 punches, or maybe more, from Yan Po Jun whenever he landed 1 punch on him.

But he continued to fight to his end relentlessly!

Time passed by the seconds... When there was only a minute left on the third round, Yue Yang suddenly extended his hands out the window and made a hand gesture of an X with both of his arms.

At this time, Yan Po Jun's back was facing Yue Yang as he fought Fatty Hai ferociously. He didn't see Yue Yang signalling from the private box, but Fatty Hai, who had been keeping his eye for Yue Yang's hand gesture saw it. His expression changed, and he became even more confident and determined

He made the same gesture as Yue Yang, crossing his arms on his chest.

Below the stage, Yue Tian and Yue Yan who had also seen Yue Yang's hand gesture immediately warned Yan Po Jun, as they thought that the situation was not good. "Po Jun, careful, he's going to counterattack!" The two guys' warning was Yan Po Jun's nightmare come true. He thought that Fatty Hai didn't have any reason to wage a 'Bloody Battle' with him, unless Yue Yang had some secret trick that could make Fatty Hai comeback from the dead. Even in the first two rounds where Fatty Hai had received his beating obediently, Yan Po Jun never once let down his guard. In the third round, Fatty Hai who was beaten to a pulp had still wanted to fight him again, he had even used a secret trick to break his defense. This made him really suspicious.

As he quickly retreated, Yan Po Jun used a tenth of a second to glance at Yue Yang who was sitting in his private box.

He realized that Yue Yang was making the same gesture as Fatty Hai did, and was immediately alarmed.

This was bad. Yue Yang had signalled to Fatty Hai to use some kind of secret move...

“Hippo Meteor Punch!” Fatty Hai used his useless Hippo Meteor Punch again. This time, no one was laughing at his slow punch. Previously, Yan Po Jun could beat Fatty Hai down before he managed to use Hippo Meteor Punch. However, Yan Po Jun had retreated right now, and Fatty Hai could utilise 100% of the power of Hippo Meteor Punch.

His punch accelerated from slow to extremely fast.

Even faster than lightning.

Just as Fatty Hai leapt high up into the sky, smashing towards Yan Po Jun with his meteor-like fist, even Feng Qi Sha who was below the stage was shaken. Fatty Hai’s punch’s speed was already close to one of his fastest sword skill, [Seven Killing Sword Slash].

Bai Yun Fei frowned. Xie Qian Ren took in that fact and realized that it was the first time during the Tournament that he saw this Junior [Elder] frowning.

Xie Qian Ren was secretly delighted. Hehe, when he faced against that abnormal Yue Yang, he wouldn’t be simply frowning. There would be much more hardships coming your way, Your Honour! If only you knew that he was an Innate. I’m looking forward to see you cry!

“Danger!”

Yue Tian and Yue Yang shouted in alarm. If such a meteor-like punch was to really hit someone, it would be really dangerous.

Yan Po Jun twisted his body and let out an explosion of flames that soared up high to the sky.

In the thousandth of a second before Fatty Hai's punch landed on him, he had narrowly escaped.

His figure grazed against Fatty Hai's punch.

When Yan Po Jun was feeling relieved having escaped the danger by a hair's breadth, he realized that his face stung. As he wiped his hands across his face, he realized that Fatty Hai's punch had actually created a blade of wind that cut his skin and made it bleed.

It was really fortunate that he wasn't hit by Fatty Hai's punch. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to imagine the consequences.

Fatty Hai's punch hit empty air. Unable to stop in time, he smashed hard onto the ground. A loud explosion resounded as his punch crushed a portion of the fighting arena ground to pieces. Broken pieces of rocks flew everywhere as dust covered the whole place... Yan Po Jun landed back to the ground, beads of cold sweat formed on his forehead in alarm. If he hadn't retreated and created a distance between them previously, he would definitely be hit by Fatty Hai's punch. Even if he wouldn't be injured fatally, he would still be smashed onto the ground.

Many people in the audience sympathized with Fatty Hai who missed the punch that he had been saving up for a long time.

However, Fatty Hai being able to fight against Yan Po Jun to this level had already exceeded everyone's expectations, especially when he made Yan Po Jun so miserable at the last part. The audience really felt ashamed for ridiculing Fatty hai previously.

Fatty Hai lied within the cloud of dust not moving a single inch, as if he had fallen unconscious.

Even so, a lot of audience still took the initiative to give Fatty Hai a standing ovation. IN an instant, the whole area shook with a thunderous applause.

Only thirty seconds was left from the round. The blue-clothed referee was looking at the time and felt that it was more or less time to end the round. However, suddenly, Feng Qi Sha who was below the stage shouted a warning, "Move back!"

Yan Po Jun froze when he heard the warning. As he leapt back, he looked at the direction where Fatty Hai was lying down in alarm.

He was shocked to see a five metre tall monster suddenly leaping out of the cloud of earth and dust. It had an enormous head, a pair of legs that were as thick as tree trunks and steel-hard giant arms. Its sharp, incising teeth travelled down its mouth, making it looked extremely sinister and terrifying. Its black claws were as sharp as daggers, and its evil red eyes shone with horrifying killing

intent. It leapt high up the ground, its strong claws slashing on the position where Yan Po Jun had been standing before. The rock-hard ground of the fighting arena was easily smashed into pieces with its sharp claws, as if it was made of tofu.

What is this monster?

Did Fatty Hai summoned a beast? Or was this a monster from the Demon Abyss?

Yan Po Jun's eyes twitched. That slash, if it weren't for Feng Qi Sha warning him in advance, he would have been fatally wounded...

"Behind you!" Yue Tian and Yue Yan realized that that monster had suddenly vanished upon its onslaught. There was a dark shadow that was moving so fast as if it was splitting air, pouncing straight towards Yan Po Jun's back as it roared loudly. It wasn't that Yan Po Jun didn't know that his enemy had ambushed him from behind. It was just that he couldn't run fast enough. He didn't care to even look back, escaping forward as quick as possible.

The sharp claws slashed through empty air, missing Yan Po Jun's back by just a hair's breadth.

Yan Po Jun's flames burnt out as his back was lacerated from the blades of wind that came from the powerful slash of the claws. Blood splattered all around, the fresh blood that spilled all over Yan Po Jun's wounds shocking everyone in the audience. If he was

a fraction of a second later, the audience thought that Yan Po Jun would have been cut into half from that sharp claws... The Prince of Zi Jin who was watching from within the narrow slit of opening from his private box window immediately opened his windows wide and leaned his whole body out. His expression showed that he could hardly believe what he was seeing. As for Yue Tian and Yue Yan who was standing below the stage, they felt a strong gush of wind blowing towards them and braced them with their arms. Feeling a sharp pang of pain, they realized that the sharp wind created from the strong slash of the claws had even cut through their arms, making them feel numb.

This abnormal monster, could this monster be Fatty Hai?

Or was it his secret trump card of a beast?

What kind of secret trick did Yue Yang use to turn Fatty Hai into a monster? Bai Yun Fei, Feng Qi Sha and Prince of Zi Jin all shifted their gaze towards Yue Yang's private box.

Inside the private box, Yue Yang had ignored everyone's stares and made another hand gesture of an X with his arms.

At the same time, his voice was as loud as thunderclap as he shouted, "Look here! Cross your arms on your chest, [Meteor Style 1]!"

That hideous monster had actually wanted to pursue and attack Yan Po Jun. However, when it heard Yue Yang, its whole body suddenly froze and the red glint on its eyes were greatly reduced. It

was as if it had regained its senses. It followed Yue Yang's gesture, but it continued to roar in anger, as if it wasn't able to completely control its body... Yan Po Jun didn't dare to imagine what would happen if a monster who had such a terrifying power and powerful claws hit him with a Hippo Meteor Punch... Feng Qi Sha, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were all so nervous that they were squeezing their fists. Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin had a dark expression as they looked back and forth between Yue Yang and that monster, trying to figure out the relationship between the two.

After around 5 seconds, that hideous monster finally finished charging its most powerful power.

It crossed its arm and started to pounce forward...

Its sharp claws were slow-moving at first and gained speed afterwards. It continued to gain speed as the momentum from its body added an explosive force on its charge, making it look like a meteor as it shot ferociously towards Yan Po Jun. Its pair of claws glinted with a bright light as it turned into a terrifying, life-stealing meteor!

Yan Po Jun's expression became twisted as he saw a dying flash in his eyes. At this moment, his heart felt extremely cold, as if he had drowned in ice.

Without thinking at all, Yan Po Jun summoned his grimoire on instinct and erected his protective shield.

The terrifying meteor exploded on the protective shield, causing

it to shook unstably.

The impact of the attack spread out to the surrounding, sending a blast of wind to the diameter.

“ROAR!!” The hideous beast seemed to possess unlimited strength as it furiously attack on Yan Po Jun’s protective shield. Although Yan Po Jun was safe, he was dripping in cold sweat. He had already been absolutely terrified by this monster in front of him.

“Stop, the match has ended. Stop immediately!” The blue-clothed referee and the two bodyguards summoned beasts with extremely strong defensive abilities before they worked together to pull the hideous monster away. However, that hideous monster was completely enraged. With a red glint from its eyes, it swatted the referee and bodyguards out of the fighting arena instead, completely out of control. Ye Kong and the Li Brothers quickly got up on the stage, but even after spending all of their efforts, they were still unable to stop the hideous monster’s onslaught of attack.

With a sweep of its gigantic arms, Ye Kong and the others all fell onto the ground.

The hideous monster started to raise its claws, prepared to attack Ye Kong and the others... Yue Bing quickly flew up to the stage and spread her arms, protecting Ye Kong and the Li Brothers, blocking right in front of the hideous monster, “Don’t injure anyone, turn back quickly! You can’t go out of control like this!”

The hideous monster seemed to have lost all reason as it swung its claws down upon Yue Bing's head.

Chapter 236 – Second Setback: Qi Sha

“Fatty, have you gone insane?” Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were so shocked their hearts were about to explode when they saw Fatty Hai attacking Yue Bing. They hurriedly jumped to stop him, but no matter how fast their speed was, they wouldn’t be faster than the hideous monster’s claws.

“Stop!” Yue Yu and Yi Nan who were below the stage went deathly pale as they shouted at the same time.

However, Yue Bing didn’t avoid at all. She looked at the hideous monster, her gaze filled with trust.

This was her friend. She believed in him.

She believed that he would not harm her.

“ROAR!!”

That hideous monster’s claws that were swinging towards Yue Bing’s head, suddenly stopped in mid-air.

It howled in pain as it turned around, raising its claws once again, and was about to charge towards the audience.

Yue Yang flew out from his private box, reached out his hands and lightly grabbed the nape of the hideous monster. He lifted the

hideous monster from the ground, before smashing it hard onto the ground. He continued to beat it up and scolded it, “Idiot, you are so slow and wasted all the time! You can’t even handle a few seconds properly, and you dared to lose control of your senses! Had I known earlier, I wouldn’t let you fight and make a fool out of yourself! I’ve never seen an idiot like you who couldn’t even differentiate between friends and foes. What purpose do you have to still be alive? I’m gonna step on you to death!”

The hideous monster slowly recovered under Yue Yang’s beating, turning smaller and smaller. Its sharp claws disappeared as its body turned back into Fatty Hai.

Ye Kong and Li Brothers also angrily pounced forward and stomped on Fatty Hai.

They were completely merciless.

They stomped on Fatty Hai to the point that he howled in pain continuously!

“Your team member has violated the rules...” The blue-clothed referee walked over looking a little miserable as he gave them a warning. Yue Yang shook his hands, “We admit defeat in this round. Ye Kong, drag this Damn Fatty back and bury him alive. He actually dared to attack Bing-er, he must be tired of living!”

The whole audience were completely silent. Everyone was shocked by Yue Yang’s hidden strength. They knew that there was a very strong contestant from Ivy Academy that had defeated

Prince Tian Luo called Titan, who was also nicknamed the Abnormal Blind Student. Everyone knew that he was bloodthirsty and possessed abnormal abilities. However, they never thought that this Titan would be this abnormal... A hideous monster that had almost pulverized Yan Po Jun was rendered helpless in his hands, collapsing with just one attack from him.

This was what normal warriors had seen.

However, experts like Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin, Feng Qi Shan and the others did not only see that.

They could see through the secret trick and move that Yue Yang had used.

Only Bai Yun Fei and the others knew that actually, Yue Yang had awoken Fatty Hai's consciousness that was sleeping within the hideous monster the moment he hit it. In other words, Yue Yang's beating afterwards was only a cover up. Fatty Hai wouldn't be able to turn back to normal within a short period of time, he still needed Yue Yang to beat him awake!

Yue Yang flying down to the arena wasn't because of something as simple as stopping Fatty Hai from attacking the audience. He had also woken him up from his monster state.

Today, although Fatty Hai had lost because of the rules, if they were truly fighting without a time limit, would Yan Po Jun be able to snap Fatty Hai out of his monster state?

The answer was, even if it was Yan Po Jun himself, he wouldn't be able to guarantee it 100%... Most importantly, this Fatty Hai still had a lot of potential to be cultivated. Even Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin and Feng Qi Sha all felt that Fatty Hai had not fully shown the potential of his hidden ability. Maybe the Yue Clan Third Young Master had warned him against it, otherwise, why would he have told Fatty Hai who had turned into a hideous monster to use [Meteor First Style]?

This Fatty Hai's monster's body was indeed a little abnormal. However, Bai Yun Fei and the others knew that the Yue Clan Third Young Master who knew how to train and control Fatty Hai's monster's state was the real monster.

In comparison, Fatty Hai was only a weapon that was controlled by the Yue Clan Third Young Master.

He didn't participate in the battle himself, but he had completely controlled the battle contestant.

This was why the Yue Clan's Third Young Master was frightening.

If Fatty Hai didn't lose control just now and attacked a few seconds earlier, the defeated one would have been Yan Po Jun!

If Yan Po Jun was defeated, rather than saying that he was defeated by Fatty Hai who had turned into a monster, it should be said that he had lost to the Yue Clan's Third Young Master who was controlling Fatty Hai while not even participating in the

battle.

The Yue Clan's Third Young Master could defeat Yan Po Jun without participating in the battle.

This, this was the hidden ability of the Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin, Feng Qi Sha and the others were looking at Yue Yang in a different light when they looked at him again.

Beads of cold sweat formed on Yan Po Jun's forehead. His heartbeat had still not returned to normal even after returning back to Feng Qi Sha's side.

"Qi Sha, are you next? Be careful, that girl, Yue Bing, is completely different now. You must learn from my battle, don't try to hide your abilities from Bai Yun Fei. Our greatest enemy here is that abnormal Third Young Master!" Yan Po Jun had actually had a last trump card that he had not used. But he admitted that even if he had used that trump card, he would still be defeated by Fatty Hai who had turned into a hideous monster. Previously, because he was afraid that Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin would know all his cards, he had not fully used his capabilities. In the end, he had almost been instantly killed by that hideous monster.

Fatty Hai's last attack just now was completely devastating.

If he had not summoned his grimoire in time and erected his protective shield, the consequences would be too horrible to be considered.

“Po Jun, our enemy is still Bai Yun Fei. That Yue Clan Third Young Master, I don’t think we could even catch up to him...” Feng Qi Shan knew that Yue Yang was an Innate. He looked at Yue Yang, shook his head, and then looked at Yue Bing and realized that she was completely confident. It was as if she was 100% confident that she will win. Feng Qi Sha couldn’t help but to feel shaken.

Even trash like Fatty Hai could stand on his ground fighting Yan Po Jun after being instructed by Yue Yang. How much improvement would his own sister Yue Bing had?

He knew that no matter how brazen, how rude this abnormal Third Young Master was, it couldn’t be denied that he loved his sister. During the new years, he had even attacked the Yue Clan Castle for his step-mother and two sisters. This Yue Clan Third Young Master fought his way through the Yue Clan Castle, drenched in blood as he pulled the horse carriage, bringing his step-mother and two sisters back to the Yue Clan Castle. Although the Four Great Clans did not publicly support him, they have secretly set him as an example for such a moving, filial gesture. Many of them often taught their children or grandchildren to learn from Yue Yang, putting filial piety above everything else...

Feng Qi Sha believed that Yue Yang definitely would do his best to help his sister improve. Hence, Yue Bing’s combat power was definitely not any weaker than Fatty Hai’s.

However, how much improvement could Yue Bing, who could only use plant-type skills and beasts have?

Feng Qi Sha believed that he would find the answer to this question very soon.

Three crews who own beasts that specialized in restoring the fighting arena recovered the ground that had been pulverized to pieces within a few minutes. Although there were still some cracks, it was still much better than its state just now.

Afterwards, a green-clothed referee walked up to the stage. Feng Qi Sha and Yue Bing bowed towards each other.

Previously, no one believed that Yue Bing could defeat Feng Qi Sha. However, Fatty Hai had fought a Bloody Battle with one of the Three Great Killing Stars, Yan Po Jun. He was at a disadvantage at first, but he was winning towards the end. Although he had lost because of violation of rules, he was the true winner in the audience's hearts. Fatty Hai's comeback had made their blood boiled with excitement. Now that a little girl was representing Ivy Academy as a contestant, the audience were really looking forward to watch an exciting match.

Seeing that Yue Bing had chosen three round Bloody Battle just like Fatty hai did, the crowd couldn't help but to cheer her on.

Clap clap clap...

A thunderous applause resounded. Even the cold Xue Tan Lang who had been sitting calmly on his seat was clapping his hands. It was unknown if he was supporting his fellow team member, the Great Killing Star Feng Qi Sha, or the courageous little challenger, Yue Bing.

“Bing-er, spin!” Yue Yang stood below the arena and gave pointers to his sister as he made a hand gesture of spinning his hands.

“...” Feng Qi Sha grumbled in his heart secretly when he saw this.

His combat skill and strengthening-type beast Demon War Shell had fused perfectly, almost as if they were one body. With the addition of a Gold-ranked Artifact, Demon Devouring Sword in his hands, his combat power was greatly increased. However, he understood his weaknesses. His Seven Slashes combat technique could only chop, slash, prick, hack and cut, these five main techniques. He didn't have 'Spin'. Originally, the Seven Slashes combat technique also had a spinning combat technique. However, the two later and most important techniques, 'spin' and 'defend', was lost through the generations. In other words, if the biggest weakness in his Seven Slashes combat technique was that he didn't have 'spin'!

The Feng Elders, and even the combat technique Instructors in his Academy, had all said that if he could master the 'spin' technique, his combat abilities would break through a new realm.

Feng Qi Sha had been researching on the ‘spin’ technique all these years, but he didn’t have seen much improvement. He still couldn’t understand ‘spin’.

Right now, when he heard Yue Yang said spin, he knew that Yue Yang had already seen through his weakness.

“Start!” The green-clothed referee started the match after explaining the rules.

Feng Qi Sha didn’t immediately attack his opponent like how he usually fought. Instead, he cautiously retreated and summoned his grimoire, erecting his protective shield. Just as his protective shield was erected, he suddenly heard a rumble. When he turned around, he discovered that Yue Bing had actually appeared behind him and attacked, without him knowing. Yue Bing was sending a spinning kick upon his protective shield. Feng Qi Sha froze as he thought, “So Fast!”. If he had not summoned his grimoire, he would have received a sneak attack at the back of his head...

When Yue Bing’s kick missed, Feng Qi Sha actually had a chance to counterattack.

But he gave it up.

An example of someone who had underestimated his enemy, Yan Po Jun, was right in front of him. He must not let the name of Three Great Killing Stars become Three Great Jokes!

He summoned his Demon War Shell that had defensive abilities and fused it with his body. An armor made of sharp demonic bones appeared and protected his whole body. He also raised his Demon Devouring Sword and raised his killing intent.

As Yue Bing was summoning two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders, Feng Qi Sha continued to summon two black balls and inserted one to his Demon Devouring Sword and the other to his own body. Feng Qi Sha's Demon Devouring Sword immediately ignited with demonic flames, while his body was also filled with demonic aura, as if a demon had descended... When Feng Qi Sha put his grimoire away, a terrifying aura exploded from his body. Even the bodyguard who was nearest to him was pushed a few steps back from the impact, unable to stand his ground.

Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin looked at each other.

Although they did not say anything, they still acknowledged the power of the Three Great Killing Stars. No matter if it was Yan Po Jun who was thwarted just now, Feng Qi Sha who was fighting now, or Xue Tan Lang who was as cold as ice, they were all talented geniuses. Their reputation weren't for nothing.

On the other hand, Yue Bing who had summoned two Hundred Years Treant Defenders was condensing two balls of green light on her hands, before adding them onto the Treant's bodies.

Immediately, the Treants glowed with green lights as their leaves sprouted at an unimaginable rate.

Feng Qi Sha felt that if he tried to chop the Treants down, he might not be able to defeat them even after exhausting all of his energy. Furthermore, the Treants had become stronger after receiving buffs from Yue Bing. However, it would be easy to knock Yue Bing, who didn't have any protective shield. The only thing that made Feng Qi Sha worried was the fact that Yue Bing had managed to learn combat techniques. Furthermore, it was a combat technique that was aimed to attack his weakness, 'spin' technique.

He knew that Yue Bing was a very strong opponent, yet the thought of slashing down an obedient little girl was quite difficult for Feng Qi Sha.

Like a gush of wind, he pounced forward, aiming his punch towards Yue Bing's stomach.

As long as this punch hits, Yue Bing would definitely faint and collapse to the ground.

He decided not to use his Demon Devouring Sword, and used his fist instead.

"Chi!" When Yue Bing saw him, she didn't retreat. Instead she charged towards Feng Qi Sha's powerful punch bravely as the crowd watched in alarm. Let alone the audience, even Feng Qi Sha was completely stunned. He was afraid that he would injure Yue Bing fatally, hence he reduced the strength of his punch by a whole lot. Who would know that in the instant that Yue Bing was about to get hit, she mysteriously turned, her body gracefully avoiding Feng Qi Sha's punch. Spinning once, her knees had even brushed

against Feng Qi Sha's face.

Feng Qi Sha was completely astounded this time. If he had not relented and decreased the speed of his punch just now, he would have been hit by Yue Bing.

Fortunately!

In a flash, he immediately grabbed his Demon Devouring Sword and resisted Yue Bing's knee.

It was too late for him to turn around. He only used the corner of his eye to see that Yue Bing's knee had stopped, and her snow-white hands were resting on his sword. A burst of force exploded, making Feng Qi Sha felt that he had lost control of his Demon Devouring Sword.

Feng Qi Sha forcefully grabbed hold of his Demon Devouring Sword and unleashed his Demonic Qi, with the purpose of blasting Yue Bing away from the shockwave.

The whole audience could clearly see Yue Bing spinning beautifully as if she was in slow-motion. She floated back down to the ground as her left leg kicked across Feng Qi Sha.

Her body was dainty and exquisite, and her legs were slim and tender. However, her kick had actually pushed Feng Qi Sha, who was as stable as mountain back a few steps... Yue Bing pressed both of her hands onto the ground as her body turned like whirlwind,

her left leg kicking upwards... Feng Qi Sha noticed her in the last minute and avoided Yue Bing's surprise attack at the last moment. Although he looked confident on the outside, he was completely and utterly shocked. That was close! Fortunately his reaction speed was quick enough, he was able to avoid her kick. Otherwise, he would have been hit.

He raised his right leg and was prepared to counterattack and kick Yue Bing, however, to his surprise, he found that his right leg had already been bound by tree vines.

Behind him, the Hundred Years Treant Defender's giant arms smashed down on him.

"My God!" Feng Qi Sha slashed the tree vines on his leg and leapt high up into the air. He only turned a somersault and landed on the ground when he was sure that there was no enemy on the ground, preparing for the second round of attack.

"Careful, your legs..." Yan Po Jun suddenly shouted out loud.

Feng Qi Sha realized that there were small tree thorns waiting for him below his feet.

Using his Demon Devouring Sword as prop, Feng Qi Sha leap high up from the ground again. This time he couldn't care about Yue Bing being a little girl anymore, he had completely taken her as his enemy. His Demonic Qi exploded as his sword flew towards Yue Bing in mid-air. Yue Bing quickly retreated as one of the Hundred Years Treant Defender in front of her raised its giant

arms and blocked the attack. In the moment that the Demon Devouring Sword pierced right into the Treant's shoulders, the Treant's body suddenly glowed in a green light and grew quickly. It had actually grew and swallowed the Demon Devouring Sword that was pierced into its body whole... Feng Qi Sha was frozen with shock. As he was trying to pull his sword out without avail, the other Hundred Years Treant Defender suddenly whipped his body ruthlessly with its giant arms.

Due to the distance, the Treant could only whip Feng Qi Sha with the tip of its branches. Furthermore, the strength of its whip was not very strong, hence it was not able to cause any injury to Feng Qi Sha who was wearing his Demon War Shell. Amongst the Three Great Killing Stars, Feng Qi Sha was actually the best in terms of physical defense.

It was just that Feng Qi Sha fell into deep trouble with that one whip.

Countless tree vines started to coil around his body as the two Treants' four tree arms fiercely whipped at Feng Qi Sha. Feng Qi Sha received continuous hits. Although he had the defense from his Demon War Shell, he was beaten to the point that he had a headache and was seeing stars. When he just managed to pull out his Demon Devouring Sword out from the tree vines, a slender leg suddenly entered through the gaps between the tree vines and kicked at his forehead.

Feng Qi Sha was completely hit. The impact from the kick made his vision dark and his head felt like it was split open. His spine had almost snapped.

Retreat!

Quickly retreat!

In the two seconds that Feng Qi Sha was trying his best to retreat, he felt Yue Bing kicked him at least ten more times on his face... Furthermore, the more frightening thing was that each of her kicks was stronger than the previous.

Theoretically, this feat was impossible in combat techniques!

It was already unbelievable that she could continue kicking him ten more times, but she could even increase the speed and strength of her kicks under the condition that the distance between them was increasing as he was retreating. How could her kicks be more powerful each time?

Although he was beaten a lot of times, Feng Qi Sha's mind was clear.

In his pain, he still thought of a problem.

This combat technique that allowed the user's attack to be more powerful each time, could it be the 'spin' combat technique that he had not been able to master all this time?

Chapter 237 – Bing-er, Don't Cry!

As the saying goes – “While the connoisseur recognizes the artistry, the layman simply enjoys the show.” Normal people wouldn't understand what combat technique Yue Bing had used.

But they could see it clearly.

They could see that Yue Bing was spinning continuously. With each kick she instantly turned around causing the strength of each kick to be added to the next.

With her profound spinning technique, she slowly built up the momentum of her kicks. Hence, the power of her kicks increases with every kick.

Normal warriors enjoyed the show, because Feng Qi Sha was pushed back helplessly from the onslaught of kicks.

Only Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin and some others who understood combat techniques were frowning their brows.

In their eyes, Yue Bing wasn't actually performing her combat technique properly, it was a little rough, and maybe too simple. It was obvious that she had not managed to completely grasp such a profound spinning combat technique. She was only copying instead of grasping the essence of the technique... With regards to this point, they did not feel that something was wrong, because based on their research, Yue Bing's strength had never been in combat techniques. Her strength was plant-type beasts. However,

she could actually pushed Feng Qi Sha back relentlessly with her combat technique skill. This was really surprising.

However, Bai Yun Fei and the others thought about another problem.

While Yue Bing had not been able to grasp the essence of this combat technique, how about that person who taught her combat techniques, also known as the combat techniques genius Yue Clan Third Young Master?

If he had mastered this type of combat technique that could increase the force of his attack each time, what would happen if he unleashed it? If the person fighting right now wasn't Yue Bing but her brother, Yue Yang, would Feng Qi Sha still be able to last this long?

Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin, Yan Po Jun, Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu and the others all looked towards Yue Yang, their gazes conflicted.

Whoever disliked this Yue Clan Third Young Master that was nicknamed the Abnormal Blind Student by ignorant common folks, they could probably only bite their thumbs in exasperation, unable to lay their hands on him.

“...” The cold Xue Tan Lang was not looking at Yue Yang. Instead, he observed Bai Yun Fei's and the others' expressions.

He didn't say anything.

But a smirk appeared on his mouth.

With regards to Yue Yang's power, he understood it more than anyone else. However, when he saw Bai Yun Fei's and the others' expressions, he knew that they knew nothing about Yue Yang's power.

On the fighting arena.

Yue Bing kicked Feng Qi Sha seventeen times altogether, kicking him back right until the edge of the arena. She had almost kicked him out of the arena.

If it were another person, Feng Qi Sha would probably be kicked out of the arena already. However, Yue Bing had a kind heart. This match was a match to their death, and the Feng and Yue Clan had always maintained a good relationship with each other. Hence, she didn't continue to kick her eighteenth kick, which held the most power out of all her kicks. Instead, she turned around and landed back in the middle of the arena, asking Feng Qi Sha who was whizzing in pain in concern, "Are you okay?"

She was worried that she had kicked her opponent's face too much.

Feng Qi Sha felt indignant and amused at the same time. If it was another person who did this, he would probably explode in anger.

But the one who did it was this little girl with a kind heart.

Although he had a high defense, it was still painful for him. Feng Qi Sha, who couldn't release the anger in his heart covered his face with his hands and rubbed it hard, trying to calm his temper before he replied, "I'm okay. However, if you only had this much power, you wouldn't be able to defeat me! [Golden Fierce Tooth]!" Feng Qi Sha decided to reveal his last trump card and stopped hiding his abilities. Otherwise, he would really lose this match. Bathed in golden light, he reached out his hands and summoned a Gold-ranked Level 4 strengthening-type beast to fuse it with his body. Immediately, the thorny bones on his body changed its appearance, the black-coloured armour turned a shade of gold, mixing together and forming a dark golden colour.

"Is that a Gold-ranked Iron Armour beast?" Bai Yun Fei frowned when he saw this. This Feng Qi Sha could actually fuse two different type of armor-type beasts together perfectly?

"No. I heard that the Feng Clan managed to bring back a young Gold-ranked beast who had a very strong defense from the Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor. Feng Qi Sha had not contracted this beast for very long, hence he still had not managed to cultivate it to an adult. He wouldn't be able to utilise its full abilities in this short period of time." Xie Qian Ren reported everything about Feng Qi Sha to Bai Yun Fei. However, he still kept the strongest fact about that Gold-ranked beast from him.

Feng Qi Sha's Gold-ranked beast possessed a special skill [Switch]. It had the ability to switch its opponent's ability to its master's.

However, he wouldn't be able to completely switch his abilities and there was a limit to the switch.

This [Switch] ability would be a deciding factor between warriors on the same level. Xie Qian Ren heard about this secret intel from Yan Po Jun, because he had almost received a crushing defeat from Feng Qi Sha's Gold-ranked beast's [Switch] ability

Xie Qian Ren knew about Feng Qi Sha's secret, but he would definitely not divulge this precious information to Bai Yun Fei.

Feng Qi Sha who was fighting on the stage, had not only summoned a Gold-ranked beast, he had also summoned a Bronze-ranked Level 5 Giant Mammoth.

The Giant Mammoth was summoned to fight against Yue Bing's Treants.

It might not be able to match against the two Treants, but due to its large physique and strong power, the two Treants would not be able to do anything to it in a short period of time... Only when the two Treants were lured away would Feng Qi Sha be able to fight Yue Bing with all of his strength.

“First Slash: Landslide!”

Feng Qi Sha leapt high up to the sky, his Demon Devouring Sword suddenly multiplying into thousands of blades, all swinging

down towards Yue Bing. However, only one of the blade was real.

The whole crowd was shocked. Those who knew Feng Qi Sha well all knew about the terror of his [Landslide].

Everyone cried out in alarm immediately.

However, in the next moment, the whole crowd was so surprised that their eyes almost popped out of their sockets. When Feng Qi Sha's sword swung down, strangely, the person that was thrown down was actually Feng Qi Sha himself. In the midst of countless sword copies, Yue Bing had easily jumped out and avoided the attack, completely unscathed. On the other hand, Feng Qi Sha who initiated the attack was actually covering his face with his hands as he whizzed in pain. Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin was extremely astonished. They had seen how Yue Bing had used a method that was so dangerous and daring that even they would not have done themselves. In the moment that the Demon Devouring Sword was about to slash down, she had coincidentally avoided it with her spin. As she spinned her body, she kicked right at Feng Qi Sha's lower chin... Feng Qi Sha who was slashing down added more momentum to Yue Bing's kick. If he didn't have a strong defense, if it were another person, he would have fainted from the shock already.

“Direct physical attacks wouldn't have any effect on this little girl!” Bai Yun Fei quickly made an analysis. A glint of light flashed on his eyes, “However, there is still a way to defeat her. As long as we can make use of that point, victory will come easy.”

“What point?” Xie Qian Ren froze when he heard it.

“If Yan Po Jun could substitute Feng Qi Sha, he would probably win already. Do you still not understand?” Bai Yun Fei laughed.

His laugh was filled with arrogance and conceitedness.

Xie Qian Ren looked at him in contempt, but quickly lowered his head and humbly shook his head, “Qian Ren is stupid, he still does not understand. I hope that Junior [Elder] would enlighten me.”

On the stage, Feng Qi Sha released his power, unleashing the Second Slash of his Seven Slash Sword Technique, “Earth Split”.

However, the result was still the same. Yue Bing easily avoided the attack and counterattacked at the same time... Feng Qi Sha was alert this time and was not kicked by Yue Bing again, he reached out towards Yue Bing’s flying kick immediately, with the intent of grabbing hold of her feet. Unfortunately he missed.

“That’s impossible. Seventh Sister couldn’t be so strong!” Yue Tian and Yue Yan couldn’t believe that Yue Bing could fight on the same level as Feng Qi Sha.

“Actually, this must be Third Young Master’s idea.” Yan Po Jun was more observant of Yue Yang. He realized that everytime Yue Bing received Feng Qi Sha’s attacks, Yue Yang’s expression became more serious and focused. This was different from worry. His focus was so intense, as if he was the one participating in the battle himself. Yan Po Jun had a feeling that this abnormal Third Young Master might even have some kind of secret trick that could

control Yue Bing's body who was fighting on the stage, helping her sister to counterattack Feng Qi Sha... Otherwise, how could Yue Bing counterattacked Feng Qi Sha's [Landslide] and [Earth Split], those moves that even he himself would not dare to face?

Of course, they only thought that Yue Yang was only whispering his instructions to Yue Bing on how to fight.

They didn't know that when Yue Yang and Yue Bing cleared the Gemini Temple, they had actually acquired the [Gemini] Inherent Skill. They could use [Spiritual Telepathy] and [Vision Exchange] with each other.

Furthermore, in the Virgo Temple, they had also acquired the [Inner Mirror] ability. As long as Yue Bing relaxed her body and fused her mind with Yue Yang, Yue Yang would not even need to participate in the battle, he could control her body as he will. The only thing that Yue Yang couldn't do was to use his mind to control Yue Bing to use [Body Fusion], otherwise Feng Qi Sha would have an even harder time.

Yue Yang didn't control Yue Bing normally, he only kept a close watch on Feng Qi Sha's moves.

For example, when facing against dangerous attacks such as [Landslide] and [Earth Split], Yue Yang would help Yue Bing to avoid it and counterattacked. However, when they were fighting normally, Yue Yang didn't control Yue Bing at all. He didn't even give any pointers to her, trying to make her learn from a battle experience on her own.

In the end, Feng Qi Sha's [Earth Split] was only an empty move. Although it was well-known for its power, it couldn't unleash its full potential at all.

Yue Yang was alarmed.

If Feng Qi Sha had caught Yue Bing's leg just now, the battle would have ended then and there. He didn't know that Feng Qi Sha was so cunning.

"The situation is quite bad. Feng Qi Sha should have guessed Bing-er's weakness." Princess Qian Qian who was sitting in the private box frowned as she said to Luo Hua City Mistress, "Sister Luo Hua, why don't you advise that pervert for a while? Make him admit defeat and bring Yue Bing back. It seemed like Bing-er is still not Feng Qi Sha's match currently. If they continued to fight, it wouldn't be beneficial for her."

"Bing-er is as stubborn as her brother. We should just watch at the side first. With Yue Yang supporting her from back stage, her life wouldn't be in danger." Luo Hua City Mistress shook her head.

"The people from Yue Clan are really troublesome!" Princess Qian Qian sighed helplessly.

At this time, Feng Qi Sha put away his Demon Devouring Sword and suddenly said to Yue Bing, "You have shown tremendous improvement. However, you are still not my match right now. Just give up the match!"

Yue Bing turned around and looked at her brother.

She then turned back at Feng Qi Sha and stubbornly shook her head.

Yue Yang's mouth moved a little, but he didn't ask Yue Bing to give up the match. Her fight this time was also to prove the efforts of her training. Maybe she might suffer a crushing defeat later on, but she still wanted to persist on. Wasn't this a test for her perseverance? Yue Yang did not advise her to give up the match, and he had also signalled to Yue Yu and Ye Kong not to say anything to Yue Bing. He wanted everyone to just watch the battle in silence.

Feng Qi Sha pulled out his sword, his Demon Devouring Sword flashed with thousands of sparkles.

For a moment, it looked as if it was the stars in the night sky, sparkling brightly... This was not one of his famous Seven Slashes, it was a mercenary combat technique called [Starry Sky]. It was an extremely beautiful combat technique that mercenaries usually use for performances. In reality, its combat power was extremely limited. Its only advantage was to unleash bright reflections of the sword as if it was thousands of stars in the sky. Normal warriors looked down upon this beautiful combat technique as it couldn't be used to kill people. Furthermore, in urgent situations, using this combat technique would be equivalent to seeking death.

Of course, the difference was this kind of skill could actually

wield a decent amount of power when used by Feng Qi Sha.

Although it couldn't be compared to the Seven Slashes, it had hundred times more power than if a normal warrior was to use it.

The thousands of beautiful stars filling the whole sky sparkled brightly.

Suddenly, Yue Bing collapsed to the ground. To the audience's surprise, this kind of party-trick skill had actually knocked her down. Fresh blood flowed out from Yue Bing's body...

"I understand now. Her attack power and reaction speed are all top-notch, but she was limited by her weak body. Her defense is lacking." Xie Qian Ren suddenly realized.

"Not only that. Defeating her is very easy. You don't have to attack her with your strongest skill, as long as you rain your attacks on her, even the weakest attack could kill her. Feng Qi Sha possessed a weapon while she was unarmed. Under the limitation of the fighting arena space, getting hit by his attack would be unavoidable for her. Just now, Feng Qi Sha had seen through something. That is, he could actually injure her using a normal mercenary skill. On the other hand, his Seven Slash was actually useless against her. Her brother had probably only taught her how to deal with strong opponents, and did not teach her how to deal with weak combat techniques... Hence, she wasn't able to avoid that mercenary combat technique!" Bai Yun Fei chuckled slightly, "This little girl is not afraid single-attack combat techniques, but she had difficulties to fight against multiple-attack combat techniques, and that is her weakness! If the person on the stage is

not Feng Qi Sha but Yan Po Jun who controls fire, she would be defeated even faster! ”

“Your team member has already fainted. Would you like to give up the match?” The referee was in dilemma. Yue Bing was far from dying, hence he couldn’t announce her defeat. But she had indeed lost consciousness and was bleeding out from her injury. According to the rules, the decision to give up the match should be given to her team members, otherwise, Feng Qi Sha could just kick her out of the fighting arena and win the match.

“No. She will stand again.” Yue Yang stopped Fatty Hai who wanted to give up the match, his gaze determined as he shook his hands.

“...” The referee was speechless.

She was already beaten up to this point, do they really want to continue to fight?

However, when he turned around, he realized that Yue Bing who was covered in blood had actually crawled back up. Blood flowed out from her arms, shoulders, thighs, legs from the blades attack that she received just now. Blood drenched her black clothes and even dripped down from her fingers onto the stage.

Although she was in so much pain that her body was trembling, Yue Bing’s gaze was still as determined as ever.

Yue Yang made a hand gesture. Yue Bing immediately ran towards one of her Treant and leapt onto her Treant's shoulders. Under her Treant's protection, she pull herself together once again and store up strength to attack.

Feng Qi Sha who had seen through Yue Bing's weakness did not have mercy on her anymore.

The demonic Qi on his body exploded. The black flames that shrouded his Demon Devouring Sword ignited a hundred times brighter.

Feng Qi Sha sacrificed his attack power in order to unleash multiple-attacks... His sword flashed as if it was made of thousands of blades. Fire exploded from his sword, turning the whole stage into a sea of black flames.

The shockwaves from Feng Qi Sha's sword was weaker than normal, but Yue Bing's body was unable to withstand the strength of the area attack. When Feng Qi Sha slashed his sword ten times, creating shockwaves from his blade, Yue Bing who was not even hit by the sword and had the protection of the Treants, had fallen from power of the shockwave by the second slash.

She was struggling.

However, due to losing too much blood, she had no strength on her limbs. She wanted to crawl away multiple times, but was unable to do so.

Feng Qi Sha's mouth moved slightly, as if he wanted to tell her to give up the match. However, seeing Yue Bing resolute expression as she was struggling to crawl, he put his sword away and waited silently, patiently waiting for her to get back up...

“Bing-er, you have done enough, let's just give up!” Yue Yang couldn't bear to continue to watch. He knew that Yue Bing had a kind heart, so she wouldn't use her [Intense Poison] on Feng Qi Sha. Otherwise, Feng Qi Sha would already have fallen long ago. It could be said that it was already very good for her who was still not familiar with combat techniques to fight against Feng Qi Sha until this far. She had already surpassed his expectations.

“No, brother. I promised you that I will do my best. I can still fight...” Yue Bing hated herself for not being resolved. When she heard her brother telling her to give up the match, she felt like she was about to cry. However, she had a stubborn personality. Hence, she clenched her teeth and stopped any of her tears from falling as she forced herself to stand up.

Her black clothes was drenched with blood, her whole body was trembling in pain.

However, she still stood up determinedly and got into her fighting pose.

Feng Qi Sha wanted to brandish his sword and made his move, but he hesitated and gave up. Finally, he relaxed the sword that he was grasping tightly in his hands, “Yue Bing, if you can't receive this last move of mine, give up the match!”

“No, I will defeat you! This is my resolve, I will not disappoint brother...” Yue Bing’s pale face shone with determination. Her body had started to sway as her knees and body became weak. Her eyes showed signs of fainting, but her hands were still sharp with the intent of attack.

Countless weird Runes suddenly appeared on her shoulders that were revealed beneath her torn clothes. Faintly, the dark golden Ancient Runes also appeared on her arms.

A badly damaged, yet a similar-looking rune to World Exterminating Wheel Runic Circle slowly appeared on her hands.

When this [World Exterminating Wheel]-like rune appeared, Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin and Yan Po Jun all were completely shocked, dumbfounded. Although they didn’t recognize what this rune was, as a strong Ranker, their instinct told them that this was an extremely frightening thing. It holds an unparalleled destructive power...

It would exterminate everything it touches!

Feng Qi Sha was so alarmed that cold sweat dripped down his forehead.

Facing against this Runic Circle, he felt a kind of terror, as if he was going to be completely exterminated by his opponent.

If Yue Bing really unleashed the power of this Runic Circle, forget about getting killed in an instant, he was afraid that his whole body would also perish and turn into ashes.

Yue Bing's eyes were already lifeless, she had almost completely fainted.

She only had a strand of consciousness left, stubbornly holding on to her battle intent.

Her body slowly collapsed.

In the end, the [World Exterminating Wheel] condensed in her hands did not manage to be unleashed, and that was because Yue Yang tried to calm her heart in every possible way. Seeing that destructive [World Exterminating Wheel], Yue Yang was also greatly shocked. He quickly tried to calm her mind using [Spiritual Telepathy], helping Yue Bing to relax. This [World Exterminating Wheel] is not something that Yue Bing could control now. It was an extremely frightening skill that could completely destroy her enemy, but it could also destroy her own body.

Yue Yang jumped onto the stage and carried Yue Bing's weak body, shouting towards the referee who was drenched in cold sweat due to fright, "We admit defeat!"

"Brother, I'm sorry..." Yue Bing mumbled as she collapsed into Yue Yang's embrace and fainted. Her pale face due to extreme blood loss really made Yue Yang feel sad for her.

It was only until the last moment, right before she fainted, that Yue Bing lost control and let a tear drop out of the corner of her eyes.

Yue Yang hugged his sister and gently wiped away her tears, whispering tenderly, “Bing-er, don’t cry. You have done well. I know that you have done your best. This is enough, it doesn’t matter if you lose or win!”

The [World Exterminating Wheel] Runic Circle shattered into countless pieces of Runes that slowly returned back into Yue Bing’s body.

Bai Yun Fei and the others were almost scared to death. Normal warriors, however, did not understand what was happening. They whispered to each other in confusion, “What’s happening? What was that just now?”

Chapter 238 – Stepping Stone

“This Yue Bing, she is not a good contestant for the tournament. She might be more of an expert in real battles.” Bai Yun Fei frowned as he sighed, “If it weren’t for the tournament, if she was facing an enemy with the same level of abilities as Feng Qi Sha, the result would have been completely different. The Yue Clan Third Young Master had taught his sister Yue Bing a lot of killing techniques, but they are not suitable to use in a tournament...”

“You are saying, Yue Bing’s real combat abilities is actually greater than this?” Xie Qian Ren’s heart jumped a little.

“Other than that extremely dangerous Runic Circle, that Yue Bing must have other types of killing moves! Firstly, she was certain that she could win against Feng Qi Sha in the end. This meant that she had not displayed her full combat strength. She still has some killing moves left. Secondly, when she lost control of herself, she had actually chosen that Runic Circle. This meant that other than that Runic Circle she must have other killing moves that could kill her opponents instantly. It’s just that she was too kindhearted, she still didn’t want to use those killing moves on Feng Qi Sha although she was about to faint. This Yue Bing had a fight-to-the-death fighting style, so the effects of the tournament rules was very huge on her. If she met an enemy who had the same abilities as Feng Qi Sha that she must kill, she might not even need to use that Runic Circle to injure her enemy fatally... However, her kind character became her greatest weakness. If she doesn’t try to fix this weakness, she would never be able to climb onto the rankings of top warriors!” Bai Yun Fei’s last sentence was spoken with a low voice.

Although he was seated far from the fighting arena and that their conversation would not be heard unless they were shouting on top of their lungs, he was kind of afraid that Yue Yang and the others could hear that he had seen through Yue Bing's Weakness. Hence, he had lowered his voice and changed his volume into a whisper.

Xie Qian Ren couldn't help but to admire this arrogant Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader. Although Bai Yun Fei was extremely arrogant, he truly had an insightful analytical mind.

With regards to Bai Yun Fei's analysis, Xie Qian Ren didn't oppose a single thing.

At the same time, Xie Qian Ren also didn't tell Bai Yun Fei about the real truth... If they could turn back time to a year ago, they would be able to see that Yue Bing's combat power was a tenth, or maybe even lower than that, of Feng Qi Sha's. However, in just a year, she was able to improve to the point that she could stand against one of the Three Great Killing Stars, Feng Qi Sha. With such a quick growth in combat power, who would doubt that Yue Bing would someday join the ranks of the strongest warriors?

Other than her own natural talents, she still had an abnormal brother who had even reached the Innate Realm.

Under her brother's guidance, her growth, her future, how could they be something that Bai Yun Fei could imagine?

"Yue Bing, don't die..." Fatty Hai cried until his snot was running down his nose.

“She’s fine, she’s only fatigued. You guys should continue to fight. Winning or losing doesn’t matter, just make sure to do your best so you won’t have any regrets.” Yue Yang realized that the shattered World Exterminating Wheel inside Yue Bing’s body had magically fused together again. Other than consuming a huge amount of energy from her body, it didn’t cause any other effects. It was completely different from the rumours that he heard about how difficult it was to control World Exterminating Wheels.

When he found out that Yue Bing was fine, he felt a huge burden was lifted off his heart.

As he encouraged Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, he quickly brought Yue Bing back to his private box, channeling his Innate Qi to her along the way, trying to replenish the exhausted energy in her body.

Yue Yu and Yi Nan didn’t care about the tournament anymore. They quickly followed Yue Yang. The students they passed on the way had even stood up and clapped for Yue Bing. Although Yue Bing lost the match, she had fought against Feng Qi Sha. She had even beaten Feng Qi Sha up so miserably. She had completely won everyone’s respect.

How many people on earth had the ability to fight against the Three Great Killing Stars?

Furthermore, she was still a teenager, a little girl!

“Let’s have a three-on-three match!” Seeing Yue Yang carrying the unconscious Yue Bing back to the private box, Ye Kong felt a burst of fury that couldn’t be contained. With fury in his heart, he challenged Yue Tian, Yue Yan and Lie Ban to a three-on-three match.

“Just what I wanted.” Yue Tian, Yue Yan and Lie Ban looked to each other and asked permission from Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha before he agreed to Ye Kong’s challenge.

Actually, they didn’t have to agree to Ye Kong’s challenge. They would only need to defeat Ye Kong, who was going next, in order to win the match.

However, the arrogant Yue Tian didn’t want Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha to hog the limelight on their own. Of course, the most important thing was that as a member of the Yue Clan, he would definitely not endure Yue Yang and Yue Bing becoming more famous than himself. Even Yue Bing had almost defeated Feng Qi Sha. He, as the son of the First Mistress, would definitely not lose out.

Yue Yang was an abnormal in cultivation and growth. No matter how much effort he put in to chase after him, he would definitely not be able to surpass him.

However, Yue Tian and Yue Yan would definitely not let a little girl like Yue Bing to take over them, becoming stronger than them. During the New Years, a lot of their beasts had been killed by Yue Yang, hence their abilities had decreased greatly. They might not be able to win against the Three Great Killing Stars or Bai Yun Fei,

Prince of Zi Jin and the others, but they still had confidence to defeat Ye Kong and Li Brothers who did not have any reputation to their name.

The six people get on the fighting arena at the same time.

The three people on the left was the three unknown nobodies, Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge.

The three people on the right was the reputable and respected Yue Clan Member, the son of the First Mistress Yue Tian, the talented fire controller from Yue Clan Yue Yan, and the most talented member of the Lie Clan, Lie Ban.

Yue Tian and the others could enter into the top ten strongest in Shang Jing Academy, even with the Three Great Killing Stars included. Their powers were well-known to everyone. Everyone felt that Yue Tian and the others were talents that were just right below the Three Great Killing Stars.

A white-clothed referee and six bodyguards stepped up to become the judge.

Before they announce the start of the match, they repeated the regulations of the match to the contestants again. They warned them not to beat each other too hard, and especially warned them not to kill each other.

Right now, even a blind person could see that Ye Kong and the

others were filled with rage. The two sides were a little out of control, if they did not suppress their anger and fight, this battle could easily turn into a revengeful one.

The old fox and Shang Jing Academy Teachers who came late had also arrived. Although their expression were calm, they were secretly on alert as they stored their energy, prepared to save their students if anything should happen.

Although the Ivy Academy and Shang Jing Academy were rivals in the tournament, they were definitely not either-you-die-or-i-die enemies.

Furthermore, both academies were from the Da Xia Kingdom, hence they were like brothers-in-arms, limbs from the same body. No matter who injured whom, it would still be Da Xia's lost.

Yue Tian, Yue Yan and Lie Ban also didn't dare to let down their guards. They had seen Fatty Hai and Yue Bing's example previously after all. Yue Yang was an Innate, even by teaching his friends a little, he would be able to turn Fatty Hai and the others into Yue Tian's, Yue Yan's and Lie Ban's headache. Yue Tian and Yue Yan, especially, after getting most of their beasts killed during the New Year's Clan Tournament, they had become extremely alert.

Yue Tian and the others summoned Golden Tiger, Flaming Lion, Wind Leopard, Battle Eagle, and other beasts one by one.

The audience clapped excitedly, cheering for them.

In their hearts, the majestic-looking Flaming Lion, Golden Tiger, Wind Leopard and Battle Eagle were symbols of power.

Other than these, Yue Tian and Yue Yan had also summoned a puppet-type beast. Yue Tian had summoned a Silver-ranked Level 4 Silver Tiger while Yue Yan summoned two Silver-ranked Level 3 Battle-axe Centaur...

“Isn’t the Yue Clan one of the Four Great Clans? Why isn’t there anyone else other than Yue Clan Third Young Master and the little lady?” Bai Yun Fei ridiculed them in contempt, “What pitiable worms, they didn’t even have a single Gold-ranked beast. How could they enter into the top ten strongest amongst the younger generation with that kind of strength? They are practically frogs inside their wells!” His words made Xie Qian Ren roll his eyes. He thought that if it weren’t for the fact that Bai Yun Fei was the Southern Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader, having a Bronze-ranked beast would already be a miracle for him. Forget about Silver-ranked or Gold-ranked beasts, you have a Gold King Beast, but you didn’t acquire it with your own strength. Why are you so damn arrogant?!

Of course, Xie Qian Ren didn’t oppose him out loud.

He didn’t want to tell this arrogant Junior Sect Leader that not only the Four Great Clans, even the normal clans wouldn’t normally give their strongest beasts to the younger generation. The younger generation would have to catch it and cultivate it themselves.

Although the beasts' growth would be slower this way, their foundation would be secure. At the same time, the younger generation could also learn how to achieve things from their own hard work, so it would be beneficial for their own growth.

A person like Bai Yun Fei who had immediately gotten a Gold-ranked level 5 Gold King Beast as a present for contracting his grimoire, he was completely raised with a silver spoon. His training method greatly differs from the traditional Four Great Clan's training method. Although Xie Qian Ren hated Yue Yang, he respected the abnormal Third Young Master's process of growth. He didn't receive any help from his Clan at all, but he could reach the Innate Realm with his own power. He was even more successful than Yue Tian and Yue Yan who had received support from their Clan.

What did this mean?

Success was greatly related to each individual's own efforts. It was not as simple as contracting the strongest beasts.

Of course having a strong contracted beast was a good thing, but it did not mean everything!

Bai Yun Fei had a Gold King Beast because of his identity. Not everyone was born with a silver spoon on their mouth, and not everyone could become a Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader. Bai Yun Fei might deserve people's admiration for having a Gold King Beast, but it doesn't give him the right to ridicule others. At the very least, he might not be as hardworking as others.

Xie Qian Ren lowered his head, a faint smirk appearing upon his expression. Say what you want now. Not long later, you'll be bullied by that abnormal Yue Yang until you cry in pain!

“Wa wa...”

The audience suddenly burst into an uproar.

Bai Yun Fei and Xie Qian Ren looked over and discovered that the two unknown nobodies, Li Clan Brothers, had both summoned a Gold-ranked beast. Although they were only two Gold-ranked Ant Soldiers, the audience couldn't help but to burst into an uproar. How could these two actually possessed Gold-ranked beasts?

Even the top ten strongest Yue tian and Yue Yan didn't have a Gold-ranked beast. Yet, these two guys that they completely did not recognize actually had a Gold-ranked beast on their arsenal.

They, could they be experts from some secret Sect?

Ye Kong also started to summon his beast, a Bronze-ranked Level 5 King Kong Demon Ape. However, due to the appearance of the Gold-ranked beasts, his beast didn't cause much surprise to the audience.

However, when Ye Kong summoned the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, even Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin had to rub their eyes to make sure they were seeing correctly... The Herculean

Rhinoceros Beetle was a defense-type beast. When it levelled up, it would become an existence that even a Giant Dragon couldn't injure. Fortunately this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle was not that high levelled, it was only a Normal-ranked Level 5. However, its body was as big as a hill, it had taken up almost a third of the fighting arena space.

Forget about the Flaming Lion, Golden Tiger, Wind Leopard and Battle Eagle, Bai Yun Fei felt that even if they had his Gold King Beast instead, it would be extremely difficult to fatally injure that Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle.

If this Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle could evolve into Bronze-ranked or levelled up to Level 6, Yue Tian and the others wouldn't even need to fight.

A King Kong Demon Ape and a Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle?

This, wouldn't this be the strongest attack and the strongest defense combo? Furthermore, the other two had Gold-ranked Ant Soldiers and was twin brothers that had strong rapport with each other. This battle...

Yan Po jun and Feng Qi Sha who were below the stage all felt sorry for Yue Tian and the others who are fighting on the stage.

Indeed, none of the people on the Yue Clan Third Young Master's side was a normal person. Everyone was a freak!

Xue Tan Lang's expression did not change at all, it was as if he was thoroughly made of ice. His gaze wasn't looking down on the fighting arena, but was observing the expressions of Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin, Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu and the others instead. He had been constantly observing the reaction of his future enemies... His cold gaze finally settled on the last person, and that was Yue Yang... Perhaps, in Xue Tan Lang's heart, he would only recognize Yue Yang as his lifelong rival, a target that he would want to fight an all-out battle with.

Before he fought with him... Xue Tan Lang glanced back at Bai Yun Fei and the others. Maybe these people would be his best stepping stones!

Hey, Third Young Master Yue, don't you agree with me?

Chapter 239 – My Name Is ‘Red’!

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers versus Yue Tian, Yue Yan and Lie Ban’s three-on-three match didn’t take long, but it was extremely intense.

No, accurately speaking, it should be extremely desperate.

Yue Tian and the others had achieved the final victory, but it was acquired with great difficulties. In the end, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were both heavily injured to the point that they were vomiting blood, collapsing unconscious outside the fighting arena. However, there was still Lie Ban, covered in blood, who still endured until his last breath and stood in the middle of the fighting arena... On the Ivy Academy’s side, the Li Brothers had been burnt to charcoal. Even after receiving healing from the old fox and the bodyguards, they were still unconscious from their injuries. Ye Kong was still clear-minded, but his whole body was filled with thousands of cuts and bruises. His blood flowed out like waterfall as he forced himself to knock Yue Tian and Yue Yan out of the fighting arena. At the end, he actually still had the last bit of strength left to defeat Lie Ban. Unfortunately, at this crucial time, Yue Tian’s Silver Tiger had suddenly knocked him out of the fighting arena. The Ivy Academy had lost the three-on-three battle not because of their lack of strength, but due to the tournament’s rules.

The Shang Jing Academy had achieved victory, but they had paid a huge price for this battle.

Their Flaming Lion, Golden Tiger and Wind Leopard had all died in the battle while their Battle Eagle was heavily injured. Their two

Silver-ranked puppet Centaurs had also been crushed to pieces by the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle.

Yue Tian and Yue Yan who were previously famous and respected amongst the younger generation, had been beaten up by Ye Kong to the point of vomiting blood. They had greatly lost their reputation. Although they had put up a good fight, Ye Kong had endured with shocking endurance, finally kicking Yue Tian and Yue Yan out of the fighting arena.

After this battle, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had been both shortlisted into the audience's top ten strongest warriors list.

Maybe their strength was still somewhat lacking, but they had already challenged some of the most powerful top ten strongest warriors.

Even the Li Brothers, who were unknown nobodies, had shown great fighting and sacrificial spirit. Hence, they had also been shortlisted to the top thirty. Without the Li Brothers' selfless contributions and perfect teamwork, Ye Kong wouldn't be able to defeat Yue Tian and Yue Yan. These brothers had rather played the supporting roles and took in more than 80% of the close-ranged attacks on Ye Kong's behalf, in order to gain victory in this battle.

Clap clap clap...

The audience had all risen from their seats, giving an enthusiastic standing ovation to the defeated team members of the Ivy Academy.

The Ivy Academy which had always been perceived as weak in the people's minds had completely changed their impression. This year's contestants from Ivy Academy were all courageous and unyielding. First, there were Fatty Hai and Yue Bing, and then there were Ye Kong and the Li Brothers. This team's tenacious struggle to win had left a deep impression on the audience's hearts.

It should also be noted that they were fighting against the champion team from the last year's tournament, the Shang Jing Academy team which consist of Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, Yue Tian, Yue Yan, Lie Ban and the others. Even if there were new players such as the Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin, the Shang Jing Academy Team was still one of the audience's favourite. Who would have guessed that they would be beaten up so miserably by the Ivy Academy, whom everyone had looked down upon? It can be said that the Ivy Academy was more than qualified to win, but they had really bad luck, losing all three matches to the tournament's rules... Other than having very strong abilities, the Shang Jing Academy's tournament experience had also played a big advantage to them.

When Ye Kong knocked Yue Tian out of the fighting arena, if it weren't for the fact that Yue Tian ordered his Silver Tiger to shake the fighting arena grounds and knock Ye Kong who had lost his balance out of the fighting arena in the last minute, then it would be difficult to say who would win this three-on-three match.

Although Lie Ban who was on the stage could still muster up the strength to stand, everyone thought that if Ye Kong had not lost his footing at the last moment, Lie Ban would definitely lose against him.

Lie Ban didn't have the undying fighting spirit that Ye Kong had. Yue Tian and Yue Yan also didn't have a sacrificial fighting spirit like the Li Brothers had. Their average abilities might be a little above Ye Kong and the Li Brothers, but they were completely beaten up by Ye Kong and Li Brothers who worked together as if they were one body... Ye Kong and the Li Brothers had also initiated a classic three-on-three battle style, called the 'Holy Trinity'... Two members would sacrifice themselves for their strongest team member to allow him to defeat their enemies in his optimal condition. At the same time, the two members would also block all the enemies attacks and preserve their strongest team member's strength until the end.

Not everyone would be willing to sacrifice themselves and only play a supporting role in their battle.

However, as long as the Li Brothers did that, their team would be able to display 100%, if not more, of their strength!

"What an interesting battle!" Bai Yun Fei revealed a smile at the corner of his mouth and said, "I have actually not much interest in team matches initially, but now I have changed my mind. Let me be the one to defeat the Shang Jing Academy Team later on! I must become the champion this year. Then, I can wait for the Ivy Academy's challenge next year..."

"Did you say Shang Jing Academy? Don't think that the strong enemies are only Shang Jing and Ivy Academies!" The Gray Wolf Academy's representative, Prince of Zi Jin, humphed out as his eyes glinted with a smirk.

The old fox quickly brought Ye Kong and the others to be treated.

Yue Yang looked at him and realized that this old fox was actually giddy with happiness. Yue Yang sweated in speechlessness.

But that was not surprising. Normally, the old fox would return in miserable defeat every time he brought his army of students here.

This year, however, Fatty Hai's, Ye Kong's and the Li Brother's performance had completely changed the Ivy Academy's impression and brought honor to him. The old fox finally had the chance to show off and blow off his steam, so obviously he was delighted and happy.

The second day, the small group Round-robin Tournament started.

During the match between Xue Tan Lang and Yue Yang, Xue Tan Lang took the initiative to forfeit the match... Afterwards, Xue Tan Lang was assigned to fight against Prince of Zi Jin while Yue Yang to fight against the Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader, Bai Yun Fei. Although it was only a small group Round-robin Tournament, the deathly matches in Group C had become the most popular highlight of the Tournament. In order to allow more audience to watch these intense matches, the Champion Island had decided to hold the Round-robin Tournament in the Championship Stadium that would normally only be used for the Final Competition.

It was a ring-shaped stadium constructed within rocks and a huge mountain, with the fighting arena right at the bottom of the mountain valley.

There were more than 50,000 seats constructed, and more audience could sit on the rocks in the mountain. Although they wouldn't have any seats and their distance to the fighting arena would be too far, it was also a form of enjoyment to be able to watch the match from high up above.

Most importantly, the audience without designated seats could watch for free. This arrangement was really suited to the mercenary soldiers' tastes.

Of course, being able to watch for free meant that they had to come voluntarily on their own. The organizer wouldn't guarantee their safety. If these mercenary soldiers accidentally injure themselves or was injured from the contestant's beasts, the organizer wouldn't take any responsibility. Blame it on their bad luck!

"I hope that the audience will pay attention to safety first..." During the 'Deathly' Group C Round-robin match between Yue Yang and Bai Yun Fei, seven referees were assigned to look over the match. Four referees were stationed at the four corners of the fighting arena. Other than being in charge with observing the situation of the battle, they were also in charge of ensuring the audience's safety in case of emergency. As for the other three referees, one was the Head Referee while the other two were Vice-head Referees. Other than the Finals, it could be said that this was the first time that seven referees were assigned to judge in a small

group Round-robin Tournament.

Over a hundred Silver-armoured Guards were scattered all around the edges of the fighting arena, ensuring the audience's safety.

Various kingdom's kings, queen consort, prince and princesses had also arrived in the stadium. Although the Da Xia, Tian Luo and Zi Jin Emperors did not come to the match, they had sent over their representatives.

Before Yue Yang and Bai Yun Fei even got up to the stage, the whole stadium was already filled with audience. There were probably more than 100,000 people present on the stadium.

This was a record in history.

There had never been so many audience coming to watch the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament before.

This includes the previous years' finals. At the very most, there would only be around 70,000 present in the Finals. The current, shocking record of at least 100,000 people coming to watch this match was unprecedented in history.

"I choose the Unrestricted Battle." Yue Yang raised his request, and Bai Yun Fei completely agreed. Unrestricted Battle meant that there would be no time limit, no timeouts, no rest time, no restrictions on the type of beast summoned and the type of combat

technique used... In brief, other than killing the opponent, before the opponent admit his defeat, the contestant would be able to attack his opponent with any kind of method he chose.

“You have three minutes to prepare for battle. You can choose to prepare below the stage or on the stage. After three minutes, I will announce the start of the match. Only then would you be able to start fighting.” The Head Referee stepped onto the stage and indicated the two contestants to bow to each other before preparing for their battles.

“I’m Bai Yun Fei. Please take care of me.” The Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei pretended to be courteous as he cupped his hands together and bowed, but his tone was arrogant.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremonies, we should rely on our own strength later on.” Yue Yang casually cupped his hands in reply and jumped down the stage to greet the old fox. In order to support Yue Yang, the old fox, the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie and the Death Class students had all came. Even the ‘Thousand Dried Bones’ General Feng Kuang who had always followed Jun Wu You, the State Grandmaster, the White Stone City Master and the others all came down to support.

“Have a good fight! You have to beat that fellow up until he have to find his teeth all over the ground!” Princess Qian Qian motivated Yue Yang, which was an extremely rare occurrence.

However, the magnanimous Luo Hua City Mistress who had always been there for Yue Yang had actually chosen to sit far away from him, as if she was pretending not to know him at all.

The reason was because her father, the Eastern Sky King, had come and couldn't stop shouting "son-in-law, son-in-law!" to Yue Yang. This made her feel extremely embarrassed, hence she decided to hide further away. Yi Nan was more or less the same. Her aunt had come, hence Yi Nan had obediently pulled Yue Bing along to watch the tournament with her aunt. The Tian Luo Prince had also come, bringing his army of Pink Rose Fan Group, those crazed fangirls to support. Only then did Yue Yang realize that there was really a Tian Luo Prince in this world, and he was actually Luo Hua's younger cousin (Shiro: or to be exact, younger male cousin from her father's side). Most surprisingly, this Tian Luo Prince who had an extremely handsome and elegant appearance was actually the son of the Western Sky King... Yue Yang really couldn't understand. The Western Sky King looked even more like a barbarian than the Eastern Sky King, so how could he had such a beautiful son?

Even the fact that the Eastern Sky King could have such a beautiful Luo Hua City Mistress as a daughter was still a mystery that Yue Yang could never understand.

The Tian Luo Emperor, Hua Xu Ri, only had daughters and no sons, hence this Tian Luo Prince was probably the next-in-line to the Tian Luo Kingdom's throne.

Tian Luo Prince looked at Yue Yang and smiled, igniting an outburst of displeasure from his Pink Rose Fan Group... He was different from the ice cold Sickly Beauty. This Tian Luo Prince smiled easily, and there was no melancholy in his eyes. It was as if he was a sunshine prince.

However, the thing that made Yue Yang feel delighted was that: At the corner of the mountain, away from people's eyes, the mysterious beauty who liked to read books, Wu Xia, and the sickly beauty were sitting side by side. Both of them wore a thin veil to cover their faces and a long gown on their body. They had even draped cloaks over their body and sat at the corner of the mountain, trying very hard not to attract anyone's attention. However, Yue Yang could spot them amidst the crowd immediately. She was his most beloved girl, of course he wouldn't mistake her for someone else. When the sickly beauty realized that Yue Yang was looking at them, she waved her hands in reply. The mysterious beauty Wu Xia, on the other hand, did not move the slightest and continued to read her book quietly, as if she did not notice Yue Yang at all.

Yue Yang's only regret was that because of enemies tracking them, Fourth Mother and the little girl couldn't come to watch his match.

Otherwise, it would have been perfect.

"The two contestants, you have one minute left. Please come to the stage to start the match." The Head Referee was actually reminding Yue Yang, because Bai Yun Fei had been on the stage from the beginning. He had summoned a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast. Those who came to support him all cheered with excitement.

In the hearts of the ordinary spectators, the 'Blind Abnormal Student' Titan would never be able to fight against Bai Yun Fei.

That Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast alone would be enough to destroy him to smithereens.

They had come in order to watch Bai Yun Fei oppressing his opponents... This was because in his previous matches, Bai Yun Fei liked to play with his opponents as much as possible, especially bullying them mercilessly. He had even forced his opponents to thank him for giving pointers to them. This was what the audience wanted to watch the most. This Blind Abnormal Student, would he be like Bai Yun Fei's previous opponents, kneeling on the ground and begging for mercy in tears in front of Bai Yun Fei at the end?

Yue Yang stepped onto the stage as he took out the Golden Mask that he acquired from the Gemini Temple, slowly putting it on.

His suppressed demonic qi suddenly flared up from his body.

When the audience saw his half-crying, half-smiling mask and felt the intense demonic qi coming from his body, they couldn't help but to shiver in fear... This Abnormal Blind Student was indeed someone not to be trifled with. It would probably be difficult to see him kneeling on the ground begging for mercy in tears.

"50 seconds left. Student Titan, you can summon your beast first. I will remind you again when there's only 10 seconds left. You can make your final preparations now." The Head referee reminded Yue Yang again. He didn't want to see Bai Yun Fei's Gold Dragon King Beast kicking Yue Yang out of the fighting arena with one

move. He wished that the two young-uns would fight a great battle, the more intense it was, the better it would be.

“What kind of beast should I summon?” Yue Yang seemed to be a little troubled.

“HAHAHA!” A lot of the audience started laughing out loud. Indeed, no matter what kind of beast he summoned, he wouldn’t be able to fight against a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast. Furthermore, the funnier thing was that this Titan had only summoned a Thorny Flower and Puppet Mice before. Although he was an expert in combat techniques, this Abnormal Blind student was a joke in beast summoning.

“Idiot, this is not the right place for you!” Bai Yun Fei’s fellow sect disciple stood up and shouted with a loud voice, ridiculing Yue Yang for coming to the wrong place.

If Yue Yang had participated in the Individual Combat Techniques tournament, he might get a good position in terms of ranking.

But in this Individual Overall Tournament, you would have to fight with both your beasts and your combat techniques. He, who was only good in combat techniques, would be a joke if he wanted to fight against Bai Yun Fei, who was an expert in both combat techniques and beast summoning.

In Individual Overall Matches, it was compulsory to summon a beast. So Yue Yang summoned the Quintet Puppet Mice again.

The audience almost died laughing, many people was gasping for breath from excessive laughter.

How could he even think of defeating a Gold Dragon King Beast with five puny puppet mice?

This might just be the biggest joke in the history of Hundred Schools Elite Tournament...

“Student Titan, are you sure you don’t want to summon your Thorny Flower? Thorny Flowers are quite strong!” Bai Yun Fei tried his best to maintain a humble tone, this way, his sarcasm would be more strongly heard. When the audience heard it, they laughed until tears formed in their eyes. Alright, this is not a joke, this is Group C’s Round-robin Tournament! Let’s watch a fight between puppet mice and Thorny Flower versus a Gold Dragon King Beast!

“There’s no need for that. It’s only a lizard who can spit out fire, I don’t have to summon my Thorny Flower just yet!” Yue Yang remained calm and collected as he summoned the Gold-ranked Level 3 Reaper Mantis, who had just grown from a young to an adult beast. Although it was still far from becoming a mature beast, it could still fight in battles.

“Eh?” The audience froze. This Blind Abnormal student actually had a Gold-ranked beast too?

“Reaper Mantis? Not bad!” Bai Yun Fei was also slightly shaken,

but he quickly recovered. Although the Gold-ranked Level 3 Reaper Mantis was his dragon's nemesis, the difference in their levels were too much. His Gold Dragon King Beast was Gold-ranked Level 7, even the slightest slash from its claws was not something that the Reaper Mantis could endure. Bai Yun Fei's eyes flashed slightly as he summoned another beast, a Gold-ranked Level 5 Killer Bee.

The Killer Bee's poison was one of the most deadly poison amongst insect-type beasts.

Although the Gold-ranked Killer Bee was not the Reaper Mantis' nemesis, it would still be able to defeat the Reaper Mantis with its quick flying speed and poison.

Bai Yun Fei's choice of beast had completely crushed Yue Yang. He meant to show that he did not need his Gold Dragon King Beast to completely defeat Yue Yang's beast... It was as if he was proclaiming, "You dare to compete with the Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader in terms of beasts? It's like a beggar trying to compare with a millionaire to see who had more money!"

"Killer Bee? Why do you summon such a powerful beast? You are going to make me die of fright!" Yue Yang then waved his hands below the stage, "Seems like I would need to call for external help!"

Two mysterious people who wore cloaks over their bodies jumped up to the stage. The Head Referee quickly stopped them, "Wait a moment, this is not a three-on-three match. You cannot participate in this battle. Timeout! You two, quickly get down from the stage, otherwise I will disqualify Student Titan for violating the rules of the tournament. Get down now, right now!"

The audience started to laugh again. This Titan didn't even know the rules of the tournament, and he dared to come to fight?

Suddenly, one of the mysterious person took off her cloak and revealed an enchanting, almost sinful, beautiful face. Her cherry lips moved as she spoke, her voice had a heaven-like quality to them. Her pronunciation was a little inaccurate, but it was sweet sounding nevertheless, "All beasts that belonged to Master are able to participate in the battle, right?"

The Head Referee was dumbfounded.

Of course beasts are allowed to participate, but you are human... He suddenly realized in that moment and shouted, "Are you two beasts?"

That enchanting, almost sinful, beauty tore her cloak to shreds and spread her platinum wings. She soar up to the sky before landing back down to the ground like an angel. She held a Gold Dragon Slaying Dagger in her left hand and a Silver Eye Destroyer Dagger on her right. She, who wore a whole body of platinum armor knelt in front of Yue Yang, respectfully speaking to him with her beautiful voice, "I am indeed. I am a Bloody Queen who had been contracted by Master. My name is 'Red'."

When she said that, the whole arena became completely silent.

A humanoid beast that could speak?

This, what rank is this beast actually?

(Shiro: Guess who is the other mysterious cloaked 'person'?)

Chapter 240 – This Is Obviously Bullying!

“Pla... Platinum-ranked humanoid beast?” The Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei felt like his head had been hit by a blunt weapon.

Platinum-ranked and Gold-ranked beasts were two entirely different things.

Normal warriors might not know it, but how could a Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader like him not know about it? A beast would only have the chance to be thoroughly reborn and become a Holy Beast when it reached the Platinum-rank. Although Normal-ranked, Bronze, Silver and Gold-ranked beasts could all evolve into Holy Beasts, the process would take at least thousands of years, or even ten thousands of years. Furthermore, not all beasts had the potential to become Holy Beasts. A beast could only evolve into a holy Beast if the timing and conditions were right. Then that lucky beast would probably need to cultivate for many years before it could evolve into a Holy Beast.

That kind of long years of cultivation was not something that a human warrior's life could wait for.

In comparison, a Platinum-ranked beast's evolution would be a hundred times slower than a Normal-ranked Beast. It would be ten times, or even many times slower compared to Bronze, Silver and Gold-ranked beasts.

Platinum-ranked beasts would normally need a few decades, or at

most a century to evolve into a humanoid appearance.

Afterwards, it would need to learn knowledge and raise their wisdom before they could evolve into a Holy Beast.

A Gold-ranked beast would need at least some hundred years, at least 200-300 years to evolve into a Holy Beast. Hence, its master would have already become old and senile waiting for his beast to evolve from Gold-ranked to Holy Beast. Their bodies would also have exhausted all of their potential, hence they wouldn't have much improvement...

“This, this is an intelligent humanoid Platinum-ranked beast!” The Head Referee was shocked out of his mind.

In all of the previous Hundred Schools Elite Tournament, students with a Gold-ranked beasts were hard to find, but there were some abnormal students who indeed had Gold-ranked beasts in their possession. However, as a qualified and experienced Referee, he had really never seen a student possessing a Platinum-ranked beast before, let alone a ‘humanoid’ and ‘intelligent’ beast at that, which were the foundation to become a Holy Beast. A beast with such a high intelligence like this Bloody Queen, even if she wasn't a Holy Beast yet, it wouldn't be long until she turn into a Holy Beast!

At the start, the Head Referee had thought that Bai Yun Fei, who possessed a Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast was an existence that was strong beyond compare.

But he was nothing compared to Student Titan who possessed a Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen!

Gold Dragon King Beast?

The Bloody Queen is a Holy Beast, a Platinum-ranked Holy Beast!

The Head Referee was deeply astonished as he looked at the other mysterious beast that was still hiding its body under its cloak. This beast was also humanoid. Did it mean that this Student Titan actually had TWO Holy Beasts?

The 100,000 audience in the Championship Stadium was completely silent for a very long time, before they were finally able to react.

Some of the audience immediately cheered excitedly, and more people followed suit. The cheers were like a giant wave of tsunami that engulfed the whole Championship Stadium. The audience all stood up to get a better look at the fighting arena, locking their gazes onto the Bloody Queen. Countless of people wanted to look for any signs to prove that she wasn't a beast, that she was a human, but even the most suspicious person was left disappointed in the end... This was because they could see that in that enchanting and alluring face of the Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen Red's forehead, there was a small tattoo that signified that she was a contracted beast... That was only something a beast would possess. A human wouldn't have such a tattoo on their forehead, because a human wouldn't be able to contract another human!

“Grr!” Bai Yun Fei felt a wave of jealousy bursting in his heart.

That kind of feeling was as if he was a beggar who had starved for three days, was so hungry that his stomach was rumbling with hunger and his eyes were about to turn dark, and he saw a rich man eating a sumptuous meal right in front of him.

The feeling bursting from his heart was not envy, but hatred, 100% pure hatred. A destructive kind of jealousy swept across his heart. He couldn't endure the feeling of falling into hell straight from the heavens. Bai Yun Fei felt that the whole audience would start mocking him in the next moment. This was because his attitude just now was just like a frog sitting at the bottom of the well, looking up to the sky and still felt smug about himself.

The only way to get rid of such feelings was to destroy Yue Yang!

Eliminate this enemy forever!

Only then would he truly be able to become the strongest hero in the Soaring Dragon Continent!

With Bai Yun Fei's order, the Gold Dragon King Beast spread its wings and soared into the clouds.

It used the strongest strength from the momentum of its flight and the destructive power of its dragon's breath to destroy Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen, whose existence was like a dagger piercing through Bai Yun Fei's heart... Bai Yun Fei thought: Why

does this beautiful and intelligent beast belong to another person? Since you are not mine, you shall not belong to anyone else. I will definitely kill you!

The Gold Killer Bee flew like a flash of lightning towards the Bloody Queen 'Red', revealing its poison needle in a thousandth of a second.

As long as it could prick the Bloody Queen once, that beautiful beast would become a corpse immediately.

Die! You would only be beautiful if you die!

Bai Yun Fei looked at Red's beautiful face and clenched his fist, his heart filled with hatred deep to his bones. If this beauty had belonged to him alone, then he would definitely cherish her forever. But she doesn't belong to him, so she must die... The feeling he had right now made Bai Yun Fei think about his younger times. His Dad had brought him to the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace, and he saw an extremely beautiful precious crystal vase over there. When he thought about how the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace refused to give him the precious vase, all he wanted to do was to secretly push that precious crystal vase and make it shatter into pieces on the ground.

This was what he really wanted to do.

Bai Yun Fei gritted his teeth as blood pooled in his eyes, making his eyes glint with a red light, displaying the hatred from the bottom of his heart.

“KYAAHHHH!”

An extremely sharp, piercing shriek shook through the souls of everyone present in the stadium. The soundwaves emitted from the Bloody Queen Red’s mouth rippled out to her surrounding, as if it had substance. Everyone felt their eyes turn dark. Spectators watching from far away felt their ears buzz while those nearby felt like the back of their heads were struck by hammers.

This kind of terrifying scream was impossible to avoid, it could directly attack one’s soul.

In that thousandth of a second when the Gold Killer Bee was about to prick the Blood Queen with its poisonous needle, Red had suddenly disappeared. She had re-appeared on the Gold Dragon King Beast’s head.

The Gold Dragon King Beast’s pressure as a member of the Dragon Race and a King Beast had no effect on her at all. Red was also a King Beast, furthermore, she was currently Platinum-ranked, hence she had won by a whole Rank. If it wasn’t for the fact that the Gold Dragon King Beast was already Gold-ranked Level 7, Red would probably be able to pressure it with her presence! A Dragon Race would be an extremely terrifying existence for ordinary beasts, but for the Bloody Queen who had high intelligence, its existence was just like a big lizard who could spit fire. It wasn’t a terrifying enemy, it was an opponent that must be killed!

The Gold Dragon Slaying Dagger in Red's hands was the butcher knife prepared just for the Gold Dragon King beast.

Red's [Banshee Scream] which she unleashed right in front of the Gold Killer Bee had reached the Gold Dragon King Beast's head before a thousandth of second had even passed.

When the Gold Dragon King Beast was about to turn its head to spit fire on Red, it was paralysed from Red's [Banshee Scream]. At this moment, the Dragon Slaying Dagger had slashed across the Gold Dragon King Beast's eyes... Even the Gold Dragon King Beast which was impervious to swords and spears couldn't endure the sharpness of the Dragon Slaying Dagger. A long bloody scar had appeared on its eyes.

The Gold Dragon King Beast reacted with its instincts, its body writhing madly in order to avoid its enemy's fatal attack. At the same time, its giant dragon wings dealt a heavy blow to Red's slim body.

The dragon wings were extremely powerful, there would be no saving someone who had been hit.

Even if it didn't hit, the dragon wings could still sweep a tornado that would blow its enemies away...

The platinum wings on Red's back flapped as she flew straight up to the sky. The Gold Dragon's wing attack that was as fast as lighting was like a snail compared to Red's wings. The Bloody Queen Red soared up to the sky and avoided the Gold Dragon's

wing attack, then it turned its body in mid-air and chased after the Gold Dragon which was flying straight towards her Master. With an 'X' slash from both of the daggers in her hands, the Dragon scales that were as hard as shields shattered to pieces. A bloody 'X'-shaped scar formed on the Dragon's neck, one of the slash deeper than the other.

The dragon's blood dripped, sprinkling the ground as it flew in the air.

On the stage, the Gold Killer Bee's narrow body part where its thorax and abdomen joined had suddenly been split apart, its thorax separated from its abdomen.

Its abdomen still shot forward from its momentum, but its thorax and head floated in the air.

The Gold Dragon King Beast in the air unleashed a strong gust of wind as it flew back to its Master's side.

The Bloody Queen Red also returned and descended behind Yue Yang, not a single feather on her wings unruffled. There was a respectful look on her enchanting, almost alluring, beautiful face, making others feel jealous like crazy. She, who was so intelligent and strong, was supposed to receive her Master's worship and love, treated like a Queen. Who would know that she would actually humble herself in front of Yue Yang, kneeling on one of her knees to show her respect.

This, this really make everyone want to vomit blood.

The Gold Killer Bee's abdomen wasn't able to prick its target. It dropped right in front of the second mysterious cloaked 'person'.

The second mysterious humanoid beast who was still hiding underneath its cloak suddenly revealed an almost human leg from within its cloak, with a cow's leg from the knee downwards. With one stomp, it turned the Gold Killer Bee's abdomen into a bloody pulp...

Rumble!

That stomp had actually caused a tremor throughout the whole stage.

An invisible shockwave spread out through the whole stadium. The audience seated within a hundred meters radius all felt dizzy and nauseous.

That Killer Bee who had lost its abdomen went completely out of control as it hissed crazedly and flew towards that mysterious humanoid beast. However, before it even managed to open its mouth to bite, suddenly, the whole audience could all see clearly that the mysterious humanoid beast underneath the cloak had started to spit out a golden flame from its nose and mouth.

The mysterious humanoid beast's eyes that were hidden underneath the cloak suddenly lit up brightly.

Even those seated behind the mysterious humanoid beast felt as if someone was watching them. It was as if their minds had been pricked ruthlessly.

The audience who could see that flash of light all started to shiver uncontrollably. It was as if a deathly shadow had appeared right before them.

Fortunately, the target of this glare was the Gold Killer Bee who had gone out of control.

The stadium was engulfed in silence.

Everyone present could see very clearly.

The Gold Killer Bee had actually lost its life in the next second. Its previously energetically flapping wings had suddenly stopped, and the Gold Killer Bee who only had its head and thorax left suddenly dropped to the ground. Bai Yun Fei didn't manage to unsummon it in time, and the Gold Killer Bee finally lost its life.

“Heavens, that's [Doom's Eyes]! It's Barbarian Cow's [Doom's Eyes]!” Warriors who were familiar with beasts abilities couldn't help themselves but to shout out.

[Doom's Eyes]. The moment it was unleashed, it became an unavoidable existence.

One would immediately die with a single glare!

Of course, normally, only weaker beasts would die from the Barbarian Cow's [Doom's Eyes]. For a Gold-ranked beast, even if [Doom's Eyes] was unleashed, it would probably not die. Maybe its soul would be thoroughly wounded, but it wouldn't be destroyed. Right now, what rank would this almost completely humanoid Barbarian Cow have to be to kill a Gold-ranked Level 5 Killer Bee instantly?

"This is impossible..." Bai Yun Fei whose face was all-smiles just now had turned lifeless.

He completely couldn't believe the facts laid before his eyes. His Gold Dragon King Beast was unable to counterattack while his Killer Bee had been instantly killed. How was this possible?

Bai Yun Fei shouted "NO!" loudly. Before Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen could take a single step, he immediately summoned his Gold Grimoire and summoned all his strongest beasts without any care at all. His purpose was to defeat his enemy with numbers... Silver-ranked Level 7 Metal Python, Silver-ranked Level 7 Thunder Eagle, Silver-ranked Level 6 Purple-eyed Lightning Leopard, Bronze-ranked Level 8 Stone Lizard all came out one by one.

Finally, Bai Yun Fei had also summoned a Gold-ranked Level 6 strengthening-type Guardian Beast, a Black-tailed Jiaolong, and fused it with his own body, turning it into a [Jiaolong](#) Armor to increase his combat power.

“Are you trying to compete in terms of number?” Yue Yang’s voice was emotionless, no one could discern if his tone was ridiculing or disregarding.

However, after Yue Yang waved his hands, the mysterious cloaked humanoid beast suddenly revealed a medusa’s head full of snakes that were all ignited in flames.

The medusa held a Gold Bow in her hands as it moved towards Yue Yang. Similarly, it bowed down respectfully behind Yue Yang, just like the Bloody Queen. The audience immediately gasped in surprise. There wasn’t just one humanoid beast hiding underneath the cloak?

Very quickly, the audience fell flat on the ground.

This was because they had just seen another beauty, a golden-haired mermaid whose beauty could bring down a whole kingdom, coming out from within the cloak, holding a weird looking conch in her hands.

Just how many beasts were hidden underneath that cloak? When the third beast, a Thunder Naga came out from within the cloak, the audience all wanted to vomit blood...

This, how could this be a competition? This was obviously bullying!

Chapter 241 – Junior Sect Leader? You Are Just A Coward Who Kneels And Begs For Mercy!

“Kill!” Yue Yang pointed his finger towards Bai Yun Fei, imitating what Bai Yun Fei had done just now. He was about to massacre his enemy.

The Bloody Queen Red's speed was extremely fast. When Yue Yang gave his command, she had already appeared on top of the Thunder Eagle's head. Her soul-shattering [Banshee Scream] exploded once again. In the midst of their dizziness, the crowd could see that the Medusa whose head was covered with flaming snakes raised her Golden Bow. She placed two arrows on her bow and shot the arrows towards both of the Stone Lizard's eyes. The Stone Lizard which was an expert in petrifying its opponents had actually turned into stone itself, starting from its eyes. The Purple-eyed Lightning Leopard moved as fast as lightning as it charged towards the golden-haired Mermaid in an instant. The golden-haired Mermaid smiled lightly as she raised her tender hands and summoned two tornadoes, sweeping both the Purple-eyed Lightning Leopard and Metal Python who was slithering on the side, right into mid-air... In the air, two streaks of lightning flashed, one accurately striking on the Metal Python's body and the other on the Lightning Leopard's head.

On Yue Yang's body, everyone could see a shadow that looked exactly similar to him rushing out from his body. The shadow's body was filled with purple flames that raged across the sky as it charged towards Bai Yun Fei.

Bai Yun Fei was so terror-stricken by the terrifying scene in front of him, he didn't dare to face against the shadow.

He immediately dodged and hid behind the Gold Dragon King Beast.

The golden-haired Mermaid blew her conch and summoned a storm tornado that engulfed the whole fighting arena. Thick, dark clouds surrounded the whole sky as torrents of rain fall onto the ground. Lightning and thunder flashed across the sky.

The whole place turned into a pool before 30 seconds even passed.

Waves of water rose as strong winds blew.

Numerous tornadoes appeared like giant dragons and fused together with the lightning, creating electric tornados that could probably tear one's soul apart. The whole audience immediately turned pale...

Everyone was completely horrified as they watched the whole scene, dumbstruck. Everyone was so terrified that they didn't know what to do.

After around a minute, the black clouds dispersed and the lightning disappeared.

The tornadoes slowly subsided, revealing the Thunder Leopard

and Metal Python whose bodies had now turned completely black in mid air. They fell straight down to the fighting arena which had been flooded with water, causing splashes of water. The Thunder Eagle spread out its wings and floated above the water, its head bobbing up and down. It was unknown whether it was dead or alive. As for the Stone Lizard which was hidden underneath the water, it had long turned into a petrified stone statue.

Other than the strongest beast, the Gold Dragon King Beast and the Black-tailed White Jiaolong who had fused with Bai Yun Fei, all of Bai Yun Fei's beast had been completely killed on the spot.

Bai Yun Fei stood on the fighting arena in a daze, his face deathly pale as if he was a zombie.

In front of him, Yue Yang who was submerged under the water until his waist, still had not moved from his spot. As for the shadow who looked identical to him, it was still fighting relentlessly against the Gold Dragon King Beast.

Everyone was fixated on the match as they saw the Medusa, Mermaid and Naga suddenly disappearing from the fighting arena, as if they had never appeared before. Even that second cloaked mysterious beast had also disappeared without any trace... Many warriors with sharp senses could immediately sense that this might be the Yue Clan Third Young Master's only weakness, and that was having a limited time to summon his beasts. Other people would at least be able to keep their summons for an hour, but this Yue Clan Third Young Master's beasts could probably only fight for a minute. Of course, even a minute was enough to completely decimate his enemy.

The corpses laid all over the fighting arena had soundlessly proved the Yue Clan Third Young master's abnormal strength.

In just a minute, Bai Yun Fei's Metal Python had turned into roasted snake's meat, while his Lightning Leopard was charred, its skin was also cut mercilessly by the sharp wind blades. His Stone Lizard had turned into stone while his Thunder Eagle had been instantly killed by the Bloody Queen's Dragon Slaying Dagger that pierced straight to its head.

The water quickly subsided, and when the Bloody Queen Red's figure finally descended behind Yue Yang beautifully, the water on the fighting arena was only as high as Yue Yang's knees.

The evil shadow had already separated from the Gold Dragon King Beast. It had exhausted its abilities, hence it had silently disappeared.

The Gold Dragon King Beast descended beside Bai Yun Fei, its large body swaying a little. It forced itself to stand properly, but it finally collapsed onto the ground with a loud boom. After struggling for a long time, it finally forced itself to spread its wings and stood up. Its body was filled with cuts and bruises, a lot of its scales had been torn off. Its body and wings were all covered in wounds, and it looked extremely miserable. Its blood dripped drop by drop onto the water, drawing a stream of blood onto the quickly subsiding water surface.

Although it had fought with the evil shadow and won after

enduring until the last moment, it had already been heavily injured by the evil shadow before the evil shadow disappeared...

The evil shadow was just a shadow, hence it wouldn't die from injuries.

The Gold Dragon King Beast was defeated even though it had won.

Because it was a beast, every injury it suffered was equivalent to a step closer to death.

Previously, the Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen Red had not even participated. If Red had collaborated with the evil shadow and fought the Gold Dragon King Beast together, then the Gold Dragon King Beast would definitely lose in an instant. Although the audience didn't understand why Red didn't participate in the battle, everyone could see the same ending.

What kind of fight could the Gold Dragon King Beast that had been heavily injured put up against Red, who was a Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen wielding a Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger?

Perhaps, there would only be death left!

Seeing all these things happening right before his eyes, Bai Yun Fei suddenly knelt on the ground powerlessly. His hands propped himself powerlessly as he prostrated himself on the

fighting arena.

His whole body was trembling.

Most of his beasts dying had already been a painful blow to him.

Mistaking his opponent's strength and his misplaced arrogance had also completely made him lose his honor and reputation.

If this Yue Clan Third Young Master was another person, he who still had his Gold Dragon King Beast and his Black-tailed White Jiaolong would definitely fight until the end. However, right now, he had powerlessly kneeled on the ground, unable to continue to battle... His last thread of fighting spirit had been scared away by the scene laid before his eyes. For the very first time, Bai Yun Fei felt the shadow of death looming over his heart.

He was terrified of death, so terrified that he didn't dare to continue to fight against this horrifying Yue Clan Third Young Master.

That abnormal was not someone he could win against!

Bai Yun Fei wanted to quickly escape from this place and end the battle.

"I lost, I, I admit defeat..." If someone had told Bai Yun Fei three minutes ago that he would kneel on the ground and admit his defeat, he would think that that person was insane. If it were

another person instead, nobody would also believe that an extremely arrogant person like Bai Yun Fei could actually kneel on the ground and begged for mercy.

However, this was reality.

Yue Yang hid his expression behind the Gemini Mask, but his voice was extremely smug, it was practically asking for a beating, “Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader, you, who are known as the number one hero in this world, and you, who felt like he was the smartest person in the whole world, what did you say again? Say it louder! I’m just a trash who have a hearing problem, I didn’t hear you just now. Hey, Junior Sect Leader who possessed a majestic Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast, what exactly did you say just now? Say it louder!”

When the audience heard it, they all felt embarrassed for Bai Yun Fei.

A lot of people thought that Bai Yun Fei would get angry and charge towards Yue Yang demanding an either-you-die-or-I-die battle.

Unexpectedly, as the audience watched with their eyes almost popping out of their sockets, Bai Yun Fei bitterly plunged his head right into the water, and when he had cleared up his mind, he shouted out his reply loudly, “I admit defeat, I admit defeat! You won this battle!”

This reply deeply distressed the audience. Everyone all felt like

bashing their head onto something hard. What kind of Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader was this? Wasn't he just a plain coward?

A soldier can be killed but not humiliated!

He still had his Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast and Gold-ranked Level 6 Black-tailed White Jiaolong, why did he admit defeat before even trying to fight? Although the Abnormal Blind Student Titan was indeed abnormal, his summoned beast had all disappeared. He only had the Bloody Queen left, so Bai Yun Fei might still have a chance. Although he might still lose in the end, his lost would be honorable. How could he kneel on the ground, beg for mercy and admit his defeat halfway through the fight?

Bai Yun Fei had been bullied by the abnormal 'Titan'.

Everyone had initially sympathized with him, but seeing him begging for mercy now, they couldn't help but to look down on him.

It didn't matter if he lost, he would just be like Fatty Hai and Ye Kong previously. Yue Bing the little lady had also lost, but no one felt that they sucked.

It was normal not to be able to compare in terms of skills. They were all still young, as long as they continue to train hard in the future and learn their lessons, they could still challenge their opponents again. However, if one kneeled and begged for mercy because they saw that the situation was not in their favour halfway through the battle, that was really the most despicable thing to do.

This Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei, was he still a man?

If he didn't dare to fight even with his Gold-ranked Level 7 Gold Dragon King Beast and Black-tailed White Jiaolong, he should just bash his head with tofu and die!

Seeing Bai Yun Fei's act, the whole audience went into an uproar.

Countless people who once worshipped Bai Yun Fei all went into fury. They all became like Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, imitating their hand gesture, raising their middle fingers up high towards Bai Yun Fei, showing their highest form of contempt!

It turns out that this arrogant and condescending Bai Yun Fei was actually just a coward who liked to bully others...

When the audience thought about how they worshipped that Junior Sect Leader previously, they really wanted to vomit.

They would never have known of his cowardice if he didn't lose in a fight!

“Juniour Sect Leader, please stand up. We must have a fighting spirit that would rather die than admit defeat!” Xie Qian Ren jumped onto the fighting arena, shouting out loud. He had purposely done that, because the more he did that, the more embarrassment Bai Yun Fei would suffer. It would be more

difficult for him to get down from the stage.

“Stand up! Let’s fight to the end with him!” Almost every single Floating Mist Sect’s disciples hoped that Bai Yun Fei would stand up and fought until the end with Yue Yang. Otherwise, how would the Floating Mist Sect maintain their dignity if he simply admitted defeat just like this?

“...” Only the mysterious disciple didn’t say anything, his eyes faintly showing support for Bai Yun Fei’s decision to admit defeat immediately.

“Maybe he is right doing that!” Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and the others who had fought against countless formidable opponents knew much more and much deeper than normal warriors.

Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and the others knew that if only there was 1% chance of winning, Bai Yun Fei wouldn’t kneel and beg for mercy at Yue Yang.

He was definitely left with no way out!

He was definitely unable to continue to fight!

Otherwise, how could such an arrogant person such as Bai Yun Fei, unless he was left with completely no other way, prostrated himself before his enemy?

Furthermore, he was kneeling right in front of 100,000 audience.

How much courage would that take? If it were Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun instead, they would rather die than kneel. Especially kneeling to an opponent like Yue Yang.

This was because this abnormal Yue Clan Third Young Master's heart was not made of tofu. He would definitely humiliate his opponent until the ends of the earth.

Kneeling to him is equivalent to asking him to oppress them!

Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun had noted that on Bai Yun Fei's right ankle there was a fine golden thread that was linked to Yue Yang's right ankle.

They didn't see when Yue Yang had connected that golden thread on Bai Yun Fei's right leg, but they could immediately sense that it was definitely because of this golden thread that Bai Yun Fei had desperately kneeled and begged for forgiveness. It definitely was. Although they didn't know what this golden thread was for, it was definitely because of its appearance that this arrogant Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei would be forced to kneel in front of a large audience.

Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu and the Prince of Zi Jin both frowned. They had obviously noticed the existence of that golden thread too.

This fine little golden thread, what exactly was it used for?

It had actually made Bai Yun Fei choose to be humiliated by the Yue Clan Third Young Master. Could it be that this golden thread was a godly tool?

Chapter 242 – Next Opponent, Prince Of Zi Jin

Only Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the other girls knew that this golden thread was actually the Artifact ‘Pisces Ribbon’ that Yue Yang had just acquired after clearing the Pisces Temple through the night. As long as it was attached to an enemy, the enemy wouldn’t be able to leave on his own free will. No matter what kind of escape method that the enemy would use, they wouldn’t be able to struggle free from the Pisces Ribbon. Unless the enemy’s capabilities far exceeded the owner of the Pisces Ribbon’s and he was successful in defeating the owner, then he wouldn’t be able to struggle free from it.

More frighteningly, Yue Yang could use his Inherent Skills through the Pisces Ribbon.

Just now, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and Xiao Wen Li who were hiding underneath the cloak had returned to Yue Yang’s body along with the storm tornado. Bai Yun Fei had bitterly tried to recall all his summons many times, but he was stopped by Yue Yang’s [Binding Chains].

Under the situation where he wasn’t able to summon his grimoire and protect his body, even if Bai Yun Fei was an idiot, he knew that Yue Yang was planning to bully him in public.

Bai Yun Fei had thought correctly.

Rather than bearing the shame of letting Yue Yang beat him up

black and blue in front of 100,000 audiences, he would rather admit defeat dishonorably.

Bai Yun Fei knew that Yue Yang wanted him to lose control and fight him in a fit of fury. If that really happened, his Gold Dragon King Beast would be killed miserably on the spot. His Black-tailed White Jiaolong would also be beaten until it disappeared. As for himself, he would probably be beaten until he was half dead. Maybe he would even still kneel and begged for mercy at the end. At that time, the humiliation that he would suffer would be much greater than this... Although he was arrogant, he was definitely not a fool. Of course he would choose to admit defeat.

As long as his Gold Dragon King Beast was still alive, he still had hope in the future.

Although he might not be able to catch up to this abnormal Yue Clan Third Young Master, compared to Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, Prince of Zi Jin and the others, he still had a greater advantage over them.

The moment the Gold Dragon King Beast was killed by this Yue Clan Third Young Master, his position as the second strongest in this tournament would probably drop until he was out of the top ten strongest. At that time, he would end up even more miserable.

Kneeling down?

That wasn't his own choice. It was the result after his whole body was dragged down by this Yue Clan Third Young Master when he

unleashed [Binding Chains].

However, did he even had the right to oppose him now?

If he didn't take the advantage to kneel right now, he might even be crippled by this Yue Clan Third Young Master whose eyes were filled with killing intent.

"Student Titan, Student Bai Yun Fei had already admitted defeat. You look..." The Head Referee who was drenched from head to toe rushed onto the stage and became the middleman. He secretly signalled to Yue Yang that he had humiliated and bullied his enemy enough and that he shouldn't overdo it. More importantly, he shouldn't kill his opponent, otherwise the Floating Mist Sect would definitely harbor a grudge in their hearts and would put the blame on the Yue Clan.

"Look at what? The Junior Sect Leader kneeling down and begging for mercy? I haven't even started to fight, why would he admit defeat? Even if this Junior Sect Leader wanted to let we win, he shouldn't do it this way. What if others think I am cheating? Head Referee, I tell you, I'm not very close with the Junior Sect Leader. He was the one who wanted to kneel and admit his defeat, it's none of my business!" Yue Yang put up an exaggerated act of innocence, that even made the Head Referee felt an impulse to beat him up. Bai Yun Fei was originally brazen enough, but he was nothing compared to this outrageous brat!

"Make him kowtow, otherwise we won't accept his surrender. Kill! Kill his Gold Dragon King Beast and make him cry a river of tears!" Fatty Hai suddenly jumped out, adding disorder to the

chaos.

“Right, make him kowtow to admit his defeat!” Ye Kong was also stirred up, his blood boiling with fury.

“Kowtow...” Most of the audience started to create an uproar. In any case they would support the winner. As for losers, they would gladly jump down to the stage and gave them a kick or two. That bastard Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader, what gave him the right to be so brazen? Wasn’t he riding on the coattails of his Floating Mist Sect and bloodline? If he wasn’t the Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader, he was not even worth as much as a poop!

Those mercenary soldiers who were there to join in the fun all stood up and started making a ruckus.

They would cheer for whoever was the winner.

Furthermore, they detested outstanding young people such as Bai Yun Fei and Prince of Zi Jin who came from large and influential families. They were jealous of them. Right now, seeing Bai Yun Fei being humiliated so miserably had made them feel even more delighted. Hence, their cheers became even louder. Other than giving Yue Yang a thunderous applause and a deafening cheer, they had even jeered at Bai Yun Fei, as they pointed their middle fingers and chanted “Kowtow, kowtow, kowtow...”

Yue Yang suddenly signalled for everyone to be quiet. However, the moment he open his mouth, he had immediately offended those people who jeered at Bai Yun Fei and supported him, “You

are all fools! He is an honorable Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader, it is already very difficult for him to kneel down and beg for mercy. Yet you guys still wanted him to kowtow. Are you guys fools? Do you think kowtowing, begging for his life, is something that a Junior Sect Leader can do? You guys can keep on dreaming!” The first sentence of his speech had made all the mercenary soldiers choke in shock. However, as they continued to listen to his speech, they thought, “Aih, this brat was actually making a sarcastic remark.” Immediately, their cheers for Yue Yang became even louder.

It seemed like in the whole history of the Hundred School Elite Tournament, this was the first time that the audience clapped and cheered another time after being called a fool!

When Bai Yun Fei heard it, he almost fell headfirst onto the fighting arena grounds.

He almost vomited blood from anger as he tried to hold it in with all his life.

If he really turned against Yue Yang and started a battle with him, then he would have really fallen into his trap. Furthermore, it would probably not end as simple as humiliating him with words, Bai Yun Fei was afraid that this abnormal Yue Clan Third Young Master would trample him with his feet. At that time, he would probably suffer so much humiliation that he wouldn't be able to raise his heads anymore in his life.

“Junior Sect Leader, I accept your prostrating-ah, I mean, your defeat. Stand up, you are an honorable Junior Sect Leader, if you

kneel too much, you might even give me bad luck in the future. I can't bear that burden anymore, so just stand up now!" Yue Yang still pretended to be a good person as he put the golden ribbon away and helped Bai Yun Fei up. He acted as if he was someone who couldn't bear Bai Yun Fei kneeling before him.

"Tsk!" Bai Yun Fei couldn't bear the humiliation and spat out a mouthful of blood on the ground.

"You are really the Junior Sect Leader. Even the way you spit is noble and natural. I respect you!" Yue Yang cupped his hands together in respect, but his exaggerated pretentious manners was really annoying.

The Floating Mist Sect's disciples rushed onto the stage at top speed as they supported Bai Yun Fei who had fallen unconscious on the fighting arena and vomiting blood from a fit of anger.

If their glares could kill people like the Barbarian Cow Shadow's [Doom's Eyes], Yue Yang would have been killed multiple times.

Yue Yang coolly stood on the fighting arena. He still didn't go down the stage even when the Floating Mist Sect's disciples miserably brought Bai Yun Fei who had completely lost his honour down the stage. Suddenly, Yue Yang turned towards the Prince of Zi Jin, his voice extremely friendly as he said, "Prince of Zi Jin, I heard that you are very close to the Junior Sect Leader. I don't really know, but do you have the same hobby as the Junior Sect Leader who likes to kneel and beg for mercy? If you do, why don't you show it to the others so we can all enjoy the show? Although we will only fight in the next match, I really couldn't wait to see

the majestic appearance of Your Highness the Prince prostrating himself!”

The whole audience’s attention were all fixed towards the Prince of Zi Jin...

They wanted to know how he would react!

Would he decide to fight Yue Yang?

Or would he kneel and admit defeat like Bai Yun Fei?

If the Prince of Zi Jin was thick-skinned, he could reject to answer. There were many reasons, such as it wasn’t the time to battle yet. He could also forfeit the battle. But if he did that, then he wouldn’t be much better off than Bai Yun Fei. At least Bai Yun Fei still fought halfway. Although he admitted defeat the moment he realized that his skills were nowhere near Yue Yang’s, he had kneeled and admitted defeat in order to protect his Gold Dragon King Beast, to protect his most powerful weapon.

If the Prince of Zi Jin didn’t dare to battle, he might be immediately labeled as a coward.

If the Prince of Zi Jin didn’t retaliate even after being provoked so much by Yue Yang, could he still raise his head up high in the future?

All the other students who had been bullied by the Prince of Zi

Jin as his battle opponent before all started shouting out their jeers: coward, bastard, jerk, worm and other insulting words. Everyone had readied their middle finger, prepared to raise it up high towards the arrogant prince when he wanted to speak of forfeiting the match. Would the Western Lion Pagoda's favourite disciple be just as trashy like the Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader? Or would he even be worse off than Bai Yun Fei? Previously, the Tian Luo Prince had fought with Student Titan before, and he had put up a good fight, even destroying the whole fighting arena. Prince of Tian Luo was defeated with one move, but his defeat was honorable!

Right now, it was Prince of Zi Jin's turn to choose.

He could choose to be like the Prince of Tian Luo, who welcomed Student Titan, the abnormal opponent, or he could choose to be like Bai Yun Fei who had knelt and begged for mercy...

"I heard that Brother Titan's combat technique is unrivalled, Chu Feng Lei is willing to fight Brother Titan on combat techniques to determine who is stronger." Prince of Zi Jin thought for a long time before finally deciding to suggest a competition of combat techniques between him and Yue Yang. If they compete in terms of beasts, then he was afraid that Yue Yang would summon those extraordinary beasts such as Medusa, Mermaid and Naga whose real levels couldn't be seen. There was also that mysterious, terrifying beast under the cloak who could kill the Gold Killer Bee with just one glare. It was not a strength that his beasts could fight against.

The only hope to defeat him was in terms of combat techniques.

Although Yue Clan Third Young Master was renowned for his combat techniques, Prince of Zi Jin still had confidence that if he compete with Yue Yang, even if he was defeated in the end, he wouldn't be defeated so miserably like Bai Yun Fei.

How could Yue Yang not understand this fellow's scheme? However, he was fine as long as Prince of Zi Jin agreed to battle with him.

As long as they got up to the stage, he would get a chance to bully him to death.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others were overjoyed. Both of them shouted as they hugged each other.

They knew that Yue Yang was the most terrifying in terms of combat techniques. In comparison, although his beasts were all godly, they were still far behind Yue Yang's combat skills. The Prince of Zi Jin was definitely seeking death. This bastard's miserable life was destined to start from this moment onwards... Prince of Zi Jin's ending would be even more miserable than Bai Yun Fei!

Amongst the audience, strong rankers such as Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong and the others sitting on VIP seats were all whispering to each other.

In their minds, Prince of Zi Jin was as good as putting one of his foot into his grave.

As for Yue Yang's extremely abnormal combat techniques, they were all extremely clear about it. Prince of Zi Jin trying to compete in terms of combat techniques against an Innate Ranker, what's the difference between that and a praying mantis who tried to stop a car? Just now, when Yue Yang had summoned so many strong beasts including the Platinum-ranked Bloody Queen, Medusa, Mermaid, Naga and the mysterious beast, they didn't thought that it was strange at all. This was because Yue Yang was an Innate. It would be weird if he didn't have at least a Platinum-ranked beast! As for the matter about Bai Yun Fei kneeling down, they also didn't think that it was strange. However, with regards to the fact that the Prince of Zi Jin had persisted in fighting Yue Yang even after seeing Bai Yun Fei kneeling and begging for mercy, this was way out of their expectations.

A lot of people started to frown their brows, thinking that this Prince of Zi Jin was simply too impetuous and that he cared too much about appearances. He wasn't someone who would do great things in the future.

In Feng Shao Yun and Xue Wen Dao's eyes, Bai Yun Fei, the Junior Sect Leader who had willingly knelt down to preserve his strength was so much stronger than the Prince of Zi Jin... Being able to endure humiliation was not something that a young person could do easily.

Even if Bai Yun Fei was not the Yue Clan Third Young Master's match, he was still an extraordinary warrior amongst the younger generation.

In comparison, this Prince of Zi Jin really overestimated his own abilities. Could it be that he thought he could still win against the Yue Clan Third Young Master whose combat technique even surpassed his father, Yue Qiu?

The old fox, Feng Kuang, Xia Hou Wei Lie and the other Da Xia rankers were all nodding their heads excitedly. Yue Yang was an Innate, so they were not worried that he would lose. However, seeing that Yue Yang had actually possessed a Platinum-ranked beast, they all felt that Yue Yang's path of pursuing combat techniques alone had finally changed. Right now, he was cultivating both in terms of beast and combat techniques. They believed that it wouldn't be long until his strength would improve to a whole new level.

The reaction of Tian Luo rankers such as the Eastern Sky King and the others were even more intense.

Especially the Eastern Sky King who had a Zhang Fei like appearance, he shouted towards the Western Sky King, Old General Ma and the others as he waved his fists, "Did you see that? That's my son-in-law, my son-in-law! I said that there is nothing wrong in giving birth to a girl before, now I have proved myself right, don't I? Only a guy like that could barely match my precious darling, my little Luo Hua! Haha, having a daughter is a good thing, having a daughter is a good thing indeed! A daughter knows how to be warm and filial to her parents!"

His voice was extremely loud. When Luo Hua City Mistress heard it, she was so embarrassed that she wanted to find a hole to hide herself in.

It was precisely because she had this kind of father that she wanted to hide herself in the Tong Tian Tower Fourth Floor...

“Shameless!” The crowd suddenly went into uproar. However, they were not shouting at the Eastern Sky King, they were reacting to Prince of Zi Jin’s speech.

Turned out that before Prince of Zi Jin went up on stage, he had summoned two Gold-ranked Level 6 strengthening-type beasts to buff his body. He had also summoned a Silver-ranked Level 7 Thunder Armor Beast and turned it into a Thunder Battle Armor. Lastly, he was using a Gold-ranked Artifact, “Moon Devourer” Crescent Blade.

He had promised Yue Yang to compete in terms of combat techniques, but he had actually summoned strengthening beasts before going up on stage.

Although he wasn’t violating any rules according to the competition rules, this method really made the audience unsatisfied.

Countless middle fingers shot up amongst the crowd.

Even if Prince of Zi Jin won, not many would have a favourable impression on him. After all, everyone liked to worship and idolize strong warriors and hated to see schemers who were experts in cheating.

“Student Titan, do you need time to prepare for the battle? You have three minutes to prepare!” The Head Referee couldn’t take it too. If the two of them had agreed to compete based on combat techniques and was allowed to summon beasts to strengthen their bodies, he wouldn’t have any comments. However, Prince of Zi Jin had actually summoned strong beasts to strengthen himself below the stage and tried to fight Student Titan who didn’t summon any beasts to strengthen himself at all. This wasn’t very honorable.

“There’s no need to. As a useless trash, I am used to being bullied by the others. I just hoped that Prince of Zi Jin wouldn’t bully me too much, otherwise I might cry.” Yue Yang waved his hands and ordered the Bloody Queen and Reaper Mantis to go down the stage, “You two go down first. If Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu and Xue Tan Lang would like to give me, this useless trash, some pointers later on, I will ask for your help again.”

“Waaa, good! Good!” The crowd was extremely excited.

Although it turned out that this student Titan wasn’t a blind person, he was indeed abnormal. He had actually planned to defeat all his strong opponents in one day. It was a pity that the Dragon Spear Lady, Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha wasn’t grouped in Group C. Otherwise he would probably continue to fight them and acquired the championship after defeating every single person in the Group C knock-out match.

Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu’s expression from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace changed slightly, but he looked at Xue Tan Lang and realized that this icy guy didn’t change his expression at

all. His gaze didn't show any bit of fear. Hence, Can Lan Yu also calmed down a lot.

Facing against such a strong opponent, it would be such a pity if he didn't try his best to fight!

What's wrong with losing?

Prince of Zi Jin didn't change his expression on the outside, but he was extremely displeased in his heart. They had not even started fighting, but Yue Yang had already assumed that he would win?

Nobody would know who was the winner and who was the loser until the very last moment!

Prince of Zi Jin suppressed the anger in his heart and jumped onto the stage.

Chapter 243 – Stopping An Ultimate Move With A Single Finger!

Prince of Zi Jin released a burst of his Qi, and it was like as if a tornado had swept over the whole Stadium.

Even if he didn't know how to use [Double Strengthening], that kind of high levelled strengthening skill, his strengthening skill of combining two Gold-ranked Strengthening beasts, the Gold Wolf Kings, wasn't as simple as combining two normal beasts. Fusing two identical Gold beasts wouldn't merely stack the strengths of each beast, it would multiply it instead. So, Prince of Zi Jin didn't only get two times additional strength, he got four times, or even more... It can be said that the Prince of Zi Jin was much more skillful in strengthening skills than Ye Kong and Fatty Hai who had been trained by Yue Yang.

The thing that grabbed Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's attention was that this Prince of Zi Jin could still equip a Thunder Beast armor afterwards, without affecting his previous strengthening.

Prince of Zi Jin had indeed spent a lot of effort on researching strengthening beasts.

Of course, the Zi Jin Kingdom originally had a speciality, they were all experts in strengthening beasts.

There was a saying in Soaring Dragon continent, and that was "Strengthening at Zi Jin, Elements at Tian Luo." This saying described the specialities of the beasts in the two kingdoms; Tian

Luo Kingdom warriors were experts in element-type beasts. As for Da Xia, due to the many generations of emperors like Jun Wu You who placed more importance in combat skills, the Rankers within the Kingdom had slowly lost their specializations. Fortunately there were still support from the Four Great Clans, otherwise the Da Xia Kingdom would have been kicked out of the Three Great Kingdoms in the Soaring Dragon Continent.

However, in terms of each Kingdom's warriors' combat power, Da Xia Kingdom was the weakest.

At the same time, Da Xia Kingdom also had the highest number of bandits and robbers.

"That's really good!" Feng Qi Sha praised the Prince of Zi Jin after seeing the effects of his beast strengthening.

"It's a pity that you can't survive just by cultivating strengthening beasts alone!" Yan Po Jun admitted that he couldn't compare with Prince of Zi Jin. Yan Po Jun and Prince of Zi Jin were both proud disciples of the Western Lion Pagoda Sect, but Yan Po Jun was the disciple of one of the branch sect while Prince of Zi Jin was accepted as disciple by the Sect Leader himself. Hence their position and status were heaven and earth apart. However, Yan Po Jun could finally see Prince of Zi Jin's weakness. He had only focused on cultivating a single skill.

One must not simply cultivate in one single type of beast. Maybe they could improve quickly at the beginning, but they would not be able to increase their strength if they reached a bottleneck in the future.

Furthermore, Prince of Zi Jin had not focused on cultivating his own Guardian Beast. This was his biggest mistake.

Maybe Prince of Zi Jin's Guardian Beast was not a fighting-type, or maybe it might not be the best kind of beast, but when he chose not to focus on cultivating his Guardian Beast, he chose to give up his advantage.

Xue Tan Lang glanced once and turned his head away.

If Prince of Zi Jin had focused on cultivating his Guardian Beast like Princess Qian Qian or Luo Hua City Mistress, then it would be worthwhile to focus on cultivating a single beast.

Right now, if Prince of Zi Jin's beasts were killed, his combat strength would definitely plummet.

In comparison to him, Xue Tan Lang felt that Bai Yun Fei was extremely clever.

"Maybe Prince of Zi Jin's Guardian Beast was a special-type. I have a feeling that something is not right." The old fox quietly frowned.

"Are you saying that Yue Yang that brat will lose? How is that possible!" The Eastern Sky King would never believe that Yue Yang could lose to Prince of Zi Jin even if he was beaten to death.

“I’m not saying that Yue Yang will lose, it’s just that that Prince of Zi Jin is not someone like Bai Yun Fei who can endure until the end. He would definitely go crazy at some point. Even until today, the Western Lion Pagoda put a lot of importance on their reputation. If Yue Yang beat Prince of Zi Jin, the experts from Zi Jin Kingdom and Western Lion Pagoda might even come to pick a fight with us...” The old fox had thought deeply and far into the future.

“Elder Nan Gong has already recognized Yue Yang. He even came personally to invite him to join the Innate Alliance. Even if the Western Lion Pagoda Innate Rankers came, would they dare to touch Yue Yang?” Feng Kuang asked.

“General Feng Kuang. You might not know this, but currently, Zhi Zun (Yue Yang’s Introducer), Night Empress, Elder Nan Gong and a few other top Innate Rankers have partied together to fight on the Tenth Floor. They may not come back for a few months. It can be said that now is the time when a few people will get restless. If that wasn’t so, why would there be so many weird things happening nowadays? These few days, my [Reveal] Inherent Skill had also given me a few senses. I have a feeling that something very troubling will happen very soon...” The State Grandmaster’s words made the other strong warriors in the audience freeze, as if they just had a realization.

So Zhi Zun, Ye Hou, Elder Nan Gong and other top rankers had left the Tong Tian Tower Sixth Floor and gone to Tenth Floor. It was no wonder that although the Soaring Dragon Continent looked calm, there was actually turmoil within.

The State Grandmaster put his finger to his lips, signalling the others not to leak this secret to the rest of the people.

On the fighting arena.

Prince of Zi Jin gave a loud howl.

Two several meters tall Gold Wolf Kings' Shadow rose from the top of his head and hovered in the air.

Hui Tai Lang, who had been sleeping on one side of the fighting arena out of boredom suddenly opened its eyes. It was unsatisfied with the two Gold Wolf Kings in front of it who was showing off their power.

As Yue Yang wanted to leave Hui Tai Lang to trick his enemies, he didn't bring it out during the whole of Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. At first he had wanted to add Hui Tai Lang into the team and let it participate during the Team Matches, but afterwards, the fake 'Yue Qiu' had returned, so Yue Yang hurriedly took Hui Tai Lang out from the competition and decided to hide its abilities.

Yue Yang would rather see Fatty Hai and Ye Kong lose the Team Match than reveal Hui Tai Lang's real strength.

Hui Tai Lang's strength would decide a lot of things later on.

First would be Yue Qiu's identity. If this Yue Qiu was fake and

was part of someone's schemes from the Demonic Palace, then the people from the Demonic Palace would definitely know Hui Tai Lang's strength. This was because Hui Tai Lang had killed a Sect Leader-level Lie Lie one-on-one before. Later on, it had also finished off the Giant Xing Meng. All the top warriors in the Demonic Palace would definitely know Hui Tai Lang's strength. At least the Phoenix Beauty would be very clear about it.

If the fake Yue Qiu wasn't someone sent from the Demonic Palace, then he might be sent from the Thousand Goblins Sect.

Then they wouldn't know Hui Tai Lang's real strength. Towards the Hui Tai Lang who was Bronze-ranked Level 3 on the outside, the fake Yue Qiu would definitely let his guard down.

Especially after Yue Yang summoned the Bloody Queen Red and other strong beasts on the fighting area just now. They would definitely think that Yue Yang had not contracted Hui Tai Lang because its powers wasn't strong enough. This point could give Yue Yang some clues to determine if the fake Yue Qiu was sent from the Thousand Goblins Sect or the Demonic Palace. If the fake Yue Qiu didn't think much about Hui Tai Lang, that might mean he came from the Thousand Goblins Sect, not the Demonic Palace. Yue Yang wouldn't even need to go back himself, he could ask Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu and the others to take Hui Tai Lang to meet the fake Yue Qiu.

With Princess Qian Qian's sharp [Six Records] Inherent Skill, she would definitely be able to sense if something was wrong.

If the fake Yue Qiu was someone from the Demon Abyss, since

Hui Tai Lang had absorbed quite a lot of Demon King Ha Xin's Demon Qi, the fake Yue Qiu might find its demonic qi familiar. Even if he didn't know about Hui Tai Lang, maybe he would be on guard with it or be interested with it.

Following the same logic, if the fake Yue Qiu had come from the Demon Abyss, Hui Tai Lang would also be able to sense something.

If Hui Tai Lang could sense a demonic qi similar to Demon King Ha Xin's on the fake Yue Qiu's body, then he must definitely be an impostor from the Demonic Palace.

Yue Yang thought that this was the most probable scenario!

Escaping wouldn't always be the best idea. After calmly evaluating everything, Yue Yang decided to find the best time to reveal the fake Yue Qiu's real identity. No matter what, the fact that he was a person from another world must never be revealed, he must keep the secret until the end. Otherwise, Fourth Mother would definitely be heartbroken if she learnt about this! The real Yue Qiu would definitely not suspect his own son. Furthermore, only the fake Yue Qiu would think of eliminating his own son or other people who suspected that he was fake.

“Awwooo!”

Hui Tai Lang released a terrifying Hellflame from its body.

Its demonic qi exploded as its Hellflame raged wildly. It bared its

teeth and howled towards the Prince of Zi Jin.

Hui Tai Lang was a scaredy-cat before, but after going through countless bloody life-and-death battles with Yue Yang, it finally had an iron-steel fighting spirit. As it learnt its way from its master's speech and manners, its intelligence and combat power improved day by day. Of course, it had also developed that kind of pride that could only belong to a Gold King Beast. However, other than its master's scolding that made it feel comfortable and closer to its master, other warriors or beasts shouldn't be picking a fight with it easily. Otherwise, it would definitely teach them a lesson.

It was still fine if beasts like the Gold Dragon King Beast which was from a different race tried to show off its might in front of it. As long as it didn't pick a fight with Hui Tai Lang, it was too lazy to bother about it.

However, those two Gold Wolf Kings on Prince of Zi Jin's body had actually dared to show off in front of Hui Tai Lang. They had even released their mighty King Beasts' Qi that its master had told to Hui Tai Lang before, hence they really made Hui Tai Lang furious.

"Scram, you mutt. You have no business here!" Yue Yang waved his hand to shoo Hui Tai Lang away. Now was not the time for it to show off its might.

"Woof woof!" Seeing that things were not good and that its master was about to get angry, Hui Tai Lang hurriedly acted obedient as it trotted towards the audience seat, tamely sitting right next to Yue Bing's legs. It currently had enough intelligence

to understand its master's character. It knew that its master loved his sister the most, hence it ran towards her to protect her. If it did that, Yue Yang would definitely not be angry anymore.

Normal warriors wouldn't notice Hui Tai Lang's actions, but experts amongst the audience were incredibly shocked.

Although there were a lot of clever beasts in this world, sensitive beasts like Hui Tai Lang were not many.

Those like Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun who knew about Hui Tai Lang fared better, but others such as the Floating Mist Sect and Western Lion Pagoda's disciples were all filled with jealousy and greed. Hui Tai Lang was a sensitive uncontracted beast. This was indeed an enticement that was hard to let go!

"Brother Titan, my [Desert Storm] skill has a total of 8 moves. Please give me some pointers!" Seeing that Yue Yang did not summon any beasts and had decided to fight him with his own abilities, Prince of Zi Jin was extremely delighted. He felt that this Yue Clan Third Young Master was too honorable and wanted to uphold his end of the deal. With the support from two Wolf King Beasts, the Thunder Battle Armour and the Gold Moon Devouring Crescent Blade, his combat power had increased to more than ten times stronger. Even if he was to fight against Bai Yun Fei who had a Gold Dragon King Beast, he believed that he wouldn't lose. Right now, this Yue Clan Third Young Master had not summoned any beast at all, did he think that he could defeat him with combat techniques alone?

"..." Yue Yang did not reply. He only took out his Hui Jin Magic

Blade and released his Innate Qi. Purple flames and black smoke rose up into the air. With his ability to control fire, he shaped the purple flames behind him into a giant whirlpool of fire.

When Prince of Zi Jin saw this, he felt a shiver down his spine.

It wouldn't be good if he allowed Yue Yang to release all of his power. He couldn't care about any agreement or rules anymore. Immediately, he waved his Gold Crescent Blade and released the first move of his [Desert Storm] skill – [Wind Rising] – towards Yue Yang. As his blade slashed down, the whole sky turned dark. It was as if dark clouds had loomed over the whole fighting arena, as strong winds stormed all over the stadium. The 100,000 audience felt like they had been placed inside the eye of a storm. There were strong winds blowing and dark clouds looming.

Although people didn't like Prince of Zi Jin's sneak attack, they couldn't help but be shocked at his combat skill prowess.

The Western Lion Pagoda Sect Disciples and Grey Wolf Academy students all cheered for Prince of Zi Jin.

They all knew that the eight moves of Prince of Zi Jin's [Desert Storm] was a nonstop combo attack. The moment it was released, the eight moves would be unleashed nonstop one by one. If the opponent fell at a disadvantage right at the start, he would be pushed back more and more, and in the end, he would be thoroughly defeated under Prince of Zi Jin's combo attack without any chance to defend himself.

Even the Marquis of Zi Jin who was the strongest warrior in their country had praised his nephew's self-created skill [Desert Storm] before. He said that it was one of the most exquisite, top-notch skill in the world.

He pointed out that his nephew's only weakness was that he didn't have a 'sand' and 'gale'-type elemental beasts for support. Otherwise, his power would probably multiply.

The Gold Crescent Dagger turned into a sandstorm that engulfed the whole sky, hiding the sky and covering the earth as it shot straight towards Yue Yang.

With regards to this great sandstorm combat technique that had even made the 100,000 audience turned pale, Yue Yang didn't clash against it with his Hui Jin Magic Blade. Instead, he reached out his left hand and pointed his forefinger, meeting the attack with just a single finger... This move was identical the story of how Bai Yun Fei had stopped Lie Zhang Tian's all out punch with only a single finger.

When the audience saw this, they were dumbstruck.

Could it be that this Student Titan wanted to be like Bai Yun Fei, stopping an ultimate move with just a single finger?

Chapter 244 – Fire Shield, Bloodthirst Pill

The Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei had stopped a Level 6 [Elder] Lie Zhang Tian's ultimate punch with just a single finger.

Although everyone didn't know if he had used a beast or an Inherent Skill, everyone knew one important point, and that was it would be impossible to replicate this move.

Even if it was Bai Yun Fei himself, he might not be able to do the same thing again.

This was because even a high-levelled Level 8 [Emperor] wouldn't dare to only use a finger to receive a Level 6 Senior [Elder]'s ultimate move. It was indeed because Bai Yun Fei had used a single finger to receive the move that he became famous overnight. This feat also earned him the name of the strongest young warrior in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent... until he was defeated by Yue Yang, making him number two. Even so, everyone didn't think that Bai Yun Fei who had a Gold Dragon King Beast was weaker than the Three Great Killing Stars. He simply couldn't compare to the extremely, abnormally strong Titan.

However, right now, did Student Titan really wanted to use a single finger to stop the first move of Prince of Zi Jin's [Desert Storm]?

This, was this even possible?

Others might not know about it, but the Floating Mist Sect disciples all knew that that was an impossible thing to do!

When Bai Yun Fei stopped Lie Zhang Tian's ultimate punch, he did not rely on his Gold Dragon King Beast nor his other beasts. He had also not relied on his own Inherent Skill.

He had relied on an Artifact!

The Floating Mist Sect disciples could guarantee that this goddamned Yue Clan Third Young Master who assumed the pseudonym of Titan didn't have Bai Yun Fei's artifact, the "Gold Dragon Pearl" which could protect his life and body. That was an Artifact that the previous generation of Floating Mist Sect Leader, who was also Bai Yun Fei's grandfather, gave to his grandson... With this Gold Dragon Pearl, Bai Yun Fei could easily stop an ultimate move which was ten times stronger than him. Of course, it wouldn't be effective forever. The Gold Dragon Pearl could only be used three times. After three times, it would shatter into dust.

Lie Zhang Tian's ultimate move's power was extremely frightening. Even with the Gold Dragon King Beast, Bai Yun Fei didn't dare to face against it directly, hence he chose to use the Gold Dragon Pearl to protect himself.

In the end, from the spectator's point of view, that move became a scene where he had stopped an ultimate move with a single finger.

The disciples from Floating Mist Sect obviously knew about it,

but they didn't leak this secret out. Instead, they enthusiastically cheered for Bai Yun Fei, increasing his publicity.

However, right now, this Yue Clan Third Young Master who had ruthlessly defeated their Junior Sect Leader had actually dared to try stopping an ultimate move with a single finger. The Floating Mist Sect's disciples were both angry and happy at the same time. They were angry because this brat was really too obnoxious. How could he dare to face an ultimate attack without the protection of the Gold Dragon Pearl? On the other hand, they were happy because they could see this brat's unfortunate future. Although he wasn't defeated by their Junior Sect Leader, he would suffer defeat in the end. This would serve as a good lesson for him.

When their Junior Sect Leader recovered his strength, he might still be able to get back his initial prestige once he defeated the Prince of Zi Jin in the round-robin match.

Not only the Floating Mist Sect's disciples were happy, the Western Lion Pagoda disciples and the Grey Wolf Academy students were also very happy.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others clenched their fists hard.

They had more than enough confidence in Yue Yang, but they couldn't help but be worried.

Luo Hua City Mistress bit her lips. She was a little angry. If Yue Yang had been in front of her, she would have punched him. How could he be so daring? What would they do if he got injured?

Princess Qian Qian sighed, feeling a little headache, “That brat is hopeless. And I thought he like to be low-keyed. Who would know that he was actually an exaggerated show-off!”

When Prince of Zi Jin saw this, he was delighted.

He never thought even in his dreams that Yue Yang would underestimate him and try to stop his attack with a single finger. That was equivalent to him seeking death.

Immediately, instead of weakening the strength in his hands, Prince of Zi Jin increased it even more, intent on cutting Yue Yang with his Crescent Blade. Even if he couldn't kill him with one slash, Yue Yang would definitely be gravely injured. This was definitely a chance bestowed to him by the heavens. He must not miss it, or it might not happen again... If Prince of Zi Jin knew that Yue Yang would use a single finger to stop his move, he would have used the strongest move out of the eight moves in [Desert Storm], the [Wind Destruction] or the [Total Darkness].

A loud explosion resounded.

The loud sound pierced the audience's ears.

Yue Yang who had withstood the attack with a single finger was pushed many meters back, the purple flames on his body spluttering at the surrounding area. However, the deathly attack that others thought would instantly kill Yue Yang didn't happen. Yue Yang had only been pushed back.

Prince of Zi Jin secretly thought that it was unfortunate. The first move, [Wind Rising] was just a starting move, the full strength of the skill was not unleashed yet.

His opponent had erected a weird looking fire shield right at the last minute and blocked his blade.

When Prince of Zi Jin saw that Yue Yang had only been pushed back by his attack although he was very close to injuring him fatally, Prince of Zi Jin started to brandish his Gold Crescent Blade wildly and unleashed his moves even more quickly.

The second move, the third move, the fourth move...

The Gold Crescent Blade became like a huge desert storm. Strong winds howled as the flaming hot sands pounced at Yue Yang like a menacing beast, wave after wave. The audience couldn't clearly see the battle situation, they could only see vaguely that the arrogant student Titan was being pushed back step by step by the Prince of Zi Jin. That Prince of Zi Jin who was like a godly hero attacked countlessly nonstop, as if he was not giving any chance for student Titan to counterattack.

"He's winning!" The Western Lion Pagoda Disciples and the Grey Wolf Academy students cheered for Prince of Zi Jin.

"That's bad... He is attacking nonstop!" The Ivy Academy students were extremely worried. They were actually all top-class experts and geniuses who were hiding their abilities, so they

obviously knew the terrifying power behind the continuous attacks.

“Prince of Zi Jin might become complacent too early.” People like Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun who were more highly skilled could see through the battle situation more clearly and more transparently.

“He has already miscalculated when he missed the first attack, but he was impatient to advance and greedy to win, hence he has continued with the seven other moves nonstop. Heh, this Prince of Zi Jin has really been pushed to his limits by that brat...” Bai Yun Fei was watching the match secretly through the little window from his private box. Although his face was pale, his eyes showed a tinge of mockery. Of course, he hated the Yue Clan Third Young Master after losing to him. However, he couldn’t help but to admire Yue Yang’s abnormal strength.

“Junior Sect Leader, it’s not that the Prince of Zi Jin didn’t want to stop attacking. He just couldn’t stop attacking!” A mysterious guy who had always been following Bai Yun Fei slowly said.

“Really? Then, could it be that when Yue Yang used a single finger to block Prince of Zi Jin’s move, he was actually setting a trap for him...?” Bai Yun Fei’s lips shivered a little.

The Prince of Zi Jin increased his combat strength to his maximum as he unleashed the eighth move of [Desert Storm] with a loud roar.

The Gold Crescent Blade flashed with a golden light like a lightning, traversing through the distance between the two people.

Cutting apart the space between them, Prince of Zi Jin slashed towards Yue Yang's neck immediately, before retracting the Crescent Blade back to the scabbard on his waist.

The Crescent Blade continued to shake within the scabbard, producing a buzzing sound. If it were last time, when Prince finished his eight moves combo, as the Crescent Blade returned to his scabbard, his enemy's head would also fall from his neck to the ground, rolling beside Prince of Zi Jin's feet. Most of them would have died with their eyes wide open and an expression of disbelief.

Under the watch of a hundred thousand audience, Yue Yang's body slowly trembled.

This was a sign that the attack had worked on him. The Western Lion Pagoda's disciples and the Grey Wolf Academy's students started to cheer out uncontrollably.

So what if he had abnormal abilities?

With the formidable eight moves of [Desert Storm], he had still fallen defeated in the end!

Even the Prince of Zi Jin who was exhausted after unleashing his ultimate move prepared to raise his hands to wave to the hundred thousand crowd. At the same time, he mentally prepared his

speech. Just as the corners of his mouth were about to turn up into a smile, Yue Yang suddenly raised his left hand... there was a little cut on his forefinger. There was a slit of blood, but it wasn't enough to form a drop of blood. Yue Yang started to blow on his finger in pain and sighed, "I underestimated my opponent too much. That attack wasn't supposed to cut my finger..."

When Yue Yang said this, the Prince of Zi Jin's eyes widened until they were bigger than a bull's.

He was fine?

His neck was chopped by the crescent blade. How can he be fine?

"That was really fast. If I don't have the [Reveal] Inherent Skill, I won't be able to see it clearly." State Grandmaster Hua Xia laughed, "This kid has improved once again. Even if he doesn't lift the seal on his innate powers, his current ability is very close to the innate realm. What an extraordinary kid..... I think it took me around two hundred years to reach his level, yet he had only lived for twenty years... It's a shame that His Highness could not come to watch the fight. He would definitely be delighted."

"He has condensed a flame shield in his finger. At first it was not very useful, Prince of Zi Jin's first attack has destroyed the first one. However, every single fire shield afterwards was better than the previous. Furthermore, the speed of which he has condensed the flame shield has increased every single time. At the end, he was condensing it with ease. Haha, I think, if we gave a little more time to this brat, he could probably successfully research the long lost martial art skill – [Godly Flaming Shield]." The old fox rubbed his

goatee pleasedly.

“Can a human use the [Godly Flaming Shield] that is a beast’s speciality?” Feng Kuang asked in surprise.

“Yes, but he must first learn to control fire. And he must be able to control it very well.” State Grandmaster Hua Xia assured definitively.

“Seems like it would be impossible for me to be able to do that!” The Eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie was troubled. Controlling fire was already very difficult, yet he was required to control it very well. What kind of realm did he need to reach to do that?

“Aren’t you speaking nonsense now? Even I, the Sky King, who is an expert in both metal and fire abilities couldn’t do it. If you, brat, could do it, is there still justice in this world? Controlling fire abilities, do you think everyone could do it? Dream on, do you think playing with a little fire means you have control over fire? Forget it, I’m not talking to you anymore, so as to save you from feeling inferior! But this son-in-law of mine is really a genius, little Luo Hua has really married the right man. Haha, I really like this son-in-law who can control fire. That fire shield is really to my liking...” The Eastern Sky King father-in-law acted like a mother-in-law, evaluating his son-in-law and liking him more and more the more he looked at him.

On the stage, Prince of Zi Jin gritted his teeth and continued to charge towards Yue Yang, furiously pouncing at him like a mad, bloodthirsty wolf.

This was because Yue Yang was shaking his forefinger that was slightly cut right at him.

His attitude was not only looking down on him, but downright degrading.

This was even more humiliating than mocking him with words. Did Yue Yang mean that his [Desert Storm] eight moves could only cut his forefinger a little? If others knew about this, his reputation wouldn't be any better than Bai Yun Fei's!

Prince of Zi Jin raised his hand and exploded his Qi. Without anyone knowing, he secretly ate a pill, the [Bloodthirst Pill].

This kind of pill could increase one's strength for a short period of time. The increase in strength would be at least two times, or at most ten times, depending on each individual's potential. Prince of Zi Jin didn't spare any costs. Although taking the Bloodthirst Pill would leave him completely powerless afterwards, collapsing to the ground from exhaustion, the ten minutes boost in power would be enough to end the battle. If he doesn't kill this hateful third young master of the Yue clan, he will never be able to lift his head in the future.

他必须死！

He has to die!

The Prince of Zi Jin bitterly hated the Yue clan's third young master to the core!

The audience couldn't see the Prince of Zi Jin taking the pill. All they saw was that a fierce Qi suddenly exploded out from him. They even thought that the Prince of Zi Jin had been hiding his true abilities all this time. They were all shocked. They all thought that this guy was not so simple after all. It seems like he still has cards up his sleeve.

In the next moment, when everyone was ready to watch a good show, they were all dumbfounded by the scene before them.

This scene was even more shocking and more unfathomable than when Yue Yang's Bloody Queen appeared.

What everyone saw was that the super abnormal student Titan had condensed a flame shield with a single finger to block the Prince of Zi Jin's fearsome strike... This was the true definition of stopping an ultimate move with one finger. He didn't use any tricks. It was all his own strength. The Prince of Zi Jin's strike swept across the stage, split in two, destroying the fighting arena's tiles easily like they were made of tofu. However, this fierce attack was blocked by the flame shield like it was nothing.

The power behind the strike disappeared like it was nothing.

The thing that made the Prince of Zi Jin so scared was that when Yue Yang lifted his Hui Jin Magic Blades, he had unleashed his own first skill, [Wind Rising]. It looked exactly like the skill that Prince of Zi Jin had used before. No. It was even more spectacular than before. Yue Yang was about to strike his chest!

The prince's armor broke and blood scattered. He was also forced back a few steps. When he looked over at Yue Yang, he noticed the second and third combo strike was coming. It was like a nonstop torrential downpour. The [Desert Storm] combo that Yue Yang just received... He was returning it all back to the Prince of Zi Jin. Of course, Yue Yang purposely held back a bit so he wouldn't die.

In a few seconds, the Prince of Zi Jin turned into a bruised bloody mess riddled with scars.

The moves that he was hit with was all from his own battle skill, the [Desert Storm]'s eight moves.

“No. This is not possible!” The Prince of Zi Jin did not believe that there was such a formidable opponent in this world. To steal his technique after only seeing it once... The [Desert Storm] skill that he spent countless years perfecting under his teacher's guidance... For it to be stolen and performed better... If the two of them were to be compared, it would look that that he was the one who copied the skill.

“The prince's battle skill is worthy of praise. No matter the angle of the attack, the combo of the attack or the strength and the technique of the attack, all of them are very harmonized. I've learned the [Steel Chopping] technique before, but I found that Your Highness Crescent Blade Eight Moves skill was far better than the one I have learnt.” Yue Yang complimented. However, the spectators all began to laugh. This kid was making such an ironic comparison. To compare the prince's skill with the [Steel Chopping] technique.... It seems like the prince's skill was really

pitiful. One should know that the [Steel Chopping] technique is one of the worst sword techniques in the world!

The [Steel Chopping] technique was so trashy that even low level mercenaries wouldn't even want to train and learn it.

Now that he was comparing the Prince's sword technique to the [Steel Chopping] technique, he was basically calling the prince's skill no better than trash!

Hearing this, the Prince of Zi Jin's chest started to ache.

He spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

Bai Yun Fei sustained internal injuries because he was angry. However that was not the case with the Prince of Zi Jin. He was injured by Yue Yang and then spat out a mouthful of blood due to anger. On the surface, it looked as if Yue Yang's usage of the prince's technique was on the same level as the prince. However, when it reached the prince of Zi Jin's body, he realized that it was different. Every strike from the Yue clan's third young master was followed by a spin. Even though the wounds didn't look that bad, the area under the skin was fiercely struck opened. His injuries were very serious and painful....If it wasn't for the Thunder Beast Armor's protection and the Bloodthirst Pill's effects, the Prince of Zi Jin felt that he would have died.

“Go ahead and eat two more Bloodthirst pills. I don't mind. I'll also guarantee that the judges won't interfere while you eat them.” When Yue Yang talked again, the entire arena was in an uproar

once again.

Bloodthirst Pill. There was no one who didn't know about it.

That kind of thing... It is used during a life and death battle. It's usage is definitely prohibited during a regular competition. Who would've thought that this Prince of Zi Jin would dare use something like this under everyone's watchful eyes!

Chapter 245 – Eastern Goblin Tribe

The Bloodthirst Pill was a kind of forbidden medicine. It could stimulate a person's potential for a short period of time and boost his combat abilities.

However, it would cause the user to lose control more easily as well. A few of those warriors with weak minds might even become bloodthirsty beasts, killing everything in their path. If it was a battle to the death, taking the Bloodthirst Pill to kill their mortal enemy and secure victory was still acceptable. However, this was the Hundred School Elite Competition. The Bloodthirst Pill was banned from consumption. Once a person lost control, he would kill the opponent. These warriors who flouted the competition's rules by using such underhanded methods to pursue victory and disregarding other's lives were people who would be cast aside by others.

The main aim of a tournament was not to take innocent lives, but rather to let more people have the chance to train themselves. It was a platform for students to help each other to grow.

Therefore, tournament competitions required a fairer starting point. As much as possible, everyone would spar against each other under the same conditions. At the start, the matches would start under a state of fairness. After that, they would have to rely on their fighting spirit, battle tactics, skills of their beasts and so on to defeat their opponent. The meaning of the tournament was to allow students to train themselves through battle. It was to allow students to learn other's merits during their battle, allowing themselves to grow stronger and improve continuously, before finally distinguishing themselves for the thousand other elite

students and attained the final victory. This, was what the Hundred School Elite Competition was intended for.

Using the Green Poison Pill to poison the opponent or using the Bloodthirst Pill to increase one's strength was forbidden by the rules.

Once it was discovered, the person would be immediately kicked out of the competition, and unable to join for three years running.

It was already flouting the spirit of competition when the Prince of Zi Jin summoned his beast secretly while he was below the stage. It had caused everyone to look at him with scorn.

Now, he even dared to take a Bloodthirst Pill secretly! This was essentially the greatest insult to the word "Elite"! Taking the Bloodthirst Pill to increase his strength under the crowd's watch, using this kind of underhanded method to defeat his opponent and attain victory, this act was practically equivalent to giving everyone in the Hundred School Elite Competition a resounding slap in the face...

"Prince of Zi Jin, please stop the competition, I want to check your blood!"

The main referee was extremely angry. The Bloodthirst Pill was a kind of forbidden medicine. It was expensive and ordinary warriors would almost have no chance to ever use them. However, it was not strange for the Prince of Zi Jin to own this kind of forbidden medicine. According to some sources, the origin of these

Bloodthirst Pills was from the Green Summit Sect in the Zi Jin Kingdom. There were countless evil experts in the Green Summit Sect. The current generation's Sect Leader, Duan Mu Long Cheng, was not only Zi Jin Kingdom's Heavenly Imperial Guardian, but also a great master of medicine. Although there was no proof that Duan Mu Long Cheng created the Bloodthirst Pill, it was a fact that he had invented the "Scattering Wolf", a short-term mass-produced medicine that would greatly boost the battle ability of troops for a short period of time.

It was precisely because the Zi Jin Kingdom owned the Scattering Wolf that their troops were the wildest and most barbaric. They were addicted to battle as if their lives revolved around it, just like starving wolf packs.

"No, I didn't! I refuse to be checked!" The Prince of Zi Jin didn't think that Yue Yang could see that he had taken the forbidden Bloodthirst Pill.

Of course, he could not let the main referee check his blood now. Otherwise, not only him, but the Wolf Academy that he represented, the Zi Jin Kingdom, and the Western Lion Pagoda would lose a great deal of reputation.

On the surface, the Bloodthirst Pill's effects could not be seen. However, a reaction could be found when checking a blood sample.

This was especially true for the members of the Hundred School Elite Competition who owned special beasts. With just a single sniff or a taste of the blood, they would be able to sense it.

“Don’t be too hasty to deny it. Actually, even if you eat the Bloodthirst Pill as rice, I don’t care either.” Yue Yang shrugged in a carefree manner.

“I’ll kill you!” The Prince of Zi Jin was mad now.

Everything that he had had been destroyed by this Third Young Master.

Following this, what awaited him was not just a miserable loss, but also the ruin of his glory, as well as shame that he would forever be unable to get rid of. Eating a forbidden medicine was greater embarrassment than kneeling in front of the crowd like Bai Yun Fei did. The only way to get out of this would be to kill his enemy and shut him up forever, in order to appease his own hatred. The Prince of Zi Jin did not realise that under the stimulation of the words of his opponent, he had started to gradually lose control of himself. He had started to become a bloodthirsty beast that was craving to kill others.

The Prince of Zi Jin’s eyes were dyed in red. He raised his Gold Crescent Blade and sliced maniacally towards Yue Yang.

Yue Yang raised his hands and a flaming tornado suddenly appeared right below the Prince of Zi Jin, causing him to be hurled midair without any chance to resist.

While the Prince of Zi Jin tried to struggle out of the tornado, the flaming tornado suddenly vanished. With a stamp of his feet, Yue

Yang caused another pillar of flame to explode from the ground, rushing towards the Prince in midair.

The flame pillar caused him to shoot up ten metres mid-air before dissipating.

The entire crowd felt a wave of hot air rushing towards them. It started to become difficult to breathe as well.

In the sky, the Prince of Zi Jin seemed to have been knocked unconscious by the flame pillar that Yue Yang had controlled. As if he had lost the will to battle, his body fell down. The Wolf Academy and Lion Pagoda's disciples were crying out loud. Someone had even used his Gold Pheasant's [Cry] skill to wake the Prince up.

This move was clearly effective.

With the Gold Pheasant's cry, the Prince of Zi Jin's eyes which were shut closed immediately opened up.

He somersaulted in mid-air and summoned his grimoire ten metres above the ground. He summoned a Strengthening-type Black Wyvern, fusing it with his body. Huge dragon wings grew from his back. His fingernails also grew sharp dragon claws. With this, he landed easily back onto the stage... The crowd booed constantly. He had broken the rules one after another. It was originally a match that restricted them to only using combat techniques. What was going on with the summoning grimoire now? That student Titan had not even summoned a single beast,

and only used techniques to fight. Not only did the Prince of Zi Jin summon the Gold Wolf Kings from below the stage, he had even taken a Bloodthirst Pill on stage and summoned a Black Wyvern. Was this not too shameless?

Could he really not give a damn about anything just to win this?

Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun laughed.

They knew that now that this Prince of Zi Jin was truly a failure.

If Yue Yang wanted to defeat the Prince of Zi Jin, he wouldn't even need to use a finger to defend or mimic the opponent's techniques. Those were just methods to incite the Prince's anger to cause him to go crazy and lose control.

Bai Yun Fei, the Prince of Zi Jin and Dragon Ambassador Cang Lan Yu represented the Four Great Sects in the Hundred School Elite Competition. They were here for nothing more than to defeat the junior members of the Four Great Clan's and the respective school's elites to boost their prestige and increase the influence they had in the Soaring Dragon Continent. As long as the opponent did not give up, Bai Yun Fei and the Prince of Zi Jin would pretty much beat up their opponent black and blue, until their opponent was in despair... The warriors of Soaring Dragon Continent adored the victors, and the hearts of the citizens had started to gradually favour these three New Stars. In comparison, the Three Great Killing Stars fame had been overshadowed by them. If the Three Great Killing Stars were swept by Bai Yun Fei or the Prince of Zi Jin in the finals, the Four Great Clan's prestige would drop to the bottom of the valley, and the Four Great Sects' fame would be

raised to an all-new high.

Yue Yang had defeated Bai Yun Fei, then the Prince of Zi Jin. His goal was not as simple as to dispose of these two arrogant fellows.

More importantly, he wanted to strike the decisive blow to the sects that they represented.

The Prince of Zi Jin was more fond of victory than Bai Yun Fei. He did not have Bai Yun Fei's tolerance at all. Not only that, because he had never experienced a setback in his life before, he was overly confident of himself. He underestimated Yue Yang's true strength, thinking that he could defeat him using underhanded means.

Finally, not only did the Prince of Zi Jin lose the competition, he had been forced by Yue Yang to use a forbidden pill and summon his grimoire, causing him to be pushed to the very edge of the loser's table.

"He's beyond hope now!" Bai Yun Fei who was secretly watching the match in a box shook his head lightly.

"With how aggressively Lion Pagoda shields their faults, I'm afraid there's an even better show to watch after this!" The mysterious person that came with Bai Yun Fei added. "It'll be more exciting later on!"

"In front of a hundred thousand people, how dare they make a

mockery of this competition? How many rankers are sitting here... Are the fools in Lion Pagoda insane? But, this isn't bad either! The more chaotic the Soaring Dragon Continent is, the more advantageous it is for us... If they start fighting, we'll just stand at the side and watch!" Looking at Yue Yang who was going round in circles and attacking the Prince of Zi Jin, Bai Yun Fei's mocking gaze became even greater.

Suddenly, from the audience seats, State Grandmaster Hua Xia, Feng Kuang and the old fox all stood up.

State Grandmaster Hua Xia had summoned his Platinum grimoire. The Blood Flower Map on his grimoire shone with a few spots of dazzling red.

The eagled-eyed man and the Eastern Sky King who was seated a little further from the State Grandmaster looked over to his grimoire and shouted in alarm, "Enemies are attacking, Da Xia Palace is under attack! How could this happen?!"

The old fox furrowed his eyebrows. "This isn't a simple assault. You two, go back and assist them. I have to stay here. Perhaps this is a ploy to bait the strong warriors out. The elite juniors are all gathered here. If the enemy takes them all, that would be the greatest loss. Although His Majesty's safety is important, I can't be at ease with all the students here. Go!"

State Grandmaster was in deep thought. Originally, he wanted to stay as well. However, the Blood Flower Map showed that there were even more enemies attacking the Da Xia Palace. With no time to think, he hastily took out the teleportation scroll. Along with

Feng Kuang, Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong, the eagle-eyed man and the others, they hurried back to assist the emperor. Even the Eastern Sky King had gone over to help. The old fox hurriedly beckoned to Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress to his side. “The situation isn’t good. Hurry up and bring everyone out of here...”

Without even being able to finish his sentence, a black pillar of light suddenly shone down from the sky.

Two men who were dressed in blood-red clothes and emitting a radiant light appeared from the sky. Immediately after they appeared, they joined their hands together and harmoniously formed a giant black runic circle.

A flood of fresh blood spewed out from the black bottles they were holding in their hands, splattering everywhere as if it were a shower of bloody rain.

However, the bloody rain did not fall to the ground. Instead, it spiralled in mid-air with the force from their Qi.

Fresh blood continuously accumulated and formed into a whirlpool of blood. The black formation was concealed within the whirlpool of blood, looking more and more out of this world.

“That’s not Lion Pagoda, Thousand Goblins Sect, nor the Demonic Palace’s people... Who are these two fellows?” The old fox was certain that these two men were the enemy. Not only that, he was also 90% sure that they were targeting Yue Yang. The only

thing he didn't know was their identities. Could it be that they were the evil experts from Green Summit Sect? However, he had never heard of the Green Summit having these kinds of experts. Before the old fox could warn Yue Yang, seeing Yue Bing and Yi Nan worriedly running towards the stage, he flew over and stopped them. "Hurry up and go, these two might be experts from the "Outer Realm" of the upper floors of Tong Tian Tower... Qian Qian, hurry up and activate the Gold-level Mass Teleportation Scroll and take everyone away!"

"The space has been sealed!" Princess Qian Qian discovered that her scroll could not be used. Her face paled instantly.

"Go, leave this place immediately! The enemy doesn't need a long time to open the connecting space. At that time, millions of Outer Realm demonic beasts will be teleported here!" The old fox then roared as loudly as possible to Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and the others who were releasing their Qi preparing for battle. "Are you insane?! Hurry up and leave! Before the Heavenly Imperial Guardians and Innate Rankers manage to get here as reinforcements, the only thing you need to do is run away!"

At this time, the entire crowd realised the changing situation and panic started to set in.

They still did not understand what was going on.

The two Vice-Head Referees and Head Referee released their Qi at the same time, raising their combat power to its maximum and hurled themselves towards the two strange men who were in the midst of completing the black Runic Circle.

They were all Level 6 [Elder] rankers or greater. The Head Referee had even reached the strength of a Level 7 [Overlord]. However, the ultimate moves that they made was completely ineffective towards the two red-robed men. The two red-robed men neither summonned their grimoires nor raise a barrier to protect themselves. Rather, they took it with their bodies. Under the heavy blows, their bodies only shook slightly. Even the blood-red robes were not damaged.

“This, this!” When the Head Referee saw that he had attacked into a tiger’s den, his eyes reflected fear. He could not believe that this was the truth.

“The strength of you human warriors are really weak. If not for His majesty saying that there were a few annoying human kids in your Soaring Dragon Continent, I wouldn’t even want to come out of my way here.” The man on the left took the blows from the Head Referee and one of the Vice-Head Referee, sneering as he came out completely unharmed.

“So these two aren’t humans... “ With his Level 4 [Divine Eyes] Yue Yang could see that these two red-robed men were similar to the dragon ladies that Elder Nan Gong brought with him. They were not humans, but rather the Eastern Goblin Tribe that had taken human form.

Heaven Realm

Outer Realm

Tong Tian Tower

Soaring Dragon Continent

Demon Abyss

Chapter 246 – Fiery Golden Eyes Beast?

The two Vice-head Referees who were rebounded back onto the ground remained calm on the surface, but their hands had started to tremble on their own.

Absolute fear exploded deep within their hearts.

Although a normal warrior could not see this, but rankers like Yan Po Jun would have no trouble in doing so.

These two red-robed men seemed to have deflected the three referee's full power attacks with just their bodies. They did not even need to use techniques like Yue Yang. This, wasn't this too terrifying? Who in the world were they?

Why did they appear here?

In the box, the mysterious person pinned down the frightened Bai Yun Fei, saying, "Calm down, I'll send you out of here safely. I didn't think that the Western Lion Pagoda would incite the Eastern Goblin Tribe of the Outer Realm, they've really done it this time! It's easy to invite a god, but not so easy to get rid of a god. The Eastern Goblin Tribe isn't something that they can afford to provoke. They'll definitely regret this. Yun Fei, calm down. Let's listen to what these two Eastern Goblin Tribe people are saying."

The shockwave from three referees' failed ultimate attack resounded throughout the whole stadium.

The stadium was in chaos.

Every single audience had all stood up in alarm.

Right now, even a blind person could see that the two strange, red-robed men were enemies, super strong enemies.

The old fox quickly gathered Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu, Yue Bing, Yi Nan and the Ivy Academy students together. Just like a mother hen protecting her little chicks, he stood in front of them, his face deadly serious. Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha also quickly commanded Shang Jing Academy's students to come forward. The Prince of Tian Luo also brought the Pink Rose Fan Group and Fragrance Academy students forward, coming together as one body. On the opposite side, the Grey Wolf Academy and Western Lion Pagoda's disciples also gathered into a group. The Floating Mist Sect disciples and bai Yun Fei's schoolmates also gathered together.

The rest of the students gathered around the four referees.

Although the stadium was already in chaos, there was someone who stood up in the end to bring order. Students who couldn't find their teachers could only go to the four referees temporarily.

Hundreds of Silver-armored Guards rushed out and defended in front of the students.

Their combat power was actually not any better than the students, but their responsibilities made them go to the frontlines immediately and defend the students. Following the orders of each team leader, the Silver-armored Guards summoned their beasts one by one, prepared for battle.

As for the mercenaries seated around the mountains or the individual warriors coming to watch the Round-robin Knockout Match, they were completely dumbstruck.

They stood frozen on the spot, not knowing what to do.

Fight? Their combat power was not even worth it to be looked upon.

Escape? There were no escape routes in the mountain.

Yue Bing really wanted to ask her brother who was still on the fighting arena to return, because there were only him and Prince of Zi Jin on the stage. They were too obvious as a target.

If the enemies attack, then they would probably target her brother first!

Just as she was worrying about this, the mysterious beauty who liked to read books suddenly appeared behind Yue Bing and hugged her lightly, comforting her with a gentle voice, “Bing-er, don’t be scared. Your brother will be okay. Right now you have to prioritize your own safety, don’t worry about him! You and Yi Nan should

stay here, and don't come out no matter what. I, Wu Hen, Qian Qian and Luo Hua are ready to support your brother anytime. You and Yi Nan must stay calm, don't let others know your identities. When we can use the teleportation scrolls again, you guys should return to the Little Flower Garden in the first moment. Wait for us there..."

At this time, the old fox was slapping Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha, stopping them from trying to step out to fight with a thundering voice, "Are you all sick of living? Don't you understand what's the meaning of 'crucial moment'? Now is the time! You have to ensure your own lives, and you have to protect your friends and fellow schoolmates too! Yue Yang was already revealed since he was standing on the stage, there was no other way around it. But you guys wanted to rush out and seek death together with him. That is not helping him, on the contrary, you are harming him, do you understand? All of you just calm down for now. Right now, the most important thing for us is to not be disorderly. We must all unite together!"

The Dragon Spear Lady who was wearing a silver mask, the ice cold Xue Tan Lang and Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu all quickly grouped together.

The whole stadium all formed groups of all sizes based on their own schools or sects.

Each group was headed by each academy's teachers or a member of the royal families.

Otherwise, they were headed by the referee.

“Everyone, don’t be scared. Actually, we didn’t come here with evil intentions.” The strange red-robed man on the right suddenly announced with a loud voice, “Right now, I ask everyone to calm down for a while. We have actually come here to find a few people. I guarantee that as long as you guys do not resist, and only watch calmly, none of your lives will be in danger.”

When that person said this, every single mercenaries immediately breathed a sigh of relief. They knew that the people that that person was trying to find would definitely not be them!

Some people with a stronger mental state than the others had already started sitting back down and continue to watch the show.

In any case, even if the sky collapsed, everyone would die together. Even those people of nobilities, princes and princesses weren’t scared of the two strange men, why would they be afraid for their shitty lives? Not every mercenaries could calm down that easily. People who had the way of thinking “Even if the sky collapse, there are still tall people who will support the skies” was not many.

When they heard that the unwanted visitors had not come to kill but to find a few people, they become extremely at peace.

When the old fox heard it, his heart dropped to the bottom instead.

Indeed, they had come for Yue Yang and the others, all of these

talented younger generations...

Seemed like the ambush on Da Xia Palace just now was a trap. They had intended to make a move on the younger generations when the strong rankers had all left.

“They are from the Eastern Goblin Tribe. They are not humans, they are more or less like the dragon ladies, they are a little different from them. Bing-er, hide in the crowd for now, don’t come out no matter what happen.” Yue Yang comforted Yue Bing through his [Spiritual Telepathy] Gemini Inherent Skill. At the same time, he also asked her to hold Yi Nan, Yue Yu and the others tight in order to prevent them from making rash moves.

“Tell him to be careful and not to care about us. We can take care of ourselves!” PRincess Qian Qian hurriedly warned Yue Yang.

In the skies.

As the black pillar of light linked with the middle of the black Runic Circle, another three figures of people appeared.

Two of them wore black robes. They had a big and tall figure, it seemed like they were at least three-metres tall.

However, their huge bodies were as light as a feather as they floated in mid-air. The person in the middle who the two giants had been protecting was wearing a gold-coloured robe. He wore a purple crown on his head and held a white jade scroll that had

Ancient Runes written on it.

The gold-robed man was an elegant, handsome-looking middle-aged man.

He floated in mid-air as he bowed towards the Soaring Dragon Continent, courteously cupping his hands and said, “Ladies and gentlemen, please forgive us for our uninvited visit. A month ago, a warrior from the Soaring Dragon Continent had recommended a talented youngster to our Emperor. Our emperor loved talented people, and he has especially ordered us to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent to invite these honored guests sincerely with our hearts, to come to our kingdom’s Rainbow Palace Hall to gather for a while... Following this, all the talented and elite warriors whose name I have called, please come up and gather on the stage. I guarantee that I will not harm any of you. After our Emperor has finished entertaining you, honored guests, we will definitely send you all back here. I will definitely honor my words, please do not be uneasy with our sincerity.”

Then, he slowly opened the white jade scroll in his hands and read each names aloud, “Presenting our Emperor’s orders, we invite these few honored guests to gather: Yue Clan Third Young Master Yue Yang, Yue Clan Seventh Miss Yue Bing, Feng Clan Feng Qi Sha, Xue Clan Xue Tan Lang, Yan Clan Yan Po Jun, Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei, Prince of Zi Jin Chu Feng Lei, Prince of Tian Luo Hua Zi Yu, Crystal Palace Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu... and last but not least, Da Xia Princess Qian Qian. A total of ten brilliant talented youngsters, please come up to the stage. Our Emperor loved young talents like you guys, so he will definitely treat you as honored guests!”

“I’m not going, I’m not going!” When Prince of Zi Jin heard it, he shouted terrifiedly, “Didn’t we agree that you will take them away, and not take anyone from the Western Lion Pagoda? No, I’m not going!”

“Your Highness Prince of Zi Jin, you are one of the people our Emperor hopes to see. Having an audience with our Emperor is an honor to you. Please do not reject our Emperor’s magnanimity.” The handsome-looking gold-robed man bowed courteously as he spoke calmly and unhurriedly. Even under the watch of a hundred thousand people, he remained calm and composed as he continued, “The other nine honored guests, please come up to the stage. I don’t want to waste too much of everyone’s time. As long as we have all ten people, we will immediately leave. We will not disturb your competition.”

“What the heck are you guys?” Yue Yang realized that he could see through the red-robed and black-robe men, but the only one he couldn’t see through was the gold-robed middle aged man. He couldn’t help but to ask in curiosity.

“We are not heck, we are the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Please forgive us for our actions. We only wished to talk with our honored guests. May I ask if you are one of our honored guests?” The middle-aged man bowed and courteously cupped his hands.

“Although I don’t intend to go, my name is indeed stated above.” Yue Yang observed the middle-aged man with his [Divine Vision] as he slowly replied.

“May I ask, are you the Yue Clan Third Young Master that my

Emperor was interested in the most? Your abilities are way above the others although you are still very young. It is really rare to see a talent like you. My Emperor has especially ordered us to bring you back no matter what. Seeing the Yue Clan Third Young Master showing himself on his own accord really make us happy. This ambassador is a Fiery Golden Eyes Beast, you can call me Jin Jing (or Golden Eyes). This ambassador pays his respect to the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan.” The middle-aged man observed Yue Yang from head to toe. His expression changed slightly and he bowed in respect.

“Fiery Golden Eyes Beast?” Yue Yang was a little startled when he heard it.

“Master Jin Jing, why are you so courteous to this brat? Wouldn’t it be extremely easy for you to take this brat away? I, Old Black, is enough to bring him down.” The black-robed giant standing beside the gold-robed middle aged man spoke out, his voice exploded in everyone’s ears like a thunderclap.

“Big Black, you must not be rude.” The gold-robed middle-aged man scolded softly and bowed to Yue Yang once again, “Yue Clan Third Young Master, this rash and temperamental fellow over here is the leader of the Black Mountains Warriors. The other giant is his younger brother. Both of them had a bad temper, but their hearts are kind. They are definitely not someone who is rude and vulgar. Most of the time, they will not start a fight on their own accord...”

Rumble!

Before the middle-aged man finished speaking, the Prince of Zi Jin who was trying to escape was suddenly caught by the younger brother giant who was standing on the left, held tightly under his grip.

Prince of Zi Jin's whole body immediately entered into the ground.

Not waiting for the Prince of Zi Jin to struggle, that black-robed younger brother seized his right leg and smashed the Prince of Zi Jin hard on the stage, just like an adult man smashing a little frog on the ground. As the Prince of Zi Jin screamed in pain, the black-clothed man crushed Prince of Zi Jin's head with his huge foot on the ground, shouting, "Annoying little human insect, you are freaking noisy!"

The whole one hundred thousand audience in the Stadium all watched dumbstruck. Everyone simply couldn't believe the sight before them.

Although Prince of Zi Jin was useless, he was still one of the three strongest warriors. How could he die in an instant?

The weird thing was that these uninvited visitors seemed to have relations with the Prince of Zi Jin.

Why would they kill Prince of Zi Jin then?

Chapter 247 – Women Are Not Inferior To Men!

“Is this what you mean by saying that you won’t initiate attacking people? What great words you say!” Yue Yang clapped his hands and praised loudly.

“Prince of Zi Jin shouldn’t have rejected our Emperor’s sincere invitation and tried to escape. His actions really made us furious. A good man shouldn’t try to run away from things. Er Hei (or Second Black) has perhaps beaten him up a little roughly, I would like to apologize for to everyone for that. Actually, as long as everyone cooperates, we guarantee that we will not harm anyone here.” The gold-robed middle aged man spoke in a refined and courteous manner.

“...” The whole stadium was silent. If they couldn’t reject the invitation, how were they any different captives?

Yue Bing who was below the stage felt anxious for her brother the most.

If those Eastern Goblin Tribe people started attacking her brother, what would she do?

She wanted to help her brother, but due to her lack in power, she would only drag her brother down if she were to try to help him. This made her really hate herself... How good would it be if she had more combat power. It was a pity that she couldn’t lend her brother a helping hand in battles, she could only watch her brother

fighting all alone powerlessly. Different from Yue Bing, the mysterious beauty, sickly beauty, Princess qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were all waiting anxiously, waiting for the right time to join Yue Yang and help him fight.

The old fox had an even more serious expression. His mind didn't lie with helping Yue Yang if it comes to battle, but how to take all the students away to safety.

Yue Yang had power, so he wasn't whom he was most worried about.

Instead, he was worried about Yue Bing and the others. Once the enemies discovered them, Yue Yang would have more trouble instead.

“If you want to invite me, you can. But normally, I will only accept a strong warrior's invitation.” Yue Yang who was on the stage brandished his Hui Jin Magic Blade and shouted, “If you want to invite me, prove to me that you have the power.”

“Wah!” Countless audience started to gasp. They all thought that this brat must have gone mad. His enemies were so strong, even Prince of Zi Jin was killed in an instant. He still wanted to challenge them to a fight?

“Since it's honored guest's request, we will definitely try to fulfil it.” The middle-aged man called Fiery Golden Eyes Beast smiled slightly.

The two black-clothed giants and the two red-robed men, all four Eastern Goblin Tribe's people gathered together.

They all raised their hands, and started to have a game of rock-paper-scissors, more arrogant than any other.

It was as if a simple, random strike from them could immediately beat Yue Yang up into a pulp.

In the end, the red-robed man standing on the furthest left won the rock-paper-scissors and stepped out with a big step as Yue Yang's opponent. The middle-aged man called Fiery Golden Eyes Beast introduced him with a refined and gentle voice, "This person is Mei Er (or Second Plum) of the Mei Hua (or Plum Blossoms) Brothers. The older brother is called Mei Hua Bao (Plum Blossoms Leopard) and the younger brother is called Mei Hua Lu (Plum Blossoms Deer). His powers are Earth Goblin Level 9, if converted to your Soaring Dragon Continent Level, he should be at Level 9 Saint. Of course, due to certain reasons, it was very difficult for normal goblins to break through the Innate realm. Even if our strength had already reached that point, we wouldn't be able to advance into the Innate realm. Hence, he is only a Goblin Palace Guard who can never reach Innate. This way, it wouldn't be counted as us bullying you humans too much... Yue Clan Third Young Master, as long as you can receive ten moves of his, I will take back my orders and report to my king. My Emperor would definitely be interested in sending you stronger envoys to invite you to his Rainbow Palace, just like how he had sent his envoys to Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You."

"What?"

Yue Yang froze when he heard it.

Aren't those Eastern Goblin Tribes people a little too greedy? Not only the talented younger generations of Soaring Dragon Continent, they even wanted to kidnap Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You?

They had even dared to attack Jun Wu You who had the protection of two Heavenly Imperial Guardians and a State Grandmaster, all three Innate Rankers. This proved that the Eastern Goblin Tribe who came from the Outer Realm outside the Tong Tian Tower had an unimaginable power.

“Not only His Highness Jun Wu You, we are also inviting Marshall Yue Hai, Commander Feng Kuang, Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dai and Yan Qian Zhong – the four Clan Masters of the Great Clans – as well as Eastern Sky King and the Western Sky King from the Tian Luo Kingdom... The only regretful thing was that the Great State Grandmaster of Da Xia had refused our invitation as he had to protect Da Xia and see to the country's affairs. We deeply respect State Grandmaster Hua Xia's sense of responsibility and decided to respect his wishes, so we did not force the invitation upon him.” The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast slowly said. His words were like thunder out of the clear sky, shocking the whole stadium.

Almost every strong warriors in Da Xia and Tian Luo that was gathered here had been captured by them.

What kind of strength do they actually have, to accomplish such a feat?

The old fox felt like his heart turned to ice. Through their words, he understood that other than the Innate Ranker, State Grandmaster, everyone had already been caught.

The State Grandmaster and the others had gone back to offer support, yet not even ten minutes later only the State Grandmaster was left. The whole army was annihilated. This Eastern Goblin Tribe, their powers really made others feel despair. Without Zhi Zun, Night Empress and Elder Nan Gong to protect them, the Soaring Dragon Continent was just as weak as an unfortified village, invaded by the Eastern Goblin Tribe this easily. It's just that, how did these people know that Zhi Zun, Night Empress and Elder Nan Gong had all gone to the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, that there was no one protecting the Soaring Dragon Continent?

There is definitely a spy here!

The biggest suspect would be the Western Lion Pagoda members!

Furthermore, Prince of Zi Jin didn't deny his relationship with them, especially his words just now, they had revealed many things.

It was highly likely that the Prince of Zi Jin and Western Lion Pagoda members had struck up some kind of agreement with the Eastern Goblin Tribe to guide them here. Who would know that

the Eastern Goblin Tribe didn't act according to the agreement between them and Prince of Zi Jin and Western Lion Pagoda. Prince of Zi Jin was a talented disciple, so they also wanted to take him along, not giving a damn about Prince of Zi Jin at all.

“This is impossible... They must have wanted to bend our fighting spirit using trickeries!” Yan Po Jun couldn't believe the truth no matter what. How could the Clan Masters of the Four Great Clans be captured? Jun Wu You and the two Sky Kings of Tian Luo Kingdom had also been captured? How was that possible!

“Kill! Let's kill all those guys and rescue those people back!” Feng Qi Sha started to lose control of his sense, almost going mad.

“...” Xue Tan Lang didn't say anything, he simply flew forward and jumped right beside Yue Yang, standing back-to-back with Yue Yang. He humphed coldly at Yue Yang, “I'll also fight with you!”

“Don't show off, right now you are still not these Eastern Goblin Tribe's people's opponents.” Yue Yang beat him down without any flattery.

“I will still fight even if I'm not their opponent!” Yue Yang's words seemed to not have any effect on Xue Tan Lang's fighting spirit.

“Perhaps, you are Xue Tan Lang from the Xue Clan? Not bad, you are extremely talented, worthy of your Three Great Killing Stars nickname, especially your fighting spirit! You are only second to this Yue Clan Third Young Master. I really like you! If our Emperor

sees you, he might just bestow you with a Sky Goblin Ice Dragon.” The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast spoke courteously with Xue Tan Lang again.

“Three Great Killing Stars, they do not consist of Xue Tan Lang only!” Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha released their Qi and flew onto the stage, standing beside Xue Tan Lang.

“Welcome, welcome to you!” The middle-aged man smiled a little and bowed to them.

“You are all fools.” Yue Yang was speechless. Why couldn’t they hide themselves obediently? Instead, they were running to their deaths.

“I have been very clever all this while, it’s really rare to see me acting foolishly...” Yan Po Jun laughed out loud. He knew that it would be difficult for him to escape. The enemy’s power was unimaginable. Rather than being instantly killed like the Prince of Zi Jin, he preferred to give it a go.

“There are still Prince of Tian Luo, Princess Qian Qian, Yue Clan Seventh Young Mistress Yue Bing, Floating Mist Sect Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei and Eastern Crystal Ocean Palace Dragon Ambassador Cang Lang. Please get up to the stage too! As long as anyone amongst you could withstand ten moves from Mei Hua Brothers or Xiong Brothers, I will happily return to my Emperor and ask for a stronger ambassador to invite you all...” The conditions that the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast put up was that as long as one could receive ten moves, then they could stay.

However, these ten moves, would they be easy to receive?

The opponent had a power of a Level 9 Saint. Although he was not an Innate, he had reached the limits of a Ranker. It would be difficult to receive even one move, let alone 10...

The old fox covered Yue Bing with his body. If the enemy noticed her, it would be the greatest attack to Yue Yang.

He did not stop the Three Great Killing Stars from going up on stage, but when Princess Qian Qian and Prince Tian Luo was about to go up the stage, he scolded them with a hushed voice, "Right now His Highness and the two Sky Kings are in trouble. Our nations are in perils. You are the roots of the Kingdom. If you take another step out, wouldn't you be walking the path of your own destruction! Did you think that you, some children, could stop and resist the Eastern Goblin Tribe whom even the Heavenly Imperial Guardians couldn't?

Princess Qian Qian covered her face as her tears dropped through her face, "Father is not here anymore, why do you still care about this country? I want to save that old fellow..."

The sickly beauty flew forward, a radiant light shone from her body as she turned into the appearance of Prince Tian Luo quickly in mid-air. Light as a feather, she landed behind Yue Yang and shouted, "The Prince of Tian Luo Hua Zi Yu is present." The real Prince of Tian Luo wanted to speak out, but Luo Hua City Mistress slapped him down as she hugged Yue Bing, preventing her from

running towards the stage.

The mysterious beauty who liked to read books also released a colourful light from her body and turned into Yue Bing's appearance. However, she was a head taller than the real Yue Bing.

She floated and landed behind Yue Bing too, "I'm Yue Clan Yue Bing!"

Yue Bing cried until she was completely confused, almost fainting in Luo Hua City Mistress embrace.

Yi Nan and Luo Hua City Mistress held her tightly, afraid that she would rashly rush forward to say that she was the real Yue Bing. The moment she was discovered, the deeper they would be in their trouble.

The Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace Dragon Ambassador Can Lang stepped onto the stage with great strides. His expression wasn't very good, but his eyes shone with determination.

"Very good, now only Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei and Princess Qian Qian left." The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast nodded his head satisfiedly. "The Soaring Dragon Continent indeed had talent all over its lands. I have gone to many continents before, but this is my first time seeing so many talented younger generations. Now we only need to wait for Princess Qian Qian and Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei to come up to the stage. Once we have the numbers, we would immediately leave this place. We will not take up so much of everyone's time."

“Bai Yun Fei is here.” The mysterious person in the private box had changed his clothes with Bai Yun Fei. After taking off his mask, it turned out that he looked very similar to Bai Yun fei, as if he was born to become Bai Yun Fei’s double.

The Dragon Spear Lady muttered something to Princess Qian Qian. She didn’t have a face-changing ability like the Sickly Beauty, but she wanted to risk herself and pose as Qian Qian, going up to the stage for her.

Princess Qian Qian quickly shook her head and hands, firmly rejecting her.

If Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the others weren’t caught by the Eastern Goblin Tribe, she would definitely not step out... But right now, there was no meaning in hiding. Their enemies had caught their seniors with the intention of making them, the juniors, show themselves. It could be said that their enemies had already anticipated everything in their plot, making it impossible for them to refuse.

Right now, there were only two ways. First was to beat up these few people, capture them and use them to exchange hostages.

This method would not be able to be achieved unless a strong Innate Ranker was here.

The second method was to give up, stop resisting and set off with the Eastern Goblin Tribe. When they found their relatives who

were held captive, they could wait for an opportunity to rescue them, but that was almost equivalent to reclaim the ocean with sand... Of course, it was not like there was no hope at all. As long as those Innate Rankers who protected the Soaring Dragon Continent could return from the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, go to the Eastern Goblin Tribe domain and rescue everyone, this method should be possible.

Princess Qian Qian knew that it would be best for her to stay and allow the Dragon Spear Lady to substitute her.

It was just that if Yue Yang and her father was really captured, why would she stay here alone? Wouldn't it be better to be captured together with them...

Hugging Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu, Yue Bing and Dragon Spear Lady goodbye, Princess Qian Qian wiped her tears away, walked down the audience seats bravely and stepped onto the fighting arena, her huge sword clanking loudly behind her back. In an instant, she recovered her tigress' formidable eyes, looking towards her enemy with proud, courageous eyes.

“What a great Princess of Da Xia! Women are definitely not inferior to men, you have your father's might!” The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast praised loudly.

Chapter 248 – Flying Tiger Ambassador

“If you want to invite us to the Rainbow Palace, you have to prove your capabilities to us.” Yue Yang decided to fight the enemies, but he also mentioned another condition, “When strong warriors fight, the impact from the clashes can easily harm innocent lives. I request that you allow the audience to leave. In any case, you only have business with the ten of us, and we have all gathered right in front of you now.”

“No problem.” The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast who had transformed into a middle-aged man finally agreed, “We are only inviting our honored guests, we don’t care about other human matters. They are all free to leave. However, if there are anyone amongst them who is willing to stay to watch the match, we will not stop them. It will be their choice. If anyone amongst them is willing to follow us to the Rainbow Palace to meet our Emperor, we will also be happy to oblige.”

A lot of people sighed, full of relief, when they heard the middle-aged man’s words.

It was definitely best if they could leave.

Who would want to stay here?

Those who had no business here obviously wanted to leave, the faster the better.

However, people like Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others on the

other hand, were not willing to leave. They hoped they could stay, wishing that they could be of help to Yue Yang even for a little bit.

Escaping on their own and letting Yue Yang fight alone was not something they could stomach.

The old fox definitely understood their thoughts, but he shot an angry glance at Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others as he shrouded Yue Bing with a cloak to hide her body and whispered an order, “Everyone, leave this place immediately. This is an opportunity to escape that Yue Yang have acquired for us with great difficulties! Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, you two lead the way. Maybe there are some Soaring Dragon Continent traitors or enemies who will try to kill us on our way. If that really happened, you have to lead in front and open the way for the rest... Everyone pay attention, the moment we get out from the area of effect of this sealed dimension, you must immediately use your teleportation scrolls and teleport to a safe place with the fastest speed. Hiding yourself is the first priority!”

Yue Bing also didn’t want to leave, but she knew that it was extremely crucial for her to leave.

If she didn’t leave, her brother wouldn’t be able to concentrate on his battle completely.

Due to her brother pampering her, she had slowly reverted to girlish personality previously, who cried and laugh easily. Her heart was not closed off like she was last time, but that did not mean she had become weak.

When she encountered a critical situation, her stubborn and unyielding fighting spirit immediately returned, resurfacing from her heart.

She looked at her brother meaningfully, then wiped away her tears and pulled Yi Nan and Yue Yu out from the Stadium.

Yi Nan and Yue Yu were not strong enough. Right now, her brother couldn't afford to pay attention to them, so it was her turn to protect them. Yue Bing didn't look for Luo Hua City Mistress. She knew that Sister Luo Hua would definitely not leave. If there was no opportunity to escape, Sister Luo Hua would stay to protect everyone. However, if there was an opportunity to escape, she would still stay because she would choose to fight by her brother's side.

Sister Luo Hua's [Aurora] after [Body Fusion] was one of her brother's secret weapon after all.

"I really hate this. I am the big boss, yet I have to escape and leave my little brother to fight alone. How could I face the others as the big boss this way!" Fatty Hai's eyes turned as red as a wolf's as he dashed right to the front. He was ready to face any kind of things that might happen. Ye Kong and Li Brothers also followed, opening the path in front for the others.

If Yue Bing, Yi Nan, Yue Yu and the others weren't there, Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others would never leave even if they were half-dead.

But right now, they must leave to protect the girls, until they reached a safe place.

The whole stadium was in chaos. If they were allowed leave this place, obviously no one wanted to stay.

There were some who summoned their flying beast and rode away, and those who couldn't fly also quickly ran towards the exit doors. The mercenaries were all panicked and terrified. It was the students, on the other hand, who were calm and more orderly, listening to their teachers' and the referee's orders. They quickly grouped themselves and left the place in an orderly fashion.

The old fox looked at Yue Yang and made a hand gesture for him not to worry. Then, he quickly rushed to Yue Bing's and the others' side to protect them.

The person who wanted to stay the most was him, but he could never let a whole lot of people without a strong Ranker leave without protection. What if there were enemies lying in ambush...

There were actually quite a few who stayed.

Some were mercenaries with more gut than the others, some were Sect Disciples like the Western Lion Pagoda Disciples and Zhi Jin Academies students. Without Prince of Zi Jin, they couldn't leave. Otherwise, returning to the Zhi Jin Kingdom would only mean death. Amongst those who stayed, there were also some who were the organizers of the tournament. Most of them only

possessed special-type beasts, so they did not have much combat power. However, they were experts in healing and regeneration, hence they stayed behind in the hopes of becoming a help to Yue Yang and the others when they are needed.

There were also Dragon Spear Lady, Luo Hua City Mistress and other secretly strong warriors waiting outside the fighting arena, storing up their energy in order to save Yue Yang and the others at any moment.

Lastly, there was also Bai Yun Fei who was hiding inside his private box, not letting out a single squeak.

He didn't know why he did not leave and take advantage of the opportunity to escape. Instead, he had stayed behind.

From within the middle of the black pillar of light that had fused with the middle of the Runic Circle, another man with a huge pair of tiger-striped wings appeared, flapping his wings.

He shouted at the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast who had transformed into a middle-aged man, "Jin Jing, you are too slow. Get those targets and leave this place immediately. We need sacrifices to the Thousand Heads Beast to maintain this passage, so you can't afford to be slow. Xiong and Mei Brothers, capture those people immediately. As long as you don't kill them and violate our agreement, you don't have to worry about anything. Move!"

That Fiery Golden Eyes Beast's expression immediately changed when he saw the other visitor. He cupped his hand and bowed

respectfully, “Greetings to the Flying Tiger Ambassador. Since you have said that, Jin Jing will entrust everything here to the Flying Tiger. Jin Jing ask for permission to be excused.”

Like the Flying Tiger Ambassador, the middle-aged man flew into the middle of the Runic Circle and disappeared.

Before he left, it seemed like he glanced at Yue Yang for an instant.

Hearing the Flying Tiger Ambassador’s words, the two black-clothed man and two red-robed man dashed forward like lightning. Yan Po Jun, Feng Qi Sha and the others were already prepared beforehand, almost summoning their grimoires right at the same time. They blocked the four people’s attack with their protective shield just in time. In mid-air, that Flying Tiger Ambassador condensed a terrifying ball of light in his hands as he shouted towards Yue Yang, “Stop resisting right now and be obedient. If you stop resisting and obediently leave with us, we might still allow you guys to keep your combat powers. Otherwise, if you resist, I won’t stand in ceremony when I capture you guys later... Think about it carefully. I’m not like that Jin Jing who likes to talk in a refined manner. I, the Flying Tiger, am an existence with much stronger powers that won’t tolerate disobedience!”

“...” Yue Yang realized that this Flying Tiger Ambassador was indeed much stronger than the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast. However, based on their wisdom and battle potential, that refined Jin Jing was more terrifying.

When Yue Yang saw that Jin Jing had left and the Flying Tiger Ambassador was about to unleash his attack, he knew that he couldn't drag the battle out anymore.

In the end, he still couldn't wait for the Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the different countries to come...

Maybe the Heavenly Imperial Guardians were still battling, so they were too busy to come here!

Fortunately Yue Bing and the others had already left this place. Although they had not gone very far, but if Yue Yang and the others fought now, they wouldn't be harmed from the impacts of the attacks.

“Listen, I will count to ten. If you guys are still hiding behind your protective shields, I will release a [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave] every ten seconds at those people who were escaping. I guarantee that those friends and fellow schoolmates of yours who had not gone very far will all die horribly. 1, 2, 3...” The Flying Tiger Ambassador raised a ball of light into the sky. As long as he released it, no matter at which direction, the crowd of people outside would definitely be heavily injured.

“Since things have come to this, everyone, let's fight with all our might!” Yue Yang knew that he couldn't drag the time anymore. He was the first to recall his summoning grimoire and started to turn his Reaper Mantis into an armor, turning it into an unusual looking Reaper Mantis Armor. It was a pity that he didn't learn much on transforming armors, he was not yet able to display that kind of power that the sickly beauty had. Furthermore, the Reaper

Mantis wasn't counted as the best armor transformation beast at this period of time. Yue Yang could only cover up thirty percent of his body in the armor transformation.

However, even that made the Flying Tiger Ambassador frown.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador pointed at Yue Yang and shouted at the Xiong and Mei Brothers, "Leave this human boy to me. Get the others quickly, we don't have much time!"

Yan Po Jun, Feng Qi Sha, Dragon Ambassador Cang Lan and the guy who substituted Bai Yun Fei all started summoning their strongest beasts and attacked the Oldest Xiong Brother. They felt that they had the most chance of winning fighting him four to one.

Xue Tan Lang fought against the Second Xiong Brother alone.

He knew that he would definitely not win fighting against a strong enemy alone, but he did that in order to reduce his other friends' pressure.

Another person with the same thoughts as him was Princess Qian Qian. She fought against the red-clothed Mei Hua Bao, the older brother of Mei Hua Brothers, in order to give the opportunity for the mysterious beauty and the sickly beauty to fight the second Mei Hua Brother two on one. Dragon Spear Lady and Luo Hua City Mistress also gathered their strongest powers, prepared to help anytime. The weird thing was that Bai Yun Fei, who was hiding inside the private box, was hiding his presence instead, as if he intended to stand by and not do anything.

The Bloody Queen Red followed Yue Yang closely behind, rising into the sky together with Yue Yang as they flew towards the Flying Tiger Ambassador.

The great battle commenced with the explosion of her [Banshee Scream]

Every single Eastern Goblin Tribe people did not have summoned beast, maybe it was because their existence themselves was already like a summoned beast. When the [Banshee Scream] exploded, the Flying Tiger Ambassador divide himself into two bodies, one of them condensing the [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave], ruthlessly throwing it at Yue Yang. The other body moved a hundred times faster than lightning towards the black-clothed Xiong Brother who was fighting against Yan Po Jun and three others.

His two hands condensed two tiger-head shaped ball of lights, separately shooting them towards Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun's back.

Dragon Ambassador Cang Lan had just turned around when he saw the Flying Tiger Ambassador releasing a tiger-like shockwave from his mouth, exploding it right at Dragon Ambassador Cang Lan's face.

On the other side, the black-clothed older brother Xiong's fist was one meter apart from colliding onto the guy who pretended to be Bai Yun Fei... However, Bai Yun Fei's double avoided it and sent a heavy blow onto the older brother Xiong's chest. Alas, he was

only pushed two steps back, there were no other reactions. Bai Yun Fei's double was surprised to find that Feng Qi Sha and the other two people did not come forward to help him attack the black-clothed man. When he turned around, he found that all three of them had already fallen on the ground. Behind him, a fist that was flying towards him fast like a meteor suddenly appeared before him. Shocked, Bai Yun Fei's double immediately leapt into the sky, trying to avoid the attack.

“A Level 8 [Emperor] human. Not bad... It's a pity that you met me, Flying Tiger!” Flying Tiger's body suddenly disappeared.

He then re-appeared right above Bai Yun Fei's double who had leapt into the sky.

His five fingers were spread out as he slammed his palm unavoidably onto Bai Yun Fei's double's head.

A terrifying shockwave ensued. The attack had created a pillar of light that slammed Bai Yun Fei's double straight onto the fighting arena, buried deep into the ground.

As Bai Yun Fei's double struggled to crawl out in pain, one of the Flying Tiger raised his large hands and condensed another round of [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave], prepared to smash it towards Bai Yun Fei's double...

Bai Yun Fei's double's eyes were filled with despair and terror.

Chapter 249 – Interception, Pursuit

Rumble...

Just as the Flying Tiger Ambassador was about to smash Bai Yun Fei's double with his [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave], suddenly, a loud sound exploded in his ears.

On the stage, a figure suddenly shot out like a meteor into the ground, smashing the tiles on the fighting arena into pieces.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador was greatly surprised.

This was because the figure which was blasted away was not of those little human children, it was the younger Xiong Brother who was fighting against the guy whose appearance was cold like ice.

That ice-cold guy actually had the ability to blast the younger Xiong Brother away?

But that brat wasn't even a Level 7 [Overlord]...

The Flying Tiger Ambassador definitely would not believe it. When he turned around, he realized that the older Xiong Brother behind him had also already been blasted away. His body smashed deep into the ground just like his younger brother... Only then did the Flying Tiger Ambassador find out that the one who sent the younger and older Xiong Brothers away was not that ice-cold guy, but that other guy who was wearing the half-crying half-laughing

Golden Mask. He had not only sent the Xiong Brothers flying, he had even condensed a giant fire shield to block the older Mei Hua Brother's claws. He managed to deal with three out of the four Xiong and Mei Hua Brothers alone. It was really unimaginable.

This person, he obviously had to deal with the Flying Tiger's own copy, how could he have the time to assist the others?

When the Flying Tiger Ambassador turned around towards Yue Yang, he froze again.

In the sky, his other body had already been frozen completely. His hands were still making the [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave]'s gesture, making him look like he had raised his hands in surrender.

His frozen body dropped towards the ground very quickly, and smashed onto the fighting arena, producing a loud, thundering sound. Shattered blocks of ice scattered all around!

"What happened?" The Flying Tiger Ambassador was extremely confused. Even if that human child could see through that his other body only had a tenth of his main body's power, he shouldn't be able to freeze his copy into ice, should he? Furthermore, how could the Xiong Brother be defeated by warriors below the Innate Rank? Also, where did the [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave] that his copy had unleashed just now go?

"..." Of course, Yue Yang wouldn't answer him that the Xiong Brothers were actually sent flying by the Flying Tiger

Ambassador's own [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave].

“Aghh!” The Xiong Brothers howled loudly. They shook their bodies as they sent quakes all over the fighting arena.

From within the smashed tiles, they suddenly shot forward.

Although they were sent flying by Yue Yang's ingenious maneuver of the Flying Tiger Ambassador's [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave], their strong bodies only suffered light injuries.

Only a small part of their skin was burnt black.

The Eastern Goblin Tribe had an unimaginably thick and tough skin.

Although they were not Innates, but they had strongly built bodies that had reached the peak of their training. Other than an Innate Ranker's attack, they could ignore every other attack. In comparison, a Level 9 [Saint] human ranker would at least be internally injured when they received a round of [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave]. Of course, although a human body was not comparable to beasts, goblins and other races, their wisdom were higher than the rest.

As long as humans could reach Level 9 [Saint], they would definitely become an Innate Ranker.

That was not the case with the Eastern Goblin Tribe.

The younger Mei Hua Brother slashed his mighty claws onto Princess Qian Qian. Princess Qian Qian didn't receive it physically, instead, she summoned her grimoire and raised her protective shield, blocking the attack.

She was only responsible for holding up the younger Mei Hua Brother, allowing Yue Yang, Wu Xia and Wu Hen to kill the older Mei Hua Brother.

“Xiong Brothers, take these few human kids away first. Mei Hua Brothers and I will follow you after.” The Flying Tiger Ambassador looked at the unconscious Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and the others sprawling all over the ground, waved his hands and ordered the Xiong Brothers to take those people away. Otherwise, in the upcoming huge battle they were going to have, these defenseless, unconscious people might get accidentally killed.

The Xiong Brothers were extremely furious, but they still listened to orders.

One of them carried the heavily injured Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun, while the other carried the unconscious Dragon Ambassador Cang Lan and Prince of Zi Jin. They roared loudly as they shot towards the black pillar of light in the middle of the Runic Circle, disappearing without trace.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador delivered a punch onto his copy that was frozen in ice, freeing himself from the trap of ice.

Fusing together again with his copy, the Flying Tiger Ambassador recovered his full strength and charged towards Yue Yang.

Yue Yang immediately summoned his grimoire and erected his shield.

As the impact of the Flying Tiger Ambassador's punch caused ripples all over Yue Yang's protective shield and disappeared ineffectively in the end, Yue Yang unleashed [Binding Chains] on him to bind him on the spot.

The Bloody Queen Red dove down from the sky and released a [Banshee Scream] on the Flying Tiger Ambassador's ears as she pierced the Gold Dragon Slaying Dagger and Silver Eye Destroyer Dagger into both of the Flying Tiger Ambassador's eyes. Yue Yang then followed with a shameless attack. He used his maximum power to swing his First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash, covered in fire with his fire ability, right across the Flying Tiger Ambassador's lower body. He was deliberately trying to turn this Flying Tiger into an eunuch. Since the Eastern Goblin Tribe possessed a strong, robust body, making a normal attack was useless on them. Hence, Yue Yang was forced to attack the enemy's vital parts instead.

On the other side, Xue Tan Lang and Princess Qian Qian had all summoned their grimoires and hid underneath their protective shields. Even when the younger Mei Hua Brother slashed and clawed at their shields, they were completely safe and sound.

As for the older Mei Hua Brother, he found that his fastest speed couldn't actually outrun the two girls in front of him.

His attacks repeatedly missed his targets. Frustrated, the older Mei Hua Brother furiously rushed towards the side of the fighting arena and attacked Luo Hua City Mistress, who was standing below the stage.

Luo Hua City Mistress immediately summoned her grimoire and erected her protective shield, easily blocking the life-threatening slash. At the same time, the three-tailed fox at her feet quickly grew bigger. Its six tails swayed elegantly as it emit its sweet fragrance all around... Luo Hua City Mistress had been charging her [Aurora] skill all this while, and she had reached the maximum charging amount of her skill. Her terrifying [Aurora] shot straight at the older Mei Hua Brother. On the other end, the Flying Tiger Ambassador, whom Yue Yang was slashing with his sword, was conveniently standing in her [Aurora]'s straight path of light.

This was the unexplainable, impeccable teamwork between Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yang.

They did not need to speak to have great teamwork in battles.

The older Mei Hua Brother obviously didn't want to bear the brunt of her terrifying [Aurora]. He jumped to the other side to avoid the attack.

However, the moment he avoided the attack, the Flying Tiger Ambassador who was still bound by [Binding Chains] became very unfortunate. The [Aurora] shot straight at him, exploding on his body.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador's body was flung onto the other side of the audience pit hundreds of metres away. The impact of the [Aurora] caused a huge hole on the ground, crushing the stone tiles and burying the Flying Tiger Ambassador within. On the other side, the older Mei Hua Brother who had just avoided the [Aurora] watched both in alarm and relief secretly in his heart. However, just as he was doing this, a punch that was no weaker than his own punch shot heavily onto his nose.

This was the Dragon Spear Lady's sneak punch. She immediately displayed her magnificent and powerful strength the moment she attacked.

The older Mei Hua Brother's head smashed right into the ground when he was punched.

When he tried crawling out of the hole on the ground, he couldn't help but to spit a mouthful of blood.

This was the first time in this battle that an Eastern Goblin Tribe member vomited blood... When the older Mei Hua Brother saw the blood in his hands, he looked like he didn't believe what just happened... She wasn't an Innate Ranker, yet she had actually beaten him until he vomited blood?

In the sky, the black pillar of light and the Runic Circle slowly started to quiver and dissipate, as if it was about to disappear anytime.

The Mei Brothers felt it and looked upwards, their expression turning anxious and worried.

They have to go right now.

But the Flying Tiger Ambassador had not given them the order to go...

Amidst the stone crumbles on the audience pit at the opposite side, the Flying Tiger Ambassador sent the pieces of stone covering his body away with his Qi. Stones both small and big in sizes flew all over the sky. His eyes weren't injured, but he had shed tears of pain. At the same time, his lower body was burnt black. It seemed like although he didn't turn into an eunuch, he was still heavily injured. As for Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora], it only burnt the skin of his head black, but it didn't seem to cause any other grave injuries.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador was furious beyond compare as he roared loudly towards Yue Yang, "If I have enough time, I would have torn you into pieces."

He flew quickly onto the middle of the fighting arena and carried Bai Yun Fei's double's body and flew towards the disappearing black pillar of light, before signalling to the others to return.

Before he left, he turned around and angrily shouted at Yue Yang, "If you have the guts, come over here and chase after us. I will be waiting for you in Ancient Passage. We'll have a one-on-one duel. If you win, you can take back all the people we kidnapped!

You, do you have the guts to come after us?”

Yue Yang, the mysterious beauty Wu Xia, the sickly beauty Wu Hen all gave each other a glance before leaping up into the sky at the same time.

Princess Qian Qian purposely leapt a little slower, waiting for Luo Hua City Mistress.

Xue Tan Lang, on the other hand, didn't pursue them like Yue Yang and the others did. Instead, he released an ice-cold tornado to attack the younger Mei Hua Brother who was flying up to the sky. He was prepared to give up his life in order to keep one of the Eastern Goblin Tribe here. On the other side, the Dragon Spear Lady also attacked the older Mei Hua Brother in mid-air. As long as these two Eastern Goblin Tribe members weren't able to reach the black pillar of light before it disappeared, they would definitely die in Soaring Dragon Continent... The Heavenly Imperial Guardians who were too slow to arrive and the strong warriors from various countries would definitely not let them off.

The younger Mei Hua Brother resisted Xue Tan Lang's tornado and flew up with all his might.

Yue Yang threw down a [Spherical Beheader] and hacked it onto the younger Mei Hua Brother's head. That younger Mei Hua Brother howled out in pain, but continued to resist and finally managed to enter into the black pillar of light.

Princess Qian Qian waved her great sword. The older Mei Hua

Brother who had just intercepted Dragon Spear Lady's attack was slashed by Princess Qian Qian's great sword... The older Mei Hua Brother also wanted to force himself into the black pillar of light, but the mysterious beauty Wu Xia who had disguised herself as Yue Bing condensed a shard of ice and lightning in both of her hands, smashing them onto the right and left side of his face at the same time. The older Mei Hua Brother slashed his claws in pain and confusion, but he was easily blocked by the sickly beauty's Crystal Shield armor.

There were the Dragon Spear Lady and Xue Tan Lang below and [Double Aurora], Luo Hua City Mistress' upgraded [Aurora] after using [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang, right above him.

Dragon Spear Lady's meteor-like punch strike hard at the older Mei Hua brother right as Wu Xia's hands left him. Xue Tan Lang's tornado came and covered the whole sky, tearing the older Mei Hua Brother's body into shreds.

In the sky, the [Double Aurora] which was ten times more frightening than [Aurora] was shot out from Yue Yang's and Luo Hua City Mistress' hands...

The [Double Aurora] slowly turned into a gigantic pillar of light, shooting right at the surprised older Mei Hua Brother, blasting him away.

The destructive [Double Aurora] blasted the older Mei Hua Brother several meters away.

The crumbled pieces of stone on the audience pit turned into ashes under the blast of [Double Aurora].

When the blinding light passed, underneath a huge cavity caused by the [Double Aurora], Yue Yang realized that the older Mei Hua Brother had actually not die. Instead, he regained his original a form, a giant Plum Leopard who looked dispirited and whose whole body was terribly cut up all over. It was almost 20 meters long from its head to its tail, and its body was almost as huge as a small hill. It couldn't be compared to the Thunder Leopard or others of its type in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Even the Giant Mammoth and the Battle Kodo Beast looked puny compared to this Plum Leopard.

No wonder it didn't die no matter how much it was beaten. Turns out the Eastern Goblin Tribe's people had such a gigantic body.

Dragon Spear Lady actually wanted to follow Yue Yang and the others to fight the strong enemies, but when she saw this, she quickly waved towards Yue Yang and said, "You guys, go! Leave this fellow to me. Xue Tan Lang, go and call the old fox here quickly. This fellow will not be so easy to kill!"

From within the Dragon Spear Lady's body, a cute little panda suddenly appeared. It shouted to Yue Yang, putting on an "I-am-super-awesome" air as it said, "Niu Niu will definitely help mum to defeat this bad fellow. Big brother, when you return, you must reward Niu Niu with lots of candies, okay!" Yue Yang was long prepared to deal with the little panda girl. She was more or less the same as Yue Shuang the little girl anyway. A candy was the

greatest weapon to them.

Yue Yang's ability to entertain kids was at Grandmaster's level after all, he was always prepared with a lot of candies at hand. He showed them to the little panda girl

When the little panda girl saw the candies, her fighting spirit increased to 100 points immediately, her combat power increasing to 1000 points... On the other hand, Luo Hua City Mistress and the other girls were all greatly shocked. Why would this fellow bring so many candies with him all the time? Could it be that he was prepared to kidnap little girls anytime?

"Go away, little kids will have toothache if they eat too much candies!" The drunk cat big sis who had disguised herself as the Dragon Spear Lady was deeply unsatisfied with Yue Yang's attempt at abducting her 'precious girl' Niu Niu.

"Here, wine for you!" Yue Yang was also prepared to abduct the drunk cat big sis together with the little panda girl as he threw a bottle of wine to her.

"Who the hell drinks wine during a battle!" The drunk cat onesan was completely driven mad. She wanted to smash the wine that Yue Yang threw to her into pieces initially, but when she saw that it was good wine, she couldn't bear to smash it just like that.

"Let's chase after them quickly, the pillar of light is almost gone." The mysterious beauty Wu Xia took the lead and entered

into the black pillar of light. Next, the sickly beauty, Princess Qian Qian, and Yue Yang who was holding Luo Hua City Mistress' hands all followed through. When the gigantic Plum Leopard was about to jump and chase after them, Yue Yang bestowed it with another [Spherical Beheader]. Yue Yang and Luo Hua leapt into the black pillar of light as that giant Plum Leopard fell onto the ground from mid-air. When it was about to try and jump again, the black pillar of light and the Runic Circle had already disappeared without trace.

The giant Plum Leopard howled out, its voice so loud that it shook the grounds and reverberated through the clouds.

Xue Tan Lang and the drunk cat big sis looked at each other. The Soaring Dragon Continent finally managed to capture one of the Eastern Goblin Tribe member who had infiltrated them. Although it was only an Imperial Guard-level Plum Leopard, it was better than nothing. They would definitely be able to dig out a lot of information from this Plum Leopard.

Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and the others who entered the black pillar of light realized that they were teleported into a dark gigantic passage.

The mysterious beauty Wu Xia frowned her brows, "This is not Tong Tian Tower, this place is still in the Soaring Dragon Continent... If I'm not wrong, this should be Death Canyon. It seems like we are in the Ancient Passage that surrounds the God's Ruins! It's not easy for warriors who dwell in the Outer Realm of the Tong Tian Tower to come to Soaring Dragon Continent. They would have to first enter the Ancient Passage, then teleport out of

it to Tong Tian Tower. This Ancient Passage is the only passage that links the Outer Realm to Tong Tian Tower. Of course, it is also difficult for them in order to enter the Ancient Passage. They would need to offer a great amount of sacrifice in order to open the teleportation gate into the Ancient Passage...”

“Is it the same as a Demon King requiring a blood sacrifice in order to teleport to the Soaring Dragon Continent from the Demon Abyss?” Yue Yang remembered the fight at White Stone City when Xie Huo used a great amount of blood sacrifice to summon the Demon King Ha Xin.

“No.” The sickly beauty shook her hands and said, “It is also not easy for Demon Abyss dwellers to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent. They can easily go to any levels of the Tong Tian Tower, but they won’t be able to leave at will. It’s similar to when we enter the Demon Abyss, we also can’t leave there at will. If a Demon King came to the Soaring Dragon Continent, it must be because he had come to the Soaring Dragon Continent before to train and left some kind of trace here. Only with the help of his devout followers offering blood sacrifice as a guide, will he be able to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent... The stronger the dimension-traveller, the harder it is to form the inter-dimensional passage. If it was a strong being like the Demon King who had not come to the Soaring Dragon Continent before, I think he would need at least ten thousand, or even a hundred thousand of Demon Abyss dwellers to offer as sacrifice if he wants to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent. Only then would he be able to open the teleporting space between Demon Abyss and Soaring Dragon Continent. Furthermore, he would need someone in the Soaring Dragon Continent to guide him... If there were no traitors or spies in the Soaring Dragon Continent, strong enemies like Demon Kings and Eastern Goblin Tribe people would definitely not be able

to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent!”

“I found some trace of blood!” Princess Qian Qian’s [Six Records] was very sharp, she immediately discovered some traces of blood not far off from them.

“Seems like we did not deviate too much during our teleportation to this Ancient Passage. We are just right behind our enemies!” The mysterious beauty Wu Xia looked at Yue Yang, “Are you sure you want to lift your Innate strength limiter? Your recovery period is not over yet...”

“I’m alright.” Yue Yang knew that the effects of overusing his Innate powers were terrifying. He could overuse his powers anytime and die, but he believed that he could control his own powers.

As long as he did not lose control of his mind, then his body would probably not crumble apart.

Furthermore, he still had these few strong and capable girls to help him. Yue Yang was kind of assured in lifting the limiter on his Innate powers. He knew that even if he had reached the limits during a battle, they would be able to take him away from this place and heal his injuries. Since he did not need to worry about the consequences, why not exert all of his power? Yue Yang did not lift his Innate powers limiter during the tournament championship, because he needed a lot of time to lift it. He thought the Eastern Goblin Tribe would probably be gone before he finished lifting the seal on his Innate powers.

Now that he had chased after them to this Ancient Passage, as long as he caught up with the Flying Tiger Ambassador and the others and was able to lift the seal on his Innate powers, they would definitely not be able to escape from him unscathed.

Just as Yue Yang was discussing their strategy with the four girls, a whooshing sound of wind was heard from afar.

Was it the enemy?

Or was it the rumoured, legendary terrifying monster who lived in the Ancient Passage and had never seen the light of the sun before?

Chapter 250 – Showtime Of True Powers Once Again!

Ancient Passage.

In this gigantic Ancient Passage, if a human was to look all around, he would feel really small and insignificant.

The end of the passage couldn't be seen, and its height was endlessly high. On the walls of this Ancient Passage, one could see caves that were as spacious as the Championship Stadium on its walls. No one knew what they were used for. Every few meters apart, there would be crystal stones embedded on the walls that slightly emitted light, illuminating the Ancient Passage. The Ancient Passage was humongous, and its path was uneven. Sometimes, there would be high ground, and sometimes there would be low grounds caused by the giant stones that lasted continuously without end.

The Ancient Passage was also not a straight path, having frequent left and right turns like the body of a snake.

The thing that made Yue Yang become alert was that the Ancient Passage's walls were decorated with carvings everywhere.

"Everyone, wait a moment. Let's look at these carvings..." Yue Yang had a sudden thought. Maybe these carvings on the wall were clues to something. He quickly gestured at the four girls to stop.

Those sculptures looked very similar to the sculptures that Yue Yang had seen in the Rear Halls of the Twelve Zodiac Temples in Tong Tian Tower. However, they were much bigger. Almost every God or Deity Sculptures were several metres or even hundreds of metres high.

Different kinds of mysterious Runic Circles and symbols decorated the walls, as if they were stars in the skies.

They faintly looked like they were interconnected to each other.

However, they formed an extremely confusing puzzle that was difficult to make out distinctly, leaving others with a deja-vu feeling.

Some parts of the walls were also carved with different types of beasts, most of them were beasts that did not exist in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Even the sisters, Wu Xia and Wu Hen, who possessed the richest knowledge couldn't recognise these beasts.

There were also humans carved on the walls, but in comparison, they were only as big as a grain of rice. Those humans looked puny and weak, they could even be described as insignificant. Yue Yang also discovered that there were carvings of the Eastern Goblin Tribe members fighting a great battle against other tribes on the wall. As they walked a little further up, Yue Yang saw a Fiery Golden Eyes Beast, a Valiant Bear, Plum Leopards and the other Eastern Goblin Tribe members massacring a legion of Demons from the Demon Abyss. These Demon Legions couldn't be compared to those Demon Legions in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Further up, Yue Yang saw something that shocked him.

In front, the most distinct engraving was a carving of a Golden Winged Great [Peng](#) spreading its wings that were ten thousands of miles wide. It was so majestic and gigantic that the Demon Legion from the Demon Abyss were as puny as ants at its feet.

“If the Emperor that the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast and the others are talking about is this Golden Winged Great Peng, we are really going to be in deep trouble this time!”

Yue Yang was a guy from another world. Although there were no legends about the Golden Winged Great Peng in the Soaring Dragon Continent, he had read a lot of books in his previous lives, so he knew the might of a Golden Winged Great Peng. Based on mythologies, this Golden Winged Great Peng was not an ordinary figure. It was a terrifying existence who possessed a wingspan of more than 3,360,000 li, and ate at least a Dragon King and five hundred smaller dragons every single day.

In , this [Golden Winged Great Peng](#) was revealed to be the Buddha’s Godmother in the end. It was a super strong BOSS who could defeat Sun Wu Kong with ordinary Kung Fu skills.

In , [it was written](#) that there was a fish in the Northern Ocean called Kun. Kun was humongous, its body was at least thousands of li big. It then evolved into a bird, and was called a Peng. Peng’s back spanned over thousands of li wide. When it flew, its wings looked like it could cover up the whole earth.

It was also said that the Peng resided in the south, in a place that could only be reached by travelling three thousand li of water and flying ninety thousand li of height.

When Yue Yang told the girls about it, although he only said that the Golden Winged Great Peng ate five hundred dragons, he had already thoroughly scared the four girls stiff. He did not even mention about the Buddha and Sun Wu Kong,

Princess Qian Qian's reaction was to proclaim her disbelief, "That's impossible! How could a bird have a wingspan of 3,360,000 li? Where would it fly to then, the sky wouldn't even be enough for it! Furthermore, it couldn't have eaten five hundred dragons everyday. Even if it could eat five hundred dragons, there's not enough dragons in this world for it to eat, wouldn't it die from hunger then! Little liar, you are just trying to scare us, aren't you? I don't believe you!"

Yue Yang shook his hands, ""Actually, it's not those kind of gold-ranked dragons or Black Dragons, those overgrown lizards. It ate those types of Python Dragon Kings who could grow up to thousand li long. Legends said that the Golden Winged Great Peng's daily menu was one Python Dragon King as the main dish and five hundred small dragons as snack."

Princess Qian Qian's smile disappeared when she heard that as she said, "That's even more impossible!"

"It's big beyond compare, that's for sure. But I don't think it is as big as he had exaggerated it to be." The mysterious beauty Wu Xia mediated between Yue Yang and Princess Qian Qian.

"If the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast's Emperor is that Golden Winged

Great Peng, how can we fight it?” When Luo Hua City Mistress saw the gigantic engraving on the walls, her heart sunk a little. In this picture, the Golden Winged Great Peng’s wings were hundreds of meters wide, while the Demon Kings and Lich Kings were only a few meters tall and a Demon Marshall was a person’s height. If this illustration was based on a real-life scale, if Yue Yang and the four girls really came to the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s domain in order to see this Golden Winged Great Peng, they wouldn’t even be fit to be the food remains stuck in between its teeth.

“We definitely wouldn’t be able to defeat it right now. Heck, we might not even be able to escape from it.” Yue Yang was really sweating hard. Even Sun Wu Kong couldn’t defeat it, how could he possibly defeat the Golden Winged Great Peng!

“Then what should we do?” Luo Hua City Mistress also sweated. They had pursued them to the Ancient Passage now, must they return back with tails in between their legs?

“Kings should fight against other kings and generals against generals. Since we belonged to lesser soldiers category, we should defeat the opponents lesser soldiers.” Yue Yang comforted them and said, “Furthermore, there are [different types of Golden Winged Great Pengs](#). There are other Golden Winged birds, such as Andaja (birth from an egg), Jarayuja (birth from a womb), Samsvedaja (birth from moisture) and Upapaduka (birth from evolution). Andaja will eat egg-laying dragons, Jarayuja will eat both egg-laying and birthing dragons, and Samsvedaja will eat egg-laying, birthing dragons and dragons that came from water. As for Upapaduka, it will eat whatever it could find, it had no diet restriction! The biggest one would be the Golden Winged Great Peng, who had a wingspan of 3,360,000 li. However, the smallest

Golden Winged Bird's wingspan might not even be 336 m wide..."

"We still couldn't possibly defeat a 336 wing-spanned bird!" Princess Qian Qian laughed as she shook her hand.

Bai Yun Fei's Gold Dragon which was Gold-ranked Level 7 was already terrifying enough with its wing span of over 20 metres. If they met a Golden Winged Great Peng with a wingspan of 336 meters, what could they possibly do?

They did not even need to fight, as long as it flapped its wings, it could probably blow a whole army away!

Luo Hua City Mistress became even more curious as she listened to Yue Yang's stories. She asked, "I know birth from an egg and birth from a womb, but what is birth from moisture and birth from evolution?"

Yue Yang put on his nerdy glasses and started to preach, "The concept of birth from moisture originated from a cause-and-effect philosophy. Due to the presence of water, a new life has formed. This includes different types of insect-types lives such as maggots. As for birth from evolution, hmm... It meant something like gaining some kind of new powers that you had never have before, or maybe experiencing a change in your mental state, turning into another person or thing... Of course, this is not an accurate explanation, but it's more or less like that."

When he said this, a thought suddenly flashed across his mind.

He remembered the big loli in his Dream Realm, who was created by the Sword Goddess's condensed Sword Qi. Does she count as 'birth from evolution'?

If the big loli in his Dream Realm was an existence that was born from evolution, the highest form of birth, then who is the Heavenly Sword Goddess who created her? Was she a little Creator? When he thought about it again, she was the Flying Sword that he had stolen from that Old Daoist Priest. Then, what kind of an extraordinary existence was that Old Daoist Priest?

Damn, that Old Daoist Priest might just be an extraordinary figure who liked to play the part of a weak person, purposely disguising himself as a poor Old Daoist Priest to trick him.

When Yue Yang thought of this, he suddenly felt like he was cheated.

Could it be that the Old Daoist Priest had sent him to the Soaring Dragon Continent so that he could clean up the Old Daoist Priest's mess?

That damned old geezer, he made a mess out of this place and ended up making him clean up the mess... Yue Yang immediately felt angry. Fortunately the Old Daoist Priest wasn't here, otherwise, he would probably beat that Old Daoist Priest without mercy. He really have never seen such an irresponsible deity before!

"What's wrong with you?" Luo Hua City Mistress hurriedly

patted Yue Yang's shoulders when she saw him turning quiet for a long time without reaction, "Did you think of something?"

"Nothing!" Yue Yang hurriedly switched the topic. "The Golden Winged Great Peng is an extremely strong boss that is supposed to be our opponent in the future when we have levelled up. We shouldn't be meeting it right now... However, any Eastern Goblin Tribe member is a terrifying monster, like that Fiery Golden Eyes Beast and Flying Tiger, most of them were actually other people's mount, an extremely low form of existence. It would be alright if we met these people, we will definitely get a headache if we met their masters. Hope that they won't have masters forever! Just now, I think I heard a wind blowing sound. Let's just chase after them first and think about this later."

"I heard that there are a lot of terrifying monsters in the Ancient Passage who had never seen daylight. We must be more careful." the sickly beauty Wu Hen who had been silent all along suddenly reminded them.

"There shouldn't be. Although the passage is big, there is no food here. If there is no food, I think those creatures must have died from hunger!" Princess Qian Qian was more concerned about the current situation, she felt that it was impossible for monsters to exist in the Ancient Passage.

Yue Yang and the four girls walked forward through the various engravings and the gigantic windings of the passage. They ran for a few miles on the uneven road.

Suddenly, Princess Qian Qian who had sharp sense due to her [Six

Records] Inherent Skill gestured at the others to stop.

Her nose twitched as she said, “There’s a very strong reek of blood in front!”

Very quickly, Yue Yang, Wu Xia and the others smelt it too. From far, the smell of fresh blood drifted towards them. Yue Yang and the four girls walked quietly nearer to the source, and to their surprise, they discovered the younger Mei Hua Brother who was lying in his own pool of blood. At this time, the younger Mei Hua Brother had already reverted to his original appearance. Yue Yang and the four girls were deeply shocked with the sight. Although they were delayed because they were viewing the paintings in the walls, not even 10 minutes have passed in total. Who could kill this younger Mei Hua Brother who was so strong and powerful so quickly, within ten minutes?

Furhtermore, the kill was silent without sound.

Could it be that it was the terrifying monsters in the Ancient Passage who had never seen daylight before?

Luo Hua City Mistress was not scared of terrifying monsters, but she was kind of scared by ghosts and spirits, those kinds of incorporeal beings. She was also scared of the darkness.

Thinking that this Plum Leopard had died in a strange way, she couldn’t help thinking that this was the doing of some ghosts. She held onto Yue Yang’s arms tight, as if she wanted his protection. Seeing this side of her really made Yue Yang laugh secretly. This

Luo Hua girl wasn't afraid of anything usually, turns out she was afraid of the dark...

In the future he would definitely bring her to a place so dark she couldn't see her fingers. He would probably be lucky then.

Princess Qian Qian didn't care about ghosts at all, she even dared to go towards the Plum Leopard's corpse to find out about its cause of death.

When she returned, she shook her head towards Yue Yang, showing that she couldn't find it out.

Yue Yang had Level 4 [Divine Vision], so he knew about the truth. He laughed, "Your Highness, it's okay if we don't find out its cause of death. It's fine as long as we can find our people. Would you like your servant to tell you something? Ahem, if your highness have a small reward for this servant, this servant would definitely report everything to you without hiding anything!"

"Don't mind this princess with a bad temper. She is a tigress, so you better not provoke her too much. Furthermore, you are my personal bodyguard, if you have something to report, you should report to me!" Luo Hua City Mistress liked to make Princess Qian Qian feel jealous, she laughed out loud.

"He should have died from internal injuries. The younger Mei Hua Brother had returned to its original form, but there was no injuries on his body. His enemy should have used some kind of method to cause a serious internal injury in his body." Wu Xia

tried to guess.

“If he was uninjured on the outside, why would there be so much blood?” The sickly beauty Wu Hen asked curiously.

“The younger Mei Hua Brother did not return to his former appearance originally, he transformed after he died. His body had a very strong regeneration abilities, so his outer injuries have recovered, but the damage caused by the internal injury that he suffered had stayed. His cause of death was because someone had dug out his Earth Goblin’s Orb, something like a demon’s magic crystal... All Eastern Goblin Tribe members had an Orb within them, similar to how demons have magic crystals. However, their orbs are not inside their skulls, they are inside their abdomen. Without the orb, their body couldn’t survive, and hence they will die.” Yue Yang could see the true cause of the younger Mei Hua Brother’s death with his [Divine Vision].

“Why would their orbs be in their abdomen, the weakest part of their bodies? Wouldn’t it be better to be placed within their skulls that had more protection?” Princess Qian Qian asked, unable to understand.

“It was said that the Eastern Fairy Tribe’s cultivation method is to grow the orb in their abdomen, so maybe the Eastern Goblin Tribe is also the same.” Yue Yang knew a little about cultivation methods, but he felt that he wouldn’t be able to explain it to Princess Qian Qian, he might even confuse her further. Also, he was afraid that if she asked further, he might accidentally divulge his Innate Invisible Sword Qi skill. If that happened, he would really be in trouble. Hence he quickly tried to change the topic,

“There might be two murderers who murdered the younger Mei Hua Brother, and the two of them should be Innate Warriors...”

“Did our Da Xia’s and Tian Luo’s Heavenly Imperial Guardians arrived here already?” Princess Qian Qian was delighted when she heard Yue Yang.

“No, maybe the circumstances are way worse than we thought. They could be Innate Rankers from Zi Jin Kingdom or Western Lion Pagoda, Green Summit Sect or Thousand Goblins Sect, or the Demon Palace. I could feel some remnants of Innate Qi inside the younger Mei Hua Brother’s body, and it felt unfamiliar. Furthermore, there’s something really weird about that Innate Qi.” Yue Yang’s expression became serious.

The thing he was most worried of was not the matter of a few Eastern Goblin Tribe’s people invading Soaring Dragon Continent.

It was the mastermind behind the scenes who guided the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s people. He was 90% sure that the masterminds behind were Zi Jin Kingdom, Western Lion Pagoda and Green Summit Sect all working together. They might even collaborated together with Thousand Goblins Sect and Demon Palace. They were aware of the changes in the Soaring Dragon Continent. When the Innate Alliance went to the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, they immediately ordered some people to the Eastern Goblin Tribe and persuaded them to go to the Soaring Dragon Continent to kidnap Jun Wu You and the Clan Masters of the Four Great Clans. They did not even let the Eastern and Western Sky Kings of Tian Luo Kingdom off. This showed that they were getting somebody else to do the dirty work.

On the other side, they had also prepared to ambush and kill the Eastern Goblin Tribe younger Mei Hua Brother, shifting the blame to the Soaring Dragon Continent's Innate Rankers.

When the Innate Rankers who protected the Soaring Dragon Continent returned from the Tenth Floor, they would definitely take revenge on the Eastern Goblin Tribe. When the two sides waged a great war, Zi Jin Kingdom, Western Lion Pagoda and the Green Summit Sect could reap the benefits for free.

As for the Thousand Goblin Sect and the Demon Palace, it's definitely impossible that they didn't try to take advantage of this.

They might even attack Zi Jin Kingdom, Western Lion Pagoda and the Green Summit Sect behind their backs when this was all over!

"Our most dreaded worries have come true. The Soaring Dragon Continent will definitely be swept into calamity. Our enemies will definitely come for us!" Wu Xia laid out the facts very calmly, "According to the ten people on the Eastern Goblin Tribe's list, we can understand a few things. Firstly, we can deduce that this matter has been planned for a long time, but the matter of the Eastern Goblin Tribe invading us was a last minute decision. The reason was because all of the ten names that was listed on the list were all outstanding contestants in the Hundred School Elite Tournament... People like Sister Luo Hua, Sister Wu Hen and myself were not included because the enemies didn't know about us at all. In an urgent situation, they had rashly chose ten people from the Hundred Schools Elite Tournament. This was also the

reason why Bing-er could be chosen. She performed very well during her fight with Feng Qi Sha, so our enemies hiding behind the scenes had chosen her too.”

“Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others also performed well, so why weren’t they chosen? Furthermore, the Eastern Goblin Tribe had also chosen Prince of Zi Jin, whom they were collaborating with!” Luo Hua City Mistress was trying to solve this mystery.

“It may be because the traitor guiding the Eastern Goblin Tribe to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent was not only Zi Jin Kingdom and Western Lion Pagoda, the Thousand Goblin Sect and Demon Palace were also involved. Hence the Eastern Goblin Tribe might have changed the list at the last minute. Another point is that Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others don’t have any roots, they don’t have any Great Clans or other powers supporting them from behind. Killing them are useless, there would be no one who would take revenge for them!” Wu Xia’s fingers drummed at her book as she quietly deduced, “Maybe, when Ye Kong and Fatty Hai escaped, Zi Jin Kingdom and the Western Lion Pagoda warriors are waiting outside to kill them in the midst of chaos... Of course they wouldn’t do it so obviously, they might even disguise themselves as Eastern Goblin Tribe members or demons from the Demon Abyss... With the Vice Principal there, they would probably not be able to act so brazenly, because the Vice Principal is a master in Dimension Teleportation. If he couldn’t win, he could escape easily with no problem. Even if a group of Innate Rankers fought him altogether, they wouldn’t be able to kill him so easily.”

“Actually, we are in a graver danger. Those Zi Jin Kingdom and Western Lion Pagoda warriors will definitely come to the Ancient Passage. They will kill Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and the others to

incite the Innate Alliance Ranker's wrath and also kill the Plum Leopard, Valiant Bears, Flying Tiger and Fiery Golden Eyes Beast, then shift the blame to the Soaring Dragon Continent. Their purpose is to drive a wedge between us, so that we will wage a war between us...Other than saving all those people held captive, we must also take note of our safety. That's because our names are all probably under their wanted list..." The sickly beauty Wu Hen was also very smart, she could think very far ahead with the facts laid before her eyes.

"..." Yue Yang knew that the problems in the Soaring Dragon Continent couldn't be solved by him alone. Division, waging wars and all those stuff, Yue Yang really couldn't care at all, but he hated when someone turned him into a pawn the most.

His own strength might not be able to change much.

But Yue Yang was sure that no matter if he saw enemies from Zi Jin Kingdom, Western Lion Pagoda, Green Summit Sect, Thousand Goblin Sect or Demon Palace, he would kill them all. Yue Yang hated it when he became other's prey.

Forget about those people who wanted to kill him, he would even kill those who have any ideas for his family!

Yue Yang didn't change his expression at all on the outside, but his heart was extremely furious.

Magical-looking Ancient Runes started surfacing on his skin, forming countless different-looking, revolving runic circles. Yue

Yang discovered that he had not lifted the limiter on his Innate Strength yet, but he seemed to have a strength that was as powerful as Innate strength returning to his body. After he overused his Innate powers to kill Tu Cheng, when Yue Yang recovered, he could feel that his powers were being suppressed... Until now. The fury in his heart had completely break down that wall. The invisible shackles on his body shattered into pieces like glass.

Yue Yang's true, magnificently powerful strength slowly exude out.

Furthermore, after being suppressed, the saved-up power burst forth even more strongly and intense.

“Go slowly, don't rush it. Lifting the limiter on Innate Strength must be a gradual process...” Wu Xia who didn't care about Yue Yang usually warned him this time, telling him to take control of his mind so that he didn't lose control.

“I'm fine, everyone go and hide. Someone is coming here, and he is very fast.” After Yue Yang recovered his true strength, his senses were way sharper than Princess Qian Qian's.

Just as Yue Yang and the four girls hid inside a cave a few hundred metres away, two bright golden light suddenly appeared, shooting through the Ancient Passage towards them.

The bright golden light was extremely radiant, almost blinding.

In the end, the two golden light stopped in mid-air, right above the Plum Leopard, younger Mei Hua Brother's body.

Chapter 251 – Pervert VS Pervert, You Can't Talk Me Out Of Killing You

Originally, with the Plum Leopard's carcass, Yue Yang thought that he could attract the attention of the enemy, allowing him and the four girls to hide. Who would have known that these two people were actually the killers of the Plum Leopard? One of the pair, a young man with a pretty face, twitched his nose a little. A flash of ridicule went across his purple eyes. "I say, why is there a strange smell? Seems like a few small rats came in here! Heh, it's been a long time since I could catch some rats to play around with."

"It's still the old rules, the women are yours, and the men are mine." The other person was a muscular man with curly sideburns who was muscular beyond compare.

The pretty faced man summoned a Platinum Grimoire, and called out a peculiar little beast whose body was completely snow white. It seemed like a mix between a rabbit and a fox, and its sense of smell was extremely acute.

It easily found where Yue Yang and the four girls were hiding. Luo Hua City Mistress's Three-Tailed Snow Fox became extremely agitated at the appearance of this peculiar beast. The Snow Fox, which was usually well-behaved and quiet, was actually so furious that it wanted to shred the peculiar beast into pieces.

That beast also hissed sharply at a low pitch. It seemed like it also had the desire to kill the Three-Tailed Snow Fox.

The young man and the muscular man, whose bodies were flashing with majestic golden lights, appeared at the entrance of the cave, full of smiles. The smile became even sweeter on the pretty man when he saw the four girls behind Yue Yang. “Four virgins, and all of them of top-quality too! Not bad! I’m already sick of those low-quality women who pretended to be virgins. I didn’t think that I would get such a huge harvest today, four top-quality goods in a single shot... Tch, I can’t wait to taste your blood already!”

“Compared to women who are born traitors, I like top-quality males more. It’s difficult to get the body and heart of males, but once you get it, they will be completely faithful to you. They’re really unlike those women who are like water, easily embracing someone else.” The muscular man with curly sideburns looked at Yue Yang, swallowing his drool.

“...” Originally, Yue Yang was a person who was not scared of anything. However, this fellow really caused his heart to shiver and fear for his ass.

He was really speechless, meeting these two big perverts.

Originally, Yue Yang had even prepared to say a few words to this pair, but it seemed unnecessary now. The faster these two people were killed, the cleaner the world would be.

The four girls’ expressions were as cold as ice.

They knew the level of strength that these two people were at. They were both Innate Rankers. However, this did not mean that they would be scared of them at all.

If they were to compare in terms of abnormality in strength, nobody was more abnormally powerful than Yue Yang.

(Shiro: 变态 means abnormal, but it's a slang for perverted)

Of course, Yue Yang was only abnormal in terms of strength. He was still quite normal when it came to his sexual orientation.

Almost at the same time, the girls all moved one step forward and stood behind Yue Yang. With him at the centre, they drew close to him, relaxing his mind, allowing his Innate Qi to flow freely around his body... This brat was an expert in [Body Fusion]. If one let loose of their control and cooperated with him, then their combat ability could increase by at least a few times. Facing foes that were psychologically perverted, even though the four girls would be petty with Yue Yang normally, they wouldn't be at odds with him at times like these... Luo Hua City Mistress gently held Yue Yang's left hand. Her pure white fingers locked with his hand. Princess Qian Qian was at the right side of Yue Yang. Her hand was lightly clenched into a fist, but was wrapped around by Yue Yang's hand.

The sickly beauty Wu Hen was behind Yue Yang. She embraced Yue Yang's back with a hint of embarrassment.

The mysterious beauty Wu Xia was in front. In a half hugging manner, she was in Yue Yang's embrace. One of her palms was on

Yue Yang's heart, and the other was turned slightly outwards, having a faint stance of defense.

Although it could not be seen on the surface, but Yue Yang's Innate Qi trickled into the bloodstream of their bodies.

That young man who loved to feast on the fresh blood of virgins did not know that Yue Yang could transmit Innate Qi, completely ignoring the intimate actions between Yue Yang and the four girls. He giggled and laughed. "Mister Duan Mu, women are born lewd and fickle-minded. But, as long as you can find a virgin, you can kill them as you pop their cherry, and drink their blood dry. That way, their beauty and loyalty will forever be yours. That way, you won't have to worry about them betraying you!"

"Lord Liu He, everyone has their own preferences. I like anuses. Would this treasure be any worse than the things that you like?" The muscular man with curly sideburns was slightly displeased, and pointed, "The four girls are yours. I like this little boy, don't hurt him!"

"Mister Duan Mu, rest easy. How would I be such an unpleasant person?" The young man shook his head. His eyes sized up Princess Qian Qian and the others in an immoral fashion.

"You'd better not get in my way..." The muscular man with curly sideburns also looked at Yue Yang in the same manner.

"Facing such top-quality goods, I can't wait any longer to partake in this feast! Mister Duan Mu, get your little boy, I'll get my own

little virgins!” That young man completely disregarded Yue Yang and the four girls, as if they were meat up for slaughter. He suddenly summoned his Platinum Grimoire, summoning a Golden Figure in an extremely fast manner. In an instant, the Golden Figure shattered like a mirror, light rays shining all over.

Luo Hua City Mistress tried to summon her own grimoire, but unexpectedly, she started feeling dizzy.

Her concentration to summon her grimoire seemed to be disturbed by some kind of power. It looked like it was possibly the effect of the light rays after that Golden Figure had been smashed.

The golden rays were scarier than the Pollution Qi Aura that was released last time. At most, it had only cut off the Summoning Grimoire, and did not have a strong effect. Now, this shattered figure not only disturbed their concentration, when Luo Hua tried to summon her grimoire, a sharp pain stabbed into her head.

The young man laughed. “Little beauties, stop struggling. Come with me obediently, so your pretty faces don’t get wounded. That will pain my heart... Peerless beauties like you are definitely going to be some of the greatest treasures in my collection. Even a little scratch on your bodies will make my heart ache so much! My greatest pursuit is to strip your skin perfectly, then craft an artwork out of it! That must be the purpose of your existence in this world! As long as you do your utmost to serve me, I guarantee that I won’t kill you before I’m tired of you. At the very least, I’ll let you live a year. How is that? You have to know, I’ve never been so kind before. You are far too beautiful, I almost can’t bear to kill you all... Come, be good girls! There’s no point in fighting against

an Innate Level 3 Ranker! Come and wait on me, I assure you that I'll give you the greatest pleasures!"

"Pui!" Princess Qian Qian's answer was very simple. She lightly spat on the ground.

As for the mysterious beauty Wu Xia and the sickly beauty Wu Hen, they regarded this Liu He as a clown, and completely disregarded him.

Luo Hua suddenly extended her hands boldly and held Yue Yang's face. She quickly kissed his cheeks, saying, "My dear bodyguard, this is the reward that this city mistress gives to you. Hurry up and shut that damned crow up. I hate these croaking crows the most. They're really unlucky!"

Princess Qian Qian encouraged him on the other side. "It's not enough to turn him into a dumb crow. Pluck all his feathers out too!"

"..." Yue Yang was sweating all over as he heard this. Plucking the feathers seemed to be quite difficult. He wiped his sweat hurriedly and said, "Your Highness, I think it's best to forget about plucking the feathers. Can't you just roast the little bird? Where would I find the time and effort to pluck his feathers one by one... Speaking of barbequed chicks, I can make a mean dish, it can probably be considered a must try. If you want me to, I'll demonstrate it for you!"

"Who asks you to do that? Your thoughts are too dirty! I was

telling you to cripple him. Cripple him as much as possible. Stop spouting nonsense!” Hearing the ambiguity in that sentence, Princess Qian Qian’s face reddened. Her small fists punched him a little. If not for fearing that she would affect his upcoming battle, she would have beaten him into a pulp.

“Roger!” Yue Yang acted like a soldier, rushing towards that Liu He, saying, “You can lie down now!”

“What did you say?” Liu He’s face grew cold.

“I said, you can lie down and wait for your death now!” As Yue Yang finished talking, that Liu He’s fist had already come at lightning speed towards him.

Following which, a protective shield expanded from Yue Yang’s body, forcefully repelling Liu He’s fist.

Yue Yang furrowed his eyebrows. The self-proclaimed Innate Level 3 Liu He was unable to break the protective barrier. Although he did not use all of his strength, this proved that this fellow still had some ways to go compared to Demon King Ha Xin. Since the protective barrier could defend against his attacks, then he did not need to worry over the four girls’ safety. He could fight without any worries.

Seeing that Yue Yang could still summon his grimoire, the muscular man with curly sideburns’ eyebrows knotted. “You can summon a Silver Grimoire in the midst of the disturbing Golden Neural Light. How strange!”

Yue Yang had a thief-like smile on his face. “There are many more strange things in the world. If you go down to hell, you can ask Satan all about it.”

At Yue Yang’s left, Luo Hua City Mistress who was originally unable to summon her grimoire, had a protective barrier come out from her body as well. She then combined her barrier with Yue Yang’s barrier. At the same time, Princess Qian Qian, Wu Xia and Wu Hen summoned their grimoires. In a natural way, their barriers fused together as well, forming a five layer rainbow barrier that was completely perfect. In the sky, as their energies fused, a rainbow light sprung forth. The Ancient Runic Circles that Yue Yang had been hiding slowly floated on the outer surface of the barrier, rotating around as if it were alive.

Seeing that there was a barrier blocking them, that Liu He sneered. “I’m waiting here. Let’s see how long you can last!”

The muscular man with curly sideburns also slowly nodded his head. “Leave it to me. Under my attacks, I believe that this five-layered barrier will collapse within five minutes at most!”

“Five minutes? Think again!” Yue Yang laughed.

The runic patterns that were originally hidden quickly floated out. Its power exploded.

Yue Yang did not even need to use his Hui Jin Magic Blade that he normally used. Instead, he rushed out of the barrier directly. At

the same time, he unsealed and unleashed his Innate Level 1 powers lightning fast to try and kill him. Nirvana's Flame suddenly sprouted from Yue Yang's right hand.

Ever since the previous time where he had killed Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan, his body whose power was constantly suppressed reverted back to the Innate level in just a millisecond.

The power in his body exploded a million times again.

Nirvana's Flame raged about. As if it was alive, it wrapped around Yue Yang's body.

The clothes he was wearing instantly turned into ash. However, under the unsealed Innate state, his body did not explode from the loss of control of Nirvana's flame, but had rather strengthened him at an incredible pace. Before that Liu He's fists had reached Yue Yang's face, it had already been tightly caught by Yue Yang's right hand. Liu He was shocked as his face paled. Nirvana's Flame was the thing he feared the most... That muscular man with curly sideburns was also shocked, roaring, "That's Nirvana's Flame, hurry up and run!"

Yue Yang did not speak, but his eyes that was filled with killing intent told Liu He of a fact, and that was, his death was imminent!

Liu He frantically exploded his strength. He tried to raise himself to Innate Level 3 to break free of Yue Yang's hand.

Under the extreme and excruciating heat, he could see in his despair, a Runic Pattern of the World Exterminating Wheel. It shone brilliantly, coming nearer and nearer towards him... He had never seen death flashing through his mind before, but he saw his life's flashback at this moment

He was finished!

It was Nirvana's Flame and World Exterminating Wheel. This time he was definitely finished!

Chapter 252 – What Goes Around Comes Around!

If the muscular man with curly sideburns didn't rush forward and save Liu He on time, he would definitely be dead.

The curly sideburn muscular man pounced with lightning speed, and in that decisive moment, he pulled Liu He by his hair with all of his strength. Liu He, on the other hand was still standing dumbstruck, unable to react in any way. The curly sideburn muscular man's other hand, which was holding an incomparably sharp sword, ruthlessly hacked onto Liu He's arm that was burning with Nirvana's Flame. That arm which was held firmly in Yue Yang's right arm separated from the shoulder down immediately, splattering blood everywhere.

Liu He was in extreme pain, but his senses still remained.

He shot out his leg and kicked right at Yue Yang's chest. The purpose of this kick wasn't to attack Yue Yang, but to use the impact from the kick to escape from him.

Yue Yang's left hand, which was holding the World Exterminating Wheel, slashed forward, easily cutting off both of Liu He's legs... Yue Yang then threw the World Exterminating Wheel towards Liu He and the curly sideburn muscular man. Although the curly sideburn muscular man saving Liu He was a little out of Yue Yang's expectations, under the onslaught of World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana's Flame, the curly sideburn muscular man would end up dead at the end anyway. There wouldn't be any chance for them to escape! Yue Yang thought that

even if the two fellows avoided the World Exterminating Wheel, they wouldn't be able to avoid the Nirvana Flame that's coming right after!

Almost at the same time, Liu He and the muscular man summoned their Platinum grimoire and erected their shields.

However, it didn't seem like it was able to stop the onslaught of the World Exterminating Wheel.

The World Exterminating Wheel passed through the shield like sunlight passing through glass, there was almost no resistance at all. It didn't have any kind of power clash with the protective shield at all, it was as if they were made out of the same material. It smoothly and soundlessly passed through the shield, its speed not decreasing even a little bit as it shot straight towards Liu He and the curly sideburn muscular man.

Liu He and the curly sideburn muscular man swept onto the ground at the same time, battered and completely miserable, the World Exterminating Wheel sweeping across their heads.

It flew to hundred metres away and slowly disintegrated into countless Ancient Runes, floating back right into Yue Yang's body.

"Fire, fire, your arm is already infected by the Nirvana's Flame!" Liu He realized that the curly sideburn muscular man's arms which was pulling his hair earlier were ablaze with the undying flames of Nirvana's Flame. He immediately shouted in alarm.

One usually wouldn't suffer any kind of harm when one hid inside one's protective shield.

However, this does not include Nirvana's Flame.

Even inside the protective shield, the Nirvana's Flame that could cleanse every single thing in this world was like the World Exterminating Wheel, unaffected by the protective shield at all.

The curly sideburn muscular man knew that he had been infected when he tried to save Liu He just now. If he didn't cut his arm quickly, this Nirvana Flame would get bigger and bigger with time, and spread to his upper-arms, shoulders, and his whole body. Finally, it will completely burn him until nothing is left... He gritted his teeth and used his other hand to materialize a sharp ray of blade and swung it to cut his other arm off.

With a single move, the two high-levelled Innate Rankers Liu He and curly sideburn muscular man had turned into two bloody mess, disabled people whose whole bodies were heavily injured.

Under the World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame attacks, they, whose powers was at Innate Level Three, were completely unable to resist nor defend themselves.

Liu He only had one left arm left.

Of course, his life had been snatched back from the hands of death by the curly sideburn muscular man who had risked his life

to do so. Otherwise, he would already be dead long ago.

The curly sideburn muscular man had also had to cut off his own right arms which was infected by the Nirvana Flame. At this time, the two people were completely drenched with blood from head to toe, looking extremely miserable.

“This is so painful!” Liu He was in so much pain that his face distorted in agony. He tried to calm down from his panicked state as he placed his left hand on his Platinum Grimoire. He summoned a ball of light and pressed it to his open wounds, trying to stop them from bleeding. He also summoned an octopus beast and forced it to fuse into his body, turning it into a temporary tentacle-like arm and legs.

“Elder, we seek your forgiveness. The two of us didn’t know that you are actually one the Peak Rankers who had disguised himself. We thought that you are one of the younger generation from the Soaring Dragon Continent. Elder, If our words have offended you, we seek your gracious forgiveness and beg you to spare our lives. If you could spare our little lives, we are willing to bow and worship you for your graciousness.” The curly sideburn muscular man couldn’t care about his bleeding wounds anymore, he immediately asked for Yue Yang’s forgiveness.

“Your surname is Duan Mu, what’s your first name?” Yue Yang knew that these two fellows had misunderstood him. He must as well beat them in their own game.

“This junior’s name is Duan Mu Fei Wei, I’m the younger brother of the current Green Summit Sect Sect Leader Duan Mu Long

Cheng. My late ancestor is Duan Mu Ke! This Liu He's late ancestor was Wan Qi Li Mie, one of the founders of the Green Summit Sect, like my ancestor Duan Mu Ke." The curly sideburn muscular man reported to Yue Yang his real name and family background. In the world of Innate Rankers, power is everything. The strongest one will be able to do whatever he likes. For those without enough powers, however, their family backgrounds become the most important factor. If there were famous people amongst their ancestors, maybe the enemy would honor them a little if they told him about their ancestors.

"I don't know them." Yue Yang spoke truthfully. He indeed didn't know anyone called Duan Mu Ke or Wan Qin Li Mie. He had only heard that these two fellows were traitors from the Yue Clan.

His words made the curly sideburn muscular man and Liu He both scared to death.

In their eyes, someone who didn't know their ancestors Wan Qin Li Mie and Duan Mu Ke but had the ability to summon Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel must be a warrior from thousands of years ago. Maybe, this fellow who had disguised himself as a young person was a drifter from the Outer Realm of Tong Tian Tower. Maybe he never came to Soaring Dragon Continent before, nor participate in the Innate Alliance. He belonged to those free, godly and immortal beings who were always wandering about.

The curly sideburn muscular man and Liu He thought in their minds. Indeed, they had never heard of a ranker who could use World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flames before.

Some of the extremely strong rankers might be able to use World Exterminating Wheel, but as for Nirvana's Flame, even amongst the strongest Innate Rankers, it was only a legend...

No one had ever possessed Nirvana Flames before!

A few of Peak Rankers might have flames that was close to Nirvana Flame, such as Holy Flame, Skyfire Flame, Hell Flame and Demonic Flame, there were even Rankers who possessed the War God's True Flame... But no matter how strong, they were all incomparable to the Nirvana's Flame. Nirvana Flame only belong to legends.

Today, this Nirvana Flame had actually appeared in the hands of this Peak Ranker, who could even disguise his old age and erase his wrinkles. The curly sideburn muscular man and Liu He knew that they had bumped into a dead end.

Offending an elder who was so strong that they couldn't even start to imagine, the curly sideburn muscular man and Liu He both felt despair like their head was about to explode.

It was a well-known fact that Innate Rankers acted as they pleased. Let alone getting offended, even when they find something unpleasant to their eyes, they could kill it immediately. This was something very normal.

Right now they could only rely on this elder's mood...

If he was in a bad mood, they were definitely dead!

The curly sideburn muscular man plopped and kneeled on the ground, prostrating himself very respectfully, “Elder, please spare our lives. This junior is willing to offer all of my wealth to you in order to atone for our crimes.

“This junior is also willing to offer you all of my precious treasures.” Liu He couldn’t kneel, so he bowed his head as he secretly observed Yue Yang and the four girls. He felt that something was wrong somehow. This young man might be an elder who had disguised all of his old age and wrinkles, but these four girls couldn’t possibly disguise themselves as none of them were Innate Rankers. Also, none of their beasts’ disguise skills would be able to fool Innate Rankers like them. These four girls were all so young, and they were even still virgins. What relationship do they have with these Elder? Why had they appeared so conveniently in the Ancient Passage just as the Eastern Goblin Tribe finished ambushing the Soaring Dragon Continent?

Liu He was quite sure that these four girls had come to the Ancient Passage because they were the descendants of the Soaring Dragon Continent’s warriors that were captured and was trying to chase after the Eastern Goblin Tribe. This elder might even have relations with them too.

Of course, there was also the possibility that they had accidentally met this pervert Elder who liked to disguise himself as a youngster in this Ancient Passage...

There was a higher possibility that this man was a pervert Elder who disguised himself as a youngster, because they had never heard such a young Innate in Soaring Dragon Continent before. More importantly, they have never heard of a 20-year-old Innate being able to use World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana's Flame, who could almost instantly kill two Innates with just one single move.

Liu He really regretted meeting this mysterious figure who they couldn't figure out.

If only they had spent some time understanding the situation in Soaring Dragon Continent. Who would know that they would encounter such a strange thing right after getting back from the Magic Orchid Continent in the Outer Realm.

Twenty years old Innate...

Was he an exceptionally talented genius or an old geezer elder in disguise?

"We thank elder for your favor in sparing our lives!" The curly sideburn muscular man didn't think too much. He was a standard Innate, he respected those stronger than him. No matter what kind of person his opponent was, as long as he had the ability to kill him instantly, then that person was a Peak Ranker, an elder worthy of his respect. The curly sideburn muscular man would never imagine that a twenty year old Innate could kill them in an instant, let alone think that a twenty year old Innate could use World Exterminating Wheel that requires the control of Innate Level 5 or above, and the Nirvana Flame, which only existed in legends.

There were many Innate Rankers who could use flames similar to Nirvana's Flame.

But with regards to this true Nirvana's Flame that was forever inextinguishable, that could burn everything, the curly sideburn muscular man had only seen it from this young man's hands before... legends said that if one had even a shred of evil on his body or his soul, he would be burnt by the Nirvana's Flame alive! Only a god-like ranker who did not have any evil intention in his soul or could transcend sins in his body or soul would be able to wield the Nirvana's Flame!

Fighting against an Innate Ranker who could wield Nirvana's Flame and World Exterminating Wheel? Only a fool would do that!

The curly sideburn muscular man very obediently offered his most precious treasure, but that Liu He did not.

Liu He was scheming in his heart. It didn't matter if this elder was a Peak Ranker or not, he would need to protect the four girls. As long as he could escape from this Ancient Passage, he could leave from the Ancient Teleportation Portal. This old fellow would definitely not abandon the four girls and chased after him.

Especially when he himself could do that...

He pretended as if he were about to offer all of his precious treasures, but he was actually summoning a black-winged angel. At the same time, her octopus-like hand and two legs whipped

forward and lashed at that curly sideburn muscular man's defenseless back, sending him flying towards Yue Yang and the others.

Liu He took the opportunity and flew towards the sky.

The black-winged angel that he had just summoned fused with Liu He's body in mid-air.

Huge black wings sprung out from Liu He's back. After equipping the black-wings, Liu he's originally quick flying speed became ten times faster. However, it was as if Yue Yang had already thought that Liu He wanted to escape. Just like Liu He, phoenix-like flaming wings sprouted out from Yue Yang's back, made out of pure Nirvana's Flame. With just a flap of the flaming wings, he managed to catch up right behind Liu He.

When Liu He tried to attack Yue Yang in panic, he realized that his body had been bound by an irresistible force.

Although it only lasted for three seconds, it was enough for Yue Yang to wrap his right hand, which was blazing with Nirvana Flame, around his neck, clutching him like he was a little chicken and throwing him right under the curly sideburn muscular man's feet.

“Why? Your father asks me to take care of you, and we are as close as real brothers. In these 200 years, I have been protecting you even at the risk of my life, I have even lost an arm because of you just now. Wan Qi Liu He, why did you do this to me?” The

curly sideburn muscular man vomited blood from his mouth, but the injuries on his body was incomparable to the pain in his heart. His comrade whom he had saved many times at the risk of his own life had betrayed him. He viewed this comrade as his younger brother, and had even saved him without caring for his own life just now. Furthermore, at the brink of life and death, his comrade had even delivered a critical attack to him, sending him flying towards the opponent and tried to escape on his own...

“I was wrong, I was wrong! It’s so painful, save me, save me!” Liu He’s neck and chest was burnt slowly by the Nirvana’s Flame. With his death imminent, his Innate powers had no effect towards the Nirvana’s Flame.

“If you know this would happen, why would you do that just now!” The curly sideburn muscular man painfully raised his arm that wasn’t cut off, prepared to end Liu He’s life and grant him a quick death.

Who would know that Liu He would actually flew towards the curly sideburn muscular man and hugged him tightly.

In just a moment, he spread the Nirvana Flame on his body all over the curly sideburn muscular man’s body!

His eyes looked extremely sinister as he said, “If I die, you, my servant, will also have to accompany me to death. Your Duan Mu Clan is just our Wan Qi’s Clan dog, do you think that just because my father gave the Sect Leader position to your brother, Duan Mu Long Cheng, it will change your Duan Mu Clan low class status? Damn bastard dog slave, if I can’t live, don’t even think you can

continue living. Come, let's die together..."

The curly sideburn muscular man became very agitated and furious, a streak of heartrending expression flashed across his face, "My Duan Mu Clan believed that by diligently and respectfully supporting your Wan Qi Clan, we can be considered equals and become brothers with your Wan Qi Clan. Who would know that after doing so much for you, you still take us as your servants, you even called us dogs... haha, my ancestors in heaven, if you could see what happened today, what will you say? Ancestors, ancestors, why didn't you become loyal brothers to your clans, why did you become traitors who betrayed your brothers? Did you know that even after a thousand years later, your descendants still couldn't wash away this shame of being a traitor's descendant. Until today, your diligent and loyal descendants were still regarded as dogs by others! Why did you walk that path, why?!"

Yue Yang raised his hands, and all of the Nirvana Flame on the curly sideburn muscular man's and Liu He's body returned to him immediately.

Having a fast death by burning in Nirvana's Flame?

That would be too much of a comfortable way to die!

This two people were both descendants of traitors. Yue Yang decided to make them kill each other, because should be the kind of miserable death to end a traitor's life!

"You don't want to stay as a servant, right? I'll give you a

chance!” Yue Yang smiled widely, his smile looking even scarier than a demon’s.

“You want to kill me? Dream on, you will be the one who die!” Liu He was heavily injured from the flames, his appearance looked like a ghost. He raised his tentacle-like hand and locked his hands onto the curly sideburn muscular man’s neck in a death grip. He also turned his tentacle-like legs into sharp swords, piercing them right into the curly sideburn muscular man’s chest.

“...” The curly sideburn muscular man almost looked like he was about to laugh out loud, but his neck was being choked until he couldn’t breathe and speak even a word. However, his red face was filled with a terrifying smile. He opened his mouth wide and revealed his white teeth, before biting onto Liu He’s disfigured face, nose, ears and neck from the fire. Bite by bite, he bit Liu He to death.

He bit off Liu He’s head from his neck!

Finally, after spitting out flesh from his mouth, the curly sideburn muscular man who was nearing his death knelt respectfully in front of Yue Yang. He then kowtowed and turn his left hand into a sharp blade, cutting his own head off...

Their two Platinum Grimoires dropped out of the empty air with a loud bang. The black-winged angel, octopus and other beasts also died. That fox-rabbit little beast which had deserted its master was caught by the three-tailed fox right at the cave’s entrance, bitten right at its throat!

The fox-rabbit's body twitched relentlessly before it was quickly killed by the three-tailed snow fox. Although it had betrayed its master, it had also died together with him.

“What goes around comes around!” Yue Yang spat on Liu He's corpse.

Chapter 253 – Ambush, Battle, Battle!

When Yue Yang was killing Liu He and the curly sideburn muscular man in the Ancient Passage, in Champion Island, the old fox was leading Yue Bing, Yue Yu, Yi Nan and the other students away from the Champion Stadium, hoping that they could get out from the area of effect of the teleportation restriction, leave the place safely and return to the Ivy Academy.

The students from Ivy, Shang Jing, Fragrance Academy and other academies all followed closely behind the old fox.

A few teachers and around a hundred Silver Armored guards followed behind the students to protect them.

On the other side, there were also teachers, referees and silver armoured guards to protect more students and audiences as they escaped from the Champion Stadium. In the midst of chaos, countless mercenaries tried to go to some building and hid themselves temporarily, thinking that they could escape danger that way. However, only a blind person would not be able to tell the dangerous situation that was happening outside. That was because, outside, the whole sky had suddenly turned eerily bloody red...

“Move faster! This is the demon’s Bloody Light Sacrifice!” The old fox was very familiar with Demon Abyss matters. He had many experience. With one glance, he was able to tell that this light was the sign for demons’ imminent invasion into the Soaring Dragon Continent.

With such an enormous Sacrifice, the old fox estimated that at least a hundred thousand of demons had been sacrificed in the Bloody Pond Altar at the Demon Abyss.

Furthermore, there must at least be a thousand Demon Apostles in Soaring Dragon Continent sacrificed as guides.

The fact that the Demon Legion from the Demon Abyss came to attack them right after the Eastern Goblin Tribe's invasion meant that all of this was definitely a premeditated plan. If there were no traitors in the Soaring Dragon Continent, no Demon Apostles causing troubles, then no matter how strong the Demon Legion in Demon Abyss were, they would not be able to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent.

This was definitely not only a matter of a few Demon Apostles, it looked like there was an enormous power behind pulling the strings, an organization who could afford to become the intermediary for Soaring Dragon Continent and Demon Abyss.

It might be Demon Palace, Thousand Goblin Sect, Western Lion Pagoda or Green Summit Sect.

It might even be Zi Jin Kingdom...

When the old fox thought of this, dark clouds loomed over his face.

If no one stopped the invasion of the Demon Legion, the

Champion Island would become the base for the Demon Legion to invade Soaring Dragon Continent in the future. It would then be the end for humanity.

“Kids, leave this place quickly. Quick! Soldiers, follow me!” The Head Referee knew that with only himself and a hundred over elite soldiers, they would never be able to stop a Demon Legion invasion. But he understood clearly that the future of humanity lies on these students. If they allowed the Demon Legion to use these student’s lives as sacrifice for their teleportation portal, the Head Referee and the others would become sinners that would be remembered for thousands of years. These students were all elites, but they were all still young and have yet to mature. If they were to fight against the Demon Legion, they would undeniably be throwing away their lives... Now, the most important thing was to do all they can to stop the Demon Legion invasion and allow the students to leave safely.

The Head Referee and the two Vice-Head Referees turned around, leading several Silver Armoured guards and rushed towards the place where the Blood Light was the brightest.

The Demon Legion from Demon Abyss had not arrived yet.

However, they would arrive in full wave at any time. There must be someone who could stand up against them and stop them.

In a small building in Champion Island, over a thousand mercenaries had been ruthlessly murdered. Corpses lie everywhere as fresh blood slowly floated up into the air. Dozens of Demon Apostles started killing themselves one after another, exchanging

their life and soul to serve as a teleportation point for the Demon Legion.

Some powerful figures stood on the side as they watched through the whole scene coldly. These were all planned by them.

When they saw the Head Referee bringing some people over, they immediately ordered a few people to stop the Head Referee.

At this time, inside the Tournament Building, a twenty metre tall crimson-coloured teleportation gate suddenly rose up. Under the crackling of black-coloured thunder in the sky, the bloody light covering the sky formed a terrifying-looking vortex, extending down towards the teleportation gate. Countless demons then flooded out of the teleportation gate suddenly, like a giant tsunami wave. They were mostly Green-skinned goblin or Round-horned demon, there were also Yellow-skinned fire monster and Fierce-toothed Spirit. In every one thousand demons that poured out, there was a Demon General.

From within the Teleportation Gate, there were still Black-coloured Fallen Flying Dragons and Flaming Crows rushing out. On the backs of a few of the Flying Dragons, there were elite Demon Knights and Demon Commanders.

The Sickles Demons that were well-known amongst humans had also appeared.

The Sickles Demons were usually known as the elite bodyguards of Demon Kings. Their appearance signified that a Demon King

would descend upon the Soaring Dragon Continent... When the Head Referee saw the figures of Sickly Demons flying in the sky, he felt bottomless despair.

The Soaring Dragon Continent was now in grave danger, both internally and externally. They were in the brink of crisis.

The Innate Rankers that were supposed to protect them had secretly left, trying to clear the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

In this critical moment, the traitor amongst them had first provoked the Eastern Goblin Tribe to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent and capture the strong warriors on both Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom, then called forth the Demon Legion to Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Kill!” When the Head Referee saw the human traitors that had come to stop them, he felt extremely furious and howled loudly. This was because amongst the traitors, there were two whom he had known personally, his own friends. Those human traitors who had guided the Demon Legion invasion started laughing out loud. They didn’t have the intention to fight to their deaths like the Head Referee. They had summoned their flying beasts beforehand and was avoiding the Head Referee’s attack in the sky. They didn’t have any intention to fight the Head Referee and the others.

“Awoooo...” “ Countless monsters from the Demon Abyss suddenly rushed out from the sky and the ground, swallowing the Head Referee and the hundred over Silver Armoured Guards whole.

At this time, in front of the old fox, there was the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder who was previously locked up inside the Da Xia Prison. (Shiro: Chapter 185) It was unknown when she was rescued out of the prison. Not only that, she had also recovered all of his powers. Beside her, there were three other Demon Elders from the Thousand Goblin Sect who had just been promoted. After Yue Yang killed the Hundred Wings and Hundred Claws Demon Elders, the Thousand Goblins Sect promoted a few other Demon Elders to make up for the loss they have suffered in Da Xia.

Of course, the recently promoted Demon Elders were all far weaker than their predecessors. If Yue Yang was here, he could kill them instantly anytime.

The problem was that Yue Yang was not here. There was only the old fox who also had to protect hundreds of other students.

Hundred Transformations Demon Elder swayed her waist flirtatiously as she smiled, “Lord Vice Principal, it’s really good to see you. I thought you were also caught by the Eastern Goblin Tribe. If you were caught, how could I take my revenge for all the insults you have given me in the past!”

“So you are the troublemaker behind all this!” The old fox immediately summoned his grimoire.

“No, you’re wrong. Although we, the Thousand Goblins Sect, like to have internal strifes every now and then and make life difficult

for other people, we wouldn't go as far as to ask other's help. Furthermore, our relationship with the Eastern Goblin Tribe in Tong Tian Tower was not that good. We don't have any relations at all to them, and we are also at odds with the beings from the Demon Abyss. No one in our sect, from the Sect Leader down to the lowest Disciples, would ever conspire with these two other organizations. However, if you ask us the reason why we have come today, of course we have come to pick on an enemy who is down! Hahaha, I am born to be a bad person. I may not be an expert in other things, but bullying an enemy is definitely my expertise... I hate Da Xia, but unfortunately, with my strength alone, I wouldn't be able to topple Da Xia, a country with deep-rooted foundation. Now that we have a chance to do it, of course we wouldn't let the chance slip through our hands! Lord Vice Principal, if you are willing to surrender the younger sister of the two Hua Sisters, that Fourth Mother who was pretending to be the Yue Clan Fourth Mistress, I will allow these students to live. Truthfully, I also couldn't bear to see all these kids being eaten alive by demons and monsters, but what other choice do I have? I'm not the mastermind, I'm just trying to take advantage of you in your predicament! If not for the sake of getting Fourth Mother, we would never risk letting you go and making enemies out of the other strong powers out there!" The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder spoke very arrogantly. However, she didn't dare to assume victory, because she knew how powerful the old fox was.

"Dream on!" The old fox's reply was clear-cut and concise.

"Then we can only apologize for our rude manners." The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder waved her hands and the three newly promoted Demon Elders immediately summoned different kinds of strong beasts, stopping the students from leaving.

“You guys, escape quickly!” The old fox didn’t look at Yue Bing, afraid that the enemies would notice her.

Right now, Yue Bing was disguised as an ordinary-looking female thief, blending into the crowd with Yi Nan, who was similarly dressed as a thief. She was very safe.

When Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers saw that the old fox and a few other teachers had decided to stay back and fight against the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, they quickly lead the crowd of students away. Right now, without the guards or their teachers, they could only rely on themselves.

In the sky far away, they could already see demons with wings flying towards them.

Ye Kong yelled loudly, “Move, let’s leave this place!”

He summoned his King Kong Demon Ape and fused it with his body. He then summoned his huge Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle to open the path in front for them... The Li Brothers also summoned their Gold Ant Soldiers and fused it with their bodies, following closely behind Ye Kong. Fatty Hai didn’t lead in front like the others. Instead, he hid within the crowds to protect Yue Bing, Yi Nan and Yue Yu. Students from Ivy Academy, Shang Jing and Fragrance Academy, together with the Prince of Tian Luo and his Pink Rose Fan Group, proceeded forward calmly although everyone’s expressions were filled with panic. Everyone advanced quickly altogether, following their classmates that they had

believed in.

Ye Kong led everyone to escape from the large area of effect of the teleportation restriction space. When he saw that the Demon Legion had not managed to catch up to them yet, he sighed in relief.

He waved his hand and gestured for everyone to quickly leave. The students all started to become frantic in their anxiousness to return to their home. Under Ye Kong's and the other's protection, they could finally teleport away safely.

“We should also leave, right now!” Ye Kong knew that if they did not leave now, the old fox would be in greater danger.

“...” Yue Bing glanced back at the Champion Stadium in a distance, then pulled Yue Yu and Yi Nan towards the teleportation gate, trying to leave quickly. However, when the light from the teleportation gate subsided, to her surprise, she found that there was something wrong with the teleportation destination. The place that appeared before her eyes turned out to be an enormous valley, and in front of them, countless waves of demon troops were waiting for the students to arrive. The first wave of students had already summoned their beasts and started fighting against the demons closest to them.

“This is bad, we have fallen into their trap!” Yue Yu finally came back to her senses from her initial shock.

“Sister Yu and Sister Yi Nan, don't be scared. Although Brother is

not here, I will protect you both! I promised brother that I will be strong when we are in danger. I will definitely defeat all the enemies and rescue everyone back!” Yue Bing’s eyes glowed with unwavering determination.

She immediately summoned her grimoire and called forth two Hundred Years Old Treant Defenders almost at the same time.

Her small figure jumped on top of one of the Hundred Years Old Treant Defender’s shoulders, and together with the Treant, they jumped right into the middle of the crowd of demon monsters.

Countless Tree Thorns suddenly shot out from the ground under Yue Bing’s order, skewering all the demon monsters around her Treant Defender. The Tree Thorns this time were a little different than the usual. These Tree Thorns were imbued with Yue Bing’s deadly [Antiaris]. Even when the demons were only grazed by the thorns, they were immediately poisoned to death and fell onto the ground.

The two gigantic Hundred Years Old Treant Defender raised their giant tree-arms and swept it through the crowd of demons, ruthlessly beating the surrounding, unfortunate demons. In an instant, the demon troops were thrown into chaos.

Yue Yu and Yi Nan looked towards each other, shock written all over their face.

Seemed like after clearing the Twelve Zodiac Temples, Yue Bing had really grown up. Her combat power and battle senses had

improved so much to the point that it was hard to believe that she was the same person. Yi Nan nodded, acknowledging Yue Bing's power. At the same time, she also summoned her grimoire, not wanting to lose out... She also wanted to participate in the battle. As for Yue Yu who did not have fighting capabilities, she quickly summoned her beasts to support Yue Bing and Yi Nan.

Other than Yi Nan, there was someone else who joined the battle right after Yue Bing. Hui Tai Lang.

It had been observing the battle situation all along. When a strong demon was about to launch a sneak attack on Yue Bing from the crowd of demons, the loyal Hui Tai Lang could finally have the chance to show off his powers.

Soundlessly, without howling nor intimidating, Hui Tai Lang hid amongst the countless summoned beasts and crept closer like a shadow. This was one of the battle strategy that it had learnt from its master, Yue Yang. Hui Tai Lang didn't know the reason behind it, but it knew that its master had done this because it was the best battle strategy. After observing Yue Yang's countless battles, Hui Tai Lang had remembered it deep in its heart. Before its enemies could react, it bit on the enemy's throat fiercely.

At the same time, the Demon King-like Hell Flames burst out from its body...

Chapter 254 – Serpent Fire-Tailed Tortoise

Yue Yang used his Lich Ring to store Liu He's and the curly sideburn muscular man's corpses. He did not even let the Plum Leopard's body off.

With regards to his actions, Princess Qian Qian was extremely curious.

She didn't know that Yue Yang used the corpses to feed his beast. She thought that Yue Yang was an unscrupulous brat who would exploit every single resource he could get. She never thought that the Thorny Flower Demoness was cultivated using human's and warrior's corpses. As for the mysterious beauty Wu Xia who was extremely knowledgeable, she might have more or less guessed it. However, she didn't say anything, secretly helping Yue Yang to keep his secret.

If Yue Yang summoned his Thorny Flower Demoness, Princess Qian Qian would be surprised to find out that the previously gold-ranked Thorny Flower Demoness had now levelled up to diamond-ranked.

This kind of levelling speed, other than plant-type beasts, no other beasts could compare.

Furthermore, there were strict requirements to level up to diamond-rank. It wasn't a rank that any ordinary beasts could level up to.

Of course, even if Princess Qian Qian asked Yue Yang, he would definitely lie and say that the Thorny Flower Demoness had levelled up due to the experience gained in the Twelve Zodiac Temples.

The current Thorny Flower Demoness was not a little girl anymore. She now had the appearance of a 15-16 year old girl. As long as she undergo the last Variant Evolution, she would become the strongest beast in the plant-category, the Golden Crowned Thorny Flower Queen. Only then would she truly be a Holy-ranked Beast or higher. The current Thorny Flower Demoness had gained enough intelligence after going through the Twelve Zodiac Temples. It looked like soon, Yue Yang would be able to successfully copied the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who could massacre an entire Demon Legion and two Great Blood Prison Demon Kings three thousand years ago... Yue Yang's Golden Crown Thorny Flower King might even be stronger than its predecessor, because he had cultivated the Thorny Flower with many Innate Ranker's corpses and increased its intelligence by clearing the Twelve Zodiac Temple's Trials.

Most importantly, it had also became stronger from Yue Yang's Ancient Rune and blood, without Yue Yang knowing.

“Where should we go?” After walking through a giant flight of steps in the Ancient Passage, Luo Hua City Mistress found that there was a three-way crossroad in front of them.

“The stench of blood is strongest from the left side. There is the smell of the Eastern Goblin Tribe on the right and there seemed to be the smell of humans in the middle... I can't really smell it, you

decide, which direction should we go?” Princess Qian Qian’s [Six Records] was extremely sharp, but the feeling she got from the middle path was really strange, she couldn’t identify it very clearly.

“Let’s decide using a coin.” Yue Yang took out a gold coin.

“...” the four girls were speechless.

Yue Yang laughed. He was only teasing them when he said to decide with a coin. After lifting the limiter on his Innate powers once again, his senses improved greatly. He could easily see through their enemies’ diversion trick that was laid to trap them.

The scent of blood could be created by sprinkling some blood on the ground, while the smell of the Eastern Goblin Tribe could be created by ordering some people to walk through the passage.

On the other hand, they would definitely not be able to conceal the smell of humans.

The Easter Goblin Tribe had taken their captive through the middle path of the Ancient Passage. Moreover, they had just left that place.

After chasing after the scent for around ten kilometres, Yue Yang and the four girls discovered some bloodstains on the ground.

After pursuing another few kilometres, they found the older

Xiong Brother who was carrying Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha previously lying dead on the ground. He had similarly transformed back to his real body, a Valiant Bear. His body was as big as a small hill, but it could be seen clearly that this older Xiong Brother had been killed by a deadly blow to its head that shattered his skull. The four girls' expressions turned gloomy when they see the terrifying aftermath of the deadly blow.

Who was the strong warrior that killed the older Xiong Brother with one blow? If he wasn't human, then who could he be?

There was a high chance that it was a strong, unknown traitor from the Soaring Dragon Continent like those Innate Rankers Liu He and the curly sideburn muscular man. He might even be stronger than them!

Their purpose was to drive a wedge between the Eastern Goblin Tribe and the Soaring Dragon Continent, in order to start a deadly battle between them. Hence, they had planned out this giant plot.

“Let's return. In order to escape from this traitor, the Eastern Goblin Tribe must have tried to escape with their quickest speed. I think we won't be able to catch up with them. Secondly, there will only be hope if we return alive. This is because that traitor definitely want to kill us and shift the blame to the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Right now, we are in a very grave danger. Before the enemies discover us, we should quickly leave this place.” Wu Xia suddenly raised a suggestion.

“Yue Yang, I think we should change our plans. Previously, when we were pursuing the Eastern Goblin Tribe, although they were

strong, they didn't start killing us immediately. They were not enemies who will kill us on sight! However, right now, I suspect that that traitor from Soaring Dragon Continent had colluded with traitors from the Eastern Goblin Tribe to cook up this scheme. We should first return to a safe place and wait for Zhi Zun, Night Empress and Elder Nan Gong to return from the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. That would be the best course of action. If there were only Eastern Goblin Tribe members here, I wouldn't mind continuing our pursuit until we found the kidnapped people and rescue them. But it seems like the ones that we have to protect the most are ourselves!" The sickly beauty also advised Yue Yang. Because there were some new changes, they had to change their previous plans.

"Sister Luo Hua, what do you think?" Princess Qian Qian really wanted to rescue her father back, but she did not lose her reason.

"Yes, Let me speak my thoughts. Until now, we have not discovered any human corpses yet. It seems like the kidnapped people are not in any kind of danger. The corpses left behind are all the Eastern Goblin Tribe warriors' instead. We did not see any humans being harmed. In this situation, the fact that the Eastern Goblin Tribe were still protecting their hostages meant that they did not have any intention to harm us." Luo Hua City Mistress also decided to give up on their pursuit at the mean time. Rescuing their loved ones was definitely important, but they shouldn't fall into their enemies' traps. It would really be tragic if that really happened.

"Then what do you think we should do?" Princess Qian Qian still asked for Yue Yang's opinion in the end.

If this brat decided to pursue the enemy until the end, she would also follow him. This was because both choices of continuing their pursuit and returning were both difficult for her.

Yue Yang suddenly hushed them, gesturing that there was something strange in front.

The four girls immediately became anxious. This was because they had not heard any single sound. Did their enemies surrounded them secretly? Yue Yang did not say anything, he only led the four girls back to the three-path crossroads and entered the left path where the blood stench was the strongest, hiding inside a cave on the walls, quietly waiting.

After around two minutes, right after Yue Yang and the four girls just exited the passage, two miserable-looking figures rushed out quickly into the three-way crossroads. The two figures split up into two different crossroads and ran for their lives.

One of the figure flew straight towards the passage where Yue Yang and the four girls were hiding.

The figure flew past them, but it quickly turned around and entered into the cave on the wall.

When the figure rushed into the cave, to its surprise, it found that Yue Yang and the four girls were also there. Yue Yang and the four girls were also extremely surprised, because this miserable figure whose body was covered with injuries was actually that arrogant Flying Tiger Ambassador. The current Flying Tiger

Ambassador was as miserable-looking as a little beggar being chased into small alleyways. He breathed heavily, panic written all over his face.

“What actually happened?” Princess Qian Qian really couldn’t understand. How could such a strong Eastern Goblin Tribe member become so miserable like a stray dog?

“Shh!” the Flying Tiger Ambassador gestured to her to lower down her voice.

He seemed not used to looking miserable in front of Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian and the others, who were human kids much younger than him, but the situation forced him to get over his discomfort.

His face showed a little embarrassment.

Finally, the Flying Tiger Ambassador told them the truth, “There are about ten Innate Ranker traitors amongst the people in your Soaring Dragon Continent. They had secretly colluded with our Eastern Goblin Tribe. When we returned, they had secretly prepared an ambush for us. In order to protect the safety of our small team, I stayed behind to stop them. But the number of enemies kept increasing, so Jin Jing (Golden Eyes Beast) and I were forced to destroy the Ancient Teleportation Portal. We had just separated to regroup... Why are you guys here? Don’t tell me you guys really chased after us? What use did you think you could do chasing after us, with just so few of you? Even if we return the hostages to you, you wouldn’t be able to leave the Ancient Passage!”

Yue Yang smiled slightly, “Flying Tiger Ambassador, right now, you should just worry about yourself first!”

The Flying Tiger Ambassador stared blankly at Yue Yang before laughing coldly, “Don’t tell me you guys are still thinking of killing me? Even if I’m heavily injured, I can still finish you guys with one move!”

Yue Yang shook his head, “No, we won’t attack you. But I don’t believe those Eastern Goblin Tribe members hiding outside the cave would think the same way. Our dear guests, please enter the cave. I don’t know if you guys have a hobby of eavesdropping, but I don’t think that’s good manners.”

“Interesting little human kid. I remembered Sky Dragon (chapter 186) told me before that a scary little kid has appeared in the Soaring Dragon Continent. That kid was extremely irritating to him. I believe that the kid is you!” Outside the cave, a two-headed snake whose body was thicker than a water bucket and covered with green-coloured scales slithered soundlessly inside. On the head of the left snake head, there was a summoning beast-like Contract Circle, but there was none on the right snake head.

This was the only difference between the two snake heads.

The snake head could not only speak human language, it could also transform into human.

In the midst of the thick green smoke, the two snake heads

transformed into a gloomy-looking man. The green snake scales transformed into a green coloured snake scales battle armor on his body.

His waist down was not human legs, but a long snake tail. Yue Yang had seen different kinds of beasts before, and the weird-looking result when a beast turned into armour or fused onto its master's body, but he had never seen a beast who is connected to its master's flesh as one body.

Yue Yang looked at the fellow, then shouted at the entrance of the cave once again, "Don't think that just because your body is black you can hide from me!"

When the Two-headed Snake who had turned into a man heard it, he laughed out loud and said, "Old tortoise, didn't I say we can't hide from him!"

Outside, a low man's voice replied.

"It's not that I want to hide, I am just a slow climber." As the voice spoke, a giant tortoise climbed up to the cave entrance on the wall with lightning speed. It had a tortoise back which was as big as a small hill. On its head, instead of a tortoise head, it had a terrifying-looking snake head with sharp fangs. Its claws were sharp like a lion's, and its tail was like a flaming whip.

The giant tortoise suddenly slipped and rolled on the ground.

Yue Yang thought that he would see a struggling overturned tortoise that wouldn't be able to get back on its feet. However, the giant tortoise suddenly lighted up in flames and transformed into a huge man wearing a black-coloured armor. His skin was dark coloured and he had a shoulder-length hair. His nails were all black, and he wore a flame-like belt on his waist. That black-armored man was almost three-metres tall. His physique was incomparably big, but he walked as if he was as light as feather. He had an unusual way of walking, as if he was floating in the air, like he was tiptoeing and walking over a water surface. In any case, his way of walking was strange in an unexplainable way.

Without waiting for Yue Yang to ask, the black-armoured man reported his attendance, "I can't call myself a Dragon Turtle yet. I am a Serpent Fire-tailed Tortoise. However, if I kill you guys and suck in all of your strength, I might be able to evolve into a Dragon Turtle. Especially if I sucked Flying Tiger's strength. It would be a huge increase to my powers!"

Chapter 255 – Pincer Attack

“Since you know each other, you should continue to reminisce about the old times. We still have something that we need to settle. We won’t bother you.” Yue Yang was about to leave.

“I will spare your life if you crawl under my legs.” The Serpent Fire-tailed Tortoise who had transformed into a black-armoured man laughed heartily.

“The beauties have to stay.” The Two-headed Snake who had transformed into a man with the green snake scales armor added.

“.....” Yue Yang remained silent but raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade, showing his enemies that he would not hesitate fighting them. Yue Yang didn’t want to create more enemies if it was not necessary. It would be great if these two Eastern Goblin Tribe members were more interested in the Flying Tiger Ambassador. In any case, he would reap the benefits if they fight. However, having this kind of thought did not mean that he was retreating like a coward, instead, it was a way to test the enemy. The reaction of the enemy would decide whether Yue Yang would launch his attack or not. Since the enemy wanted to battle, he would just slash the enemy without being afraid of trouble.

“Wait a moment.” The mysterious beauty, Wu Xia said all of a sudden. “You don’t have to fight. Let us deal with them!”

“Can you handle this?” Yue Yang was astounded.

These two Eastern Goblin Tribe definitely had the Innate Powers. How could they fight the two of them?

Princess Qian Qian waved her huge sword heroically. “Why did we follow you here if we are not going to fight? You in charge of controlling the troops. Watch as we kill the Two-headed snake and Tortoise! ”

The two Eastern Goblin Tribe laughed unbridledly as they listened. Their expressions showed that they didn’t give a damn to Princess Qian Qian and the other girls.

In their eyes, Princess Qian Qian and the other girls were not even Innate, they were just girls.

Thus, they didn’t care at all.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador remained silent as he sped up the recovery from his injury. It seemed like he had another plan in his mind.

Yue Yang paid attention to this fellow surreptitiously as he didn’t trust the Flying Tiger Ambassador. Of course, it was also impossible for the Flying Tiger Ambassador to trust Yue Yang. However, their mutual enemy were the two who were standing in front of them. The relationship between the three parties had indistinctly formed opposition towards each other since all of them had different interests. One of them had to be defeated completely in order to break this triangle.

Princess Qian Qian shouted as she raised her huge sword.

The Qi in her body exploded.

It was as strong as a hurricane.

This was her first time she exploded her true strength completely in front of Yue Yang. This also included the strength that she had been hiding all this time.

A burst of brilliant light shot out from her body and made her look like a warrior goddess. Light rays spun around her sword. Sword Qi shot out from her legs, arms and back to the ground and air. The impact from the Sword Qi even left several traces on the ground ten meters away in the cave. At the moment when the sword-shaped light shining from her body was at its brightest, a stunning, fierce tiger roar was heard.

“ROAR...”

An image of a huge white tiger appeared on top of Princess Qian Qian's head.

It then entered swiftly into Princess Qian Qian's body.

Princess Qian Qian's Qi exploded once again right after that. Her power was ten times stronger than the Qi that was as strong as hurricane just now. The whole cave that was indestructible was shaking.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador's expression changed as soon as he saw a flash of the white tiger image. It was as if he saw his frightening nemesis.

As for the man with the green snake scale armour and the black-armoured man, their eyes showed astonishment too. They never expected that a girl like Princess Qian Qian who seemed to only be ranked at Level 6 [Elder] would have such powerful strength when she released her real power. They did hear that the human warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent were good at hiding their strength before, but they didn't know that human warriors could hide their strength this well. They couldn't tell at all when she was hiding her strength

If it were not because her strength were not Innate yet, both of them would have considered giving up on battling with her.

They were afraid of the strength of the beast in her body.

Because the beast looked exactly like the White Tiger.

It was said to be the strongest beast among the legendary Four Holy Beasts, Western White Tiger!

Of course, the beast only looked like the White Tiger of the Four Holy Beast. It shouldn't be the real White Tiger. If the real White Tiger was here, it could easily tear and smash all of them even if there were a hundred members of the Eastern Goblin Tribe.

“Let me fight her!” The black armoured man who was transformed from the Serpent Fire-tailed Tortoise stepped out.

“Be careful, there’s something odd in this girl! The beast in her body should be the real White Tiger, but it should be a young White Tiger which has not fully grown yet. I can sense an indistinct pressure from her body.” The man with the green snake scales armor which had transformed from the Two-headed Snake warned his comrade immediately.

“You better worry about yourself!” The sickly beauty smiled. Her body didn’t emit a biting cold Qi, instead, her Qi was extremely soft and beautiful. Countless colours overflowed from her body. It was as beautiful as a rainbow. Many colourful light rays entered into her body and transformed into a sparkling and translucent crystal armour as she did the summoning at the same time.

If Princess Qian Qian’s White Tiger beast was said to be the strongest attack type beast, then the sickly beauty, Wu Xia’s crystal armour was the strongest defense beast.

Yue Yang battled with the sickly beauty once when she disguise herself as the Tian Luo Prince. He didn’t get to break the crystal armour even after making several attempts at it. He could only break her extremely strong defense with the Innate Invisible Sword Qi after he carved the Runic Circle on the shield. Before this, Yue Yang didn’t have confidence in Princess Qian Qian and thought that the sickly beauty was the strongest among all of them. He didn’t expect that Princess Qian Qian’s strength was no less than the sickly beauty after she released her real strength.

The thing that made Yue Yang wondered the most was that he could sense a kind of very familiar response from Princess Qian Qian.

It seemed to conform with his mind indistinctly.

At first, Yue Yang still couldn't figure it out but as Luo Hua City Mistress and mysterious beauty started to summon, he immediately realized it... It was the Ancient Runes. There was an Ancient Runic Circle in the body of Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress that conformed with his mind. When did they own the Ancient Runes? Could it be that it was when they were at the Cloud Peak Lake?

Only Luo Hua City Mistress was there with him when he launched the Ancient Runic Circle. Perhaps Princess Qian Qian and Wu Xia were there too that's why they also gained the strength of the Ancient Runes.

If compared with Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the rest, the silver runes of the sickly beauty whose health had been affected as she studied the Ancient Runes had the weakest response with the Ancient Runes in Yue Yang's body. The one with the strongest response was the mysterious beauty, Wu Xia, who had been improving her abilities and summoning skills relentlessly. She neither released a burst of her Qi like Princess Qian Qian nor was she reserved like the sickly beauty. Somewhat mysteriously, she summoned her grimoire. She held the ancient book and muttered as if she was reciting a poem.

The colourful light on her body transformed into several Ancient Runes.

The Ancient Runes streaked across her body like fireflies although they disappeared after a few seconds. Outside her shield, the temperature suddenly dropped drastically, as if an ice petrification attack had descended upon the cave. The ground, wall and dome of the cave were all gradually turning into ice.

“Eh? These little beauties all turned out to be thorny roses. We are in trouble this time! ” The green-armoured man cried out as he saw the sickly beauty’s crystal armour and Luo Hua City Mistress’s [Aurora Light]. “They are not an Innate but I felt a great sense of danger from them. Huo Wei (Fire Tail), stop your attack. I will get someone to help. Don’t make a silly mistake. It will be humiliating if we lose in such a battle! ”

“It’s surprising that both of you are scared of these girls who are just a human. This is really ridiculous!” The Flying Tiger Ambassador mocked both of them but he was also secretly alarmed in his heart.

Luckily he didn’t have to face these girls at the moment, else he would be in deep trouble too.

The heavily armoured man who was the Serpent Fire-tailed Tortoise transformation appeared unconcerned as he heard the Flying Dragon Ambassador’s mockery. He replied sarcastically, “Smart people won’t commit stupid mistakes. Fei Hu (Flying Tiger), don’t think that you can goad me with that retarded statement. Bi Lin (Green Scales), release your green snake to guide

others here. I will hold them. I have the feeling that these girls will be more worthy than the idiotic Fei Hu all of a sudden. If we can catch them and offer them to the Lich King, I believe that he will be very happy! ”

[Fei Hu means Flying Tiger in Mandarin while Bi Lin means green scale in Mandarin.]

The Two-headed snake man whose name was Bi Lin summoned a cloud of green smoke. The green smoke transformed into a green snake's shadow as it appeared out of air.

The green snake disappeared in a flash.

When it was about to disappear, a white shadow which was far faster than lightning shot out from beside Luo Hua City Mistress's feet. The white shadow streaked across the air rapidly and chased to the entrance of the cave. It managed to catch up with the green snake which was about to disappear and bit the green snake onto the floor.

It was Luo Hua City Mistress's Three-tailed Snow Fox. Although its combat strength wasn't strong, far weaker than the cockroach-like Hui Tai Lang which had a very high vitality, even a hundred Hui Tai Lang wouldn't be able to beat it when it came to killing snake-type beast. It could be said that the Three-tailed Snow Fox was the nemesis of snake-type beast. Any kind of snake-type beasts would die if they were bitten by its tiny sharp teeth.

The green snake twisted in pain as it tried to coil around the Three-tailed Snow Fox, trying to strangle its opponent to death.

However, the Three-tailed Snow Fox was extremely smart and quick.

The green snake couldn't touch its body at all since its speed was faster than lightning.

In the blink of an eye, the green snake fell dead under the Three-tailed Snow Fox's tiny mouth.

The Two-headed snake man, Bi Lin was extremely angry. He raised one of his green hands and green liquid flowed out from his palm. The green liquid smelled very fishy and so unpleasant that it caused people to feel dizzy and nauseated. He then shot the liquid towards the Three-tailed Snow Fox. The Three-tailed Snow Fox avoided the liquid nimbly. As the liquid splashed on the floor, green and white smoke burst out as the stone floor of the cave eroded.

“[Aurora Light]! ” Luo Hua City Mistress raised her hand. Although she wasn't good at close combat like Princess Qian Qian, the frightening power of the [Aurora Light] which was condensed in her hands was no doubt a nightmare for the enemy.

“Magic Tortoise Shield. Bi Lin, stay behind me! ” The black-armoured man, Huo Wei didn't have a grimoire but as an Eastern Goblin Tribe member he was more expert in summoning if compared with the Flying Dragon Ambassador and the rest. He took out a black summoning crystal and summoned a huge tortoise which then transformed into a super thick shield. He was prepared

to defend himself against Luo Hua City Mistress's [Aurora Light]. At the same time, he hinted to his comrade to hide behind him. Although Luo Hua City Mistress was not an Innate, it would be painful if they were hit by this kind of [Aurora Light]. He was very alert especially because he saw the Runic Circle that had appeared momentarily before the [Aurora Light] condensed in Luo Hua City Mistress' palm.

“It's too late! ” Princess Qian Qian raised her huge sword and with an irresistible force, slashed her target, Bi Lin, the Two-headed snake man with a tremendous force.

“Flashing Snake Shadow...” The Two-headed snake man didn't defend the attack but transformed into a mirage and slipped to his comrade.

However, afterwards, something astonishing happened.

As soon as he made his move, he was trapped in a pincer kill by the girls.

The mysterious beauty, Wu Xia appeared behind him in a flash with thunder and ice in each of her hands. The power in both of her hands were not any weaker than Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora Light]. She had made use of Luo Hua City Mistress's [Aurora Light] and the Qi of Princess Qian Qian ingeniously to mask her power so that she could accumulate the strongest power and waited for a good chance to attack. As soon as the Two-headed snake man moved, she attacked him immediately by dealing a heavy blow to his ears with her hands.

Her current strength was no longer the same as the time when she battled with Marquis Zi Jin.

Before she attacked the Two-headed snake man with both of her hands, a terrified expression was seen on his face. He could have dodged or defended, but there was a cute little lamia that made his life completely tragic... Due to the Binding Innate Skill, he became a living sandbag who couldn't move at all in three seconds while he was being beaten.

In front, a cute little lamia brandished her Dual Icicle Blades at him. At his back, the mysterious beauty who was like a Death Reaper, attacked him with her [Thunder Palm] and [Icicle] at his left and right side respectively.

On top of his head, the huge sword wielded by the tigress, Princess Qian Qian was about to slash down upon him.....

Chapter 256 – Nirvana's Flame, Refining Orbs!

Under the pincer attack, a serious damage was inflicted on Bi Lin, the Two-headed Snake.

His eardrums had burst, his blood flowed out from the seven orifices of his head. Half of his face was burnt black while the other half of his face was frozen in ice. Even the blood that he spat out from his mouth had become frozen in ice as it shattered on the floor. Before the mysterious beauty, Wu Xia could finish her attack, Princess Qian Qian's huge sword had slashed down on him with an irresistible force. Although the huge sword didn't slash the Two-headed Snake into two, it had successfully cut into his skull. Princess Qian Qian's attack held immense power. On top of that, the Two-headed Snake man had no defence at all. As a result, when he was slashed by the huge sword, his blood spilled out on the spot while his skull was smashed into pieces. His brain was also split open at the same time.

The joint attacks by Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian wasn't the biggest damage that had been inflicted on the Two-headed Snake man.

The one who had launched the deadly blow was the little lamia, Xiao Wen Li.

Her Dual Icicle Blades slipped through the Two-headed Snake man's chest and freeze all the organs inside his body. As she transformed into a rainbow light and floated back into Yue Yang's body, she placed a bloody Orb on Yue Yang's hands. This was the

deadly attack by Xiao Wen Li. She had dug out the Two-headed Snake man's Orb.

The bodies of the Eastern Goblin Tribe were extremely strong. They could recover rapidly even if their body received critical damage.

However, they must never lose their Orbs, otherwise they would suffer great injuries to their vitality at best or die at worst.

It was not that the Two-headed Snake man wasn't being vigilant. It's just that he only paid attention to Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the rest. He never expected that the one who had launched the deadly blow would be the Xiao Wen Li who was hidden inside Yue Yang's body.

Due to Xiao Wen Li's Binding Innate Skill, he had become a living sandbag who could only get sliced up by the enemy.

The black-armored man, Huo Wei charged forward frantically as he wanted to save his comrade.

He attacked agitatedly but his attacks were useless against the sickly beauty's crystal shield. Luo Hua City Mistress who was standing far away from him suddenly shot out an extremely strong [Aurora Light] and sent him flying away, not giving him any second chance to attack. If Huo Wei didn't have his Magic Tortoise Shield, he would probably follow his comrade's footsteps and became the second Eastern Goblin Tribe member to collapsed in front of the four girls.

“No!” The armored man, Huo Wei cried out bitterly as he saw his comrade fell down raggedly.

As a result of making the wrong move, his comrade had suffered heavy damages and became an ice statue.

The armored man Huo Wei ignited in flame as he ran towards his comrade, carrying the Two-headed Snake man who had turned into an ice statue away.

The ice melted rapidly as it was heated by the raging flames.

To their astonishment, the Two-headed Snake man had not died even after suffering so much damage.

He slowly transformed back to his original form of a huge snake and coiled his body with one of his snake's head. In the midst of a green cloud of smoke, he completed a bizarre transformation. His other undamaged snake's head was transformed into him while his own snake's head which had been seriously damaged was transformed into the beast. However, although the Two-headed Snake managed to save his life with this bizarre way of replacing his snake's head, he had lost a great deal of his strength. He no longer possessed Innate powers since he had lost his Orb. He had only managed to stay alive due to the strong body of the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Even a Level 7 [Overlord] could slash the current him right now.

“Ssss..... ” The Two-headed Snake flicked out its long tongue as

it escaped out from the cave in high speed under the armored man, Huo Wei's protection.

“Where are you trying to escape?” Of course the Flying Tiger Ambassador wanted to take advantage of their predicament.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador was reserving his strength since Yue Yang and the four girls were here and he was worried that Xiao Wen Li would make a surprise attack on him like she did to Bi Lin. However, the Flying Tiger Ambassador still increased his Innate powers unhesitatingly and transformed into a brightly-coloured fierce tiger with a pair of huge wings on its back. He pounced fiercely forward to bite the Two-headed Snake, Bi Lin and the armored man, Huo Wei.

His objective was to kill the Two-headed Snake, Bi Lin, forcing Huo Wei to go mad with anger. Then, he planned to join hands with Yue Yang to defeat Huo Wei together.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador believed that Yue Yang would definitely make his move to kill Huo Wei as long as there was a good opportunity for him to do so.

Let alone Huo Wei, the Flying Tiger Ambassador believed that he would also be killed if he was careless.

Yue Yang and the four girls watched disinterestedly. It would be better if the Flying Tiger Ambassador fight with the enemy so that they wouldn't need to lift a hand.

Originally, Huo Wei's strength wasn't any weaker than the Flying Tiger Ambassador, but because he had to protect his injured comrade Bi Lin, Huo Wei could only transform back to his real form of Serpent Fire-tailed Tortoise and defend the Flying Tiger Ambassador's attack. In an instant, he was pushed back continuously by the Flying Tiger Ambassador.

Yue Yang noticed that this battle would probably last quite some time. So he didn't bother much about the battle situation and started to study the Orb in his palm instead.

This Snake Orb gave him a very odd feeling.

It seemed like some kind of secret was hidden inside it.

Yue Yang believed his beasts, Wu Xia, Wu Hen, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and he himself could greatly enhance their strength as long as he unraveled the secret of this Orb. It could be said that this Orb might be the key to breakthroughs of their strength in the future. The four girls knew that Yue Yang must have discovered something new as soon as they saw Yue Yang's thoughtful expression. Four of them quickly gathered around him secretly, in order to protect him from the enemy's attack and distractions so that he could concentrate on studying the secret of the Orb.

The Medicine Encyclopedia did record something about the Orb, but the record was very simple.

It only stated that an Orb was formed after accumulating energy

for a long time and it was usually found in an animal's body. The Orb was formed after the animal absorbed the [Spiritual Energy] of the universe. Therefore, it possessed a very powerful energy.

If a beast absorbs an Orb from a beast of the same attribute, they would level up or even undergo Variant Evolution.

The disadvantage of the Orb was that its energy was too powerful and there were too much of impurity in it.

If a beast absorbed an Orb from a beast of different attribute, not only would it be useless to the consumer's body, it might even be harmful to the beast. It could cause the beast to die due to overflow of energy...

Orbs were very rare in the Soaring Dragon Continent but it was very common amongst the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Although it was quite similar to the demon crystals of the demonic beasts in the Soaring Dragon Continent, they have their differences. The energy inside an Orb was very powerful, but most Orbs was not a solid substance. Once the Orb had solidified, its energy was incomparable to an ordinary demon crystal. The power stored inside an Orb was even greater than dragon crystals which were said to possess the greatest power.

Another point was that even though Orbs contained a lot of impurity, it was considered much cleaner than demon crystals. Moreover, it was always connected with its owner's soul, hence the Orb's owner could even use his Orb to attack his enemy.

Of course, the Orb owner would die if the Orb was damaged.

And in the same way, it would be dangerous to swallow an Orb if the Orb owner had not died yet, because the owner could control the Orb as he or she wish.

The Orb was shaking in Yue Yang's palm. The Two-headed Snake had made several attempts to suck in the Orb back to his body. However, it was not easy to regain things back from Yue Yang once it had fallen onto his palms. The Orb was refining rapidly under Yue Yang's Innate Qi. The impurity, spirit, evil energy and other unnecessary attribute were all being dispersed by Yue Yang's Innate Qi as well... At first, Yue Yang did it subconsciously as he intended to prevent the Two-headed Snake, Bi Lin to regain his Orb back. He wanted to disperse the impurity so that he could keep the Orb and study it.

However, Yue Yang started to realize something as he dispersed the consciousness of the Orb by using his Innate Qi.

He couldn't describe the strange response.

As he purified the Orb with his Innate Qi, the response was even stronger and he started to understand it.

"I need fire. Yes, I need to refine it with fire!" Yue Yang released the power of Yang and ignited a purple flame. He further refined the Orb in his palm according to his understanding.

The Two-headed Snake at the other side, on the other hand, looked to be in pain as Yue Yang's Innate Qi started to disperse the consciousness from the Orb.

When Yue Yang refined it with the purple flame, it screamed and fell on the ground suddenly.

Although it didn't die, it whined miserably as its body rapidly became larger and rougher. On the other hand, its strength was decreasing relentlessly. When it became a huge snake whose body's thickness was larger than a water bucket, its strength had deteriorated until the level of Gold-ranked Level 5 of the Soaring Dragon Continent. When his Orb was stolen, if Bi Lin could regain his Orb back, there might still be hope for Bi Lin to regain his Innate powers back... However, along with Yue Yang's refining, his condition became even more tragic as time passed by. Completely losing his Orb, he slowly turned back into his original form, a giant snake, and his strength had even deteriorated drastically!

Bi Lin might be weaker than a Gold-ranked Level 5 huge snake if he didn't have high intelligence.

Even the Flying Tiger Ambassador wasn't interested to kill him now.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador could see that it would be tough for Bi Lin to regain its human transformation ability even if he cultivated for another thousand of years, even if he didn't die now. It was also out of question that it could return to the Innate Realm.

Yue Yang had not finish refining yet. Instead, it was only the beginning.

The size of the Orb was a few times smaller after it was refined nine times by the purple flames of the power of Yang. It became sparkling like an egg yolk, bright golden and dazzling with a radiant but soft light. Even a blind person could see how precious the Orb was. It was pure and full of energy. If anyone swallowed it, there would be an obvious change in the enhancement of his or her strength.

The four girls looked at the Orb in Yue Yang's hand happily. They never thought that the Orb could be refined using this way.

If there were a lot of Orbs for a beast to absorb, wouldn't there be a rapid progress in enhancing the beast's' streng?

“What is this Orb's attribute? What kind of beast would be best to take it? ” The sickly beauty had great interest in researching. If she wasn't at the battlefield now she would have taken out a pen to record every detail of it.

“I haven't finished refining it yet. I still need to refine it again. But when it is completed, the Orb's attribute should be neutral and it can be taken by any type of beast.” Yue Yang wasn't satisfied with the refining of this Orb. According to his understanding, it was possible for this Orb to be further refined. It's basic foundation could be changed as well but the flame that was required to refine it again had to be a higher levelled one. For

example, the “True [Samadhi](#) Fire”.

Yue Yang didn't have such kind of thing.

However, he had Nirvana's Flame.

Could the Nirvana's Flame refine the Orb like how the True Samadhi Fire did? Yue Yang never tried about it but he thought that that idea might work.

Anyway, it was just an experiment. If it was successful then it proved that the Nirvana's Flame could be used to refine the Orb. Yue Yang would then have the motivation to fight the Eastern Goblin Tribe and steal their Orbs. If it failed, it was not too bad too as it would just cost them an Orb.

Yue Yang worried that the Orb would be burnt away if there was too much of Nirvana's Flame.

He tried his best to control the Nirvana's Flame so that it was only ignited in his palm. He used the smallest flame to refine the Orb which had already been purified.

The mysterious beauty Wu Xia, the sickly beauty Wu Hen, Princess Qian Qian and the Luo Hua City Mistress were all containing their excitement and waited with bated breath as they watched Yue Yang refining the Orb.

The Orb melted rapidly under the Nirvana's Flame just like how

an ice melt under a flame.

At first, Yue Yang was shocked as he thought that he failed to refine it.

However, the ping-pong sized Orb stopped decreasing in size when it was the size of a glass bead. The Orb had been changed completely. The dazzling Orb had now become sparkling and transparent, pure without any impurity. What was left in it was completely pure energy. Furthermore, this energy was the energy that had been refined and transformed until it changed completely. It had a neutral attribute and was extremely concentrated in energy, like a diamond that had been polished.

A dazzling and magnificent light burst out from within Yue Yang's palms, completely unstoppable.

When Yue Yang opened his palm, the dome in the cave was brightened up by the shining magnificent light. The Orb looked like a tiny sun in Yue Yang's palm as it emitted bright radiance.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador and the armored man Huo Wei who were fighting at the other side watched blankly and stopped fighting, completely stunned.

That Orb was an existence that they wouldn't even dream of existing.

If they had not seen it for themselves, they would never expect

that Orbs could emit such great energy and dazzling light. How did this human boy do that? Could it be that his real identity was the grandmaster level of alchemist? How did he refine the Orb without using any cauldron, in such a short time?

The Flying Tiger Ambassador and Huo Wei as well as Bi Lin who had transformed to a huge snake looked at Yue Yang greedily.

They were thinking that if they could capture this brat back with them and force him to help them refine orbs, undergoing the Variant Evolution to be a Goblin King might just be around the corner...

Chapter 257 – Southern Four Goblin Generals

A light flashed across the eyes of the heavily armoured guy, Huo Wei. He suddenly abandoned the comrade whom he had been going all out to protect, and ran out of the cave.

His behaviour greatly startled the Flying Tiger Ambassador.

But without thinking more, the Flying Tiger Ambassador spared no effort in chasing after him.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador was extremely clear of one thing – to be the sole beneficiary of the Orb based on just his strength alone was not possible. Since he was unable to benefit from it exclusively, why not offer this secret to the Goblin Emperor? The Goblin Emperor would reward him greatly for it, and he himself would also benefit from a large improvement in strength. Before offering this secret to the Goblin Emperor, he must first kill Huo Wei, the subordinate of Southern Goblin King. Otherwise, if Huo Wei reported this to his superior, the Southern Goblin King would definitely take action before the Goblin Emperor knew of this ... At that time his own life would be in danger, and this little human boy would also be captured and taken to the Southern Goblin Lands.

Hence, no matter what, Huo Wei must not be allowed to live!

“Let’s join forces to kill Huo Wei! He’s preparing to call for reinforcements. The Nine-Headed Goblin Marshal is present in

this ambush, he's an extremely strong opponent who is very hard to deal with. We have to kill Huo Wei first, to dispel future troubles!" The Flying Tiger Ambassador did not forget to shout to Yue Yang before he gave chase.

In the heart of the Flying Tiger Ambassador, Yue Yang's previous status of an enemy to him had transformed into a rare treasure.

He temporarily put aside the thought of killing Yue Yang and the four women.

He even decided to adopt different tactics and methods like cooperation or scamming, to first pacify this little human boy.

After they killed Huo Wei, he would then work together with his comrades to take this mystical little boy back as an offering to the Goblin Emperor. With the help of a mystical human being who knew how to refine Orbs, the Goblin Emperor would definitely greatly advance in strength. At that time, there would even be a possibility for them to lead armies into the Heaven Realms... As long as he could enter the legendary Heaven Realms, even just for one look, he would die without regrets.

"Go after him." Yue Yang gave Wu Xia, Qian Qian and Luo Hua a quick look.

The reason why he chose to refine the orb in front of Huo Wei and the Flying Tiger Ambassador was understood only by the four women. This was a trap to lure and kill the enemy. Before this, it would not be possible to for Huo Wei and the Flying Tiger

Ambassador to really go all out, since they still had to be vigilant against Yue Yang and the four women.

Once Yue Yang refined the pills successfully, Huo Wei and Flying Tiger would definitely fight for it with all their might, all for the purpose of exclusively benefiting from the secret.

Maybe Huo Wei and Flying Tiger would request for as many reinforcements as possible, but no matter how many more were coming, both sides would fight to the end with each other, until the other side has completely been obliterated. Most importantly, their side, which was the weakest in strength initially, would at least be temporarily safe due to their status changing from that of an enemy to a target that both Huo Wei and Flying Tiger wanted to lure over to their side. Even if either side emerged victorious in the end, they would not attack Yue Yang or the four women again!

Before chasing, Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress joined hands in using [Body Fusion]. The explosive power of [Double Aurora] pulverized the greatly weakened Giant Serpent Bi Lin into multiple pieces.

Princess Qian Qian's giant sword slashed heavily, beheading the snake.

Finally, to ensure that Bi Lin was indeed dead, Wu Xia even used [Cold Air] to freeze the snake head into a block of ice.

After Yue Yang and the four women killed the Giant Snake Bi Lin, they followed the battle trail of Flying Tiger and Huo Wei and

chased after them... In order to stop Huo Wei, the Flying Tiger Ambassador used his strongest attacking power, while Huo Wei used his strongest defensive power to resist, attempting to flee from him with all his might.

If not for the knowledge that his comrade was just right in front of him, Huo Wei would not have the confidence to escape from the relentless attacks of Flying Tiger.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador thundered in rage. In order to intercept Huo Wei, he almost went all out without a care for the consequences, and would rather have an outcome where neither side won than see Huo Wei escape from his clutches. Even if the Ambassador knew that the sounds of fighting would definitely attract more enemies, he had no way to fight noiselessly. Both his [Radiant Tiger Explosion Wave] and [Hissing Tiger Sky Vibrating Howl] need the roaring sound made from his throat to transmit his breath.

If he did not roar, and silently attacked instead, that would reduce eighty percent of his power.

“Roar!” The Flying Tiger Ambassador’s only hope was for Huo Wei’s comrades to be slow to hear the fighting sounds made over here, and only after he was able to kill Huo Wei and make him unable to spill the secret of making orbs forever. That would be the most ideal outcome.

“Kill!” Yue Yang did not make the Flying Tiger Ambassador wait for long. Once he caught up, he immediately unsheathed his Hui Jin Magic Blade. Showering the skies with purple flames, he

slashed his blade towards Huo Wei's head.

Huo Wei was already in a battered and exhausted state.

The attacks of Flying Tiger Ambassador and Yue Yang constituted formidable power, with each move at full force. Flying Tiger even regularly made full-frontal attacks that disregarded defence, just to lure Huo Wei into retaliating, but Huo Wei repeatedly refused to be tricked, and did not even pause in his movements for a second. Instead, he suppressed the anger in his heart and focused on wildly fleeing. His Magic Tortoise Shield served as an extremely good form of defence, and he also had an extremely strong body. Hence even if he was hit squarely by Flying Tiger's attacks, he was still able to continue fleeing.

Huo Wei knew that as long as he could persevere till his comrades received news of him and arrived, then the situation would immediately be reversed...

In this Ancient Passage, Flying Tiger had no possibility of finding assistance. Most of his subordinates had died in battle, and when most of Huo Wei's comrades lay waiting in ambush, their total strength would be ten times that of Flying Tiger's. Hence, to surround Flying Tiger and to capture the other five humans alive was definitely not a problem.

Other than the strongest one out of them, the Nine-Headed Goblin Marshal, there were still the Goblin King's immediate subordinates, four of the Eight Great Goblin Generals, waiting for them.

The battle strength of any single one of the Four Great Goblin Generals, Jin Chan, Zi Diao, Pi Pa, Shi Meng could easily capture and kill Flying Tiger, a hooligan which bullied the weak and was afraid of the strong.

Even if the Nine-Headed Goblin Marshal and the Four Great Goblin Generals did not arrive in time, there were still the Fallen Human Rankers Lord Liu He and Mister Duan Mu. They were human Level Three [Innate] Rankers, even though their physical bodies were not as strong as the Eastern Goblin Tribe, but human [Innate]s would normally be a few levels stronger than other tribes' [Innate]s. As long as Liu He and Mister Duan Mu arrived, Flying Tiger would definitely not be able to handle them!

As for the Goblin Envoys and Goblin Servants, whose strength was almost the same as him or were slightly weaker than him, there were a few dozens of them. As long as Huo Wei could meet up with them, he could definitely defeat the Flying Tiger Ambassador.

As long as any one of them received news and came, it would be good.

But what made Huo Wei despair was that the first to receive news and come was not his own comrade, but Flying Tiger's single surviving comrade in the Ancient Passage, Fiery Golden Eyes Beast.

“What's going on?” When the middle-aged man that Fiery Golden Eyes Beast transformed into saw the scene in front of him,

he was extremely surprised.

“Cut the crap, Golden Eyes, put away that irritating cover of politeness. I order you to immediately use your most powerful attack to kill Huo Wei!” When the Flying Tiger Ambassador saw that the one who came forward was actually his own comrade, he was ecstatic. He felt that the Heavens were really favouring him, if the one who came was an enemy, then his headache would grow by three times. Luckily, the one who came was Fiery Golden Eyes beast. This fellow was normally the most irritating, but since he was able to come in time to help, the previous bad impression of him immediately changed. As long as he could live to bring back the secret to the Goblin Emperor, as long as he was in a good mood, he would even put in a few good words for him.

“We should just run away now, four abnormal monsters are coming from behind! I barely managed to escape from them... You guys are fighting so hard now, but they will arrive within a minute!” The middle-aged man whom Fiery Golden Eyes Beast had transformed into had a bitter smile on his face. “If we have even ten minutes, you don’t even need to say a thing, I would immediately attack and kill of this turtle!”

“Then you should take this little boy and leave, his life is more important than yours, bring him with you!” The Flying Tiger Ambassador ordered Golden Eyes to take Yue Yang and leave.

“I am thinking that he shouldn’t have the ability to do that...”

From the far entrance of the Ancient Passage, a beautiful lady holding a jaded pipa sashayed towards them.

(E/N: Pipa is a chinese guitar looking instrument.)

When Flying Tiger saw this woman, his face immediately changed. “Pipa Goblin of the Southern Four Goblin Generals?”

On the other hand, Huo Wei had an ecstatic expression on his face.

Even further in the darkness, a smiling chubby man walked towards them.

Beside him, there was an extremely ugly Golden Toad with three feet. Behind him, there was a skinny guy riding a strange horse which looked neither like a horse or a donkey. Once the skinny guy appeared, he kept coughing, looking as if he was suffering from a terminal disease and would almost fall to the ground and die any minute.

When the Flying Tiger Ambassador saw these three monsters appear, terror filled his eyes. He turned and rushed into the Ancient Passage behind him at the speed of a hurricane. His speed was so fast that he disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Because he was eager to escape, he did not even bother to inform his comrade, Golden Eyes, in time.

Yue Yang was slightly appalled.

This Flying Tiger had just asked his comrade to leave first in such

a righteous manner, how was it that once strong enemies arrived, he himself first escaped with such speed?

The middle-aged man whom Fiery Golden Eyes Beast had transformed into smiled bitterly. He seemed to have already anticipated such an outcome..

The heavily armoured guy Huo Wei rushed over, getting ready to block Flying Tiger's passage.

Golden Eyes' aura exploded around him as he repelled Huo Wei with one punch. Opening both his arms, he instead took over Flying Tiger's position to obstruct the enemy, letting his comrade Flying Tiger escape first.

He even nodded his head slightly towards Yue Yang, saying "Yue Yang, you too leave with your comrades!"

Yue Yang was slightly stunned. "What?"

Golden Eyes shook his head expressionlessly. "Around fifteen kilometers behind us, there is a Teleportation Circle. That leads to the Teleportation Circle at the outer fence of the God's Ruin's Inner Layer. Inside the God's Ruin's, there may be many rubbles for people to hide in them temporarily. If you guys are lucky enough, find a shattered space to hide, then think of a way to leave. Even though our Emperor has captured your family, His Majesty will not hurt them. His Majesty did that just to forcefully improve the foreign relations between humans like Zhi Zun and the Innate Association. The Southern Goblin Tribe is not

interested in invading a small place like the Soaring Dragon Continent... You guys leave now, I should be able to resist them for a few minutes, good luck to you!”

Huo Wei rushed forth a second time, and was entirely caught by Golden Eyes.

He lifted him up and threw him into the distance.

“This is such an idiotic monster. Could it be that you think that just based on your strength alone, you can resist the attacks of the four of us?” The beautiful lady carrying the jaded pipa laughed.

“I can’t. But I am fulfilling my loyal duties towards His Majesty, so I’d die without regrets!” Golden Eyes’ expression did not change. He continued to spread his arms, blocking the passage.

“Since you think this way, then we’ll first let you fulfill your loyal duties.” The chubby guy who brought the Three-footed Golden Toad was smiling widely, as if he was saying greetings for prosperity, rather than killing somebody. The skinny guy beside him was coughing continuously, as if he was going to cough out his lungs, and looked as if he was about to fall to the ground and die anytime. But through Yue Yang’s Level Four [Divine Vision], he could tell that this skinny who had tuberculosis was not an easy target...

“Leave now, I can’t hold this for much longer.” Golden Eyes looked at the enemies who were slowly closing in, indicating to Yue Yang to leave quickly.

“I also want to leave... But I can only thank you for your kind intentions, I think its still better for me to stay.” A smile as brilliant as the sun crept across Yue Yang’s face. Unknowingly, there was a curvaceous woman with ample assets who had hugged Yue Yang from behind like a lover acting coquettishly. A snow-white long leg peeked out from a slitted long dress, hooking onto Yue Yang’s thigh from the side, gently rubbing against the inside of Yue Yang’s thighs. At the same time, there was an arm as white as a snow lotus which hooked onto Yue Yang’s neck. Lips with purple lipstick applied found their way to his ear, breathing out fragrantly. “Little brother, you’re so smart, not dumb like that idiot, not even knowing when he’s about one foot into his coffin... You’re such an obedient little brother, let oneesan reward you with a kiss, okay?”

“Of course it’s good with me, but I am afraid that my fiancée would be angry. You know that when women are jealous, it is really disastrous!” Yue Yang indicated that he was a good husband.

“Who is your fiancée?” The curvaceous purple-lipped woman blew out a light purple fragrant breath onto Yue Yang’s first.

“Behind me, the four ladies who are giving you death glares.” Yue Yang answered.

“Eh? They are just little virgins without experience, little brother, you are really very obedient! Actually, why should you care about what they think, if men do not know how to have fun with women, is that still a man? Let oneesan teach you a few tricks, I’ll guarantee that you will make them hover between

ecstasy and suffering, and make them fall under the spell of your body.” The purple-lipped curvaceous woman looked at Wu Xia, Wu Heng, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress. On seeing that they were not Innates, she was unperturbed, callously roaming her eyes across them and continuing to seduce Yue Yang.

On hearing this, a wolfish lecherous expression appeared immediately on Yue Yang’s face.

His wolfish claws stretch followed and directly seized the round buttocks of the purple-lipped curvaceous woman, looking like a lecher desperate for sex.

Initially, the purple-lipped curvaceous woman was very alert, right until Yue Yang’s wolfish claws grabbed her buttocks and started to knead and rub her. Since she had not felt his murderous intent, she really thought that this fellow was really taking advantage of this opportunity to take liberties with her, hence she couldn’t help seducing him further. A faintly discernable moan escaped from her throat. That sort of moan was alluring and seductive, and was able to make one’s lust explode a hundred or a thousand times.

On hearing this woman’s alluring moan, Yue Yang’s hands acted like they were given some sort of encouragement, directly reaching into the seam of her slitted dress.

“You’re so naughty!” The purple-lipped curvaceous woman wriggled her body, breathing heavily into Yue Yang’s ear.

“Many people say that, some of them whom were killed by me shortly after they said that.” Yue Yang had a wolfish grin on his face as he answered. The purple-lipped curvaceous woman was about to reply “Then you kill me too”, but she was suddenly alert, and immediately tried to escape. But she was too late, under Yue Yang’s binds, her entire body froze in midair. Yue Yang’s power of Yang erupted, as purple flames, [Spherical Beheader] and First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash all activated at the same time, sending the purple-lipped curvaceous woman, who paused in midair just for a second before recovering, flying.

The woman fell to the floor in pain.

Her hands were covering her lower abdomen where blood was seeping out as she groaned painfully, with one hand on the ground as support.

Her originally beautiful body was now twisting like a small shrimp that was being cooked. The clothes on her body had been burnt to ashes by the purple flames. The skin of her lower abdomen which had borne the disastrous strike was now charcoal, and her snow white and slender legs had multiple slash wounds, with fresh blood seeping out... The purple-lipped curvaceous woman summoned a ball of green light for herself, as the green light enveloped her body, her wounds started to heal quickly.

In less than ten seconds, her wounds had already completely recovered.

However, she stood up without shame even with a naked body, and exposed her sinister and gloomy murderous intent towards

Yue Yang. “You damned human, you dare to hurt my beautiful body?”

“If you want to seduce me, its not impossible, only if you become more beautiful after you reincarnate!” Yue Yang was grinning widely. “Its not your fault that you don’t look hot and cannot fire up others’ lust, but to look like that and still dare to try and seduce people everywhere, that is definitely your fault.”

On hearing this, the beautiful lady who was carrying the jaded pipa covered her small mouth and giggled.

The chubby guy who brought Three-footed Golden Toad with him also chuckled. “So, you want to become our enemies? Little child, that is not a good idea at all. Seeing that there is still time to change your mind, perhaps you could consider that once again.”

“If you kneel in front of me and let me step on your head with my foot, maybe I’ll reconsider.” Yue Yang’s answer almost made everybody think he was crazy.

“Little boy, you are like a lousy toad that’s yawning. Such a big mouth! Golden Toad, this little human boy’s even better at bragging than you!” The beautiful lady carrying the jaded pipa giggled.

On hearing this, the chubby guy who was initially smiling immediately stopped smiling.

His fury made his entire face beet red as he shouted loudly “You damned Jaded Pipa Spirit, I am Golden Toad, I am not a lousy toad!”

Yue Yang waved his hands nonchalantly. “Go down to hell to explain that to the King of Hell, I don’t actually care whether you are a lousy toad or not. Anyway, there is nothing to brag about killing a lousy toad...” The four ladies kept silent, but had already summoned their grimoires. Princess Qian Qian was holding up her sword ready to strike at any time, whereas Luo Hua City Mistress had started to gather her aurora lights, while the mysterious beauty Wu Xia was hidden behind them. As long as she attacked, it would definitely be the strongest form of killing move.

If the four of them were not with Yue Yang, they would definitely not be a worthy opponent of any single one of these enemies.

But as long as Yue Yang was present, then they could display their actual strength.

No matter how much battle power they could provide Yue Yang, they would never stop supporting him... What more, now was the time where he needed support the most!

Chapter 258 – Who Wants To Die Next?

A little purple Lightning [Marten](#) suddenly appeared beside the naked purple-lipped flirty girl.

When it saw Luo Hua City Mistress' Three-tailed Snow Fox, it immediately screeched loudly.

The Lightning Marten looked agitated as it released a shot of electric current through its purple eyes. Its killing intent burst out from its body, as if it had deep hatred towards the Three-tailed Snow Fox.

The Three-tailed Snow Fox's intelligence far surpassed the Lightning Marten. Although a hint of killing intent was present in the Three-tailed Snow Fox's eyes, it somewhat understood that there was something wrong with the situation in front of it, so it did not initiate an attack and waited by its master's side instead, waiting for the right time. The Lightning Marten bared its sharp teeth and continued to growl relentlessly. Its hair all stood up on its end, as if it was inviting the Three-tailed Snow Fox to a fight and intimidating it.

The Three-tailed Snow Fox who succeeded in killing the Fox Rabbit and Green Snake showed an expression that only a human could have.

If one closely observed that expression, one would find that it was soundlessly mocking its opponent.

Compared to its enemy, the Three-tailed Snow Fox was more like human than beast, be it in terms of wisdom or feelings!

All kinds of beasts' intimidation tactics did not have an effect on its master. That naked purple-lipped flirty girl really wished that she could tear Yue Yang to shreds and swallowed him whole. She wasn't in a hurry to put her clothes back on, instead she released her Qi continuously. Her body which was slowly turning pink in colour emitted a strange kind of fragrance.

It was a smell that would make whomever that smelled it weak and powerless.

Luo Hua City Mistress continued to glare at the purple-lipped girl, the [Aurora] in her hands charged to the maximum. However, she was still trying to charge more power into her [Aurora].

Long before she trained the [Body Fusion] skill with Yue Yang, Yue Yang had pointed out that her p[Aurora] power was actually not yet at its full potential. This fact greatly shocked Luo Hua City Mistress, especially when Yue Yang told her that a spiralling [Aurora] would do much more damage than a straight-line [Aurora]... Luo Hua City Mistress was doubtful that her straight [Aurora] could even bend, let alone making it spin... However, this impossibility had gradually become a possibility as she trained [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang. Luo Hua City Mistress had seen many times Yue Yang bending the [Aurora] and turning it into a spiral shape before adding it onto her own [Aurora]. The power of that combined attack surpassed the original by more than ten times.

This [Aurora] that was straight on the inside and spiral on the outside was the true result of Yue Yang's and Luo Hua City Mistress' [Body Fusion], the [Double Aurora]!

[Double Aurora]'s power was practically heaven and earth destructing.

Since then, Luo Hua City Mistress would relentlessly try new things and threw away her previous notions, even personally modifying her previously straight [Aurora] into a spiral one.

“Wait, go slower. Hold it in and persevere, when you have already adapted with this amount, try to charge it with even more power!” Other than Yue Yang, the genius in everything, when Yue Yang was busy, the mysterious beauty Wu Xia was the girls' number one choice when it come to assisting them train.

She couldn't bend the [Aurora] like Yue Yang to coordinate with Luo Hua City Mistress, but she could assist with Luo Hua City Mistress' control.

A [Spiral Aurora] was a great challenge for Luo Hua City Mistress' level of control currently, but she was extremely clever. If she couldn't master [Spiral Aurora], she would first try to master [Multiple Aurora]. She created six little [Aurora] balls beside her huge [Aurora] ball of power that she was charging. When the big [Aurora] ball shot out towards her enemy, the other six smaller [Aurora] balls also shot out as extra damage. The effects of this kind attack, from the sickly beauty Wu Hen's estimation, was at least three times stronger than Luo Hua City Mistress' original attack.

The six smaller [Aurora] balls coordinated with the big Aurora in terms of speed, angle of them bending, creating better results.

Luo Hua City Mistress's goal was to launch six small balls of aurora to create a screw-like web that surrounded the big [Aurora] balls. She continued to emit her [Aurora] light, increasing the [Aurora] pillar's power.

The naked flirty girl's public attempt to seduce Yue Yang just now had incurred Luo Hua City Mistress' wrath secretly.

She had decided to give that shameless girl a taste of her [Aurora]
...

Princess Qian Qian who was standing beside Luo Hua City Mistress glared at the other beautiful girl who was carrying a jade pipa in her hands. Her Six Records Inherent Skill could sense that this girl with jade pipa was much more dangerous than the naked flirty girl. Amongst the Southern Four Goblins General, Princess Qian Qian felt that the strongest one was that jade pipa girl, she was even scarier than that frail and skinny man who kept coughing like he had tuberculosis!

The sickly beauty Wu Hen had completed her preparation, she was ready to support Yue Yang any time.

Before Yue Yang launched his attack, the enemies would definitely surround him first. At that moment, he needed her Crystal Shield to block all attacks, so that he wouldn't need to

worry and could focus on attacking the enemies...

“Fatty, come and tank for me. I want to personally shred that damned human to shreds!” The flirty girl hated Yue Yang to his core.

“Working hard for beauties is my honour!” The Golden Toad fatty replied with a guffaw.

“Cough cough, if you, cough cough cough, do not need me, cough cough, then let me go to sleep, cough cough!” That skinny tuberculosis guy laid himself on his horse that looked kind of like a horse or donkey, and slept weakly. In his dreams, he was still silently coughing.

As the skinny tuberculosis guy laid and slept, the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast whose on highest alert suddenly swayed, as if he was about to weakly collapse on the ground.

The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast howled loudly, his two hands armed with his claws started to scratch on his body maniacally, creating countless bloody scars.

Yue Yang was greatly surprised. Had this fellow fallen into the enemy’s trap?

How did his Divine Vision missed that?

The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast suddenly turned around and

shouted towards Yue Yang, “He is Dream Eater Goblin General, he can enter other’s dream and force others into dreaming. In the dream world, he is an unrivalled existence. You guys quickly leave while my senses is still... huff...”

His sentence was not yet over before he fell right on the ground.

Even though his body was full of scars, the pain couldn’t stop him from falling asleep.

When he slept, his mouth suddenly spoke with the voice of the skinny tuberculosis man, “Stupid fellow, cough cough, he obviously know I’m an unrivalled existence in dreams, cough, why does he still try to resist me? Cough cough, this fool, you think I will kill you immediately? Cough cough, I will torture you alive, to the point that you will even regret coming to this world...”

The four girls was completely shocked. Fortunately they have erected their shields early.

Otherwise, it would really be the end if this skinny tuberculosis guy burst into their dreams.

The shield from the summoning grimoire had the ability to defend against all kinds of attacks, no matter if it’s blades, explosions, or mental attacks, as long as it did not surpass the defensive limit of the shield, they can all be nullified. The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast did not possess a grimoire, hence it was really the end for him, because he did not even have the ability to resist the attack.

Yue Yang was even more daring. He walked out of his shield and walked towards the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast, kicking him lightly.

He frowned. He was quite confused as to how the skinny tuberculosis guy managed to enter into other's dreams. Weren't dreams controlled by each individual person?

“This little brother doesn't seem to be very afraid, could you tell us why?” The Jaded Pipa girl was curious when she saw Yue Yang who did not seem to be afraid of being invaded in his dreams.

“Speaking of daydreaming, no one is better than me.” Yue Yang ignored the flirty girl who was burning in anger and couldn't wait to tear him to shreds, and turned around to the other way instead. There was a sound of heavy footsteps on the other side, walking nearer towards them step by step with a rhythm. Yue Yang and the four girls saw an approximately 5 meter tall giant with eight arms walking towards them with great strides. He advanced more than ten metres with every step he took.

That Eight-armed Giant was clutching the Flying Tiger Ambassador in his hands as if he was pinching an insect.

The Flying Tiger Ambassador had not died yet, but he was on the brink of death.

There was only one injury on his body.

His chest was completely flattened by his enemy. His ribs were completely broken. Even with the strong body of an Eastern Goblin Tribe, it was difficult to recover from such a strong punch.

The Eight-armed Giant threw Flying Tiger Ambassador to the ground as if he was rubbish. He switched his gaze to Yue Yang and exchanged glances with him. It was as if his gaze had substance, it could actually made Yue Yang take a step back. Yue Yang's body swayed slightly, as if he was about to faint.

“There are three types of organisms who could attack with eyes alone. First are the Evil Eyes, second are the Ghost-faced Lizards, and the third are Dragons. When Dragons trained their Dragon Power to the limits, they could create blade-like gazes that could injure their enemies... Yue Yang, the Eight-armed Giant in front of you, if I am not mistaken, he must be a Nine-headed Dragon, whom the Flying Tiger referred to as the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal.” The mysterious beauty Wu Xia closed her Ancient Book and analyzed further, “Now I can more or less deduce that the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal attack his opponents with his Dragon Power. He is the ‘eyes’ amongst the five senses. That lowly woman who emits fragrance all over her body is the ‘nose’. That toad-like fatty is definitely the ‘mouth’, enough said. That Jade Pipa woman must be the ‘ears’. The five of them formed one whole body together. When they work together, they would complement each other’s attack and increase their overall power... Besides, there is still that skinny tuberculosis man who can invade other’s dreams, he deals with the ‘brain’. If we want to defeat them, we have to destroy their coordination. We must not let them complement their attacks to each other.”

“...” The enemies were slightly shaken when they heard the

mysterious beauty Wu Xia's words. They never thought that with just one look, she could see through all of their hidden cards. Many of their strong enemies had died because they did not know this secret. Today, they were actually seen through by a little girl who is not even an Innate. No wonder human Innate Rankers were usually a few notches stronger than other Innate Rankers of other races. Human's wisdom was really scary!

"Well said. Then what do I need to do?" Yue Yang thought it was very logical, but he didn't know what to do.

"I also don't know!" Wu Xia shook her hands, showing that she could not help.

"Boom!" Including the Jaded Pipa girl, the rest of the enemies who were completely tense all fell head first on the ground. They were completely scared to death, they never thought that she had not fully seen through them!

When they finally came back to their senses, the Four Goblin Generals were all secretly relieved. So this little girl could only see their hidden card, but she wasn't able to tell their weakness.

If she found out their weakness, they would really have a headache.

The skinny tuberculosis guy suddenly coughed a few times, wiggling on top of the weird horse's back, as if he was having a bad dream.

Very quickly, his voice resounded from the Flying Tiger Ambassador's mouth. The Flying Tiger Ambassador's eyes turned white as he lost his unconsciousness. However, his expressions showed as if he had seen an extremely terrifying thing, as if a flood of magma had been splashed on his face.

Soundlessly, the Flying Tiger Ambassador finally died.

Before he died, he opened his mouth big and wide, his tongue hanging out.

As if someone had choked his neck, the Flying Tiger Ambassador finally die from lack of breath.

Yue Yang saw that the Flying Tiger Ambassador had stopped breathing, He only saw the Flying Tiger's legs twitched a little before he stopped breathing. Yue Yang could only shake his head lightly.

“Don't worry, you will also die soon...” The fatty that brought along a Three-legged toad smiled sweetly at Yue Yang, as if he was a butcher looking at the meat in his chopping board and was about to swing down his blade.

“Eh?” Yue Yang felt an indescribable sense of sleepiness appearing under his consciousness, as if there was some kind of invisible force that was pulling him into his Dream Realm. He lost some control of his physical body as he swayed a little. Yue Yang didn't resist the mental attack, but his body didn't collapse. Instead, he stood like normal and simply closed his eyes, falling

asleep with a peaceful rhythm of breathing.

Everyone had different kinds of sleeping positions, but the only person who could relaxedly fall asleep standing might only be Yue Yang alone.

This was his personal strength that he already had before he even came into this world.

In his Dream Realm, Yue Yang saw the skinny tuberculosis guy who was laughing nastily right in front of him. Like a Death Reaper, he raised his bloodied scythe and laughed evilly.

“You say, how should I torture you to give me the best entertainment? Shall I slash your stomach apart and pull out your intestines? Or should I bring a hammer and smash your teeth one by one, and then force you to count them slowly?” Before the skinny tuberculosis guy even finish speaking, Yue Yang had already jumped on top of his head and stomped him down to the ground. He then raised his fists and gave a heavy punch to his face, beating the skinny tuberculosis guy until he cried out pitifully.

“This is impossible!”

“This is definitely impossible. Only I can control the dream realm, I’m an unrivalled existence! You can never defeat me!” The skinny tuberculosis guy cried out in pain and panic. Outside in the Ancient Passage, the skinny tuberculosis guy’s body whose body was lying on the weird horse cried out in pain. The bruises on his face could clearly be seen, even his shattered teeth were flying out

from his mouth one by one.

Yue Yang didn't say anything, he continued his series of punches instead.

He was in a hurry. If he didn't beat him now, he wouldn't have a chance to if the big loli appeared.

Indeed, before he even managed a hundred punch in, the big loli from his Dream Realm appeared in front of Yue Yang. She looked at the skinny tuberculosis guy with an expression full of disgust. She slowly raised her hands and chanted, "[Soul Destruction]..."

Thousands of dazzling Sword Qi condensed into one big sword, easily killing the skinny tuberculosis guy who had entered into the Dream Realm.

He was completely obliterated!

The skinny tuberculosis guy couldn't even cry out a single sound before he was completely obliterated.

His physical body in the Ancient Passage showed an expression that was frozen in fear. It was even a hundred times scarier than when the Flying Tiger die just now... Other than Yue Yang, no one knew what the skinny tuberculosis guy had seen before his soul was destroyed. The weird looking horse he was sitting on suddenly exploded, its flesh and blood splattering all over the ground. Even its master, the skinny tuberculosis guy who was sitting on top of it,

was split into two by the force of this explosion. Towards this turn of events, everyone was completely dumbstruck...

The four girls knew that Yue Yang was acting a little strange earlier. He definitely had a plan when he ran out of his shield and lured the skinny tuberculosis guy to attack him.

However, they never thought that Yue Yang could kill this Dream Eater General who was said to be unrivalled in Dream Realms... Princess Qian Qian finally muttered after a while, “This brat is really too abnormal!”

“The beautiful girl carrying the Jade Pipa looked at the skinny tuberculosis guy who died with his eyes wide opened. She couldn’t understand how the Death Eater, who most definitely would never die, could actually be killed along with his Death Eater Beast in the Dream Realm. What kind of existence was this little human boy was in the Dream Realm?

Yue Yang opened his eyes and revealed an evil grin on his face, “Who wants to die next?”

Chapter 259 – Sure Kill, Supreme Sword

When the skinny tuberculosis guy, the Dream Eater Goblin General died, Golden Eyes who was unconscious just now immediately woke up.

However, although he had woken up, he continued to look down and showed a pained expression.

It seemed like he was tortured quite harshly by the skinny tuberculosis guy in his dreams. The battle situation had completely changed now. At first, the people on Yue Yang's side had fallen one by one, unable to stand against their enemies. However, after the Dream Eater Goblin General's death and the Golden Eyes return, they managed to regain more of their strength. If there were no Nine-headed Goblin Marshal, and if there were only the Three Great Goblin Generals and Huo Wei, they might be able to defeat their enemies... With regards to the number of people, there were quite a few people on Yue Yang's side. Not counting Golden Eyes, they had enough number of people to fight their enemies. However, the four girls weren't Innates. Even if they fight with all their effort, they could probably only fight against the naked Zi Diao.

Goblin General Zi Diao looked like the weakest amongst the Four Great Goblin Generals.

The thing that made her a difficult opponent was her speed and fragrance. Her speed was quick as lightning, and the smell she emitted made others feel weak and powerless. Without a definite guarantee that they could win, the four girls would definitely not

leave their shield.

They weren't able to be like Yue Yang, who could circulate his Innate Qi all over his body. It didn't matter for him if he couldn't breathe for a period of time.

Furthermore, Yue Yang's Innate Qi had a very strong dispersing effect.

Even if he had inhaled Zi Diao's fragrance, he could easily dispel the effects of the fragrance from his body... Compared to Yue Yang, Golden Eyes was far behind. Although his body could resist the effects of the fragrance, if he breathed in the fragrance far too long, it would affect his body's fighting ability. After Golden Eyes woke up, he immediately stopped his breathing and tried to regain his fighting ability back... In front of Golden Eyes, Huo Wei, who had been beaten black and blue by the Flying Tiger previously had completely recovered and was glaring at Golden Eyes fiercely. Huo Wei did not dare to provoke Yue Yang, but he was prepared to fight with the weakened Golden Eyes, just for the sake of looking good in front of the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal.

Of course, Huo Wei was prepared to reveal the secret about Yue Yang having the ability to refine Orbs with his fire ability.

He was afraid that the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal would instantly kill that human boy with one attack, hence he decided to report the secret immediately so that the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal could capture Yue Yang and offer him to the Southern Goblin King.

“Reporting to Grand Marshal, I have an important...” Huo Wei bowed towards the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal and was about to report the secret. However, a hand suddenly stretched out from behind him and grabbed his forehead. Huo Wei was greatly surprised, and before he managed to avoid them, he felt a sharp pain on his chest. There was a bloody hand that had pierced through the back part of his armour and dug inside his chest. Huo Wei couldn’t even see what had happened clearly before the bloody hand retracted back as if it had never appeared before.

Huo Wei felt pain in his throat. He was surprised to find that the hand had already grasped at his throat.

Who?

He turned around, trying to see who had launched a sneak attack on him.

He had just turned around when he saw a bloodied hand grasped within a bloody hand, squeezed into pulps and bits of flesh... Although Huo Wei, as an Eastern Goblin Tribe member, had an extremely strong body, he still couldn’t endure this attack. His body swayed as he collapsed onto the ground.

In the sky, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s raised his giant fists and smashed them hard on the ground. However, there was a girl on top of that person who had ambushed him, who raised her sparkling and transparent Crystal Shield and completely stopped the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s attack. The Fatty who had the

Three-legged Toad also launched an attack from the left. However, the mysterious beauty Wu Xia immediately teleported nearby and summoned her grimoire, blocking the fatty's attack... When the little lamia, Xiao Wen Li appeared from within Yue Yang's body, the Three-legged Toad seemed to be able to sense her strength. It immediately flew back towards its master, spitting a cloud of thick smoke at the same time to cover its whole body. Then, it turned into a cloud of black smoke and escaped from the area.

Goblin General Zi Diao, whose speed was the fastest, that flirty girl who was naked from top to bottom, quickly ambushed Yue Yang from his back.

However, a gaze that was death reaper-like suddenly glared at her.

Goblin General Zi Diao, whose reaction was extremely fast, immediately threw a beast to substitute her and disappeared, hiding from that death reaper like glare...The death reaper like eyes suddenly glowed flaming red, and Goblin General Zi Diao's beast let out a pained shriek before it was immediately killed on the spot.

The naked Goblin General Zi Diao watched in shock as her substitute beast was killed in an instant from thirty metres away.

At this time, a tall woman with cow's horns, who looked lean and not muscular but possessed an extremely powerful strength, stood behind Yue Yang. Her eyes glowed with a bloody red radiance, as if she was a death reaper. On her left shoulder, there was a bracelet with Ancient Runes engraved on it. She also held a Gold Leo Shield

on her hands that faintly emitted a strange kind of power. On her right shoulder, this cow-horned woman with a tall and extremely amazing physique had also worn a special Gold Silk Ribbon...

The cow-horned woman was equipped with a full body of Gold-ranked equips.

There was even a Gold Bell which exudes holy energy on her beautiful neck.

“Goat-horned Goblin?” The Goblin General Zi Diao had thought that she was one of the Eastern Goblin Tribe, Goat-horned Goblin, but she immediately ruled them out, because Goat-horned Goblins were not that tall. They also didn’t have the power to kill an enemy with their glares.

“Barbarian Cow, she is a humanoid beast that was evolved from a Barbarian Cow!” The only person who had not attacked and had been quietly watching the situation, the beautiful girl holding her Jaded Pipa suddenly spoke out, proclaiming her judgement with certainty, “Although she is not a Holy Beast yet, she is very close to it... Two Guardian Beasts? You are an interesting little human boy! I was wondering why you are so confident. So turns out you are hiding so much strength. Interesting, interesting!”

“The next one will be more interesting.” Yue Yang dug out Huo Wei’s Orbs before he died.

Huo Wei shrieked in pain as his body quickly reverted to his original size.

He reverted back to his Snake Tortoise monster body.

Blood spurted out from his mouth as he died miserably on the spot.

Seeing Huo Wei being murdered by the enemy right under their noses, the three Goblin General and Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's expressions changed. This was equivalent to giving them a slap on their cheeks. Especially the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal who had attacked previously. He was quite confident that he could send Yue Yang flying with his punch. Even if Yue Yang was not killed on the spot, he would definitely be heavily injured.

Who would know that his punch that could even pulverize a small hill was stopped by a Crystal Shield.

Seeing the Silver Runes on the Crystal Shield, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal was extremely sour... This human girl, she was obviously not an Innate, yet her defense was not any weaker than an Innate's. Her Crystal Shield, he believed that no Innate Level 1 warriors had that kind of defensive ability. His terrifying fist that could send an Innate Level 1 warrior flying was completely useless in front of that Crystal Shield, unable to breach her defense.

The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's punch was like a hurricane that swept across all four directions.

The weakest, lightning-fast Zi Diao couldn't help but to be swept hundreds of meters away by the strong impact of the punch,

although she had tried to escape far away.

Instead, that super ugly big-bellied Three-legged Gold Toad, after successfully saving its master, it transformed into a black smoke and only flew 30 metres away before stopping. Its abilities were definitely not ordinary.

“One more time!” The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal roared thunderously, throwing another punch relentlessly.

Six of his eight hands turned into giant Snake-tailed Dragons. Just like a bunch of swirling snakes, they crossed over the sickly beauty who was holding her shield, and advanced forward to attack Yue Yang. At the same time, two of his largest hands joined into a fist and swung down with an impactful force that couldn't be stopped, rending the sickly beauty unable to continue protecting Yue Yang.

Yue Yang's lips revealed a cold smile. He raised his bloodied hand and immediately condensed a huge fire shield that dispersed outwards, blocking the punch and stopped the other five Snake-tailed Dragons snapping teeth.

With one glare from Xiao Wen Li's expressful eyes, the dragon head in front of her immediately stopped. Different from Yue Yang's method of creating a Fire Shield, Xiao Wen Li's methods were far more ruthless and accurate. Her Dual Icicle Blades slashed across and cut through two Snake-tailed Dragons that were about to devour Yue Yang. The two Snake-tailed Dragons froze over her Icicle Blades, their advancing speed even slower than a snail's... The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man immediately counter-

attacked. She first raised the Gold Leo Shield and smashed it on top of one of the Snake-tailed Dragon. She then let go of her shield and attacked with both of her hands, grasping the dizzy Snake-tailed Dragon tightly. She wanted to tear the Snake-tailed Dragon from the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's body.

In the end, even the last Snake-tailed Dragon was not able to attack Yue Yang. It was burnt black by a strike of lightning before it could manage to touch Yue Yang.

The mysterious beauty Wu Xia was not only good in Ice, she was also good with lightning.

The completely naked Goblin General Zi Diao flashed forward in an ambush, quick as lightning. She brandished her ten black-coloured claws and ferociously pounced towards Yue Yang's body. On the other side, the fat Goblin General Jin Chan also pounced forward. Although he looked clumsy on the outside, his speed was no less than Goblin General Zi Diao. Only the beautiful girl holding the Jaded Pipa continued to stay still and watched the battle situation. However, she didn't look at Princess Qian Qian or Luo Hua City Mistress who were storing their energies. Instead, she only paid attention to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang's figure suddenly disappeared.

Goblin General Zi Diao and Jin Chan's attacks smashed into empty air.

When the two Goblin Generals realized that they missed their

attacks, they immediately jumped towards each other in order to protect each other and escaped from the battle area.

“Rumble!”

The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal bashed his fists onto the sickly beauty Wu Hen’s Crystal Shield. On the surface, it seemed like the sickly beauty would collapse under his terrifying attacks. Compared to the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal, her body was simply too fragile. Furthermore, she was so sick that even a blind person could see that her body was extremely weak.

However, her Crystal Shield continued to stand strong, unmoving at all.

The sickly beauty’s weak complexion slightly turned pale under the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s heavy attacks. However, her slim fingers continued to raise her Crystal Shield. It was simply unbelievable, her Crystal Shield was even more unbreachable than an iron fortress.

A streak of shock crossed the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s face.

This attack, he had already increased his strength to Innate Level 2. Yet, under such a heavy pressure, that Crystal Shield was still completely unaffected...

His opponent was a human girl who had not even reached Innate. Her body looked so weak that it seemed like a gush of wind

could blow her away. However, her defense was ten times stronger than a Ten Thousand Years Old Tortoise. This, this was simply impossible! How could a beast that had transformed into a Crystal Shield, summoned by a human girl who was not an Innate, be able to withstand an attack that was as powerful as an Innate Level 2 strength? There was not even a crack on the Crystal Shield. This kind of thing, he couldn't accept it even if he saw it with his own eyes!

If the Nine-headed Goblin knew that the sickly beauty had been modifying her Crystal Shield and Crystal Armour with the Ancient Runes on Yue Yang's body multiple times and increased her already despair-inducing high defense ten times stronger, he wouldn't be so surprised.

The Crystal Shield that was unbreakable even with Innate Level 1 strength had vastly improved after Yue Yang and the sickly beauty's meticulous bid to improve.

Forget about the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's Innate Level 2 strength, even if he increased his attack output to Innate Level 3, he would still be unable to breach it... If the one holding the Crystal Shield wasn't the sickly beauty Wu Hen, but the mysterious beauty Wu Xia instead, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal would feel even more hopeless. This was because the sickly beauty Wu Hen was only knowledgeable in Runes Research. In terms of combat skills, she was far behind Wu Xia.

If the mysterious beauty Wu Xia also possessed the same Crystal Shield, she would probably be able to use the Crystal Shield in a way that would render the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal unable to

attack at all.

“Having many heads doesn’t mean that they would be useful, a fool would be a fool forever!” Yue Yang’s figure suddenly appeared on top of the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal. He raised his hands high and lifted the limitation on his Innate strength. He joined all his ten fingers together and formed a huge Innate Sword Qi. Bright sparks sparkled all over his hands.

His target was the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s head.

Although the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal didn’t see Yue Yang’s sure-kill Sword Qi, as a Ranker, he could sense a very grave danger.

As six of his Snake-tailed Dragons had been released, he was unable to retrieve them back and leave the place. He could only release a deafening roar and increase his strength to Innate Level 3, prepared to send his enemy flying with the outburst of Qi from his body.

But everything he did was useless.

Yue Yang’s ten fingers joined together, thousands of light rays that were even brighter than the sun appeared on Yue Yang’s hands.

The Sword Qi cut through the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal’s head as easily as a hot knife cut through butter.

As long as Yue Yang's [Supreme Sword], a skill from his [Innate Invisible Sword Qi] hit its target, it could cut through everything. Even the extremely strong Demon King Ha Xin suffered a heavy injury on his arms previously. Today, the current Yue Yang was no longer that Yue Yang anymore, his strength had grown hundred times stronger. This Sword Qi, if it really hit, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal would not only suffer injuries like the Demon King Ha Xin's...

This Sword Qi, would it be able to instantly kill the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal? Or would it be completely useless?

Chapter 260 – It's Too Early To Be Dreaming!

The expression of beautiful woman holding the jade pipa changed. She seemed to be ready to lend a hand.

But eventually, she lightly sighed.

Standing in a fixed spot, holding her jade pipa, she silently continued to watch. With a single flash, Yue Yang's Sword Qi exploded at the back of the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's head. However, with a loud roar, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's neck suddenly grew multiple times longer and twisted just like a snake's. Although it was unable to dodge Yue Yang's Supreme Sword, at least he didn't let the Sword Qi hit the back of his head directly... Yue Yang's Supreme Sword turned from a piercing movement into a horizontal slash, slicing off a large portion of the snake head of the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal.

In the nick of time, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal reverted to his true body.

From a 5-metre tall figure, he turned into a gigantic nine-headed serpent beast. His body was a gold-striped tortoise shell that resembled a hill.

Within the nine heads, the original, largest head that was severely injured, retracted back into the gold-striped tortoise shell. The other eight heads bent their necks, moving forth to attack Yue Yang who had succeeded in his attack.

Although Yue Yang did not kill the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal in one slash, he had successfully inflicted heavy injuries on him.

The Innate Invisible Sword Qi could not be even blocked by Demon King Ha Xin, much less this Nine-headed Goblin Marshal whose strength was not at a Demon King's level yet.

With his hands together, Yue Yang stretched them out again on both of his left and right side.

Another two bouts of Innate Invisible Sword Qi erupted, creating a hole through the brains of the two snake heads that was biting towards him. Xiao Wen Li flew towards Yue Yang and activated her Binding Chains Inherent Skill on the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal. The remaining eight heads stopped there in an instant. The mysterious beauty Wu Xia moved as well. A frost storm caused the eight heads to be covered by a layer of thin ice and snow... The sickly beauty raised her Crystal Shield behind Yue Yang, blocking the attack from Goblin General, the fat toad. On the other side, Princess Qian Qian sliced across the sky, speeding across the passage. Her greatsword cut down the two heads that Yue Yang had heavily injured.

The naked Goblin General Zi Diao had not even manage to rush close before the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man, had locked eyes with her.

Goblin General Zi Diao backed off quickly.

She knew that Doom's Eye had a low chance of activating, but she was not willing to take the risk.

Moreover, there were still Golden Eyes, who was still continuously recovering his strength, and Luo Hua City Mistress, who had been charging her [Aurora] for a long time, surrounding her. They could attack her at any time.

Before Xiao Wen Li's Binding ended, Yue Yang deftly took Princess Qian Qian who had wounded the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal flying, allowing her to return back into the protective barrier of Luo Hua City Mistress.

He put his arm around the sickly beauty, and chased after Goblin General Zi Diao who was backing off.

Wu Xia was faster than him. She had already used her teleportation ability to appear right behind Goblin General Zi Diao.

"Die!" Yue Yang did not release his Innate Invisible Sword Qi, instead, he took out the mysterious Gold Beast from his Lich Ring and turned it directly into a dagger. It pierced between Goblin General Zi Diao's eyebrows. Goblin General Zi Diao was not willing to be Yue Yang's opponent. Of course, the one that she was the most fearful of was still Xiao Wen Li, who was flying close behind Yue Yang. She had already saw that this little lamia had much more terrifying skills than the barbaric cow girl.

Even such a powerful being like the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal could be bound by her Binding Inherent Skill. Goblin General Zi

Diao was definitely not willing to follow Huo Wei's footsteps.

She did not have the extremely high defense like the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal, nor did she have nine heads.

As long as she was targeted on, this little human brat who had terrifying killing ability would definitely slice her head off in a single slash. Goblin General Zi Diao started to spin her body gracefully and bend her waist like a bow. She then raised her long thighs, not feeling any shame at all even if her private spots were exposed, and kicked at Wu Xia's chest before she could attack... At the moment before her kick could land, her toenails rapidly transformed into purplish-black sable claws, slashing towards the front of Wu Xia's chest.

"Idiot." Wu Xia sneered.

Her legs exploded in power. Her body was as soft as before, and perhaps even more beautiful as she release her technique.

This was the first time that she had used a combat skill in front of Yue Yang. It was as if she was a phoenix, yet also like a swan dancing on snow. Her hands supported her body as she bent herself backwards. With a leg acting as a pivot, the other kicked upwards.

She dodged the sweeping kick from Goblin General Zi Diao incidentally as her legs moved upwards, kicking Goblin General Zi Diao square in the abdomen.

At the same time, when she had landed a hit on Goblin General Zi Diao's abdomen, Wu Xia had planted her hands firmly on the ground. Her other leg flew up at an incredible speed, joining with her other leg. However, she was not delivering a kick. Instead, she placed her legs in a scissors-like position. Her legs joined together as she locked Goblin General Zi Diao's legs and threw her onto the ground. Wu Xia's actions were as beautiful as a dancing swallow. Of course, this move of hers was also called "Swallow Scissors". It was one of the three great moves in her arsenal, specially tailored to fight against small and agile enemies.

Yue Yang was the best at tormenting fallen enemies.

He did not show mercy to women, aside from his girls and his relatives. Towards other women, he was definitely and unmistakably a cold-blooded killer. Furthermore, if he did not cut down an adulteress like Goblin General Zi Diao, God wouldn't exist.

Brandishing the dagger that the Mysterious Gold Beast had turned into, he threw it straight into the chest of Goblin General Zi Diao.

Behind, the Fat Toad tried to come to her rescue, but was stopped by the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast.

Goblin General Zi Diao turned around and fled as fast as lightning.

However, the moment she fled fifty metres away, she was

shocked to discover that Yue Yang was even faster than she was. He caught up with her in an instant and overtook her. Yue Yang swung his dagger, and Goblin General Zi Diao hurriedly dodged backwards to avoid it. However, to her shock, she saw that the dagger suddenly grew in length. Not only that, it had also turned into eagle claws that were sharp and pointy, swinging across her chest. She saw blood spurting out, as if half of her breasts had been cut off by the giant eagle's claws... Without even enough time to scream, Yue Yang had already planted a flying kick right into her heart, shooting out Sword Qi from his toes. He drilled a hole of blood through Goblin General Zi Diao's heart.

When Goblin General Zi Diao fell from the sky, Luo Hua City Mistress's Aurora flashed across the entire Ancient Passage.

It was only after a long period of time did the white light slowly dissipate.

Within the rubble of that incredibly sturdy stone wall in the Ancient Passage, Goblin General Zi Diao was buried inside. Her legs had been cut off by the Aurora, and her heart had also been pierced through by Yue Yang's Sword Qi. She was at death's door. Her right hand stained with fresh blood stretched towards her allies. "Save... Save me!"

The beautiful woman holding the jade pipa did not change her expression. She only answered in a plain voice. "Without strength, you can only die out."

The Fat Golden Toad and the incomparably grotesque Three-legged Golden Toad beside him was fighting a heated battle with

the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast.

However, a keen-eyed person could see that the Fat Golden Toad was not giving his all.

His strength should be greater than the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast. Compared to Goblin General Zi Diao, he was far stronger. The Fatty was also similarly fearful of the Sword Qi that Yue Yang could unleash at his whims and Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill. As for the Doom Eyes from Ah Man, he did not bother with it too much. He seemed to not be too fearful of the special ability that could instantly kill souls.

As for that little Lightning Marten, who saw its master suffered a crushing defeat, it actually ran away, betraying its master... The Three-tailed Snow Fox chased after it like lightning. Both of them were as fast as lightning, disappearing in an instant.

The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's giant head came out again. Its wounds were healed, as if nothing had happened.

It was impossible to fully heal from Yue Yang's sword attack within dozens of seconds. He had only transferred his wounds to the other head. This kind of strange power was probably an instinctual one. Yue Yang was not shocked by this. He only turned around to look at the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast and the Golden Toad. With a glance of his Divine Eyes, he found out that these two fellows were hiding their strength. They were not as simple as they seemed on the surface.

If they really fought, he believed that even if the Golden Toad's ability was not as strong as the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal, his powers would not be any weaker than him.

As for the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast, he had also concealed his strength. Yue Yang had already known about it at the Championship Stadium. Now that he saw him fighting the Golden Toad, it was even clearer to him.

He was almost on par with the Fat Golden Toad, although he was a level weaker than the current Nine-headed Goblin Marshal. Compared to the Four Great Goblin Generals and the Flying Tiger Ambassador, he was a few levels stronger. If not for meeting the Dream-Eating Goblin General who possessed such a unique ability, the Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast would never fall into the trap without any resistance.

As for Goblin General Pi Pa who was spectating the fight silently...

Yue Yang could not see through her at all.

If even his Level 4 Divine Eyes could not see through it, this proved that this Goblin General Pi Pa was the true ranker who was disguising her true power... Of course, Yue Yang could not understand why she did not help her comrades at all. She would just watch as her allies were killed one by one... This woman felt similar to the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. However, she was far more forbearing. She did not have the playful personality of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Killing Huo Wei only required Yue Yang to coordinate with Xiao Wen Li; Killing Zi Diao and the Nine-headed

Goblin Marshal only required Yue Yang to use the unstoppable Innate Invisible Sword Qi; However, if this Goblin General Pi Pa attacked, Yue Yang would definitely have to go all out and unleash his Nirvana's Flame and World Exterminating Wheel. He would have to use his utmost to kill her... On the surface, it seemed like this Goblin General Pi Pa was one of the weakest. However, she was far more terrifying than the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal!

“Roar!”

The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal mustered all of its strength.

With a burst of power, his Innate Level 2 strength was raised to Innate Level 3.

After taking a few breaths, the nine dragon heads suddenly sprouted green goblin fire, causing the snake necks to burn, forming a green fiery protective shield. Amongst the nine heads, aside from the central head, a small pearl was spat out by the other eight heads each. The small pearls were all sucked into the mouth of the central giant head and formed a pearl of light with enormous and chilling amounts of energy.

When the pearls were swallowed, the power of the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal burst forth again. Its strength was did not stop rising even after it had risen by ten times of its original value. Although he had not risen to Innate Level 4, he was extremely close to it.

The Fiery Golden-Eyed Beast, who was fighting an even battle

with the Golden Toad, had just repelled his opponent when he found out that the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal was pouncing towards him.

He pushed his strength to the limits to dodge the attacks from the eight heads, but was struck in the chest by the pearl of light which the giant head spat out.

With a crack of his ribs, he fell onto the ground, heavily injured.

Thankfully, he had the kind of strong body that the Eastern Goblin Tribe had. However, he could not withstand the attack and fell unconscious...

“Let’s go, Golden Toad.” The beautiful woman carrying the jade pipa quietly turned around and left. Before that, she looked deeply into Yue Yang’s eyes.

“Are we not going to wait for Goblin Marshal?” Bringing the Three Legged Golden Toad with him, the fatty was a little uncertain.

“You can stay here and wait for him.” The beautiful woman carrying the pipa vanished. Her barely audible voice reverberated in the Ancient Passage faintly. With this sentence, the fatty did not care about his allies anymore. He brought his Three Legged Golden Toad and chased after her. Goblin General Zi Diao perniciously glanced at the fatty’s silhouette. Her legs were broken, and she was heavily injured. She was unable to follow them and leave. The current her could only hope for the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal to

win and save her little life.

“All of you, looking to die... “ The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal did not use his full power beforehand and suffered for it. It made him boil with anger. Now that he had pushed himself to his strongest, he was full of confidence that he could kill off these humans which had made him lose face.

“It’s too early to be dreaming!” Yue Yang grinned slightly. In his right hand, Nirvana’s Flame wafted out from his palm.

With a glance, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal recognised that this was the “Nirvana’s Flame” of legend. Instantly, his whole body shivered.

Without any hesitation, he immediately fled.

Even if he used his current power which rivaled Innate Level 4, he was not willing to fight against this enemy.

The green devil flame that was protecting him, was like a firefly compared to Nirvana’s Flame. There was no possibility of fighting evenly!

Using his greatest strength and fastest speed in his life, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal used all of his strength to flee. However, he could not escape his cruel fate that he was destined to meet. A flame gun that was created by condensed Nirvana’s Flame shot out from Yue Yang’s hands. It completely ignored the defense of the

gold-striped tortoise shell and shot through it, coming straight out from the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's chest.

Chapter 261 – Victory And Alliance

“No, no!” The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal cried out pitifully.

He knew the terror of Nirvana’s Flame, but he never thought that he, whose strength had reached the level of Innate Level 4, couldn’t even defend against the attack.

When he saw the mighty Nirvana’s Flame that had been condensed into a long spear shot straight towards his chest, he knew that he was on the brink of death. Naturally, his heart let out a cry full of despair. He suddenly opened the mouth of gigantic head in the middle wide and spit out the Orb that he had condensed all of his energy into towards Yue Yang, thinking of dying together with him... However, the sickly beauty Wu Hen had suddenly teleported to Yue Yang. She had borrowed the mysterious beauty Wu Xia’s teleportation ability to teleport right to Yue Yang’s side and materialised her Crystal Shield without a second thought.

The Dragon Orb emitted a strong burst of light as it shot fiercely onto the Crystal Shield.

In that instant when the Dragon Orb collided onto the strong Crystal Shield, a crack appeared and spread all throughout the Crystal Shield. The Silver Runes engraved on the Crystal Shield had also slowly lost its light under the strong collision from the Dragon Orb.

The Crystal Shield was still standing.

But there was a small hole on the shield.

The Dragon Orb that had bored through the Crystal Shield had drastically decreased in speed, however, it was still flying as fast as lightning towards Yue Yang.

The sickly beauty Wu Hen immediately turned towards Yue Yang and hugged him tightly, prepared to use her body and Crystal Armour to protect Yue Yang from this life-threatening Dragon Orb.

“Idiot!” Yue Yang was really shocked at her actions.

He spun his arms and hugged her instead, and with a sidespin, he swung them away and avoided the Dragon Orb.

Although they couldn't withstand the attack, who said that they couldn't avoid it? Yue Yang was never a foolhardy person who would receive an attack head-on no matter what. With regards to the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's Dragon Orb attack, Yue Yang had already anticipated it beforehand. He had already paid special attention to it ever since he saw the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal attacking Golden Eyes just now. He didn't expect that Wu Hen would teleport to his side and block the attack for him, but no matter what, he would not let the girl that he liked risk her life to protect him... That kind of action would definitely become the beginning of a tragic life.

The Dragon Orb grazed across Yue Yang's arms, flying through

the two people.

Seeing that his attack had fallen onto empty air, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal immediately willed his Orb to turn and shoot towards Yue Yang who was hugging the sickly beauty again.

However, although he was fully in control of his Dragon Orb, under such a powerful and fast speed, he was not able to turn it at moment's notice. Instead, the Dragon Orb flew around ten metres away before slowing down a little and turning its direction towards Yue Yang.

At this time, Yue Yang had already had enough time to react. He pulled out the Nirvana Flame Spear from the nine-headed Goblin Marshal's body, turned it into a Nirvana Flame Shield and placed it right in front of him. When the Dragon Orb collided onto the Nirvana Flame Shield, its power immediately disappeared like snow inside a burning volcano. Its speed immediately decreased, and all of the impurities, evil thoughts, evil Qi and the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's will inside the Orb were all burnt away. Only the purest form of energy was left behind.

“Howl....” The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal rolled on the ground in extreme pain.

He was already in pain from the strike of Nirvana Flame Spear on his body, and he did not manage to take back his will to control the Dragon Orb before it was burnt away by the Nirvana Flame. This had made the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal feel a pain that was befitting of the pain in the Eighteenth Hell.

He would rather die than experience the burning pain of the Nirvana Flame.

Not only his body and flesh, even his soul and mind would be destroyed completely by the Nirvana Flame.

When Yue Yang released his Nirvana Flame the third time, the previously fist-sized Dragon Orb had been refined into a pure Orb that was no larger than a pearl. On the other side, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal had already collapsed onto the ground, breathing his last. He had not died, but he was suffering more than if he was dead. This was because the Orb and his mind was one body. When Yue Yang destroyed his Orb, it was equivalent to him destroying his mind.

Having lost his Orb, the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal could no longer maintain his Innate Level 3 state. His power kept decreasing, and he finally dropped out of the Innate Realm right before he died.

At a far distance, Goblin General Zi Diao who had suffered heavy injuries on both of her legs watched this turn of events in complete disbelief. A powerful existence such as the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal had actually been killed by a little human boy who was only Innate Level 1... The thing that completely fucked Goblin General Zi Diao's mind was when that human boy who was even scarier than a Demon King suddenly summoned a girl with a flower crown on her head. The moment that girl who looked completely pure and without evil waved her hands, giant vines bored out from the earth, and a gigantic flower which had a mouth

big enough to swallow a whole Giant Mammoth swallowed the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's corpse, all in one mouth.

"You can't eat this yet, I still have some use for her." Yue Yang stopped the Thorny Flower Demoness when she had the thought of swallowing the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast.

"..." The Thorny Flower Demoness still couldn't speak yet, but she already have enough intelligence to show her thoughts.

She pointed at Goblin General Zi Diao and asked soundlessly, "Can I eat this?"

"No, no, don't!" Goblin General Zi Diao already knew who this innocent-looking girl who did not even spit out bones when she swallowed her prey was. She was that Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who was said to have annihilated a whole Demon Legion and another two Blood Prison Demon Kings alone. Maybe this girl had not reached the level of a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen yet, but she was already very close to it. Looking at her leisured way of swallowing the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal, she would definitely not have any problems swallowing her whole too.

Goblin General Zi Diao was not afraid of being taken as prisoner by her enemies, because her enemies would only torture her body at the most. She wouldn't mind that.

She not only possessed the strong recovery ability of an Eastern Goblin Tribesman, she also had an unlimited vitality. No matter how grave her injury was, she would definitely recover given

enough time to heal.

As long as she could get out of here alive, there would still be hope for her.

She would rely on her natural abilities of 'Soul Captivating Fragrance' and 'Lightning Fast Speed' to escape.

The Thorny Flower Demoness completely disregarded Goblin General Zi Diao's plead for mercy. In her heart, all of her master's enemies were food. As long as they were tasty, she would definitely eat them, no matter if they were dead or alive.

The four girls were a little speechless by this Thorny Flower Demoness who could swallow people alive.

of course, they were not old-fashioned minded like their predecessors who would show mercy to their enemies. That was equivalent to being cruel to themselves. With regards to Goblin General Zi Diao's plead for mercy, the four girls turned away their faces and pretended not to see anything. When Goblin General Zi Diao saw that the four girls had turned away from her, her expression immediately changed. She, who had just been pleading for mercy a few seconds ago, rolled on the ground and turned into a giant marten. It opened its mouth wide and spouted a thick cloud of smoke onto the Thorny Flower Demoness, then escaped through the Ancient Passage for her life.

Countless Thorny Flowers sprouted from the ground

No matter how fast the Giant Marten was, it was completely useless.

The thorny flower trunks twined around the Giant Marten's body like an agile python, wrapping her tightly like a rice dumpling, not even giving her a chance to budge. In the sky, Ah Man, who was raising the Gold Leo Shield and swinging it down with an extremely powerful strength, smashed the Gold Leo Shield onto the Giant Marten's head. The Giant Marten was already suffering from heavy injuries in the first place. When the heavy blow landed, her head was almost split open. With a pained cry, she immediately fainted.

In the Barbarian Cow's heart, she must deliver her ultimate blow to all of her master's enemies.

She didn't care if it were male or female, human or goblin.

Everyone would be treated the same way.

The humanoid secondary trunk that was over ten metres tall opened its arms and engulfed the Giant Marten into its embrace. Countless vines twirled together to form one body, wrapping its prey inside.

Ever since she entered the Ancient Passage, the Thorny Flower Demoness was even happier than a little girl on her birthday. This was because after getting to eat Liu He and Duan Mu, she also had the chance to eat Innate-levelled rankers. To her, there was no difference in races. It didn't matter if it was human, demon or

Eastern Goblin Tribesmen, as long as they were Innate Rankers, they were all first class, delicious food...

“Are you sure you are going to let the Fiery Eyes Golden Beast go?” Princess Qian Qian felt that there must be a reason why Yue Yang had let that fellow go.

“If we don’t let him off, the misunderstanding between humans and the Eastern Goblin Tribesmen would really happen. Furthermore, based on what this Golden Eyes had said, the Eastern Goblin King did not have any interest of invading Soaring Dragon Continent at all. He only wanted to change the outsider relationship he had with human Innate Alliance. Perhaps he wanted to join hands to conquer the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, or perhaps he needed help conquering some other areas. I wanted to ask first and make sure of the Goblin King’s goals before deciding again.” Yue Yang thought that if the Eastern Goblin King really wanted to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent, he wouldn’t send his men to kidnap the elites in the Soaring Dragon Continent. He could just kill all of them, why would he go to such lengths and kidnap them?

“That makes sense. This Golden Eyes is indeed a crucial player in this mess.” Wu Xia agreed with Yue Yang’s viewpoint.

Luo Hua City Mistress was just about to speak when she realized her precious baby had returned. She immediately disregarded the discussion about the life and death of the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast and welcomed the return of her Three-tailed Snow Fox.

The Three-tailed Snow Fox looked a little excited as it carried the

already dead little Lightning Marten. In the great battle of the same races, it, who had greater intelligence finally achieved the last victory.

Seeing its master welcoming it excitedly, the Three-tailed Snow Fox immediately dropped its prey and happily jumped into its master's embrace.

Its soft, long fur waved back and forth unstoppably.

Seeing how close Luo Hua City Mistress and the Three-tailed Snow Fox was, Xiao Wen Li also hugged Yue Yang's waist. She brushed her little face on his body, mimicking the Three-tailed Snow Fox's intimate actions towards Luo Hua City Mistress. When the Thorny Flower Demoness who had also swallowed Huo Wei using her vines saw Xiao Wen Li hugging Yue Yang intimately, she also immediately leapt and scampered towards Yue Yang. Yue Yang hurriedly recalled her back into the Silver Grimoire.

The Thorny Flower Demoness and Barbarian Cow Shadow both did not move house. Maybe they had not had the kind of intelligence that the Bloody Queen Red had, hence they still continued to stay inside the Silver Grimoire.

Compared to last time, the only difference was that after receiving a high enough wisdom, as long as Yue Yang could link his will to them, they wouldn't need Yue Yang to open his grimoire in order to be summoned. They would just come out on their own accord, like the Bloody Queen last time.

When the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast woke up, he realized that only Yue Yang and the four girls remained in the Ancient Passage.

The Nine-headed Goblin Marshal and all the other strong opponents had all disappeared without a trace.

He looked around to measure the situation, and when he was finally certain that he was safe, he sighed a breath of relief. As long as this young yet mysterious boy won, he would have some hope of returning and meeting his majesty. He could then report to him about the plot and conspiracy between the Southern Fonlin King and the Fallen Humans... When his mind was made up, he immediately nodded towards Yue Yang before slowly sitting up. Although he was injured and was unable to present himself politely, he still mimic human customs and cupped his hands in gratitude, "Thank you for your help! If you don't mind, you could follow me to meet His Highness. He loves talented people like you guys, he will definitely give all of you a reward when he meets you."

Yue Yang definitely would not meet the Goblin King easily. What would they do if the Goblin King suddenly decided to act hostile towards them?

If the Goblin King was more or less like a Demon King, then he would really be a headache.

If the Goblin King was really the Legendary Golden Winged Peng that they saw on the mural painting, meeting with him would be equivalent to offering themselves as snacks!

“What’s your King’s race? If he had no intention to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent, why would he kidnap our people?” Yue Yang tested the waters as he asked.

“Our King is of Dragon Race, namely the “Dragon Emperor” Race from the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. He is one of the Tong Tian Five Emperors, together with Zhi Zun from your human race and three others super strong Innate Rankers. His Highness wanted to lead an army to clear the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and enter the Eleventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower to find the legendary Eastern Fairy Tribe and formed an alliance with them. Hence, we require a strong ally with a stable relationship. However, Zhi Zun of your human race was proud and aloof, she had always rejected the idea of collaborating with our King. The Human Innate Alliance was also an enemy of the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s ally before, hence we had break off all relationship for many years. Our King wanted to use this chance to welcome Emperor Jun Wu You and the other strong warriors to explain one thing. He hoped that he could resolve all the misunderstandings before, restore and strengthen the relationship between the two races.” The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast handed over a black-coloured iron waist pendant. It was obvious that this proves his identity.

Yue Yang couldn’t understand the meaning of this black-coloured iron waist pendant, but upon hearing that the Goblin King wasn’t the Great Golden-winged Peng on the mural painting, he immediately sighed a breath of relief.

This Fiery Golden Eyes Beast’s words sounded very logical, Yue Yang felt that this was more or less the truth.

Of course, he was still on alert. He felt that the Goblin King was definitely trying to test the Human Innate Alliance and Zhi Zun's thoughts. If the humans were unyielding, then they would continue the collaboration. If they did not fight for Jun Wu You and the others, he would definitely not regard Jun Wu You at all...

"Your Dragon Emperor, when would he return my father and the other strong human warriors back?" Princess Qian Qian did not have the mind to beat around the bush right now. She wanted to skip to the conclusion straight away.

"I don't know, I won't be able to give you an accurate answer for this. Maybe it was for a few days, or maybe he would keep them captive for a month or more. But I can guarantee you that our King definitely does not have the intention to harm you humans. On the contrary, we really hope to be able to establish a strong relationship as allies." Golden Eyes spoke very truthfully. Princess Qian Qian couldn't sense a hint of lie in his voice, hence she nodded slowly.

"Your Dragon Emperor, why didn't he choose other strong warriors as an ally?" The mysterious beauty Wu Xia suddenly asked.

"This is because the Eastern Goblin Tribe and the Human race all have the same goal. We are different from the beings living in the Demon Abyss and the different races within the Tong Tian Tower. It was said that our ancestors were the Eastern Fairy Tribe... In the Tong Tian Tower, there is a small branch family of the Eastern Fairy Tribe who had a very close relationship with human Innates.

They only admitted that they were the descendants of the Fairy Tribe, but they had been rejecting our offer for alliance.” When the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast said this, Yue Yang and the four girls remembered something.

When Elder Nan Gong appeared the other day, he brought with him two girls. The two girls were Dragon Girls from the Eastern Fairy Tribe.

Seems like they were the ‘branch family’ that the Fiery golden Eyes Beast was talking about.

Yue Yang digested all the information he had received for a while before he slowly cleared his throat and spoke, “Although I wouldn’t be able to change Zhi Zun’s mind, but if your Dragon Emperor wanted to collaborate with us, I would like to offer a suggestion. The condition is that you have to release our people as soon as possible! If your King wants to collaborate with us, he can send some people to discuss about it. It is unacceptable to use such a barbaric and forceful way to gain what he want... Right, how many men can you send to clear the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower?”

Saying these words, Yue Yang had not actually really wanted to collaborate with the Eastern Goblin Tribe. He only wanted to find out how much strength the Eastern Goblin Tribe had.

He reckoned that the Eastern Goblin Tribe was stronger than the Human Innate Alliance, but the difference would not be great. Otherwise, he wouldn’t need the Human Innate Alliance as an ally.

Of course there was also another possibility, for example, one of the condition of clearing the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower was to have a human Innate Ranker in the party or Zhi Zun as an escort... In any case, he would first take a measure of the Eastern Goblin Tribe's strength. Yue Yang felt that if Eastern Goblin Tribe was not that strong, then they could collaborate in the meantime. Having more friends would definitely be better than making more enemies.

Chapter 262 – Hand's Feel, Wanting To Feel It Forever!

“Since there’s a chance that you guys are our future allies, I won’t hide this from you. We, the Eastern Goblin Tribe, have powerful strength, but our numbers are too low. As for intelligence, it’s either goblin monsters or goblins that can transform into human like us. Compare to you humans, we are actually quite a bit lacking. Forget about goblin monsters, warrior goblins that can transform into humans and is nearing Innate like the Xiong Brothers and the Mei Hua Brothers, we only have 1000 of them. Those who are Innate-ranked and above, we only have around 100 men. Looks like we have a little bit more than you humans. We, the Eastern Goblin Tribe, possessed a stronger physique, but our intelligence are not as high as yours. You humans possessed high intelligence, but you don’t have strong bodies like ours... Both the human race and the Eastern Goblin tribe have our own strength and weaknesses. If our two races can form an alliance and help each other out, I believe that we would be able to show our strongest strength!” Fiery Golden Eyes Beast’s words made Yue Yang enter into deep thought.

The Eastern Goblin Tribe was indeed very strong. They had 1000 men almost Innate-ranked and 100 Innates.

These numbers were quite impressive.

Each kingdom in the Soaring Dragon Continent would only have a few Innates at the most. There were indeed a few dozens of Innates in the Innate Alliance, but those old folks completely didn’t care about political matters. Furthermore, the Innates in the

human race were further divided amongst the Demon Palace, Thousand Goblins Sect, Green Summit Sect and the Four Great Sects. If they count it that way, there really wasn't much left.

In Da Xia Kingdom alone, not including himself, there were only 6 Innates.

There were 2 Heavenly Imperial Guardians and 1 State Grandmaster., two Innates from the Feng and Xue Clan each, and lastly an Innate traitor who had betrayed Da Xia to join the Demonic Palace... As for those who are close to becoming an Innate, there were also not a lot, for example the old fox and Grandma Wu Teng. They were the closest to becoming an Innate. Maybe in some aspects they were already stronger than Innate Level 1, but they still had not reached the Innate Realm. According to the old fox, Grandma Wu Teng was an Innate last time, but she was attacked by her enemies and suffered grave injuries that caused her to lose her Innate status. She had been unable to revert back into an Innate ever since. If she could be cured, Da Xia would gain another Innate.

As for warriors below Level 8 [Emperor] and Level 7 [Overlord], there were quite a few of them. Each Clan Master would be at least that.

For example, the old man Yue Hai, Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong, Feng Kuang, Eastern Sky King, Western Sky King and even Jun Wu You. All of the Soaring Dragon Continent elites were all stuck at Level 8 [Emperor] and below, unable to even hope to enter the Innate Realm.

The Eastern Goblin Tribe had the ability to transcend space and kidnap Jun Wu You and the rest just by sending a few people like the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast, an Innate that was the leader of the party, the Xiong Brothers and Mei Hua Brothers, warriors that had almost reached Innate. It couldn't be denied that the humans in the Soaring Dragon Continent were really too weak compared to the other races in the Outer Realm and Demon Abyss.

"If we can persuade Zhi Zun, then we can probably advise her to collaborate with you, the Eastern Goblin tribe." Yue Yang made a decision.

It would be a very difficult to do if one wanted to rise in power without a strong ally.

At least, he should not have such a strong enemy like the Eastern Goblin tribe when he was just starting out.

The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast was exhilarated.

If Yue Yang was an ordinary human youngster, he wouldn't care about Yue Yang's reaction. However, Yue Yang was an Innate, and furthermore, he had the ability to defeat the Southern Goblin King's subordinates. This was the mysterious boy who had beaten the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal black and blue. His words, in the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast's ears sounded more important than a King's words.

He cupped his hands politely towards Yue Yang, "Later on, when

I return back to the Palace, I will personally report everything to his Highness. As for the rest of your people, I believe they will be able to return soon.”

In one exchange, the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast had said a lot of the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s secrets. He had also said a lot of information with regards to the Tong Tian Tower.

In the end, Yue Yang and the four girls whispered their discussion for a while before deciding to leave.

The Fiery Golden Eyes Beast was not impatient to leave, he was worried that Yue Yang couldn’t find the exit to the Ancient Passage instead. He lead Yue Yang and the four girls towards the secret teleportation portal to the Soaring Dragon Continent. Seeing that Yue Yang and the four girls had safely teleported away, he finally looked for the teleportation portal to the Eastern Goblin Tribe area to report back to his Goblin King.

When Yue Yang and the four girls teleported back, they did not return to the Champion Island. Instead, they appeared in the middle of a desert.

Fortunately Yue Yang had prepared a teleportation scroll to the Champion Island beforehand. After a flash of white light, Yue Yang and the four girls returned back to the Champion Island that they had not left for even a day. However, they could only see bloody mess all over the horizon. There were demon corpses, parts of demon corpses lying everywhere... In the middle, there were also quite a few human corpses, most of them had parts of their bodies bitten off by the demons, the sight too horrible to see. The

mysterious beauty Wu Xia and the sickly beauty immediately teamed up and separated to the east side to look for the old fox, who had led the Ivy Academies students. Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress also walked together towards the west. As for Yue Yang, he returned to the Championship Stadium because he remembered that they had left the older Mei Hua Brothers alive there. There were only the Drunken Cat Sister and the Panda Girl Niu Niu, he was afraid that they would be in danger.

Yue Yang hurried to the Championship Stadium. He realized that the whole Stadium had collapsed.

The older Mei Hua Brother lay dead in the middle of the piles of rocks.

The Drunken Cat Sister was lying on a huge collapsed rock and drinking the alcohol in her hands. There were countless scratches on her body, and the chest part of her body had also been destroyed. Her battered and bloodied breasts could faintly be seen.

The little Panda Girl Niu Niu leaned on the Drunken Cat Big Sis's back, snoring as she slept, looking extremely tired.

Her expression was bitter, as if she was having a bad dream. Her whole body was smeared in blood, so much that she had almost turned into a red panda.

Yue Yang felt a pang in his heart. How could she be beaten up this badly? Why didn't the Drunken Cat Big Sis take care of her daughter properly? Niu Niu was still so young, how could she fight

against an Eastern Goblin Tribesman whose strength was almost at Innate level! Yue Yang rushed forward, took the little Niu Niu into his arms and channeled some Innate Qi. He then called forth Xiao Wen Li to release her white balls of healing light to heal her... Although Xiao Wen Li's white light was more for purification purposes, it was also quite useful for healing superficial injuries.

“How's your injuries?” After Yue Yang saved the little one, he hurried to save the big one, the Drunken Cat Big Sis.

“Do you have wine?” The Drunken Cat Big Sis shook her empty bottle of wine and threw it away. Then she reached out with her bloodied hand, asking for wine.

“Bullshit! Do you know you can't drink when you are injured? Are you trying to die?!” Yue Yang tried to feel her pulse, and found out that the Drunken Cat Big Sis was heavily injured and was about to die. Many of her ribs were broken and her internal organs were all injured. Her body was pushed to her limits, if he had not return on time, her little life would have more or less ended. Yue Yang understood that she became like this because she had fought against the older Mei Hua Brother alone!

Only heaven would know how she managed to kill the older Mei Hua Brother whose powers were so much stronger than her. However, she had managed to kill him in the end. She even managed to endure until Yue Yang returned.

Yue Yang shook her slightly, “Why are there only the two of you? What about the rest? Xue Tan Lang? The old fox?”

“I... don’t know. Everyone started fighting, I was alone... anyway, i’m tired, let me sleep for a while!” The Drunken Cat Big Sis collapsed to the ground. Previously, she had relied on her strong will to endure on and wait for Yue Yang’s return. The moment she felt relieved, all the fatigue came crashing onto her.

“Don’t sleep, if you sleep now, you’ll die.” Yue Yang was shocked.

He didn’t care anymore, he first took out the Vase Artifact he had gotten from the Twelve Zodiac Temples. He then poured two drops of the God’s Dew into the Drunken Cat Big Sis’s mouth.

Who cares if this God’s Dew was worth the whole of heavens? He would definitely not let this Big Sis die.

When the God’s Dew entered her body, bright rays of light shone out from the Drunken Cat Big Sis’s body and her injuries healed quickly.

Yue Yang tried to help her healing with his Innate Qi. He tear out the Drunken Cat Big Sis’s tattered clothes and treated her broken ribs. He then prepared a wet towel to wipe the blood away from her body. When he discovered her white, creamy chest, he hurriedly covered her with Yue Yang’s clothes. Although they were not of the same size, it was better than nothing. When Yue Yang was changing her clothes, as he realized that the Drunken Cat Big Sis was completely unconscious, he couldn’t help but to touch those mountain peaks for a while. The feeling he felt in his hands was indescribable, so good that he felt like flying to heaven... This

Drunken Cat Big Sis's breast was firm and bouncy, its shape beautiful beyond compare. If it wasn't for the fact that he was afraid that Wu Xia, Wu Hen, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress would arrive and saw his perverted ways, he wouldn't have wanted to stop grabbing her breasts.

Alright then, goodbye, breasts! I will forever cherish the memory!

This Big Sister would belong to him sooner or later. He would reserve her first, and thought about wooing her later in the future. He would teach her slowly in the future....

Furthermore, there was also an advantage for getting her, he would get an extra little Panda girl if he succeeded. The Big Sis Mom and her little girl Niu Niu, the world's most evil mother-daughter pair, could only amount as much in the end.

Yue Yang started to drool as his mind started to wander. Xiao Wen Li was a little confused with his actions, she tilted her head as she watched. When Yue Yang saw that he was teaching his daughter the wrong thing, he hurriedly stroked her hair softly and kissed her forehead, pretending to be a good daddy. Xiao Wen Li was indeed easy to manipulate. Her eyes closed as her lips spread into a big smile.

The mysterious beauty Wu Xia suddenly teleported there with her teleportation ability.

She nodded towards Yue Yang, "I found Bing-er and Yi Nan.

They are fine, but they had been ambushed and fought a great battle afterwards. They suffered many injuries. Your three brothers weren't that capable, they immediately lost their consciousness after getting beaten by their enemies. But your big dog, Hui Tai Lang, was really powerful. It had actually bitten off three Demon Generals and one Demon Commander. It killed of a whole Demon Legion on his own, it was really a good dog. Its abilities were really not bad, I think if you give him Huo Wei's Orb, it might just evolve into an Innate-ranked beast..."

"Where's the old fox?" Yue Yang did not hear the old fox name from her. He knew that the old fox would never escape on his own. Could it be that he was killed by the demons?

"We can't find him, seems like he is fighting a strong opponent." When Wu Xia noticed that the Drunken Cat Big Sis was wearing Yue Bing's clothes, she suddenly grabbed Yue Yang's hands and smelled it.

"I honestly didn't touch..." Yue Yang spoke filled with guilty conscience.

"Really?" Wu Xia glared at Yue Yang with a gaze that could kill someone, a gaze that was even scarier than Luo Hua City Mistress' Aurora.

"Alright, I admit, I did touch it a few times. There's no other way, I couldn't control my own hands." Yue Yang knew that it would be best to be honest at this time, especially when he was almost unable to hide the secret. His life's philosophy was – lie whenever you can and be honest if you can't lie.

“It’s okay to touch it a few times. I wasn’t reprimanding you.” Wu Xia laughed a little. Hearing her words, Yue Yang was flabbergasted. This couldn’t be. Was she always that open-minded?

“Did I hear wrongly?” Yue Yang really couldn’t believe his own ears.”

“How does your hand feel now?” Wu Xia asked him back coldly.

Chapter 263 – Xue, Wu Xia

“Ah, it’s alright... Just vaguely.” Yue Yang thought that if he said the wrong thing, she would definitely look at him full of spite. If the Drunken Cat Big Sis woke up and found out about this, she would definitely bury him alive. Hence, he decided that he should just speak the truth.

“Vaguely?” Wu Xia’s bright eyes shone with an “are you sure?” look.

“Most probably because there was no comparison, no previous samples...” Yue Yang wanted to say that he could only be sure of the feeling in his hands if she let him touch hers a little.

“I understand, I’ll give you a chance to do it!” Wu Xia’s words made Yue Yang think that he had heard a goddess’ voice.

“Really?” Yue Yang’s heart was filled with exhilaration.

“If you could save Cousin Wu Hen, touch Princess Qian Qian’s and Luo Hua City Mistress’, I really wouldn’t mind.” Wu Xia really liked to see Yue Yang’s expression now. She looked at him with her clear eyes, not blinking at all.

“So you would only be liberal at the expense of others...” Yue Yang cried out in dismay. Of course Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua and the others were also his targets, but the one he wanted to touch now was this cute bookworm Wu Xia. He felt that it would be the hardest to capture this girl, but he would feel the most sense

of accomplishment afterwards. Although he loved boobs, be it D-cup, E-cup, F-cup or more, none of that matters compared to this perfect snowy peaks of this Wu Xia!

“Yue Yang, you must take note of one thing. You are now engaged to big sister Luo Hua and little sister Yi Nan. I’m no longer your fiancée, if I’m not wrong, I had allowed you to rescind your engagement a year ago. Hence, actually, I have no relationship with you at all.” Wu Xia’s words finally ensured Yue Yang that this mysterious bookworm girl was Miss Xue that was engaged to the pitiful guy, Xue Wu Xia.

“You know that that’s fake. I’ve never written any kind of engagement cancellation letter. Someone had impersonated me!” Hearing her confession, Yue Yang hurriedly grabbed her hands emotionally.

“True that. But I’ve never agreed to be your fiancée from the beginning,” Wu Xia released her hands from his.

“Then agree to it now.” Yue Yang was the best in pushing his will onto others.

“No.” Wu Xia rejected him in one breath.

“Why? I’m serious about this. Although I didn’t have time to prepare an engagement ring now, but there’s something I have been wanting to say to you. I had tried to hide it for a long time, holding it in inside...” Even Yue Yang was almost moved to tears by his own love story. A love that transcends space and time, if his

story was made into a movie, wouldn't the audience be moved to tears?

All those other cliched love stories in the movies should just be eliminated, only his love story that transcends time and space could be called true love!

Yue Yang was sure that he liked Wu Xia, one hundred percent sure.

This was not just a matter of spending his whole life with her and risking his life in battles for her. It was that kind of feeling in his heart that was hard to describe, a soul's calling, a thirst that he would forever long for in his life. It was a destiny made in heaven, an indescribable chemistry that existed before they were even born... Other than her, there was no other woman more compatible with him.

She was his other half that he was looking for in this other world.

She was the final dream that his heart yearned for.

Yue Yang was extremely sure that he loved this girl. He had loved her for a long time. He started to have feelings for her after their life-and-death battle with Marquis of Zi Jin. Afterwards, they went through even more life-threatening battles, and his feeling grew more and more.

Although Yue Yang also liked the tigress Princess Qian Qian and

Luo Hua City Mistress who had a very unique way of laughing, the extremely weak and fragile sickly beauty and the cute Yi Nan... He even had a mild mother and sister-complex. However, the person that he loved the most, missed the most and thirsted for the most was still this kind, intelligent, talented and mysterious beauty, Xue Wu Xia!

“Stop it, you don’t have to say sweet words of lies. With regards to men who were touching other girl’s breasts five minutes after separating from me, don’t you think I should seriously think it over first?” Xue Wu Xia’s eyes sparkled. Her words made perfect sense. If that man in question wasn’t himself, Yue Yang would agree with her one hundred percent.

“Please listen to this sinner’s argument first.” Yue Yang hurriedly give it his all and prepared to use his silver tongue to reverse the truth.

His argument was that: if a person was extremely hungry, he would even eat dog’s food.

Because beggars can’t be choosers.

On the contrary, if a person ate until they were full and satisfied everyday, they wouldn’t even care looking at big chunks of meat and fish. His underlying meaning was that if there was a goddess that could service him day and night and give him a blissful sexual life, then he would definitely be a good boy and not touch other people’s boobs at his whims. On the contrary, if he had no other way, he would be forced to take risks out of desperation. He might even be driven to the point that even if he had to kill tomorrow, he

had to touch some boobs today.

Yue Yang's argument was also logical, no matter if it was according to the perspectives of human nature, mental health and physical health, it all fit the bill of a nerd's expectations who had been deprived of women for far too long.

Who doesn't go through puberty as a girl? Who doesn't have sexual fantasies as a guy?

In the end, Yue Yang used these words as conclusion. Even he himself was moved by his speech. He said, did you think it was easy being a nerd?

When Wu Xia heard his argument, she nodded slightly, "Hmm, good speech."

Yue Yang was excited and he immediately grabbed her beautiful hands, "Are you saying yes?"

The mysterious beauty who liked to read books, Yue Yang's fiancée Miss Xue, Xue Wu Xia, revealed a little smile in her eyes as she said, "I'm very sorry, Yue Yang. I can only say that I sympathized with your difficulties, but I can't possibly offer my life to feed you because you were a hungry wolf almost driven into desperation, right? This shouldn't be the reason for me getting together with you. Yue Yang, wait until you have a better reason to persuade me before arguing with me again. We'll see your performance. I won't deny that you are an extremely talented genius in terms of combat and summoning skills. But in terms of

wooing girls, I daresay you are a huge idiot...”

Yue Yang didn't quite agree with her.

He thought that his wooing methods were still alright. At least there were already quite a few girls in his circle.

Although he wasn't at the level like “A leaf that didn't stop passing through a field of ten thousands flowers” he was at least at the level of “The bright moon starles the crow on the slanting bough, At midnight the breeze is cool, cicadas shrill; The fragrance of the paddy foretells a good love story, and wolves howl far and wide. Seven or eight stars above the horizon, Two or three drops of rain before the hill; With no money to rent a room we went to the forest edge, having a lover's rendezvous right at the river side.”

(Shiro: The first phrase meant a guy who never wavered loving a girl although he had many female suitors. The second one was a modified version of a famous poem, [Xi Jiang Ye](#))

Alright, even though they haven't really had a lover's rendezvous, he had already thought about it in his mind.

With regards to Yue Yang's self-confidence, Xue Wu Xia could only slap her palm to her forehead after listening to his preaching.

“Don't you think you should capture the easiest girl to woo first? For example, my cousin Shui Wu Hen. Although she rejected your offer to heal her on the surface, if you really force yourself on her, she would be okay with it, because she had chosen you in her heart. As long as you don't disappoint her in the future, that would

definitely be possible. There is also Big Sister Luo Hua, who is even an easier target than her. She love romance, you can just take her to moon-watching and whisper romantic words like “Before my bed, the moon is shining bright. On the floor, there were two pairs of shoes”, those kinds of poems. You can also plant some flowers with her, she would easily fall into your lies.”

When Yue Yang heard this, he was crying inside. He definitely did not have enough practice.

He hurriedly asked for more advice, his voice extremely sincere, “How about Princess Qian Qian?”

The mysterious Xue Wu Xia who liked to read books was definitely a class A beauty. If Yue Yang had not heard it himself, he would never believe that she would teach him how to capture girls. This was really unbelievable, but Yue Yang likes it!

Xue Wu Xia then lightly said, “Princess Qian Qian liked to practice her combat skills. You can try to get closer to her from here, help her practice. Furthermore, that tigress only had a sharp mouth. Her heart is soft. Maybe her mouth is denying you, but you can use practicing combat skills as an excuse to touch her body. She would definitely not do anything to you. Sooner or later, you will get closer to her, and your relationship would naturally get more intimate.”

In this world, perhaps only Xue Wu Xia would teach her own fiance how to woo other girl.

Yue Yang was a little confused.

Why would she help himself so much?

If he had captured the other three girls, what benefit would it be to her?

Of course, he didn't think that it was a bad thing.... He thought that if his future wife could teach him how to win girls over, he could chase after girls more boldly than [Xiao Bao](#). If he did not manage to win over Wu Hen, Luo Hua and Qian Qian, he would let down his future wife's expectations!

(Shiro: Xiao Bao is the main character in the Deer and the Cauldron, a Chinese Novel.)

In the end, Yue Yang really wanted to ask Wu Xia how he could win her over.

However, he thought that her reply would be a punch to his face.

Yue Yang thought that he should drop the subject. The hardest one should be won over by his own strength, this way, when he managed to really win her over, he would feel a greater sense of accomplishment!

“My deepest gratitude for your advice. Please allow me to repay you with my body!” Yue Yang pretended to be grateful and suddenly pounced on Wu Xia, hugging her tightly in his embrace. As he enjoyed her sweet smell and touch, he felt that if he could

have such a girl in his life, he had not lived his life in vain. Who cares about getting transported to another world if he could meet such a beauty? It was worth it even if he had to be transported for a hundred times.

It was the first time that Yue Yang felt eternally grateful towards the Old Daoist Priest who kicked his butt into another dimension.

When he thought about it, that old fellow had treated him quite well. He had not only sent him the Heavenly Sword Goddess, he had also allowed him to meet so many perfect, class A beauties in the Soaring Dragon Continent. That sin of himm for kicking him to another world, he would forgive him if he surrenedered his granddaughter to him!

That wonderful feeling of holding Wu Xia's body made Yue Yang think that he would never forget this feeling his whole life!

If it was possible, he really wished that he could hold her for his whole life.

With regard to Yue Yang's perverted moves, Xue Wu Xia knitted her brows slightly and said, "What do you mean by this? Taking an advantage of me when you have the chance?"

"This is out of my control, I cannot help my own feelings of gratitude and sincerity towards you. Wu Xia, I'm really moved!" Yue Yang thought that he had done the boldest thing he had in his whole life! This was that legendary move, pulling a beauty into his embrace. Ha, what use is having the whole world? He would rather

pull beauty into his embrace!

Yue Yang knew that if he failed, then he would really die in a horrible way!

After all, he wasn't some kind of an emperor. If Wu Xia went berserk, she would probably attack him with lightning in her left and icicle in her right hand!

"You can show your sincerity better by not touching any other girls within three days. I won't forgive you next time for this!" Xue Wu Xia glared at Yue Yang.

She didn't attack, that was really lucky.

Although she didn't pursue the matter further, it was obvious that she was a little jealous.

However, it's still alright. If this girl could get jealous, that proved that he had a space in her heart. He would have a chance... Yue Yang let go of Wu Xia unwillingly and tried to ingrain the feeling of her body into his mind, before looking at the angry Wu Xia who couldn't seem to hide her embarrassment. Yue Yang was almost moved to tears! This is great, since this girl is shy, that means she had feelings for him... Alright then, chasing after girls is a long road ahead, but he had already managed to take the first step.

Chapter 264 – Comparing Oneself To Others Will Only Make You Angry!

The Drunken Cat Big Sister continued her deep sleep, but the little panda girl woke up very quickly. She was very happy to see Yue Yang, leaping into Yue Yang's arms immediately after she woke up.

“Big brother will give you this lollipop as a reward for your hard work.” Yue Yang was definitely the casanova for young girls. His lollipop-reward method was undefeatable.

“It's sweet!” The little panda girl Niu Niu smiled so sweetly that a field of flowers almost bloomed around her.

She followed Yue Yang around as she licked the lollipop that Yue Yang gave her, hopping around as she goes. It was as if she would still be happy even if Yue Yang was going to kidnap her. Yue Yang stored the Plum Leopard's body inside his Lich Ring and carried the Drunken Cat Big Sis, then followed Xue Wu Xia to see his sister Yue Bing who was hiding in a valley.

The little valley was covered with demon's corpses everywhere.

Yue Yang noticed that there were also quite a few human corpses around, warriors and robbers alike.

There were no mercenaries with Yue Bing and the others, only students from Shang Jing, Fragrance and Ivy Academies. Yue Yang

could immediately notice something from these corpses, and that was, this attack was an ambush that had been planned very thoroughly. Not only had the Eastern Goblin Tribe arrived, the demons from the Demon Abyss, even human robbers and bandits had also colluded together. The Green Summit Sect, Zi Jin Kingdom and Western Lion Pagoda were definitely part of this scheme, even the Demonic Palace and the Thousand Goblins Sect might also be involved. This scheme had been very well-planned, it's just that they had miscalculated one point. They would probably never imagine that after a great battle with the Eastern Goblin Tribe, not only the Eastern Goblin Tribe would not turn against the human race, they would also agree to a collaboration.

Although the Fiery Golden Eyes Beast and Yue Yang couldn't represent any kind of power, Zhi Zun and the Eastern Goblin Tribe's Dragon Emperor would finally know the truth about this matter.

Their enemy wanted to create discord between them. The plot of turning the Eastern Goblin Tribe against the Soaring Dragon Continent would definitely not prevail.

At the same time, they had also lost the Nine-headed Goblin Marshall, Zhi Diao (the Sable), Dream Eater, Bi Lin (the green snake), Huo Wei (the fire-tailed tortoise), Duan Mu and Liu He (the Green Summit Sect members). Yue Yang had reasons to let Goblin General Pi Pa and Goblin General Golden Toad go. The first was because he wasn't sure he could catch up with Goblin General Pi Pa. The second was because Yue Yang wanted to let the Southern Goblin King know that he had suffered great losses. That way, he could temporarily spoil the alliance between the Southern Goblin King and the Green Summit Sect, Zi Jin Kingdom and Western

Lion Pagoda.

If the plan succeeded, the Southern Goblin King would definitely be happy.

However, the plan had failed and he had suffered great losses. It would be weird if the Southern Goblin King did not fall out from the alliance.

Furthermore, the demons who failed and lost a lot of troops would definitely question the Fallen Humans who had guided them here...

“Just bear with it right now. We will attack them back when we have enough powers.” Xue Wu Xia understood Yue Yang’s intentions and quietly advised.

“That day won’t be too far away.” After going through so many great battles, Yue Yang felt that he was close to breaking through the fifth layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Right now, the thing he needed was a quiet place to cultivate. He was also close to mastering the final Yin ability. As long as Xue Wu Xia could help him and practice Body Fusion together, Yue Yang felt like he could master the Fifth Layer any time and climb onto greater heights.

His Yang Ability controls fire.

His Yin Ability controls ice.

Yue Yang felt that if he could also master the Yin Ability, when he fought with his enemies in the future, he could give a taste of fire and ice hell to his enemies.

Of course, before he cultivate, he must first find his sister and bring her to a safe place.

At the end of the small valley, Hui Tai Lang who was covered in blood impressively stood on a giant rock, protecting his little mistress... Yue Bing, Yi Nan and Yue Yu were all gathered on a big rock and were trying to heal their wounds. The sickly beauty had first tried to wake Yue Yu up before they tried to heal Yue Bing and Yi Nan who had been weakened from their prolonged fight. With Yue Bing and Hui Tai Lang, who were the demon's nemesis, joining hands together to fight, the piles of demon corpses were stacked up as high as a small hill.

The bodies laid layer upon layers, and blood flowed out like river.

On the other side, Fatty Hai who had turned into a Behemoth had not return back to his original body. He lied on a pile corpses and was snoring away as he slept.

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were scattered all around the grounds as they lied on the ground.

Because of Hui Tai Lang's explosive powers and killing a large number of Demon Legions, they did not suffer from life-threatening injuries, only superficial ones. Behind them there was a huge crowd of students who also looked exhausted, either sitting

or lying on the ground. They tiredly looked after each other and healed their comrades as they waited for reinforcements.

They could only mostly be the support for the battle.

The main attackers were Yue Bing, Yi Nan, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers, Prince of Tian Luo and the others. Although many were injured, there were few casualties. Other than those who were really unlucky, getting instantly killed by a Demon General or Demon Commander, most of them were safe. Hui Tai Lang had reverted to its World Destroying Demon Wolf, killing a huge number of demons together with Yue Bing's two Treant Defenders. Hui Tai Lang was the only beast who still had strength to fight when Yue Yang came.

Hui Tai Lang happily leapt towards Yue Yang, rubbing its head on him as it showed a loyal watchdog expression, as if it was saying, "look, i have tried to do my best".

"Not bad, let me reward you with an Orb." Yue Yang threw Huo Wei's Orb into Hui Tai Lang's mouth and rewarded him with a kick. His Innate Qi flowed from his leg into Hui Tai Lang's body, quickening its injury recovery. It was so comfortable that Hui Tai Lang barked with happiness.

"Woof, woof woof!" Hui Tai Lang knew that Huo Wei's Orb was an extremely high quality item. It couldn't bear to swallow it immediately, slowly tasting it happily inside its mouth, as if it was eating pork ribs. The surrounding beasts all looked at Hui Tai Lang in envy. Although they didn't know what an Orb was, the energy that they sensed from the Orb made them drool in greed... Forget

about beasts, even the Prince of Tian Luo, who had forced himself to come over and welcome Yue Yang and the others became dumbstruck when he saw the Orb. He thought that the Platinum Dragon Demon Crystal was already undefeatable out there, but it was simply not worth mentioning compared to this Orb.

The energy contained in this Orb was many times stronger than the energy inside the Platinum Dragon Demon Crystal.

Most importantly, it was much purer and concentrated than the Platinum Dragon Demon Crystal.

The Platinum Dragon Demon Crystal was one of the treasures bestowed by the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of the Tian Luo Kingdom to the Emperor Hua Xu Ri of Tian Luo for his coronation after hunting it from the Tong Tian Tower. It was a national treasure. Who would know that Yue Yang would throw an Orb that was ten times even more precious than their national treasure to their wolfdog just like that?

No wonder that Hui Tai Lang became so strong. How could a wolf dog that had eaten an Orb be weak?

Prince of Tian Luo felt that comparing himself to others would only make him angry!

“Where did you dig that jewel from?” The Prince of Tian Luo felt that Yue Yang was just like a newly rich person who squandered his money like water.

“I only managed to get this after killing an Eastern Goblin Tribesmen. Did you think getting this thing is easy? That fellow was an Innate-level Eastern Goblin Tribesmen, we spent a lot of effort to defeat him!” Yue Yang modestly replied.

“...” The Prince of Tian Luo’s tears flowed all over his face. Look at this Third Young Master of Yue Clan, he was the same age as him, yet he could already defeat an Innate-level Eastern Goblin Tribesmen.

“If there’s a chance in the future, we can form a party to defeat monsters and look for treasures together. However, you must support my pursuit for Luo Hua. Otherwise, we have nothing to talk about.” Yue Yang always have conditions for everything. He might not mind helping Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers and Prince of Tian Luo to improve their abilities, but he definitely didn’t want to become a volunteer babysitter. There must be conditions involved. Prince of Tian Luo was overjoyed when he heard that. Sister Luo Hua was already engaged to this brat anyway, she would become the Yue Clan’s daughter-in-law sooner or later. He could just speak some good words and take advantage of the situation. This was nothing much.

He was afraid that Yue Yang would regret his words, so he quickly held Yue Yang’s hands and said, “It’s a deal!”

Hui Tai Lang realized that all the beasts around it were drooling for the Orb. It became extremely cocky as it shook its butt and walked proudly. Its big tail waved back and forth, showing off even more.

When Yue Yang saw this, he kicked it flying away, telling him not to be so cocky and ruin its master's reputation.

Hui Tai Lang still couldn't bear to swallow the Orb just like that. It was very clever. It knew that the moment it swallowed it, it would immediately level up. It might even need to sleep for a few days to evolve. Right now, it couldn't swallow the Orb that easily. Hence it hopped happily towards its master and followed Yue Yang around, its head held high, as if showing a cocky expression as if it was saying "It's your loss for not being able to have the Orb in my mouth".

Yue Bing had already woken up, but she was very weak, hence she couldn't stand.

Seeing that her brother had returned safely, she was exhilarated. She stomped down her tears as she reported to him, "Brother, I defeated two Demon Generals and many other monsters... I can now defeat a Demon General too!" Yue Yang felt that with her abilities, let alone defeating, she could even kill a Demon General easily. Of course, he would still praise her as he rubbed her head and said, "Really? Bing-er is awesome! Defeating Demon Generals, you have done a great job!"

"Heehee." Yue Bing lowered her head shyly when she heard her brother's praise.

"It's a pity that my Spirit Mirror is too low, otherwise I could match Yue Bing's [Tree's Thorns and Brambles] and [Poison] and increase the damage to the enemies." Yi Nan lowered her head in regret. Her Spirit Mirror was only Gold-ranked Level 1 before.

After overcoming this great battle, it had levelled up, but it was only Gold-ranked Level 2. It still couldn't show off its full potential.

“Level it up slowly, we have a lot of time for that!” Yue Yang also rubbed her head a little.

“Yeah.” Yi Nan couldn't take looking into Yue Yang's mesmerizing eyes, she hurriedly averted her gaze.

Before long, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress also returned. They had found the unconscious old fox who was heavily injured... Due to the Hundred Transformations Demon and the Blood Scythe Demon's appearance, the warriors who were in charge of hindering the enemy had all been killed other than the Head Referee and the old fox. Fortunately the warriors for Tian Luo had arrived on time and they managed to held on until the Heavenly Imperial Guardian's arrival. In the end, they managed to push back the enemies and foiled the Demon Abyss'invasion.

Otherwise, the consequences would be unthinkable.

The monsters from Demon Abyss who attacked Yue Bing and the others were only a small part of the army. They weren't the main force, but Yue Bing and the others still couldn't handle them.

However, the thing that surprised Yue Yang was that Xue Tan Lang, the ice cold guy who had ran towards the old fox to ask for help, had actually survived after being surrounded by the three new Demon Elders from the Thousand Goblins Sect.

“If you can help me put a few good words to your sister, I can also give you an Orb, an innate-level orb.” Yue Yang was prepared to bribe his future brother-in-law, Xue Tan Lang. Furthermore, his offer was extremely extravagant. Prince of Tian Luo was completely jealous when he heard this. His sister was also marrying the same person, why did Yue Yang give Xue Tan Lang an Orb but not him?

“That’s impossible!” Xue Tan Lang rejected him in one breath.

“You foolish son of a...” Prince of Tian Luo was completely speechless by his younger cousin. He thought, would he die if he agreed to it first? Yue Yang wouldn’t be able to do anything if he didn’t help him in the end anyway. Why would he reject him? Prince of Tian Luo was pent up with anger. That was an Innate-level Eastern Goblin Tribesman Orb!

“Bribing won’t work. I will definitely not let my Older Sister marry a fellow like you!” Xue Tan Lang humphed.

“Why?” Forget about Yue Yang, even the Prince of Tian Luo was curious.

“Because you have written that Letter of Engagement Cancellation, smearing my sister’s and our Xue Clan’s reputation completely.” Yue Yang almost fainted hearing Xue Tan Lang’s reason. That letter was fake, didn’t he know about it?

“Hey, that letter was a fake one sent by another person scheming

against me, you know...?” Yue Yang was sweating profusely.

“Of course I know, but other people wouldn’t know it was fake.” Xue Tan Lang was an obstinate mule, Yue Yang thought that he would never be able to communicate with him.

“Idiots, the enemy could send in the next wave anytime, and you guys are still relaxing over here talking about chasing girls. You guys are going to be the death of me! Come over here quick, you guys really didn’t know how dangerous this place was. Move, try to teleport away from here quickly, find a place and hide!” When the old fox woke up, he angrily hit Yue Yang with his staff as he ordered everyone to quickly leave the Champion Island.

Chapter 265 – Combined Techniques, Yue Yu's Gentle Water Power

Yue Yang was very happy to hear that he would not need to be responsible for any matters pertaining to the country, only needing to care about his own private matters. Yue Yang felt that it was in line with his principles.

He carried his sister Yue Bing on his back, and brought Yi Nan with him.

The elated Hui Tai Lang followed closely behind him. However, it was very smart, and left a spot next to it for the little panda girl Niu Niu. Princess Qian Qian also carried the drunk cat big sis on her back. She opened a teleportation scroll along with Yue Yu and City Mistress Luo Hua and they immediately teleported to the entrance of the Sky Stairs, the Little Garden.

After waiting for Yue Yang to leave, Xue Wu Xia sternly lectured Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo.

The ice cube guy Xue Tan Lang and the little handsome Prince Tian Luo stood with their heads bowed down in front of Xue Wu Xia. Their current appearance right now was definitely not that kind of cool and calm demeanour that they showed in front of Yue Yang. After they were reprimanded, they nodded their heads in promise silently, not daring to act big. Compared to this stern sister Xue Wu Xia, the sickly beauty was far softer. She softly comforted her cousins who were downcast. "Yue Yang's existence can't be described simply using the word "genius". He's a special person. There's no need to compare yourselves to him. Don't be

too pressurised in your heart too, cultivation needs to be done step by step. Don't be overly ambitious, rushing isn't necessarily a good thing. Your foundation must be done well."

"Cultivation isn't as simple as increasing the levels of your beasts and meditating to improve your qi. In order to surpass a certain realm, you need understanding. Battle ability does not equate to the accumulation of power. You must have skill, and most importantly control. You still have a long way to go! Forget it, I don't have time now. I'll check on the fruits of your cultivation next time." The moment Xue Wu Xia waved her hand, Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo had an expression as if a heavy burden had been released from them.

Carrying the name of geniuses, the pressure on them was already great.

With the appearance of the Yue Clan's Third Young Master who was exceedingly abnormal, the pressure they felt made them hardly be able to breathe.

Becoming an Innate at the age of 20 years old, this brat was really abnormal. It was as if they were seeing ghosts in broad daylight. It seemed like in the history of mankind until now, nobody was as ridiculously strong as Yue Yang was... Living in the same era as him really made them feel inferior and lacking compared to him.

Thankfully, this fellow would one day become their brother-in-law or uncle, not an outsider. If not, they would have died of depression.

However, provoked by the appearance of this Yue Clan's Third Young Master, they felt an urge to grow stronger.

Xue Tan Lang and the others had no choice but to cultivate as hard as they could. Although they could not compare to Yue Yang when improving themselves, but they did have significant progress! Within the Four Great Families, the older generation would originally be more lenient when it came to the younger generation, going about their own businesses. Normally, they would not expend all of their efforts into teaching them, as they believed that cultivation was a step by step process. Even if it was a super genius, the Innate Realm was one that could only be stepped into after cultivating over a hundred years... Now, the Four Great Families did not think like this anymore, as the Third Young Master was a precedent of this case.

The feat of Yue Yang stepping into the Innate Realm told the Four Great Families that it was not impossible for a 20 year old person to become an Innate. The only reason why it did not happen was because they had not found the method to do so.

It was not that it was impossible to have a 20 year old Innate, but rather they did not give birth to such an abnormal son.

With Yue Yang as the example, Feng, Xue, as well as Yan, these great clans naturally started to give their all in teaching the younger generation. They hoped that they could be as amazing as Yue Yang!

They did not long for a 20 year old Innate. As long as the younger generation could attain the Innate Realm before 50 years old, then that would be a huge success that surpassed their ancestors. After all, Yue's Third Young Master was an abnormal genius, a one-of-a-kind existence in the world. Perhaps, even in a thousand more years, another one like him would not be born. Under the hopes of these families, the pressure on Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo was more than one could imagine.

The fast improvement they thought they had was as slow as a snail in comparison to Yue Yang this brat.

In front of them, there was Yue Yang who was far ahead of them. Behind, there was Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li brothers chasing behind him at breakneck speeds. Seeing that they were catching up to them, they were on the verge of collapse already.

"You guys have to work hard too! You can't even compare to Hui Tai Lang, don't you feel ashamed of yourself?!" Xue Wu Xia even criticised Ye Kong and the others.

"Yes madam." Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were so scared they did not dare to retort.

Seeing that Xue Wu Xia and the sickly beauty had teleported to the Little Garden, although Ye Kong was still fine, Fatty Hai slumped onto the ground in relief. When Xue Tan Lang looked over, Ye Kong wiped his cold sweat, saying, "With such a stern sister, there's no wonder you could become one of the Three Great Killing Stars. However, I'm pretty envious of you too. With this kind of sister, although you can't laze around, but there's

definitely no problem when it comes to growing stronger... Xue Tan Lang, stop staring at me! Even if I want to have this kind of sister, I don't have one!"

Fatty Hai nodded and continued, "If you never lived in a small family, you geniuses who get all the love will never understand what's called being left to die and eat garbages."

The Li brothers kicked Fatty Hai away and lectured him. "You're still the First Master of a small family. We're just ordinary citizens. Comparing us to you, you're still much stronger than we are."

Xue Tan Lang's cool face emanated a kind of coldness like a glacier. "You're all actually very lucky."

With this, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li brothers had nothing else to say.

If not for meeting Yue Yang, then they would definitely not be who they were today.

Ye Kong felt that he would have been starved to death by now. The Li brother may have died in that mission, and Fatty Hai might still be alive, but as the wimp he was before.

Prince Tian Luo spread his hands coolly. "Don't feel so much self-pity towards yourselves, okay? Actually, we're all geniuses, only that we aren't as ridiculously talented as Yue Yang, that's all!"

The old fox was flustered and exasperated as he rushed over. He raised his staff and knocked the both of their heads, scolding, “Did my words go over your heads? This place is filled with the soldiers who fought to the death for your sake. You’ll just stand by the side of their corpses and chat around? What were their sacrifices for? Was it not for you idiots?! Get out of my sight, escape as far as you can go...”

The old fox started to beat Ye Kong and the others up and sent them scampering away, hurriedly leaving the place.

Amidst all this, Fatty Hai still boldly challenged Xue Tan Lang, “Yan Po Jun isn’t my target any longer and neither is Feng Qi Sha. Out of the Three Great Killing Stars, only you’re still quite strong. Xue Tan Lang, you know what I mean!”

“In your dreams!” Hearing that this fatty wanted to surpass him, before he left, he gave him the middle finger.

“This fellow learnt the wrong things from Yue Yang...” Fatty Hai was depressed. He never thought that an ice-cold guy like Xue Tan Lang would raise his middle finger.

Yue Yang who had returned to the Little Garden did not know anything about the conversation between Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong and the others.

Of course, he didn’t care about it either.

First, he arranged plans for his little sister, before preparing to master the fifth layer of the Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

With regards to Yue Yang quickly entering into a deep slumber the moment he came back, Xue Wu Xia thought that this fellow was tired from all the fighting and decided to sleep. She did not know that he was being tutored secretly by a Sword Goddess inside his dreams. She did not know that he could cultivate in his dreams too. Yue Yang asked for guidance from the big loli in his dreams, thinking that he had sufficient power to break through the fifth layer of the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. He only lacked the grasp over the “Yin Ability”.

This point caused him to temporarily stall his thinking of breaking through.

In the dream world, the big loli actually had the same strength as Yue Yang. She could use the two heavenly powers of ice and fire. This proved that Yue Yang was not incapable, but rather that he had not realised how to.

After sleeping for a long while, he woke up to the sight of Princess Qian Qian and the others discussing something in the small hall while laughing.

Outside, in the courtyard, Hui Tai Lang who had swallowed Huo Wei's Orb was in a deep sleep as he evolved.

Using his Innate Qi to probe a little, he found that Hui Tai Lang would require at least half a month to completely absorb the power

within this Orb... It would take more for it to become an Innate-ranked World-Destroying Demon Wolf, but it would probably be no problem for him to rank up to Platinum-ranked. The eventual level of battle power had to be seen when Hui Tai Lang use it himself. Yue Yang thought that when this fellow could completely utilise the power within the pill, it would be possible for him to fight the Mei Hua Brothers or the Xiong Brothers of the Eastern Goblin Tribe one-on-one.

“Next time, I’ll think of a way to kill a Demon King and let Hui Tai Lang eat it. I wonder what will happen then?” Yue Yang did not dare to think of this last time. However, he suddenly felt that killing a Demon King was not an unreachable goal anymore.

Seeing Yue Yang walk into the hall, a few women’s gazes moved towards him.

The drunken cat oneesan seemed to have drunk quite a bit of alcohol. Her drunken eyes were hazy. “Eh? Why am I seeing two handsome guys walk in?”

The little panda girl Niu Niu cutely corrected her. “Mom, there’s only one, that’s Brother Yue Yang...”

Yi Nan covered her mouth, snickering.

Seeing that Yue Yang was trying to say something but stopped, Princess Qian Qian asked in curiosity, “What happened? Did you want to talk about something? Is it about the Ancient Passage?”

Yue Yang hurriedly waved his hands, saying, “No, I’m trying to find someone to help me with a little favour. The Yang Qi in my body is too abundant. I would like one of you to help me so that I can feel your feminine Qi (Yin Qi). I’ve been stuck at this barrier to master the Yin Ability for too long. I need to completely master it in order to break through a new realm.”

Hearing Yue Yang’s words, other than Yue Bing and the Drunk Cat Big Sis who was extremely drunk, the other girls started to become red.

He said he needed help, but what he meant was actually asking them to train [Body Fusion] with him.

The deeper the cultivation for [Body Fusion] was, the more intimate the collaboration between the two people must be. Not only would they need to be extremely close to each other, their soul must also be in tandem... This brat would definitely take an advantage of them if they did that... If he told them secretly, they might have accepted it. But he had announced it in front of anyone, it really made them feel awkward to help him even if they wanted to.

Luo Hua City Mistress wanted to help Yue Yang, but she was embarrassed to say it. Furthermore, she was not sure that she could help him.

In this place, the one with the best Yin Ability was Xue Wu Xia, because she was naturally talented in controlling ice since she was born. Her ice ability would definitely be of a great help to Yue Yang.

“I’ll go then!” Xue Wu Xia who was quietly reading her book on one side looked up and spoke. Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress hesitated for a while, but Yi Nan and Yue Bing both did not have any kind of Yin Ability, hence they could only agree at the mean time.

“Wu Xia, I’m so touched!” Yue Yang was exhilarated. She was indeed his self-proclaimed future wife. She was so good, ready to help immediately when her husband needed help.

“Sister Yu, come over here and help too...” With regards to helping Yue Yang breaking through a new realm, Xue Wu Xia would never say no. She had even helped him think about the most suitable candidate and pulled Yue Yu towards Yue Yang. Her words made Yue Yu gasp in shock, “Me?!”

Yue Yu still had a sentence that had not been spoken.

She wanted to say Yue Yang was her own brother, she couldn’t cultivate [Body Fusion] with him.

If it was Yue Bing, the pure and innocent girl who knows nothing at all, it was still fine. But Yue Yu was all grown up, and she had started to know a little about women and men relationship. Cultivating [Body Fusion] with her little brother, would it be appropriate for them to be so close and intimate?

This was definitely impossible!

“It’s okay, your Inherent Skill is Spirit Spring. Let him feel the gentle flow of your energy, it would be easier to guide him to enter into the new realm of the Yin Ability. You just need to guide him in that part, leave the others to me.” Xue Wu Xia didn’t have much thoughts about Yue Yang’s cultivation. Furthermore, it was already known that Yue Yang was a pervert, what difference would it make if they could just allow him to feel their Yin Ability a little?

“This... Alright then!” Yue Yu was a little flustered as she looked at Yue Bing’s pure and innocent eyes. She couldn’t say no, because she was sure Yue Bing would ask her why she was not willing to help her brother. At that time, she really wouldn’t be able to explain it to her.

Yue Yang was also dumbstruck when she saw Xue Wu Xia pulling Yue Yu along.

But as he thought about it, Yue Yu’s gentle water ability as a guide would really help him a lot. It’s just that as he was breaking through into a new realm, he might accidentally use [Transparent Vision] on Yue Yu’s clothes. If she ever knew about this..

Chapter 266 – Arrow Ready On The Bow Must Be Shot No Matter What!

Yue Yu's ears were beet red as she followed behind Xue Wu Xia into Yue Yang's room.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress tried to act naturally, not looking at her in order to prevent her from feeling awkward. However, they were really curious, they really wanted to see. Yi Nan and Yue Bing were also curious, but Princess Qian Qian was afraid that the young girls would see something inappropriate, hence she hurriedly ordered them to sleep, "Bing-er, Yi Nan, both of you are tired, go back and rest! Yue Yang wouldn't be able to reach a new realm that fast, he would at least cultivate until tomorrow!"

Yue Bing didn't think much, she obediently went back to rest.

Yi Nan, on the other hand, felt that there was some other meaning in Princess Qian Qian's words. Her face turned a little red as she lowered her head and followed Yue Bing inside. The two of them whispered at each other as they left.

"Good wine!" The Drunk Cat Big Sister gulped a whole bottle of wine and laid herself on the ground, completely drunk.

"Seriously? Sister Ye, is there a day when you are not drunk?" Luo Hua City Mistress really pitied the little panda girl Niu Niu, who had to take care of her drunk cat mommy everyday. No wonder she was so thoughtful at such a young age. She was trained

to do so!

“Mommy, let’s go back and sleep...” Niu Niu carried the drunk cat big sis slowly and bid farewell towards Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian politely.

“I want to go and check up on Yue Yang, I just can’t help but to worry. Are you guys going?” The sickly beauty asked softly. When Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian heard her, they immediately shook their hands and heads, rejecting at the same time, “No, we are going to play chess, it’s been a long time since we play.”

The sickly beauty laughed a little before she left through the door.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian stared blankly for a long time. Finally, Princess Qian Qian came back to her senses first and asked, “Are we really going to play chess?”

Looking at the door, Luo Hua City Mistress shook her hands, “No, I’m going back to rest. Remember to notify me when there’s news.” Luo Hua City Mistress didn’t care about Princess Qian Qian’s reply and quickly returned to her rooms. Princess Qian Qian looked at her in annoyance before she followed Luo Hua City Mistress and grumbled, “Everyone just throw me on one side alone. I don’t care, I’m going to rest too. I won’t be your lackie. You guys have been doing this since young until now, so annoying!”

Yue Yang actually wanted to give some water to the two girls when he returned to the room, so that he could dissolve the awkwardness.

When he saw that Yue Yu's hands were trembling, he felt that he should just start quickly in case she decided to escape due to embarrassment.

Normally Yue Yang was a huge pervert, but when he made up his mind to cultivate seriously, he would really concentrate on his training. Yue Yu tampered down her embarrassment and forced her heartbeat to slow down as she chanted: this is her brother, this is training...

Holding Yue Yang's hands, Yue Yu summoned her grimoire and combined her Spirit Spring Inherent Skill with her special type, Healing Water Spirit Beast to create a Healing Water Ball. Yue Yang reached out to hold the Water Ball and tried to feel it for a while. Then, he gestured to Yue Yu to continue her spell. Seeing Xue Wu Xia's encouragement, Yue Yu nodded and summoned an element-type Bronze-ranked Level 1 "Spring Origin".

This Spring Origin also looked like a Water Ball. It did not have any kind of attacking ability, hence it wasn't able to level up.

Yue Yu normally only used it to summon fresh water.

It was said that once a Spring Origin Beast reached a high level, it would evolve into a Silver-ranked Flying Waterfall, Gold-ranked Storm Waves, Platinum-ranked Surging Tide, and Diamond-

ranked Tsunami. However, in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent, no warrior had ever cultivated Spring Origin successfully. No one, after acquiring this element-type beast that had zero combat abilities, managed to level it up, let alone making it go through a Varian Evolution. Amongst the Four Great Sects, one of the Elders in the Easter Ocean Crystal Palace, Elder Hei Chao, ever possessed this aggravating beast before. However, he did not raise it from young, he caught it when it had already matured. Elder Hei Chao used his whole life and tried every kind of methods to cultivate the Spring Origin Beast. However, in the end, he only managed to raise it to Ordinary-ranked Level 5, “Stream”. Until he died, he still had not managed to make it go through a Variant Evolution.

If the Thorny Flower was the King of all useless beasts, the Spring Origin could rank amongst the top three most useless beasts.

The only difference was that the Spring Origin could become a strong existence after it matured in Tong Tian Tower or in the Outer Realm.

It could become an extremely overwhelming existence, omnipotent.

It had strong fighting capabilities, but it was not suitable for humans to contract.

If not for Yue Yang who wanted to feel the power of water, Yue Yu would never summon the Spring Origin out.

Yue Yang didn't really mind at first, he had already read about this aggravating useless beast from the Beast Encyclopedia. He knew about this Spring Origin's uselessness. However, the moment he touched the Spring Origin that was summoned, Yue Yang was greatly shocked.

A kind of knowledge that was hidden in his mind suddenly bloomed in his mind like a flower, similar to when he found out about the Thorny Flower's hidden abilities. In that moment, Yue Yang realized how foolishly humans had been raising their beasts. They had been running in the opposite direction, acting in the way that harmed their beasts instead. The real Spring Origin wasn't used to being cultivated and used in the way that humans had been raising them... Yue Yang was afraid that he would lose grasp on this knowledge that was bursting into his mind, hence he quickly held Yue Yu's hands tightly in a moment of anxiousness. His Innate Qi flowed into the Jing acupoint in her hands, flowed throughout her whole body and out from her right hand. As Yue Yu's body trembled, the innate Qi continued to flow to her feet, her whole body and finally out of her body.

That water ball-like Spring Origin Beast slowly transformed into another shape under Yue Yang's manipulation, who was controlling it through Yue Yu. It became longer and longer, its shape turning like a water whip.

The Innate Qi bursting out of Yue Yu's body smoothly lengthened the length of the water whip even more, and when Yue Yang's Innate Qi could completely control the water whip, it twisted agilely like a snake, turning into a terrifying weapon that was comparable to any kind of weapon under the earth.

Yue Yang could control a flame whip, and a flame whip's power was much more powerful than a water whip. However, a flame whip wouldn't be able to transmit Yue Yang's Innate Qi.

A flame whip would also not be able to twist so agilely like a water whip.

This water whip that Yue Yang had controlled through Yue Yu's hands would leave no way out for their enemies if he attacked them with it.

Even the smallest gap in offense or defense could be covered by stretching the water whip longer. There was no limit to the length. Yue Yu and Xue Wu Xia were stupefied when they saw this. Was this water whip that was full of Innate Qi really Yue Yu's Bronze-ranked Level 1 Spring Origin? Forget about Bronze-ranked beasts, even Gold-ranked beasts would suffer a serious injury if they were whipped by this water whip... Turns out that it was not that the Spring Origin had zero fighting capabilities, it was actually a beast that could only purely support its master as a weapon.

The stronger its master was, the stronger its power would be.

"Water arrow!" Yue Yang was excited by his first step in mastering his water abilities. He changed the Water Whip into a bow and pulled Yue Yu's hands as he locked a water arrow on the bow, ready to shoot it outside.

"..." Yue Yu was so excited right now that her heart thumped

loudly. She was deeply moved by the fact that Yue Yang had unravelled the secrets of the Spring Origin, and was also embarrassed because he was pressing his body against her, in the position of pulling a bow, ready to shoot the water arrow. The front of his body was pasted right at the back of her body, and his arms were completely in line with hers. There was completely no space in between them. His body heat seeped right through their clothes and onto her skin, making her tremble and weak in his embrace.

The water arrow that was shot out flew back to them under Yue Yang's control.

Xue Wu Xia almost applauded when she saw this.

With this long-ranged attacking skill, Yue Yang's powers had reached a new heights... Before this, who else had ever thought that the trashiest element-type beast of all, the Spring Origin, could become such a magnificent, powerful weapon in Yue Yang's hands!

“One more time!” Yue Yang didn't transform the Spring Origin into a bow this time, instead, he summoned his purple flames and created a huge fire bow. Then, he shaped the Spring Origin into multiple water arrows.

A combination of fire bow and water arrow, could this assembly really work?

Yue Yang had never tried it before, but he was having burst of

inspirations in his mind, he was in a hurry to try it all.

Yue Yu almost scream aloud, because she felt Yue Yang's body temperature rising up quickly and became as hot as fire. However, her body also started to emit water more and more, almost to the point that she could balance the heat from Yue Yang's flames... Their bodies had no problem enduring the flames, but their clothes slowly melted in the fire. Their bodies which had been closely sticking together now touched each other even closer than ever, with nothing separating them apart.

If it weren't for the fact that Yue Yang was trying his best to concentrate and control both fire and water, which were two completely different abilities, Yue Yu really wanted to struggle free from his embrace. However, this was a crucial moment and Yue Yang couldn't be distracted at all.

Yue Yu had just started to move her body a little, trying to move forward and avoid his lower abdomen from touching her back.

However, she immediately felt Yue Yang's body started to tremble in pain. He couldn't be distracted at all, and furthermore, he couldn't be apart from her body which had the power of water.

Xue Wu Xia immediately panicked. She didn't know Yue Yang's condition, hence she did not dare to help on her own accord. She hurriedly signaled to Yue Yu and told her to endure it no matter what.

In her eyes, Yue Yang and Yue Yu's bodies had become one, the

bright flames and the cool water forming a perfect Yin Yang Circle that was revolving continuously.

If Yue Yu struggled away, then Yue Yang would definitely suffer from the rebound and be seriously injured.

Xue Wu Xia was so worried that she wished she could take the rebound for Yue Yang with her own body instead.

Yue Yu couldn't see the flow of energy between hers and Yue Yang's bodies, but she could see Xue Wu Xia's eyes that were filled with tears, her nervous and panicked hand gestures.

She slowly closed her eyes.

If it were for Xiao San's life, the ruin of her innocence wouldn't matter much.

Xiao San was the hope of the Clan, she couldn't destroy him because of her embarrassment. Furthermore, he was her precious little brother. Who on earth would stand on one side and watch her own brother be seriously injured? When Yue Yu heard Yue Yang's laboured breathing and felt a drip of his warm blood dripping from his mouth to her shoulders, she really regretted trying to lean forward just now. If Xiao San really became seriously injured because of her, she wouldn't want to live too!

Although Yue Yang was the lead in [Body Fusion], she definitely could not force to separate herself from his body. Otherwise, his

life would be in danger.

“Sister Yu, summon Water Balls. He needs more water, more of your water ability, quick...” Xue Wu Xia suddenly screamed out in fright. She jumped towards Yue Yang recklessly, not caring about her own safety. However, she was blown away by the revolving fire and water on Yue Yang’s body, unable to come nearer. She saw that Yue Yang’s eyes had started to shine brightly, the Qi on his body started to burst out like a volcano. It was obvious that he had reached the final juncture, where a moment of carelessness could make him lose control of everything.

He urgently needed help, and the only one who could help him now was Yue Yu.

Yue Yu thought about how her little brother had taught Xie Qian Qiu a lesson for her the other day, and how he had relentlessly fought with many warriors from the Xie Clan, Green Summit Sect and Zi Jin Kingdom for her.

Every single scene replayed from the back of her mind.

“No, no. Xiao San, nothing must happen to you!” Yue Yu felt that Yue Yang had started to lose control. She immediately cried in fright.

Tears dropped onto her snow white cheeks, like raindrops on a flower.

When Yue Yang's hands that were holding the fire bow collapsed and the water arrows broke apart, Yue Yu turned around and hugged Yue Yang tightly, not caring about her own body.

She pasted her cold body that possessed the power of water onto his flaming body, channeling all of her water power into his slightly bloodied mouths... She only wanted to save her brother and help him to recover. Even if she had to sacrifice herself for him, she wouldn't mind it at all... The feeling of embarrassment and hesitation that she felt just now was completely gone right now... What are those compared to her brother's life?

Countless water balls appeared relentlessly under Yue Yu's orders, entering into Yue Yang's flaming body continuously.

The previously weak water power slowly balanced with Yue Yang's Yang ability.

Yue Yang's body which had lost control previously quickly recovered. With the water power's support, the fire bow which had distorted out of shape and the water arrow that had disintegrated into drops of water re-appeared on his hand, stronger than ever before.

"Open!" Yue Yang regained back the control on his body and pulled on the fire bow.

"..." Yue Yu could feel his body moving against her own because of his movements, especially that part of him that was sticking up and pressing up against her lower abdomen. It was really difficult

for her to bear the embarrassment. Of course, she knew that due to the outburst of his Yang ability, that part of his was sticking up as his body's natural reaction. However, she still couldn't bear with the strange feeling of that hot thing scraping against her abdomen.

Fortunately he was taller than her, otherwise his thing would be scraping against that place.

If that really happened, she would definitely want to let go and escape far away.

However, she knew that if she go now, her brother would be heavily injured. [Body Fusion] must not be stopped halfway. Although she never went through such a training before, the arrow locked on the bow must be shot no matter what!

Yue Yu closed her eyes and gritted her teeth as she tightened the grip on Yue Yang's body, pasting herself even closer to him.

When Yue Yang released his hands, the fire bow released three water arrows fiercely.

The water arrow flew as fast as lightning, tearing the sky apart as it flew. With the fire tearing the air apart, a kind of whistling sound was produced as the water arrows flew. It flew around 1000 meters far and destroyed a small hill in the end.

The whole grounds shook.

After a while, a Water Ball slowly floated back and returned to Yue Yang's hands.

“So this is the power of water, I finally mastered it...” Yue Yang immediately collapsed after he said this, his body weak and powerless as he brought Yue Yu down to the ground along with him. He was exhausted mentally. In just a few seconds, he fell into deep sleep.

Yue Yu was thoroughly flustered, her hands and legs couldn't stop trembling although she had tried to calm down for a long time. She couldn't stand back up.

Xue Wu Xia took off her clothes and put it on Yue Yu's body, as she quietly hugged her shoulders, “Sister Yu, you have done well. Yue Yang that fellow was completely immersed in his training just now, he would definitely not remember when he woke up. You have really done well. If there was even a little mishap just now, he would definitely be done for. You are the one who saved his life!” Xue Wu Xia quickly comforted Yue Yu. She understood Yue Yu. Yue Yu had thrown away everything to save her brother's life, this was not an easy thing to do.

“Is Xiao San really okay?” Yue Yu looked at Yue Yang, saw that there was a line of blood on the corner of his mouth and became anxious once again.

“Let's check up on him...” Xue Wu Xia was also worried. Both of them started to check up on Yue Yang's body and realized that a lot of the blood channels in his shoulders, back, legs and other places had ruptured. Fortunately Yue Yu had turned around and

channeled her water powers mouth to mouth in time, hence he did not suffer from heavy injuries. Yue Yu didn't care about wearing some clothes to cover her body, she summoned a Healing Water Ball to heal her brother first.

Xue Wu Xia gathered her guts and checked Yue Yang's spirited thing. When she realized that he was uninjured, she sighed a breath of relief and was greatly embarrassed.

She took off her veil and covered that huge and spirited thing. Although the veil did a bad job covering his thing, at least she wouldn't need to look at it directly and became at lost with shock.

Yue Yu didn't have time to find clothes to wear, she quickly took Yue Yang's quilt to cover her body.

Outside, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress stuck out their heads into the room, not daring to enter.

The sickly beauty was more open-minded, she brought Yue Yu some clothes... Yue Yu looked at Yue Yang who was sleeping from exhaustion. She felt really embarrassed, but she also felt a little pride. She had saved her brother's life. Although her innocence was a little ruined, it was worth it since she had managed to save his life.

Chapter 267 – Fundamental Change, Yue Yu's Level Up

“How's brother?” Yue Bing and Yi Nan peeked from inside their room, wearing their pyjamas.

“He's okay, he was only training, go back to sleep!” Luo Hua City Mistress waved her hands and signaled that nothing big had happened. She didn't want Yue Bing and Yi Nan to see Yue Yu's state. Even she and Princess Qian Qian pretended not to know anything so that Yue Yu wouldn't feel awkward.

She knew that some mishap had definitely happened. At the beginning, she believed that Yue Yang never planned for it to happen, but since it had already happened, they could only pretend not to know.

In any case, Yue Yu and Yue Yang were not kids, they were also brothers and sisters.

Although it was an accident during training, it would be best not to mention about the skin-touching-skin. It would bring great awkwardness once mentioned... When Yue Bing and Yi Nan saw Luo Hua City Mistress' indifferent act, they really thought that nothing had happened. They thought that Yue Yang's training had succeeded and were excited over Yue Yang's fire bow and water arrow previously. They went back to their room and continued their private discussion. They were also not be curious about what Yue Yang had done during his training. He was an abnormal existence from the first place, it would be weird if he didn't make a ruckus during his training!

Afterwards, Yue Yu hid inside her room for one whole day, not daring to see Yue Yang at all.

She was not angry, she just didn't know how to face her brother.

Yue Yang kind of realized that he had probably made a mistake, but when he woke up, Xue Wu Xia had already given him a change of clothes. He was too immersed in his training previously, hence he never thought about his clothes being destroyed at all. He thought that Yue Yu was avoiding him because he had hugged Yue Yu too tightly and intimately, making his cousin angry.

He asked Xue Wu Xia to help him apologize, "Wu Xia, could you help me apologize to Yue Yu? I didn't do it on purpose, if Second Sister can forgive me, could you ask her if we can give it another go? I still want to sense the power of water once again. I was following my heart when I tried to sense it the other day, when I woke up, the feeling I got was a little vague. I have not gotten the sense of it 100%. Help me ask if Sister Yu can practice with me again, I'm only a hair's breadth away from mastering it, just a little bit more..."

Xue Wu Xia was speechless in the beginning.

The two of them had already touched each other so intimately, how could she ask Yue Yu to go at it again?

Although Yue Yu didn't pursue the matter, pretending that it did not happen, she must have felt some discomfort in her heart! A girl

couldn't live boldly and brazenly, she must maintain her reputation.

However, when Wu Xia saw that Yue Yang was extremely sincere with his request, she felt that he must really not know what had happened. She thought that it was funny secretly and replied him, "I'll go and ask her, but it might not succeed. You are the one who made the blunder, why do I have to apologize for you..."

She glanced at Yue Yang with her clear eyes as she turned around and left.

Although she was grumbling, she did not reject Yue Yang's request.

Yue Yang was greatly moved. She really lived up to the name as the future wife he had decided in his heart. This Wu Xia treated him really well!

With regards to Yue Yu, Xue Wu Xia only needed to speak a few words to convince the kind-hearted older sister, "Sister Yu, avoiding him is not a solution. Furthermore, he would start to become suspicious. It's best if we could forget this thing, please don't keep pondering over it in your heart. Furthermore, Yue Yang is very close to mastering the power of water. If he is stuck on this stage for too long, he might lose the feeling he had felt, then his future would be ruined."

"Alright then!" Although Yue Yu was embarrassed, she would definitely not let Yue Yang's future be ruined because of her.

There are a lot of warriors in this world, and amongst them, many are geniuses.

Often, when these geniuses were young, their talents were so potent that everyone thought their growth would be immeasurable in the future. However, in reality, it was extremely easy for these geniuses to meet their limits. They might be completely ruined by some things, or blocked and trapped by others. They might be defeated by their enemies, fought with their clans, or couldn't achieve enlightenment. In any case, due to many reasons that influenced their growth, in the end, these geniuses fell from grace. With time, they were no better than ordinary citizens.

Yue Yu would rather die than see her brother, a genius that was never seen in ten thousand years, led that kind of life.

He was a genius that shocked the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent, a twenty year old Innate...

If such a person was ruined because of her, how heavy her sins would be? If her brother was ruined, how could she bear to still live on this earth and face her shame?

When she thought like that, Yue Yu immediately threw away the embarrassment and hesitation that she felt in her heart.

Listening to Xue Wu Xia's advice, she went to help her brother to train once again... Furthermore, he didn't know what had happened, Bing-er and Yi Nan also didn't know. Only Wu Xia, Wu

Hen, Luo Hua and Princess Qian Qian knew about it, and they had been keeping quiet and never discussed it again. Everyone had been completely supportive towards her, so why would she be worried about her reputation?

This time, Yue Yang was really a good boy.

He sat in front of Yue Yu as Yue Yu summoned her “Spring Origin”. He quietly sensed it and asked for Yue Yu’s permission before he held her hands and channeled his Innate Qi into her blood channels, trying the next step to control the power of water.

Different from last time, this time Yue Yang tried to sense the power of water more instead of controlling it.

“Second Sister, don’t resist my Innate Qi in your consciousness. Let me try to help you open your blood channels.” Yue Yang now had somewhat a grasp on the power of water. He wanted to try and raise Yue Yu’s abilities, levelling the power of water that was kind of weak in her body. At the same time, he would open the blood channels in her body with his Innate qi so that she could control her powers more smoothly and easily.

‘Okay.’ Yue Yu was still embarrassed in her heart, but she was afraid that she would affect his training. Hence she didn’t dare to reject him, allowing him to hold her hands.

She had tried it the other time, when his Innate Qi flowed into her body, she would feel as if her body was burned and electrocuted. She would be very uncomfortable.

When his Innate Qi flowed through some places that were more sensitive, it would be even more unbearable for her.

Of course, she could not stop his Innate Qi from flowing to those places, because her blood channels were arranged in that way. He did not do it on purpose, it was needed for their training. Furthermore, she couldn't say it in front of him and Wu Xia. Hence, Yue Yu could only bear that strange feeling flowing through her whole body quietly.

As there were completely no resistance at all, in a few minutes, Yue Yang's Innate Qi had flowed throughout Yue Yu's whole body.

When her blood channels have all been connected, Yue Yu's body started to tremble uncontrollably.

Her summoning grimoire suddenly shone with a gentle blue light, like the ocean.

The Bronze-ranked Level 1 Spring Origin floated in the midst of the blue light. Suddenly, it returned back to Yue Yu's grimoire... Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Xue Wu Xia all gathered together to look, and to their surprise, they found that the Spring Origin had underwent a Variant Evolution and also levelled up.

It had become a Silver-ranked Level 2 "Flying Waterfall".

The illustration of the Spring Origin in the Summoning Grimoire

had also changed into a small, white coloured waterfall.

Flying Waterfall: Element-type, Silver-ranked Level 2. Beast with water attribute. Immature. Liquid body. Special attack: [Water Strike], [Drop].

“How did this happen? I never used it to fight, how did it manage to level up in rank and level?” Yue Yu was both shocked and happy, she really couldn’t believe her own eyes.

She summoned the Flying Waterfall and realized that the Silver-ranked Level 2 Flying Waterfall did not look anything like waterfall. Instead, it was a long and smooth water whip. Just like an agile snake, it surrounded her body and continued to revolve around her. Right now, it was only a Silver-ranked Level 2, hence it was normal that it couldn’t had the appearance of a waterfall. If it could reach Silver-ranked Level 6 and above, this smooth and long water whip might really turn into a magnificent waterfall!

Xue Wu Xia immediately congratulated Yue Yu, “Sister Yu, seems like Yue Yang found the method to level up your Spring Origin. In the future, this beast would definitely be useful in battles. No one would mock this beast as trash anymore!”

Wu Xia had also said this to eliminate the bad feelings that Yue Yu had for Yue Yang.

With this, Yue Yu would probably comply to Yue Yang’s training more. She wouldn’t need to worry about Yue Yang’s training being stopped halfway.

Yue Yu hugged Yue Yang excitedly as she started to shout excitedly.

Afterwards, when she realized she had overstepped her bounds, she immediately let go, her face blushing beet red. She secretly looked at Wu Xia and realized that she was discussing about the possibility of Flying Waterfall levelling and ranking up, indifferent towards her own actions. She sighed a breath of relief.

“Can the Flying Waterfall rank up again?” Xue Wu Xia pretended not to see anything, purposely starting a discussion with Yue Yang.

“Yes it can. It is a support-type beast, it grows along with its master. Of course it would be a while before it can rank-up again...” Yue Yang knew that due to his Innate Qi, the Spring Origin had been thoroughly changed fundamentally, hence it had ranked up to become Flying Waterfall. As long as he poured in his Innate Qi and increased the Flying Waterfall’s power, it would definitely rank up to become Gold-ranked Storm Waves, Platinum-ranked Surging Tide, and even Diamond-ranked Tsunami..

Yue Yu’s body was like a container.

The main user would be Yue Yang, and as long as she could comply with him, allowing him to improve her body’s abilities and her capacity to contain Innate Qi, she wouldn’t need to train at all, everything would fall into place.

Of course, she would only need to comply with Yue Yang’s [Body

Fusion] training. It's just that she would only be support and Have to follow Yue Yang's lead.

After Yue Yang comprehended the power of water, not only had he increased Yue Yu's powers, Xue Wu Xia who had been helping them also reaped a huge benefit.

Xue Wu Xia was naturally talented in controlling the power of Yin since birth. Although her Inherent Skills were Ice and Lightning, Yue Yang's realization of the power of water made her reap quite a lot of benefits. When Yue Yang described the feelings of realization that he felt, she could grasp the realm that he described even faster than Yue Yu. As such, she could also comprehend the power of water by observing Yue Yang. Although Yue Yu's Inherent Skill was [Soul Spring], which was water in attribute, her comprehension power was far beneath Xue Wu Xia's...

When Yue Yu was still slowly trying to comprehend the higher levelled power of water, Xue Wu Xia was already cultivating by herself under Yue Yang's guidance. Her wisdom and cleverness really made Yue Yang admire her.

With the Flying Waterfall's level up, Yue Yu finally had an excuse in her heart. She would take it that this training was necessary so that he would be able to help her level up her beasts.

Her subconscious started to comply to his training even more.

Even if Yue Yang had a new idea and destroyed her clothes in the

process of trying it, Yue Yu would only be displeased but she did not blame him, only covering the exposed place quickly. She did not reject Yue Yang's experiment. Along with the increasing control Yue Yang had on the power of water, there were no other occasion where Yue Yu's clothes were completely destroyed. At the most, only her sleeves were burnt or her clothes were torn. Yue Yang had stopped before it became worse.

Yue Yu didn't know it, but actually, Yue Yang was extremely familiar with her body since a long time ago.

He would learn the secrets of her body every time his Innate Qi flowed throughout her body. Also, at the peak of his training, when his [Divine Vision] and [Naked Eyes] activated together, it was as if all the clothes on her body had disappeared, leaving only her beautiful body to be seen...

It can be said that as long as he wanted to see, she would not be able to hide anything.

Of course, Yue Yang would never say out this special ability. Otherwise, Yue Yu would definitely commit suicide.

Other than helping Yue Yu to open her blood channels, Yue Yang had also helped Yue Bing and Yi Nan to link all their blood channels. After mastering the power of water, he felt that he would have a whole new transformation when he mastered the fifth layer of Innate invisible Sword Qi.

Three days passed, and Yue Yu's Silver-ranked Level 2 Flying

Waterfall had levelled up to become Gold-ranked Level 3 “Storm Waves”.

Storm Waves: Element-type, Gold-ranked Level 3. Water-attribute beast. Mature. Liquid State. Special Attack: [Water Strike] and [Flood].

If they had more time to train, the Storm Waves would definitely level up even more.

Yue Yu’s position as the healer in the party finally had changed. Although she couldn’t become the main attacking force, at least she had improved from last time. She was not the person with zero combat abilities anymore.

“Yue Yang, let’s start!” Xue Wu Xia, who had locked herself for three days in order to deepen her comprehension on the power of Yin, decided to personally help Yue Yang to master a whole new realm.

Chapter 268 – Mastery, Innate Invisible Sword Qi

“I will also stay and see if I can help.” Yue Yu took the initiative to stay this time. With regards to the matter of her brother cultivating to mastering a new realm of power, although he had already mastered the power of water and had Xue Wu Xia’s help, she still couldn’t help but to worry. She was afraid that Yue Yang would lose control during his training. Yue Yu didn’t want Yue Yang to be injured, hence she felt that she should stay, so that she may be able to help him, however little, during the most crucial point of his training.

“Alright, let’s go with that.” Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress were secretly happy as they looked at each other and smiled.

They were even prepared to spend all their efforts convincing Yue Yu to stay. Now it seemed like they do not need to do that.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing could only look at the others in envy. They couldn’t help at all. The only thing they could do was to obediently wait and not give more troubles to their older brother and sisters.

Hui Tai Lang which was on the garden was still deep asleep.

Its body was still adapting to the energy from Huo Wei’s Orb. At times, there were fire and smoke puffing up from its nose. Its tail had also slowly turned into a Fire-tail. Yue Yang had visited him a few times, channeling some Innate Qi to it every time to help it

absorb the energy in the Orb more quickly.

Although Hui Tai Lang's speed of absorption of the energy in the Orb was a hundred times much faster than other beasts, Huo Wei's Orb was still an Innate-ranked Orb after all. Its powers were immense. Hui Tai Lang couldn't be able to absorb everything in a short time... Yue Yang reckoned that it would be in deep sleep for at least half a month, or even more, in order to fully absorb the Orb.

At that time, Yue Yang really couldn't wait to see how much its power would increase. However, no matter how strong Hui Tai Lang was, it still wouldn't be the strongest... The Bloody Queen Red had absorbed Goblin General Zi Diao's Orb earlier than Hui Tai Lang, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was also absorbing the Dream Eater Goblin General's Orb.

The most frightening thing was that the Thorny Flower Demoness, whom Yue Yang recently named as "Duo Duo", had not only swallowed Duan Mu's and Liu He's bodies, who were both Innate-ranked warriors, it had also swallowed the corpses of Mei Hua Brothers, Xiong Brothers, Bi Lie, Huo Wei, Flying Tiger Ambassador, and even the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal.

Even if the Orbs had been taken out from those Eastern Goblin Tribesmen's bodies, they were still a great haul.

Furthermore, two of the bodies were human Innates!

This Thorny Flower Demoness should be able to rank up to

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen once she finished digesting them.

Would she be able to reach the frightening combat power of the legendary Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen three thousand years ago, who could easily annihilate a Demon Legion and two Blood Prison Demon Kings?

Yue Yang never doubted that he could cultivate a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, this time, she would be even stronger than the Thorny Flower Fairy's Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen!

As for Xiao Wen Li, Yue Yang was about to give her the Nine-headed Goblin Marshal's Orb so that she absorb the Orb and level up.

But she had actually shook her hands and rejected it.

This little lamia loli could actually awaken her powers on her own, she did not need to absorb any kind of external energy in order to grow... If she really needed to absorb something, she would absorb Yue Yang's Innate Qi, this was the only kind of pure energy that she liked. She turned away from all other things like Dragon Crystals and Orbs. Yue Yang reckoned that this naught girl was picky about food because he had spoiled her with his energy.

Others' beast would never do that!

If it were another person's beast instead, let alone Orbs, even if

they were given a Dragon Crystal, they would be mad with happiness!

Yue Yang ever thought to enter the space within the Black Jade Pendant and wake the Empress Fei Wen Li up after mastering Innate Invisible Sword Qi Fifth Layer. He wanted to ask her how to level up Xiao Wen Li, maybe he just had not found the proper way to train her.

At the same time, Yue Yang also wanted to ask Zhi Zun and the Eastern Goblin Tribe Dragon Emperor about the secret news of the Great golden-winged Peng, such a strong existence.

Empress Fei Wen Li was definitely not any weaker, she would definitely know about the Great Peng.

Yue Yang, who was about to borrow Xue Wu Xia's power to break through the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, was only lacking the power of ice, one of the aspect of Yin Ability. Due to his extremely strong Yang Ability overthrowing the balance of his Yin Ability, he would need a long time to train if he were to train his Yin Ability alone. Hence it would be better for him to borrow Xue Wu Xia's power externally, in order to speed up the time needed for him to reach a new realm. Xue Wu Xia wasn't as apprehensive as Yue Yu when she was taking part in Yue Yang's cultivation. She immediately took the intimate posture with Yue Yang for their [Body Fusion].

Normally, she would never hold him.

But during the training, Xue Wu Xia took the initiative of hugging Yue Yang from the back. She placed her hands on his chest, and tucked her legs on his waist, pressing her chest right onto his back.

When Yue Yang started to exude his Yang Ability, she also started activating her Yin Ability.

A weird phenomenon suddenly happened inside the room. Yue Yang's front started to glow hot and brightly, like a sea of fire.

Xue Wu Xia's back was instead cold like ice. Ice formed throughout the whole room continuously, on the floor, on the walls and on the ceiling. The whole room turned completely white with snow.

Between the two people, a circle of fire and ice formed by their Yang and Yin Ability respectively continued to revolve. The purple flames and cold ice circled each other and formed an energy tornado, making crackling sounds and blasting electric currents. Yue Yu, who was inside the room, and Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress who were standing outside to make sure everything was okay all watched the scene dumbstruck. Yue Yang had trained with Yue Yu before, however, his training with her was nothing compare to his training with Xue Wu Xia... In this [Body Fusion] training, Xue Wu Xia wasn't passive like Yue Yu. Instead, she took the initiative to comply with Yue Yang's whims. Whenever he increased his Yang Ability by a notch, she would also increase her Yin Ability by a notch. In the end, that weird spectacle of Fire and Ice Tornado that had even exceeded Yue Yang's expectations have been formed!

It was even flashing with a purple light.

With Xue Wu Xia's support and her perfect Yin Ability, Yue Yang's training to break through the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi was practically hundred times smoother than his own prediction.

Yue Yang felt kind of pleasant, exhilarating rush as if he was riding a roller coaster!

In an instant, breaking through Innate Invisible Sword Qi Fifth Layer – Success! Furthermore, due to the perfect harmony of the fire and ice, Yue Yang felt his abilities improving greatly. Furthermore, he also had a sense of the Sixth Layer of the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, or even higher realms than that. It was as if the whole world was in his hands. It was as if he could see everything in this world, the height of the sky and the wideness of the earth, the million species of plants and animals. Everything could be seen in his eyes, concealed within his heart... It was that kind of feeling where Yue Yang had completely grasped the whole skies and earth, the true meaning of the world... Although he wasn't able to break through the Sixth Layer, Yue Yang had comprehended the direction of his future growth.

He finally knew how to cultivate towards his own future.

Xue Wu Xia, the mysterious beauty who loved to read books, had not only helped him with her Yin Ability and the breakthrough of the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

She had also helped him to see his own future, see a hope!

With this goal of future growth...

Yue Yang would not need to worry that something wrong would happen during his growth. He would not need to worry about encountering bottlenecks like other people, or worry about the limits of his own abilities, the limits of his own success.

“Heavens!” Qian Qian, Luo Hua and Yue Yu were completely dumbstruck.

In the midst of the Fire and Ice Tornado and Purple Lightning, Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia were completely unharmed, but their clothes had thoroughly turned into ashes, completely destroyed. However, Xue Wu Xia didn't pay any attention to this. It was as if she understood Yue Yang's needs. They didn't need to speak in order to be connected in their hearts. She reached to the front, and together with Yue Yang who was turning his head to the back, they shared a kiss on their lips.

Their Yin and Yang Ability interchanged in their mouths, channeling and flowing throughout each other's body before exiting from their mouths again.

The two people's Summoning Grimoires appeared suddenly at the same time.

A bright array of light suddenly rose up, forming a protective shield that separated the Fire and Ice Tornado outside. Inside the protective shield, only a quiet flow of energy could be seen.

Countless mysterious Ancient Runes started appearing on Yue Yang's skin.

Similarly, the same mysterious Ancient Runes also appeared on Xue Wu Xia's body. However, the number of Ancient Runes on her body were less than Yue Yang's. The pattern of the Ancient Runes were also less complex. The Ancient Runes on the two people's bodies had then flew into the air, combining into one altogether. A small amount of Runes on their bodies moved towards the other person's body, as the two people's skins mysteriously combined together... The Yang and Yin Ability flowed in between the Ancient Runes, increasing in amount and purity with time.

In the end, there were two pillars of lights appearing from the two people's summoning grimoires, reaching out into the sky, towering more than ten metres.

Yue Yang's Summoning Grimoire emitted a radiant golden pillar of light, while Xue Wu Xia's Summoning grimoire emitted an extremely pure white pillar of light.

The most mysterious thing was that the two pillar of light started to move towards each other under the effects of the Fire and Ice Tornado, slowly fusing together and forming a smaller but brighter pillar of light, right on top of Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia who were sharing a kiss.

It was unknown how much time had passed before the pillar of light finally disappeared and the Fire and Ice Tornado slowly subsided.

Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia continued to kiss, not separating at all. However, they slowly fell to the ground. The two people's hands slightly moved, as if they were about to let go of each other. However, at the last moment, there was a giant ice power that froze them together as one in a block of ice.

They were frozen in ice, still in the midst of their kiss...

Outside, there was a huge ring of fire surrounding the two people who was frozen in ice.

Qian Qian, Luo Hua and Yue Yu looked towards each other in hesitation. They didn't know what to do.

Were Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia still in the midst of their [Body Fusion] training, or has it ended? Were the two people going through a part of their training, or has some unexpected accident happened?

"Ah!" Xiao Wen Li suddenly appeared from a rainbow of light. She immediately screamed when she saw Yue Yang.

She hurriedly charged towards Yue Yang.

It was only then that Princess Qian Qian and the others knew that something had went wrong.

Immediately, the three girls charged towards Yue Yang, not caring about other things... They didn't know how to save him, but in their anxiousness, they didn't even have the time to think.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan who were secretly watching from afar were alarmed when they heard the scream. Seeing Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress charging into the room, then hearing Yue Yu's terrified scream, they were completely horrified and quickly followed suit.

When they finally entered the circle of fire, they had not even managed to think of ways to break the ice when suddenly, a ball of Nirvana's Flame slowly rose from within Yue Yang's navel.

It then turned into a pillar of Nirvana's Flame.

A beautiful, nature-like sound shook right into the girls' soul.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing who had charged into the ring of fire immediately fainted. When Yue Yu saw them charging in, she was completely shocked. Before she managed to send them out of the Nirvana's Flame area of effect, she also fainted unconscious. Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress had tried to persevere slightly longer, but within a few seconds later, they also fell down to the ground. Before they fell unconscious, it was as if they saw some kind of bright, shining, mysterious being flapping its wings and circling around the room. It was burning with

Nirvana's Flame as it charged towards them!

When Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress slowly awaken, they realize they were completely naked, only a piece of bed sheet was covering them.

Yue Yu, Yue Bing and Yi Nan were still sleeping beside them.

“Is it because of blood? Are you trying to say that my blood and his, they cannot be mixed together?” When Luo Hua City Mistress turned her head, she saw that Xue Wu Xia who was wearing black clothes was asking Xiao Wen Li whose body was shining brightly in a golden light.

“Unn, unn.” Xiao Wen Li patted Yue Yang's body as she nodded cutely. However, she quickly shook her head again, trying to say that what she said wasn't completely true.

“Then is it because when Yue Yang and I didn't cooperate well enough at that last minute and separated a little, the blood that we vomited out mixed together and caused the Fire and Ice to lose control? But that shouldn't be the case too. I never had the kind of ability that could completely freeze us both inside an ice before. Furthermore, we had even activated his Nirvana's Flame at the last minute. Xiao Wen Li, say, what do you think is going on?”

“...” Xiao Wen Li couldn't speak. Maybe she could, but she was unable to speak out with words. She was still a little kid after all.

“What has actually happened?” Princess Qian Qian didn’t care about her naked body. She quickly asked Xue Wu Xia.

“At the last minute, he might have awakened and wanted to let go of me. However, I didn’t know that he had awakened and did not cooperate with him. Hence, both of our bodies received a shock, our internal organs were a little injured and we both vomited blood. We never thought that when our blood mixed together, the outcome would be so frightening...” Xue Wu Xia answered, her voice still trembling in fear.

“It’s okay, that’s a good thing!” Luo Hua City Mistress felt that she was purified by the Nirvana’s Flame. Her body felt like she had been born anew. When she summoned her grimoire, she realized that her Inherent Skill and Guardian Beast had both levelled up. She immediately jumped in joy, dancing and rejoicing. Princess Qian Qian looked at Luo Hua’s beautiful body, her figure like a goddess as her two red apples bounced continuously. The dark painting below her navel was also breathtakingly attractive... Princess Qian Qian felt a bout of headache as she covered her eyes and said, “I say, Sister Luo Hua, can you wear some clothes first? Luckily I don’t like girls, otherwise I might not be able to hold back!”

Luo Hua was greatly embarrassed when she heard her.

She looked around the surrounding and found that most of the things inside the room had been burnt by the Nirvana’s Flame. There were no clothes at all.

Xue Wu Xia must have brought the bedsheet from another room

to cover them.

In the urgent situation, Luo Hua City Mistress didn't try to find clothes, instead, she tried to pull the white bedsheet that was covering Qian Qian's body.

Princess Qian Qian screamed in shock, "What are you doing?"

Luo Hua City Mistress reply made her want to bash her head to the floor, "I was completely seen by you guys, so you can't hide anything too! Everyone should show themselves, only then would it be fair!"

The thing that made Princess Qian Qian want to pull her hair in embarrassment was that Luo Hua City Mistress had then curiously pulled on her leg as she cried out, "So you are a white tiger? Let me see, why is yours different from mine? Where's your little lady garden?"

(Shiro: white tiger – a slang in China for women who doesn't have pubic hair under.)

"Go away!" Princess Qian Qian was furious. She had wanted to punch Luo Hua flying at first.

However, she couldn't contain her embarrassment, hence she snatched the bedsheet to wrap herself and escaped back to her room to wear some clothes.

Luo Hua City Mistress' curiosity peaked as she asked Xue Wu Xia.

She asked if Princess Qian Qian was really a white tiger, and Xue Wu Xia replied, “You really have nothing better to do!” Luo Hua City Mistress cutely stuck out her tongue as she said with certainty, “She must be. Although I didn’t really see it clearly, but that part of Qian Qian was completely smooth. It was different from mine or the other girls, haha!”

Princess Qian Qian had a sharp hearing, hence she had heard her when she was changing in her rooms. She was really furious as she warned her, “Luo Hua, if you dared to say nonsense, this Princess will strip you naked, wrap you in a blanket and throw you into Yue Yang’s room. Let’s see that big pervert gobble you up in one mouth!”

(Shiro: Ancient Chinese Emperor used to get their concubines carried to them naked and wrapped inside a blanket when they decided to sleep with the concubine for the night)

Luo Hua City Mistress wasn’t threatened at all, she started laughing out loud instead. She laughed until her shoulders and her chest trembled, “I’m not scared of that. I am already engaged to him, I have my parents’ orders and the matchmaker’s words. Although we haven’t gotten married yet, I will be his sooner or later. On the other hand, you, Qian Qian, if you don’t beg me obediently, I will reveal your little secret to Yue Yang. Haha, I think his eyes will light up when he heard it...”

When Princess Qian Qian heard her counterattack, she almost exploded with anger.

The sickly beauty who had left to send the drunken cat big sister away finally returned. Seeing the whole spectacle, she mumbled

slowly, “What did I miss?”

Xue Wu Xia carried Yi Nan away. As she walked past the sickly beauty, she replied her softly, “You missed nothing. It’s good that you are back, you came at the right time!”

When the sickly beauty heard her, her previously pale face blushed beet red. Even her snow white neck also became hot, it was as if she could understand the hidden meaning of Xue Wu Xia’s words. The sickly beauty’s lips trembled, as if she wanted to retort at Xue Wu Xia’s suggestion. However, she looked at Xue Wu Xia, and then turned around to see Yue Yang, who was still fast asleep, covered with a blanket. It was just that his little brother was still spirited as ever.

In the end, she couldn’t speak at all. She could only lower her head and revealed an extremely shy and bashful expression.

Chapter 269 – X-ray Vision, Heaven Eyes

Divine Vision

Yue Yang woke up and found that it was cool and refreshing, his whole body felt unexplainably relaxed and comfortable.

His five senses and his sixth sense were greatly improved.

His previously sharp senses and hearing now became even sharper and more accurate. Yue Yang looked up and could see a butterfly flapping its wings hundreds of meters away. It actually looked clear as sky in his vision. Moreover, Yue Yang felt some kind of prevision. By looking at the butterfly's movement, he could predict its course of flight in the next moment.... In this new realm of power, Yue Yang felt a kind of mysterious feeling that he could control the world in his hands.

Although this ability of his was still undeveloped, at least he already had this kind of ability.

If he continued to train, this ability would definitely grow stronger!

When he trained until the highest realm, he believed he would have that kind of sky-shattering, earth-destroying power that the Heavenly Sword Goddess could unleash at any time. He would also have her powerful ability of turning Sword Qi into human appearance with intelligence.

“How’s your sleep?” Xue Wu Xia had been sitting by Yue Yang’s side, reading a book. She asked him the moment she saw Yue Yang waking up.

“If only there are a few beauties in my dreams, it would be perfect.” Yue Yang chuckled.

“There will be in the future.” Xue Wu Xia agreed and continued to read her book.

“This, isn’t this too much!” Yue Yang saw that his room had been completely destroyed, even the ceiling was all gone. He was speechless. He remembered his training causing a huge chaos, but he didn’t think that it wouldn be so serious. This was practically worse than the damage caused if a hurricane swept by. Just as he was about to ask Xue Wu Xia, he suddenly realized that she was a little different from last time. When he closely observed her, he realized that there was a small Silver Rune on her forehead. It was like a decoration, it suited her beautiful complexion perfectly. He couldn’t help but to praise her, “How do you get this Rune? Is it drawn?”

“It’s much better today. Yesterday it was a Runic Circle!” Xue Wu Xia didn’t raise her head.

After training with Yue Yang, there was a beautiful yet mysterious Runic Circle appearing on her forehead. She was thoroughly baffled by it.

After one day, it had dissipated a lot, but there was still one small

Rune left. Seemed like it would be gone in a day or two. Xue Wu Xia didn't understand its meaning, and she also didn't know what use it had at this point of time. She could only wait and see.

The changes to her body due to Yue Yang's training was not limited to the Runic Circle on her forehead. After going through the [Body Fusion] training to help him reach a higher realm, Xue Wu Xia had also improved a lot. She discovered that it was as if a power hidden in her body that had been awakened. Maybe it had been awakened because of her [Body Fusion] training with Yue Yang, maybe it was because the Nirvana's Flame had cleansed her body, or maybe it was because of something else...in any case, there was a higher kind of ice power in her body right now.

It was a power close to the Nirvana's Flame, a destructive blizzard that was only slightly less powerful than the Nirvana's Flame!

However, it was a little different than the Nirvana's Flame.

The Nirvana's Flame had a terrifying destructive ability, but it could also purify. It was a power that was beneficial to its master but destructive to its enemy.

The ice in Xue Wu Xia's body could only destroy. It couldn't purify, almost like the World Exterminating Wheel. Of course, that terrifying World Exterminating Wheel would definitely kill its enemies in an instant when it was thrown. Yue Yang had not been able to fully display the power of World Exterminating Wheel previously, otherwise, it would have been much more terrifying.

That ice cold power was similar to the World a Exterminating Wheel. Xue Wu Xia reckoned that if she could fully control it, she might be able to unleash an attack as powerful as the World Exterminating Wheel.

If not, she could also create an Ice Ball that would freeze everything when it was thrown.

Even Yue Yang, who had the powerful purple flame from his Yang Ability could be frozen over into an ice block with her Ice Ability. If it weren't for the Nirvana's Flame countering it, the consequences would be unthinkable. Xue Wu Xia reckoned that her powers was almost on par with Innate Ranker's with this Ice Ability. She might even cause trouble for Innate Level 1 or Level 2 Rankers. Of course, Wu Xia decided to make it her secret weapon. She would not easily use it unless it was the last resort, because this kind of Ice Ability could even attack its user... This was how it was different from the Nirvana's Flame and the World Exterminating Wheel. Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame and World Exterminating Wheel would never harm him.

"Wu Xia, let's train again tonight. I guarantee nothing will go wrong this time." Yue Yang felt that training in this little beauty's embrace was an extremely happy life.

"Everyone was completely scared out of their wits, they have not even recovered from their shock! Go and train yourself, don't disturb me reading my book." Xue Wu Xia only cared about reading her book, she stopping caring about Yue Yang pestering her.

When Yue Yang summoned his grimoire, he realized that although his grimoire had levelled up, there was something different about it.

Firstly, it became heavier and looked more ancient.

Countless Runic Circle Pattern appeared at the sides of the grimoire, forming a unique arrangement.

His current summoning grimoire had completely become a part of his body, just like his own arms. Without even needing to touch the pages of his grimoire, it had flipped open the moment Yue Yang thought to open it. His Divine Vision had also levelled up from Level 4 to Level 5. Yue Yang was about to check out his [Naked Eyes Traverse], but he suddenly discovered in surprise that after he broke through the Fifth Layer of innate Invisible Sword Qi, the [Naked Eye Traverse] had evolved to become a [Heaven Eyes Traverse]... If he combined the new [Heaven Eyes Traverse] with the [Divine Vision], Yue Yang would be able to get [Heaven Eyes Divine Vision] that he had been waiting for.

Yue Yang wouldn't need to spend so much effort in order to get an X-ray Vision like last time, he could get it by just chanting it.

He turned around and discovered that Xue Wu Xia's clothes were quickly disappearing with his [Heaven Eyes Divine Vision]... Revealing her magnificent, glorious, snow-white body that was beyond perfect...

Just as he was about to try seeing more clearly, Xue Wu Xia suddenly covered her breasts with one of her hand and threw her book to him with the other hand.

Yue Yang who was about to drool thudded heavily onto the ground.

It was only then did he realize that Xue Wu Xia could sense it when he used the [Heaven Eyes Divine Vision] to peek at her.

The reason was because in the Virgo Temple, Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia, Yue Bing and Yi Nan had acquired [Heart Mirror] ability. Normally, Yue Yang and the others did not have a heart-to-heart connection, but as long as he concentrated his whole mind and look at one of them with his [Heaven Eyes Divine Vision], it was equivalent to inviting them for a Heart Mirror Connection. Hence, Xue Wu Xia could immediately sense that Yue Yang was peeking...

Unless Yue Yang could train to the point that he wouldn't need to concentrate his mind, being able to cast X-ray Vision as easily as looking normally, the three girls Yue Bing, Yi Nan and Wu Xia would definitely realize that he was trying to peek through their clothes.

"Idiot, you have so many good skills yet you don't put it to good use!" Xue Wu Xia showed a fury like she wanted to pummel Yue Yang's character into obedience.

"I was just trying it out, I didn't think that I could really see!" Yue Yang was completely shameless. She was going to be his future

wife anyway, what's wrong with peeking a little? The little lamb would be eaten by the Great Grey Wolf sooner or later. When Yue Yang caused this trouble, Xue Wu Xia suddenly remembered one thing. She quickly took out a small jade bottle that was still warm from her body heat and passed it onto Yue Yang's hands. "There's my blood inside this bottle. Try to mix your blood with mine and see what kind of reaction it will give."

"What's with that?" Yue Yang still didn't know about the secret of his blood.

Not only Xue Wu Xia was curious about this experiment, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and the others were also curious about it.

When they heard Yue Yang had woken up and was talking with Xue Wu Xia, everyone quickly ran over, just in time to see Yue Yang selflessly trying the "Blood Drop Test".

Yue Yang looked for a small cup and dripped the blood inside the jade bottle into it. He dropped two drops of blood inside, then used his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger to cut the skin on his fingers and allowed two or three drops of his blood to drip into the small cup.

At first, there was no reaction at all. Yue Yang was a little disappointed. Just as he was about to say, "I'm not some kind of Giant Dragon nor a demon, I don't have that kind of blood that could burst into fire when it dropped to the ground...". Legends said that if the strongest dragon, the Black Hell Dragon and the Blood Prison Demon King were injured, the blood that they

dripped could melt the grounds and set it on fire, transforming it to lava.

Of course, that was only a legend, no one had ever managed to prove it.

The Innate Rankers who could cause the Black Hell Dragon and the Blood Prison Demon King to shed blood would also not pay attention to such a trivial thing...

Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia's blood mixed together, and suddenly a ball of raging flames soared from the small cup. It quickly rose up to the sky.

This made Yue Yang jump in fright.

Following that, that ball of fire suddenly turned into a sharp, fire-shaped icicle...

In the end, the icicle ignited in fire once again and disappeared into the air. The girls watched silently, dumbstruck.

Yue Yang wasn't able to explain the reason behind the phenomenon. The only thing he could explain was, "Anyone with eyes can see it already. This proves one point, and that Wu Xia and I are a couple that is fated to be together even in our past lives, just like fire and ice... I mean, just like this fire and ice that could exist together although they are polar opposites, completely not extinguishing the other one."

“Nonsense.” The girls gave him rolled eyes all at the same time.

“Let me try...” Luo Hua City Mistress was a little envious. If her blood could also have a special reaction with Yue Yang’s blood, would that mean they were fated to be together in their previous lives?

When her blood and Yue Yang’s mixed together, it produced a faint white light, extremely warm and gentle.

Luo Hua City Mistress was so touched that she cried. She was afraid that there wouldn’t be any reaction at all.

Although the reaction wasn’t as strong as Wu Xia’s, there still was a reaction. Luo Hua City Mistress felt relieved of a huge burden in her heart, but Princess Qian Qian and Yi Nan, on the other hand, felt more worried and anxious instead. After Wu Xia, Luo Hua had also succeeded. What about them? If they had no reaction at all, then wouldn’t they become a real failure... However, it was really not comfortable to discuss this kind of thing. Princess Qian Qian was about to escape, evading the problem like an ostrich.

However, Luo Hua City Mistress caught her arms and dragged her forcefully to the table, not caring about Princess Qian Qian’s struggle to escape at all.

When Princess Qian Qian saw that she could escape no more, she took an “If I die, so be it” attitude and cut her finger with the Gold-

ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger.

When the blood dripped into the cup, it did not have a reaction for a very long time.

Princess Qian Qian was in despair, she really wanted to cry out loud. However, her words pretended to be brave instead, “Didn’t I say earlier, I have no relations whatsoever to this brat. You guys just don’t believe me!”

The moment she finished her sentence, the small cup had mysteriously shattered to pieces... Princess Qian Qian was so touched that she could cry, but she pretended to be cool instead, and spoke out, her voice a little choked with emotions, “This is not valid, the cup’s quality is just bad!”

When Yue Yang saw this, he started to think.

He suddenly remembered when he was fighting a bloody battle against the Marquis of Zi Jin, the Thorny Flower Demoness was licking the blood on his chest and arms.

That time, he had thought that she liked to lick people like a dog, but now that he thought about it again, she must have already known from the start that his blood had special abilities... He remembered the Thorny Flower Demoness had suddenly levelled up without a reason. Seems like his blood was really special. Of course, the reason that his blood became so special and pure with energy could be because he had cultivated an Innate-ranked skill like his Innate Invisible Sword Qi!

The girls didn't disturb Yue Yang's thoughts, instead, they were noisily discussing to continue the experiment.

In the end, Yue Bing and Yi Nan who couldn't wait to try, Yue Yu and the sickly beauty who had resisted, all ended up giving the experiment a try.

Chapter 270 – The Truth, The Truth In Yue Yang's Hands

After Yi Nan and Yue Yang's blood fused, the reaction was a strange spiritual power..

Although it was only a small wave of spiritual energy, invisible to the eye and too faint to be heard, everyone could clearly feel its presence.

Yue Bing's blood's special reaction was vitality power.

At the start, there was also no reaction at all. Yue Bing's eyes had started turning red.

After Xue Wu Xia's pondered over it, she plucked a little flower bud from outside and placed it inside the small cup. As a result, the most shocking thing happened. That flower bud that had yet to bloom had blossomed in that moment. At the same time, it sprouted roots and leaves inside the cup and quickly grew larger. Before three minutes had even passed, it had turned into a bunch of fresh smelling flowers... Yue Bing immediately hugged Yue Yang as she laughed and cried at the same time... She didn't think that she was destined with her brother in their previous lives or that they were fated to be together, but she couldn't accept if she didn't have any relation with her brother. She felt that she should be the closest one to her brother.

When the sickly beauty and Yue Yang's blood mixed, it became a blood red crystal.

When Yue Yang and the girls saw it, they had some kind of understanding.

Yue Yu, who had resisted the experiment with all her might at first couldn't fight off Luo Hua City Mistress' and Princess Qian Qian's 'violence'. In the end, she was left with no choice but to try the experiment. The strange reaction after mixing their bloods was that the cup was suddenly filled with a sweet smelling fresh water.

"Yue Yang's blood had the ability to amplify everyone's Inherent Skill in their blood. It could also sense the hidden abilities within your bodies." Xue Wu Xia finally came to a conclusion.

"That's right, it seems to be that way." Luo Hua City Mistress completely agreed with this conclusion.

"Although it's like that, Wu Xia, can you explain it once again? Why is the reaction between your blood and his so big?" Princess Qian Qian was completely defeated just now, hence she decided to counterattack.

"Wu Xia and Yue Yang's blood seemed to have strong resonance. Their abilities were also extremely pure, hence the reaction become so strong. I think, their blood were not as simple as Fire and Ice, it would be worth it to investigate this further. Of course, the matter of Yue Yang's fresh blood who had the ability to amplify another person's Inherent Skill must be kept a secret." The sickly beauty warned everyone so that they would keep the secret.

“Not right. His blood indeed has an amplifying technique, but it doesn’t affect everyone. I have tried using animal’s blood, but his blood only reacted with mine. It doesn’t react with any other kind of animals. We have to protect this secret, but everyone doesn’t have to worry about leaking the secret accidentally... I guess it was the Rune’s ability that caused some kind of change or unsealed some kind of limits in our bodies, just like how Yue Yang had unsealed his Innate powers. Or it could be Yue Yang’s Nirvana’s Flame that purified our bodies... As a result, our blood had that kind of reaction with his blood, making us different from the rest!” Xue Wu Xia made a bold analysis.

“There are various reasons, I guess!” Yue Yang had realized one fact, but he didn’t think that it was hundred percent correct. Hence he didn’t mention it at the mean time, he would first research about it.

The sickly beauty nodded and spoke softly, “Everyone be quiet for a moment. I would like to tell you all about the situation outside right now.”

When she spoke out, everyone immediately looked at her.

They were anxious to know if the Eastern Goblin Tribesmen really sent Jun Wu You and the others back.

What reaction did the Demon Palace, Thousand Goblin Sect, Green Summit Sect, Western Lion Pagoda and Zi Jin Kingdom, all these powerful organizations, have for that? They definitely won’t

let go of this rare chance easily. Although they might not react blatantly, they would definitely have reacted in some small matters secretly.

Yue Yang felt that it didn't matter actually, it was up to them if they wanted to turn the Soaring Dragon Continent upside down. As long as everyone was still alive, as long as Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Feng Shao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong, Feng Kuang, Eagle-eye, Eastern Sky King, Western Sky King, Golden Blade, White Stone City Master and all the other elites was still alive, even if Da Xia Kingdom was destroyed, they would be able to establish the Kingdom once again from ruins.

As for the younger generations, there were Xue Tan Lang, Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun and Prince of Tian Luo. There were also Dragon Ambassador Can Lan Yu from the Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace and the others. Da Xia wouldn't need to be afraid not having successors to succeed their will.

Furthermore, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers and the others were also catching up to them in terms of power.

There were also Shang Jing, Fragrance and Ivy Academies elites. The Soaring Dragon Continent wouldn't fall to the point that there were no talented people to help the country. They should just forget about Bai Yun Fei from the Southern Floating Mist Sect, Prince of Zi Jin, Yue Tian, Yue Yan, Xie Qian Ren, Lie Ban and the others. Yue Yang reckoned they would only stand by the winner's back, it did not matter to them who won in the end.

Prince of Zi Jin was a poisonous traitor, that fellow was greatly

evil. Yue Yang decided that he would kill him the next time they meet.

Yue Yang had also thought of Bai Yun Fei, the Floating Mist Junior Sect Leader... Bai Yun Fei was a schemer, and he was also evil. Of course, he wasn't afraid of him, but if it were another person, such as Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, they wouldn't be his match.

That fellow, if there was a chance, even if Yue Yang couldn't kill him, he must cripple him without mercy so that there wouldn't be a chance for him for a comeback. Otherwise, he might even grow stronger than the Prince of Zi Jin.

As Yue Yang continued to think, the sickly beauty had started to speak, "Right now, the situation outside has worsened. Without our emperor, Da Xia is in chaos. Bandit groups flourished with support from some powers, plundering and looting everywhere. The City Masters have not only refused sending their armies to suppress the bandits, they have even formed an illicit relationship with them to benefit from the citizens misery. There are very few City Masters who are loyal to Da Xia. Furthermore, it was already difficult for them to protect their own city, let alone asking them to help the capital. The State Grandmaster and the Two Heavenly Imperial Guardians had already left to meet the Eastern Goblin Tribe. The Left Minister is supporting the crown prince to ascend the throne to strengthen the Kingdom's power, but the Right Minister chose to support the second prince to become the next Emperor... However most of the ministers are more willing to allow Princess Qian Qian to ascend the throne. In any case, everything is a mess."

“Let them fight for the throne. I wouldn’t fight for the throne with them.” Princess Qian Qian humphed coldly.

“What about the Eastern Goblin Tribe?” Luo Hua City Mistress was more worried about the return of her father.

“I heard that the Eastern Goblin Tribe has already ordered to release the hostages, but his Highness Emperor Jun Wu You and the others couldn’t return to the Soaring Dragon Continent smoothly, because it was also chaos at the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s side. The Southern Goblin King, Northern Goblin King and Western Goblin King were all rising in revolt. His Highness Emperor Jun Wu You did not manage to reach the Dragon Emperor’s Rainbow Palace, they were stopped halfway. The Dragon Emperor had already sent people to hide them secretly. Seems like His Highness and the others can only return when the Dragon Emperor succeeded in putting down the revolt or win the war. The Eastern Goblin Tribe had sent out ambassadors to meet the State Grandmaster. The State Grandmaster and the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians had decided to advance personally, to see if they could take back His Highness and the others on their own.” The sickly beauty’s words made Yue Yang enter into deep thoughts.

Indeed, the enemy had not stopped their attack.

They had plotted everything beforehand, they would never leave the matter at that.

If not for him, the unexpected factor in their plan, these fellows’ plan would have been executed perfectly.

The Eastern Goblin Tribe was so strong, yet they could be engulfed in such a chaos... Would the Soaring Dragon Continent be an exception? Yue Yang shook his head lightly.

The sickly beauty hesitated for a moment and looked at Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Yue Bing meaningfully.

The girls were a little worried. Seems like the next news would be related to Yue Yang, and it wasn't a small matter.

Only Xue Wu Xia seemed to have known what would happen beforehand. She quickly raise her hands and placed it on Yue Yang's shoulders, signalling to him to pay attention to his temper, preventing him to act rashly. Yue Yang knew that she was trying to warn him and showed her support at the same time. He couldn't help but feel warm inside as he nodded slightly. With Xue Wu Xia and the other girls supporting him, Yue Yang didn't care if the Soaring Dragon Continent split or the sky shatter. To him, this was only a continent filled with NPC, he would only miss his warm house in the White Stone City. His family was only Fourth Mother and the little girl.

No matter what kind of scheme the enemy was plotting, Yue Yang would stand by the side and do nothing.

He would never do heroic actions like saving the world or saving humankind in the heat of the moment.

Everyone has their own path to take. It was the survival of the

fittest, the weak would be eliminated. If one was a strong warrior, he would rise above the others in this time of chaos. If one was weak and died, he could only blame himself for being weak and unable to survive.

Yue Yang was a guy from another world, but he was also living by this cold, merciless law of this world. He wasn't an exception, and he couldn't be an exception.

Only the winner, only the courageous ones would be able to continue living.

In this world, cowards and tears were both useless!

“Previously, the person who was suspected to have disguised himself as Yue Yang's father, Yue Qiu, was gathering around ten other Clans, big and small. With the support of two mysterious Innates, he announced that he had resolved the thousand years of enmity between the Yue Clan and the Green Summit Sect. He had also established a friendly relationship with Zi Jin Kingdom. At the same time, he was also supporting the Thousand Goblins Sect...” The sickly beauty's words stunned all the girls completely.

“Are you serious? Did the Yue Clan try to oppose him?” Luo Hua City Mistress thought that this was practically unthinkable.

“The ‘fake Yue Qiu’ had already gotten evidence that the Substitute Clan Leader Yue Shan was a Fallen Warrior who was colluding with the demons. He had even managed to find out that Yue Shan was possessed by a demon and was hiding in the Soaring

Dragon Continent as a spy. When Yue Shan was arrested by the fake Yue Qiu, an extremely strong demon appeared and injured the three elders. He then took Yue Shan away.” The sickly beauty’s words almost made Yue Yu faint.

If her father Yue Shan was a demon, then what about her?

The sickly beauty slowly shook her hand, “Not only Sister Yu, Yue Tian and Yue Ting are also wanted targets to be arrested. Yue Tian had already been arrested, and Yue Ting had gone missing.”

Yue Bing was anxious when she heard it, “Sister Yu is definitely not a demon, that is impossible!”

The sickly beauty nodded towards Yue Bing and agreed with her words. However, she then shook her head slightly, “Actually, not only Sister Yu. Bing-er, you and Yue Yang are also wanted targets to be arrested.”

Princess Qian Qian was speechless, “What? He even want to capture Yue Yang? Even if you don’t mention that Yue Yang is an Innate, he is still Yue Qiu’s legitimate son!”

The sickly beauty looked at Yue Yang for a long time as she spoke, “That fake Yue Qiu had already declared Yue Yang as fake. He had found another guy who had a similar appearance to Yue Yang, but only had the power of a Level 6 Grandmaster to pretend as Yue Yang. That fake Yue Qiu said that his son Yue Yang had always been with him since baby, living amongst the demon race and grew in the Demon Abyss. His son had never left his side

before, he had thought his son from scratch... He said that Yue Yang who was raised by Fourth Mother was fake, saying that it was impossible for a useless trash to become an Innate in such a short time as the basis of his argument to prove that Yue Yang was fake. Hence, the fake Yue Qiu occupied the position of the Substitute Clan master and ordered the arrest of Fourth Mother, Yue Yang, Yue Bing, Yue Shuang, Yue Ting, Yue Yu, Yue Shan and the others. Those who opposed him were annihilated...”

“That fellow is really a madman!” Luo Hua City Mistress felt that the fake Yue Qiu had really gone crazy.

“Very interesting.” Yue Yang laughed instead.

He was secretly relieved of a huge burden in his heart.

At first, he was worried that the ‘fake Yue Qiu’ was real. He didn’t dare to meet that ‘fake Yue Qiu’.

However, Yue Yang didn’t have to worry now. This fellow was definitely fake, hundred percent fake... The reason was because Yue Yang had long managed to read the secrets in the diary using his Divine Vision. In the diary, Yue Qiu and his wife had written how they had missed their sons.

If the pitiful guy had been living with his dad all this while, why would Yue Qiu and his wife wrote about missing their son?

Why would they ask Fourth Mother to care for their son?

When Yue Yang heard that the fake Yue Qiu had hatched such a moronic plan, he really wanted to laugh out loud and clap his hands in joy. The fake Yue Qiu had really revealed his own hand!

If the fake Yue Qiu had not declared such a crazy story, Yue Yang would not dare to attack him... Right now, as long as Yue Yang had the time, he could just kill that fake Yue Qiu any time!

“Brother!” Yue Bing was beyond furious. She was only waiting for Yue Yang say the word.

As long as her brother said to set off, she would immediately follow him back to the Yue Clan Castle and kill that fake Yue Qiu.

Yue Yang shook his hands, indicating that they didn’t need to be anxious right now.

At this time, Xue Wu Xia suddenly touched Yue Yang’s back with her hands and whispered that she had something private to discuss with Yue Yang, “Come, I want to say a few words!”

What did this girl actually wanted to tell him?

Yue Yang was completely bewildered.

Chapter 271 – I Can't Do It During The Day, Let's Talk About It Again At Night!

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress couldn't hear what Xue Wu Xia wanted to say to Yue Yang.

However, they could see that Yue Yang was about to turn into a wolf from afar, hence they knew that Xue Wu Xia must have said something good. The sickly beauty turned around and left, as if she had understood something. Yi Nan and Yue Bing were a little confused, they wanted to ask Big Sister Wu Xia about the thing that she couldn't say to Yue Yang in front of the others. Maybe it was related to the Xue Clan or to their engagement. The two girls didn't think too much... Especially Yue Bing. The only thing in her mind right now was to go with her brother to the Yue Clan Castle and kill the fake Yue Qiu, so that everyone could regain back their reputation.

“Bing-er, let me accompany you to train!” Luo Hua City Mistress was not worried about her future relationship with Yue Yang.

This was because her father, the Eastern Sky King, and Fourth Mother, both of their parents, had already arranged their engagement. At that time, Luo Hua City Mistress was extremely angry. Why would her father decide her life for her? She didn't say that she wanted to marry Yue Yang that brat... But right now, Eastern Sky King had been kidnapped by the Eastern Goblin Tribe. She suddenly lost all of her anger towards her father.

After all is said and done, although her father had many faults, she only had one father.

The Eastern Sky King had a lot of pride and loved to brag, but strictly speaking, he was still a good father.

Princess Qian Qian, compared to Luo Hua City Mistress, was a little more pitiful.

Jun Wu You called Yue Yang's grandfather Elder Yue Hai 'Brother Hai'. They were comrades, and they even called each other brothers. If he betrothed his daughter to Yue Yang, then there would be disorder with the seniority. Jun Wu You was still an Emperor after all, unlike the Eastern Sky King who would force her precious daughter's marriage if need be... Jun Wu You wouldn't be able to do it, hence he could only close one eye and pretended not to know anything about Yue Yang and his daughter's relationship.

He had approved them in his heart, but he couldn't speak it out.

It would also be hard for the Yue Clan to propose the marriage...

They had already been talking about marrying Miss Xue to Yue Yang since they were babies. Although there was that matter of engagement cancellation, those with discerning eyes would know that it was definitely a sinister plot.

As for Yi Nan, her aunt had acted even faster than the Eastern Sky King. She had already arranged the marriage between Yue Yang and Yi Nan early on. Right now, the only one whose relationship status was slightly awkward was Princess Qian Qian.

However, Princess Qian Qian thought that it would be very hard for her if she just leave like that and return to her previous way of life.

Although Yue Yang was a big pervert, be it in terms of training or spending time together, he often gave her pleasant surprises. If she couldn't see this brat, her life would lost its excitement.

But if she followed Yue Yang in the future, her status would be quite awkward.

All the other girls were either his fiances or his sisters.

She, she was still an outsider right now!

Hence, the tigress who was carefree and without worries last time had a slight problem right now... Well, growing up means more problems after all!

“It's all that big pervert's, who deserves to die, fault. I was living so peacefully last time.” Princess Qian Qian grumbled. She could only blame it all to Yue Yang, feeling that he had messed up her whole life. If only he had continued to be the useless Xiao San, he would have no relationship to her at all. But in just a short time, he had turned from a useless trash to become a genius who caused problems everywhere. Afterwards, he had even dragged her into his mess. He was really annoying! Princess Qian Qian became angrier the more she thought about it. When Yue Yang returned after speaking with Wu Xia, she glared at him with her tigress eyes.

“What’s wrong?” Yue Yang obviously didn’t know what had happened.

“This princess refuse to talk to you!” Princess Qian Qian thought that she might be a little unreasonable, but she couldn’t put down her pride in front of Yue Yang. In the end, she could only pretend to be tough to the end.

“Does this girl lack teachings and discipline after her puberty came?” Yue Yang was completely irritated.

“Just focus on your training!” Behind Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia who heard him mumbling really wanted to beat him senseless. She had almost wanted to smash him dead with her books. He had a whole house of girls, wouldn’t it be easy for him to teach some princesses or some city mistress’ later on? Now the most important thing for him was to improve his skills! In this chaotic situation, one would be nothing if one didn’t have abilities. One must become the strongest warrior, only then would they be able to act as they pleased... She felt that Yue Yang should first prioritize increasing his abilities, then he could pursue his happy sexual life all he wanted... If it were the other way instead, he would definitely be finished!

Under the strict supervision of Xue Wu Xia, the future wife who was even stricter than a teacher, Yue Yang couldn’t be lazy even if he wanted to.

In his Dream Realm, he met the big loli again.

Outside, Xue Wu Xia and the few girls were training together. For the next ten days, Yue yang went through a hell-like training. In the morning, he would take turns to battle Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan and Yue Bing. In the afternoon, Yue Yang would secretly research on ways to refine a pill together with Xue Wu Xia, taking note to prevent their prescription from leaking to other parties. In the late afternoon, he would be researching Ancient Runes with the sickly beauty. In the evening, he would go to the lake and train with Yue Yu, helping her to improve her Water Ability and her beast 'Storm Waves'. At night, Yue Yang used his Innate Qi to connect Yi Nan's and Yue Bing's blood channels. Sometimes, Luo Hua City Mistress would also come and said that she wanted to accompany Yue Bing as an excuse. At midnight, he would secretly train with Xue Wu Xia... When he was sleeping, he fought with the big loli who had the same abilities as him but was ten times more skillful than him. Most of the time he would be beaten up, only managing to gain a little advantage after forcing his hand.

This kind of life was like hell, a deep abyss of suffering.

Yue Yang was completely tormented.

But his abilities improved very quickly.

He had just broke through the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, but he swiftly was on his way to break through the Sixth Layer already.

At the same time, because his opponents were all beauties, he felt that he still had good prospects living these kind of days. At least, he had already taken the first step to enter a blissful sexual life.

In comparison, Hui Tai Lang had it way easier than him. It didn't wake up even once, continuing its deep sleep.

When Yue Yang walked past it, he would give it a kick.

Firstly it was because he was jealous that that fellow didn't need to do anything to level up; Secondly it was to give it a little Innate Qi to make it evolve better... After getting kicked, Hui Tai Lang felt so comfortable that it turned to show its belly or wagged its tail in its dream, continuing to sleep without noticing anything.

That day, Yue Yang and the sickly beauty was researching about Ancient Runes when the sickly beauty asked him coldly, "Have you finished refining the pill?"

"We have finished refining it long ago!" Yue Yang replied her without giving it much thought at first, but he quickly reacted and changed his words, "I mean, actually we still lack a little something, we are nearly done."

"Why do you have to listen to her?" The sickly beauty seemed to be very curious.

"Who?" Yue Yang pretended ignorance.

“I am talking about Wu Xia. Why do you have to listen to her?” The sickly beauty didn’t allow him to pretend to be ignorant in front of him, as she persistently pursued her answer.

“That... Cough, I will listen to whomever who speaks logically. For example, about this rune...” Yue Yang hurriedly changed the topic to the Runes. He couldn’t say that at this moment, Wu Xia was actually teaching him how to pursue his blissful sexual life, planning and scheming for the sake of his future blissful sexual life. Even the pill that was refined previously was created for the purpose of pushing down the sickly beauty so that he could save her.

Such an excellent wife, if he didn’t listen to her, who else would he listen to?

Yue Yang thought that he might not need to listen to Wu Xia with regards to other things. But with regards to chasing girls, he was definitely right to listen to her opinion!

Would there be anyone who could understand a girl’s heart better than another girl?

With Wu Xia as his tactician, using her tactics to chase and conquer girls, he would definitely succeed quickly, gaining victory with one hit.

Although Yue Yang didn’t understand why Wu Xia wanted to hatch plans for him, he could be sure that this girl did not have an evil intention. Seems like she just couldn’t stand idle and watch.

Seeing that Yue Yang was too dumb, she decided to lend a hand and give some pointers. Just like those experts who were overlooking young warriors who were just starting out, she couldn't help but to point out some advice so that the young warrior could become an expert warrior...

The sickly beauty glared at him a little, "Don't talk about Runes anymore. You haven't been interested in researching Runes at all these few days."

Yue Yang was speechless. This sickly beauty really had sharp sense.

Turns out that she had already sensed his perverted heart, she just didn't point it out.

Yue Yang summoned his courage and advised, "Your body... you still have hope. Just let me try. Besides, we have finished refining the pill needed."

When the sickly beauty heard it, her previously pale face blushed a little. She gave Yue Yang a roll eye then turned around to leave. Even though Yue Yang was calling her out from behind, she ignored him completely.

Yue Yang quickly find Wu Xia to ask for advice for chasing girls. Miss Xue was furious, "Idiot, why do you have to talk so much bullshit with her? Didn't I say you should just act recklessly, strike first and think about the consequences later? Now that you have said it to her, she would know your intentions! I have never seen

an idiot like you. What do you think she is thinking? She is jealous. She thought that you are only doing that because I asked you to, not because you truly want her!”

“I understand what you mean, but if I forced her, I’m afraid of hurting her fragile body!” Yue Yang’s forehead was filled with beads of sweat.

“Who asked you to... I’m saying be forceful with your attitude, not actions... Yue Yang, just disappear from my sight right now. I hate speaking with idiots like you.” Xue Wu Xia raised her Ancient Book and was thinking she should just smash Yue Yang to death. He was obviously a pervert, but he still tried to be an innocent pervert. She was really angry.

“I understand, look at my performance!” Yue Yang was suddenly enlightened. He was overjoyed as he disappeared in a flash.

When Wu Xia looked at Yue Yang’s running back, an expression of calmness suddenly appeared on her face. She mumbled in an extremely small voice, “Wu Hen, I can only do so much for you. Everything is up to you now!”

The sickly beauty was packing up her things. She was packing her clothes, pictures, scrolls and all other stuff neatly, as if she was prepared to leave on a journey.

Yue Yang suddenly burst into her room, giving her a fright.

Just as she was about to say something, Yue Yang suddenly pulled her into his embrace forcefully, then carried her to the garden outside. The sickly beauty was both embarrassed and anxious, “What are you doing? Quick, quickly put me down... Stop causing problems, I am going to be angry. Let me go now, everyone is looking at us... Yue Yang, stop now, my body can’t take it. Quickly put me down, I’m going to cough, I feel sick!”

Yue Yang carried the sickly beauty to the garden outside, running straight ahead without stopping.

No matter what the sickly beauty say, he didn’t let her go.

They ran for quite a while, but as the sickly beauty continued to struggle, Yue Yang used teleportation to teleport ahead. He didn’t have a target location, he only teleported forward. After around ten times of teleportation, they were around 20-25 km away from the Flower Garden. Yue Yang finally stopped running, stopping on a lakeside that was illuminated by thousands of stars above.

The lake water was extremely clear, a little green and a little blue.

The water was shallow, and one could see the bottom. Little fish and prawns both small and big swum around together in a bunch on the clear water.

Yue Yang put the sickly beauty whose face was beet red down, but it was as if he was afraid that she would try to escape, hence his right hand continued to hold her waist firmly. He whispered to

her, “Actually, I really want to help heal your sickness, but it’s a little awkward with all the others close-by... Now they are all not here, no matter what, I will definitely save you. This is what I want to do in my heart, not because Wu Xia wanted me to. You should understand what I mean. Don’t reject me anymore, okay? We shouldn’t waste our time, your body has already reached its limits. If we don’t try to cure it now, it will be too late. When your sickness is healed, I don’t care if you want to scold me or get angry with me. But right now, just listen to me. I can’t be without you. I don’t care if you hate me or anything, I just want to save you!”

The sickly beauty didn’t have time to make her excuses before Yue Yang started to undo her clothes.

The sickly beauty was so shocked that she almost fainted.

Although he said he wanted to save her, didn’t he looked too eager for this?!

Without a second word, her clothes were peeled off. It was even wilder than a bandit trying to rape a girl. Who taught him these moves?

The sickly beauty realized that this brat’s hands were extremely quick. With just a few movements, her clothes were already mostly undone. She became ever more shocked and quickly stopped him with her hands, “Wait a minute. Don’t be reckless first, let me think... At least, let me get used to the idea first, my heart is beating like crazy I can’t breathe! Just wait for a while, I agree to it, but just stop for a while now... Yue Yang, although you want to save me and are doing this for my own good, can’t you think about

my feelings a little? I won't be able to take it if you do it so forcefully..."

When Yue Yang heard it, he couldn't believe her, "You really agree to it?"

The sickly beauty sent him a helpless look, "Do I have a choice? I never see such a wild person like you! Just let me think about it and get used to the idea first..."

In the end, she lowered her head, unable to look Yue Yang in the eyes. She then spoke with an extremely small, shy voice, "I can't do it during the day, let's talk about it again at night!"

Chapter 272 – Pushing Down Or Whatever, I Really Hate You!

Hearing the sickly beauty's consent, Yue Yang sighed a huge relief.

One had to see the partner when they were forcing to push someone down.

If one were to force a mature, seducer big sister like the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, she would probably like it a lot. If she was a prim and proper lady like the sickly beauty, it would really be unsuitable for him to force her down. Her body was like a white jade vase or porcelain bowl. He needed to cherish her body carefully, kiss her with the gentlest of kisses. If he could grasp her in his hands and see her sweet smiling face, it would be the highest achievement in the world.

Yue Yang quickly built a small tent in the woods near the lake.

The sickly beauty understood that this was the love nest that he had prepared. In there, they would... She didn't dare to look at that brat anymore, she went to the lakeside and sat on a stone, pretending not to see him getting busy preparing everything. She took off her shoes and dipped her snow white ankles into the fresh clear water.

A cool and refreshing breeze brushed against the skin on her face.

Her hair blew with the wind. The wind had not only raised her hair, but also the thoughts of a young girl.

“Do you want to eat some fruits?” Yue Yang brought a fruit splashed with some morning dew on top of it. He washed it again inside the lake and gave it to the sickly beauty.

“Yeah.” The sickly beauty actually didn’t have any appetite, but seeing Yue Yang’s good intentions, she nodded and took the fruit.

“Actually, I feel the most relaxed in these few days. Last time, every day was so rushed. Problems after problems came up, and there were various pressures in life, cultivating and others. Living these few days in the Little Flower Garden is really the most relaxed time I have had...” Yue Yang also washed a fruit for himself and jumped on top of the stone beside the lake, sitting right beside the sickly beauty.

“Really?” The sickly beauty really wanted to say that she felt the same. However, the words got stuck in her mouth. She felt that she shouldn’t say the same thing as him. She quickly changed her words.

“I don’t have any interest in fighting or struggling for power. If it weren’t because of Fourth Mother and the others waiting for me, I would rather live this way... Looking up to the azure sky when I have nothing to do, observing the clouds appearing.” Yue Yang lied on top of the stone and looked up to the sky, remembering the life he had after coming to this world. He couldn’t help but to feel extremely thankful.

This secret, he would never mention it to anyone.

Even Xue Wu Xia.

Then only time when Yue Yang could let loose his thoughts was when he was in his Dream Realm. The Heavenly Sword Goddess and the Big Loli were like relatives that had come from another world like him. Other than accompanying Yue Yang's training, they also helped to quench the loneliness he felt in his heart. Maybe they were not humans but a fairy, a sword immortal kind of existence. But all these were unimportant, Yue Yang only needed someone to accompany him. As long as they continued to accompany him forever, all the other things didn't matter to him.

The sickly beauty didn't know what Yue Yang was thinking, but his words made her think.

She felt some kind of connection with Yue Yang's words.

She completely didn't have any regards for pursuing success or achieving goals, which would normally be what normal people pursue. In her heart, a strong and powerful emperor wouldn't compare to a poor scholar.

Although she didn't mind Yue Yang becoming a great hero with indomitable spirit, contributing great accomplishments in the Soaring Dragon Continent, she would rather see him living by her side, just like these few days with him. Everyday would be filled with training and having fun with her sisters, quarreling when

they were bored, lying down when they were tired.

Of course, she couldn't let him be this way for a long period of time.

The Demonic Palace, Thousand Goblins Sect, Western Lion Pagoda, Green Summit Sect, Kingdom of Zi Jin Demon Abyss and even the Eastern Goblin Tribe's powerful force were eyeing them like a tiger watching its prey.

If he did not take up the challenge, then their enemies would think of every ways to lure him out to fight. In this chaotic world, one must stand up and fight... One could only grow stronger after being sharpened in deadly battles and piles of corpses... She knew that if it weren't for her, he would probably be going to the Yue Clan Castle with her sister to eliminate that fake Yue Qiu who had turned the whole of Yue Clan upside down. He was the Yue Clan's hope, he must protect his Clan.

If it weren't because he had to stay here to refine a pill for her sickness, he would probably be long on his way.

Continuing to reject him would only delay him and the problem in the Yue Clan. It might even cause the loss of some people's lives, because time was man's greatest enemy!

"You would have opportunities to do that in the future!" The sickly beauty turned around and said a few reassuring words to Yue Yang. However, she realized that Yue Yang had already fallen asleep. His face shone with a relaxed smile, as if he was about to

laugh out loud even in his dreams.

The gentle sun shone upon his face, sparkling and radiant.

The sickly beauty realized that she had never looked at him attentively before. She only realized then that his sleeping expression was extremely gentle and kind.

Right now, he was completely different than his pervert self when he was awoke.

Normally, in order to protect himself, he would wear a mask of laughter or anger, hiding his real feelings inside. He would never reveal his feelings easily, others would only be able to see his strongest side... Maybe right now was his real face! The sickly beauty was a little touched as she touched his face with her fingers. His face, it was not exactly handsome or elegant, one must overlook his face and feel him with one's heart in order to discover his unique, unspeakable charm... Such a charm was hard to describe in words, but his charm was able to slowly influence the people in his surroundings.

Under the influence of his charm, Qian Qian who had an unyielding temperament previously had unknowingly changed. Luo Hua who liked to be alone had also changed.

The proud and extremely wise Wu Xia had also come to his side.

Even she herself, who had wished to die her whole life, had

slowly changed her mind because of him.

He might not know what kind of charm he had, he might not know that he had this power to attract everyone to gather at his side. However, he had subconsciously acted in this way.

Maybe meeting him was an ill-fated relationship that had been decided in their previous lives. She wouldn't be able to run away!

The sickly beauty slowly lowered her body, laying her head on Yue Yang's arms. She watched his quietly sleeping, handsome face and slowly reached out her hands towards his face. Very carefully, as if she was afraid of waking him up, she lightly caressed his face, stroking his lips. Her pale face started to blush like a flower blossom slowly, pink flush started to spread under her skin.

Immediately, she felt a burst of energy rising within her, just like a fresh flower bud blossoming into a beautiful flower.

When Yue Yang woke up, the stars were already shining in the sky.

The sickly beauty was still lying on his chest, her fragile body curled in his embrace, like an extremely delicate little grass that was too weak to stand up to the wind.

Even though Yue Yang tried to carry her extremely gently, she immediately woke up.

“Your body reeks of sweat, it’s so smelly.” The sickly beauty didn’t struggle nor try to leave his embrace, she only joked teasingly. When Yue Yang went into the lake to take a bath, she raised the hem of her skirt and immersed her legs into the refreshing lake water. She didn’t avoid him but walked closer to him instead, stroking his back as gently as a white orchid, “You know, you are just like a big child. You don’t know how to take care of yourself, much less others...” She kept her last sentence in her heart and didn’t say it out loud. Actually, she wanted to add, “You can’t take care of yourself, much less taking care of the others, so let me take care of you instead.”

She pushed Yue Yang to sit down on the lake and lightly rubbed his back for him.

Although this was her first time doing this, she did such a good job that the sickly beauty herself felt that she had talent for serving others.

Yue Yang really enjoyed her service. He turned around and saw that her lovable face looked like a goddess under the starry sky. He couldn’t help himself but to pull her into his embrace and pressed his lips onto her own, muffling her surprised cry.

The sickly beauty was shocked beyond her mind, but she quickly regained her senses.

Her lips felt like being struck by lightning. The warmth of his lips spread throughout her whole body, sending shots of tingling sensation right through her soul.

She didn't know when, but he had already invaded her mouth, taking prisoner of her tongue...

With her tongue being sucked so wildly and angrily by Yue Yang, the sickly beauty felt like he had almost sucked her whole soul altogether. Unable to restrain her emotions, in the midst of his insatiable kiss, she returned his kiss with her instincts. She was clumsy at first, but she became more proficient with time. In the end, she managed to match her rhythm to his in just a few minutes.

Following the sexual instincts in her mind and the sensations in her body, she closed her eyes, her eyelashes trembling as she clung her slender arms around his neck. She placed herself right into his embrace, raising her face to kiss with him continuously.

The sky, earth, lakewater, fishes, prawns, stars, night breeze...all seemed to fade into nothingness.

There were only the both of them left in this world, there was only the sweet sensation of their lips and tongues twirling against each other!

When he placed the "Little Rebirth Pill" that he had painstakingly refined into her mouth, she didn't reject it at all, swallowing it obediently.

Love made her feel the strongest desire to live she had ever felt. In this moment, she was no longer a lonely person waiting for her

death. She wanted to be with him forever, forever! When Yue Yang peeled off the wet clothes off her beautiful body, she didn't try to stop him, but only shyly bury her head into his chest. She didn't dare to look at him in the eye, afraid that he would see through her embarrassment.

Only when Yue Yang carried her delicate, trembling body, he could finally feel her light weight on his arms.

She was like a feather, almost weighing nothing at all.

Refreshing, smooth, exquisite and sweet smelling... There were no words enough to describe her goodness. Under the hazy light of the moon, Yue Yang felt like she was as beautiful as the Moonlight Goddess.

The sickly beauty who was burying her face in his chest was completely red, even her slender neck that was as graceful as a swan's was also red.

Her small and delicate shoulders that looked thin and fragile bring about a sense of protectiveness in Yue Yang.

The hollow on her collarbones were moistened by fresh lake water, just like drops of morning dew moistening a flower in the morning. It added to her beautiful feminine charm. Yue Yang didn't have a collarbone fetish last time, he didn't even understand the meaning for the existence of collarbones. However, right now, he was definitely going to join the Collarbones Fan Group. He realized that a truly perfect beauty wouldn't have any flaws in her

body. In front of perfection, other than kneeling down and giving thanks to the Creator's miracle, what else could he wish for?

Her shoulders were as small as a dove's.

Although he wasn't able to see everything because she had covered herself with her hands due to embarrassment, his soul was almost blown away when he saw the cleavage between her breasts.

She was too perfect... She was small and cute, her mounds fits perfectly in his hands. In that moment, Yue Yang completely didn't care about D, E, even G-cup breasts anymore! The best breasts didn't depend on whether they were big or small. Evaluating beauties with the size of their breasts was simply too foolish!

Moving down, her slender waistline and perfect, smooth navel came into view.

"It's cold!" The sickly beauty secretly looked at Yue Yang who was starstruck and drooling with saliva, feeling embarrassed yet happy at the same time. She also felt annoyed and anxious as she quickly gave him a hint.

"Don't be afraid." Yue Yang returned to his senses and secretly scolded himself a fool. He perfectly knew that she had a fragile body, but he was still standing near the lakeside leisurely enjoying the view. If he accidentally caused the sickly beauty to have a chill, that really... His hands carried her legs and her shoulders as he quickly dashed into the small tent. He wrapped her body in a white

quilt and started rubbing her hands to keep her warm and prevent her from getting a chill.

Seeing how protective he was towards her, the sickly beauty felt warm inside.

Seeing that Yue Yang was also drenched in water, the sickly beauty took a small towel and wiped his head. Although it was her first time doing that, she was as skilled as a wife serving her husband.

They didn't know when it started, but the two of them started kissing each other once again. They kissed lightly, teasing and provoking the other party.

Their kiss deepened as their feelings grew stronger.

Yue Yang's hands were initially at her navel, but he slowly inched downwards, finally stopping on her [Dan Tian](#)...

Although he was drowned in lust, Yue Yang still remembered to treat her sickness. The pill that Wu Xian and him had refined with great difficulties contained "Goddess' Tears", their bloods and Innate Qi. The pill was then refined with Nirvana's Flame. Although it did not contain enough herbs to create the legendary "Rebirth Pill", they had created a brand new pill that almost had the same effects as the Rebirth Pill... Yue Yang felt that it could still be improved by adding more herbs, hence he gave it a temporary name, "Little Rebirth Pill". When they could successfully improve its effects and made it even more effective

than the Rebirth Pill, he would name it as “Nirvana Pill”.

There wasn't enough time to research and refine this Little Rebirth Pill into Nirvana Pill, saving the sickly beauty was more important.

Maybe the strength of the medicine wouldn't be very effective, but after taking the Little Rebirth Pill, the sickly beauty wouldn't need to worry for at least a few years. This way, Yue Yang would have enough time to concoct the Nirvana Pill.

Yue Yang released Innate Qi from his hands and channeled it into the sickly beauty's Dan Tian, before making it flow throughout her body.

The sickly beauty couldn't really get used to the feeling of his hot hand on her sensitive place, it was her first experience after all. However, she didn't reject him and tampered down her embarrassment instead. She clung on to his neck and continued to kiss him tightly.

She was afraid that she would moan in a moment of distraction.

The feeling of his Innate Qi flowing through her body was both comfortable and distressing, especially when the energy from the Little Rebirth Pill started spreading out with Yue Yang's Innate Qi. Her body felt unbearably hot as beads of perspiration continued to seep out from her skin, making the small tent filled with her unique fragrant smell.

Yue Yang took the initiative to push down her fragile body very carefully, as if he was afraid that the sickly beauty's body would be injured if he were to use even a little bit of strength.

On the contrary, she felt some kind of strange feeling, as if her weak body was able to endure his body's weight.

She didn't feel choked by the pressure of his bodyweight on her; she felt a sense of exhilaration instead.

Maybe this was what women were designed for!

To her embarrassment, she could clearly feel his eagerness, hot and hard, majestically standing up, making her tremble. When he brushed across her thighs and slowly moved closer, the sickly beauty felt a rush of panic. She knew what would happen next, and understood what this would signify. It would be the end of her virginity, and the start of becoming his wife... She knew all these, but she didn't know what she should do. She was afraid that the clumsiness of her body would end up making his assault a failure.

“Slow, go slower.” She had prepared her heart, but her body didn't know how to react. She could only stall for time in order to calm down her panic.

“Relax, just relax...” Yue Yang's battle experience were all thought by big sister Asakawa Ran and the others. Although his theoretical knowledge was extremely high, he had never truly fought in the battlefield.

He wasn't panicked, he was extremely calm as he contemplated about how to defeat the enemy's head. From now onwards, he would carve his name as the great general who emerged victorious in every battle.

However, his natural reactions such as increased heartbeat and sweaty hands were unavoidable.

The sickly beauty discovered that he was sweating furiously, and she immediately awakened her motherly instincts... She opened her thighs wide and forced her embarrassment down. As he was slowly inching closer, she gently guided him towards her... In the end, the knight raised his spear as he rode and charged forward, breaking into the beautiful princess' castle, destroying the gates as he entered... In the midst of the sickly beauty's pained cry, Yue Yang and the sickly beauty became one.

"Does it hurt?" Yue Yang was afraid that he was too rough and hurt the sickly beauty.

"Gently, more gently." The sickly beauty realized that this brat's was naturally well-endowed, she almost died from the pain at first. Although he was extremely gentle and careful, it was still unbearable.

Furthermore, her gates that had never been opened before was weaker and more fragile than a flower. How would she be able to take such a strong attack?

However, after he had successfully breached the barrier of her

virginity and the two people were finally combined as one, she started to adapt to him.

The pain was still there.

However, beyond the sickly beauty's expectations, she could actually be able to contain the invasion that she thought she wouldn't be able to endure. Maybe this was a woman's natural ability. When the Creator creates man and woman, He definitely gifted them with their own natural abilities. Otherwise, how else could man continue their bloodline? Yue Yang's gift was extraordinary, she thought she wouldn't be able to contain that destructive weapon at first. However, looking at it now, even she, who had a weak body, could have been a woman designed by the Creator in order to fit him...

The sickly beauty couldn't help but feel touched when she thought about this.

She took the initiative to move in for a kiss, allowing the fire from their feelings to numb away the pain. At the same time, she clung her arms and legs tightly to her lover, welcoming his intrusion in happiness and pain...

She had already become his wife. Making her lover happy and delighted was her greatest responsibility.

The two lovers who were swept away by wave of emotions didn't realize that on there were countless runes appearing on the skin of both of their bodies. They moved and interlinked with each other,

finally combining to form a Runic Circle.

At this time, in the Little Garden.

Xue Wu Xia, Qian Qian and Luo Hua sat under the eaves and looked at the starry sky.

Suddenly, Xue Wu Xia's body jolted. Following that, Qian Qian and Luo Hua also felt something. Xue Wu Xia pulled her sleeves and realized that the rune that appeared after having the [Body Fusion] training with Yue Yang had slowly appeared again.

Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress' runes also floated onto their skin, as if it was responding to something.

"This... seems like Yue Yang succeeded!" Xue Wu Xia immediately stood up, looked up to the sky and mumbled. Then, she returned to her rooms to rest.

"Would our bodies respond whenever that fellow do bad things?" When Luo Hua City Mistress heard Xue Wu Xia's words, her face blushed red and she quickly returned to her rooms, in order to avoid Princess Qian Qian seeing her embarrassed face. However, when she walked past Princess Qian Qian, she quickly reached out and grabbed Princess Qian Qian's proud breasts. As Princess Qian Qian stared at her in shock, she quickly escaped back into her room and laughed, "No wonder Yue Yang always drooled when he look at you. The feeling is really good, haha!"

“If you want to play, just play with your own!” Princess Qian Qian was extremely furious. Her anger immediately fell onto Yue Yang again, “Damned pervert, you are so annoying!”

Chapter 273 – Passing On Of Knowledge

On the second day, Yue Yang woke up from the most comfortable night that he had ever slept.

He was filled with energy all over his body.

Other than the Yang Fire Ability and Yin Ice Ability in his body, there was another mysterious ability in his body that maintained the balance between fire and ice, allowing them to mix perfectly in his Dan Tian point. That mysterious energy was extremely tiny yet extremely powerful, able to move the Yang Fire Ability and Yin Ice Ability easily. It could move the two powers throughout his whole body at any point of time, strengthening Yue Yang's adaptability to the powers. It could also absorb the Heaven and Earth's pure energy slowly and stored it inside Yue Yang's Dan Tian, relentlessly improving his Fire and Ice Ability.

Yue Yang didn't understand. Did this mysterious ability appeared as a present for becoming adults with the sickly beauty?

Did he get the ability last night?

With regards to things he didn't understand, Yue Yang's method of dealing with it was to brush it aside.

When he opened his eyes, he discovered that the sickly beauty who was only draped with a piece of clothing was lying on top of him. She was observing his body as she took note of something in her book...

Yue Yang was speechless. He didn't know that she had this kind of hobby!

Yue Yang was about to tease her a little as he planned to push her beautiful body down again for a second round of expedition that was halted yesterday due to her lack of manpower for battle. His hands were embracing the sickly beauty's slender waist, but suddenly, to his surprise, he discovered that their bodies were filled with various Runes. No wonder the sickly beauty had taken out her book to take note of these Runes. She was a Runes fanatic after all.

"Don't move, I still haven't see it clearly." The sickly beauty stopped his impudent hand that was travelling up towards her beautiful mounds, and moved it down to her waist.

She lightly kissed him on the lips in order to appease him.

Then she continued to record the Runes.

Yue Yang's hand slid down and rubbed her butt, which was surprisingly elastic and bouncy.

The sickly beauty glared at him extremely cutely, but she didn't stop him.

If it were her last time, she would definitely stop him

But right now she was already his little wife...

Her snow-white hands lightly pressed against his chest, expressing her wish to continue observing the Runes on his body and turning his surging feelings down. She knew that he would definitely not agree if she continued to observe the Runes, hence she said, sort of cutely, “Scoundrel, I’m still sore over there... Who told you to be so rough last night? My waist is about to break, I can’t do it again now...” Seeing that Yue Yang’s expression was filled with regret, she hurriedly assured him with the gentleness of a wife, lightly kissing his lips, “Just let me rest a while. You don’t have to be in such a hurry to do it again!”

As she finished her words, she stuck out her tongue and licked his lips, coaxing him as she pushed him back down, “You didn’t sleep enough last night, go and sleep again.”

Although Yue Yang wasn’t tired, he wanted to get a sense of the new mysterious ability in his body.

He closed his eyes as the sickly beauty continued to copy the Runes on his body down onto her notebook. He silently tried to unleash the mysterious ability in his Dan Tian point, closely sensing it.

This kind of mysterious ability might have been awakened from his own body, or was obtained from the sickly beauty’s body. Yue Yang couldn’t sense the origin of this ability yet as of now, but he knew that it maintained the harmony of his body and was a great advantage to his body. Furthermore, the energy was extremely pure, but a little different from Innate Qi. Innate Qi wouldn’t be

able to balance the two kinds of opposing abilities, it was a lone existence, unique and unmatched. This kind of mysterious energy could easily amalgamate the two opposing abilities and even split them back into two again. It controlled them with a smooth and gentle movement, moving them.

The mysterious ability's greatest difference was that it was completely a passive skill with no attacking capabilities at all.

It only improved his body's abilities.

Of course, this kind of supporting skill was also extremely formidable in a way. Yue Yang could feel that if he could develop this mysterious ability even more, his combat power will increase by multiple fold.

Yue Yang closed his eyes as he touched the sickly beauty's Dan Tian point.

The sickly beauty thought he was being naughty and wanted to fan her flames of desire. She slapped his hands lightly, grabbed it and kissed it a little, before putting his hand on her waist once again, telling him to hug her and sleep. Although it was only for a few seconds, Yue Yang could clearly feel that there was also the mysterious ability inside the sickly beauty's body. It was just that the mysterious ability inside her was still very weak, almost non-existent, hence she wasn't able to feel it.

With regards to this, Yue Yang had a sudden realization.

This might just be the Husband-and-wife Realm [Body Fusion] that the pitiful guy's mother had said existed during the ancient times.

The pitiful guy's mother didn't record any information with regards to this ability.

Maybe she did, but Yue Yang's Level 4 Divine Vision wasn't able to fully see the information, hence he always didn't understand it. When Yue Yang finally sensed that the sickly beauty also had the ability in her body, he realized that he had accidentally mastered the higher realm of [Body Fusion] and that was [Double Body Fusion].

According to the pitiful guy's mother's records, Yue Yang shouldn't be able to reach it this fast.

Yue Yang suspected that he could master it so quickly because he was an Innate Ranker, or maybe because he had mastered the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. Maybe it was because the combination of the sickly beauty's and his bodies were so perfect that they naturally mastered the [Double Body Fusion].

With this thought, Yue Yang's imagination started to run wild.

Having [Double Body Fusion] with the sickly beauty allowed him to acquire a mysterious ability. What would happen if he tried cultivating [Double Body Fusion] with Luo Hua, Qian Qian, Wu Xia and the others.

If he continued to train with them, would he be able to develop this mysterious ability?

If the answer was yes, then wouldn't he be able to live a blissful sexual life with the three of them and still train to be stronger each time? Most importantly, if he had this excuse, it would be perfectly justifiable for them to train [Double Body Fusion] with him too, they wouldn't feel so awkward doing it. Suddenly, Yue Yang had the urge to flip through the pitiful guy's mother's diary. Seems like there were still some secrets hidden inside. Last time his Level 4 Divine Vision might not be able to see through it, but now that it had levelled up to Level 5, with the addition of the Heaven Eyes ability that could be combined with Divine Vision to become Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he should be able to see through more hidden secrets.

When Yue Yang thought about this, he immediately turned around and stood up.

This made the sickly beauty jumped in shock.

At first she thought he couldn't hold it anymore, so she hit him shyly, "Let's do it at night, I'm really still sore over there!"

When she saw him taking out a diary from his Lich Ring, she realized that he only wanted to read the diary, and not her. Immediately, she blushed a little, feeling a little guilty for her misunderstanding. The sickly beauty kissed Yue Yang lightly as she reached out and caressed his stomach. She had actually wanted to go further down and touch his dragon spear to soothe his desire, but in the end, due to her embarrassment, she shifted her hands to

his chest instead, “Let me finish copying the Runes first... they are slowly disappearing. I’ll help you later on...”

Although Yue Yang’s desire was great, he wasn’t really in a hurry to want her immediately.

In any case, her body was weaker than any normal girl’s, and she just lost her virginity. If he forced her to do it now, he would only injure her body.

He gave her a smile and hugged her body. Then, he continued to read the diary and activated his Innate Qi. With Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he moved one step further in searching the secret. The sickly beauty didn’t know what kind of secret was hidden in that diary, but she didn’t ask Yue Yang about his private matters.

Once again concentrating on copying the runes, every time she finished copying a rune, she would happily kiss Yue Yang’s body, showing her joy.

In order to search through the hidden secrets inside the diary, Yue Yang had even slightly released his Innate Level 1 power.

Luckily he had now perfectly mastered the Yin Ability.

Otherwise, he could probably blast away the quilt covering their bodies just by slightly releasing his Innate Qi.

Yue Yang condensed the Innate Qi into a sphere using his Water

Ability, then turned it into a ribbon and twined it around his hands. He then touched the pitiful guy's mother's diary with his hands that was wrapped in Innate Qi. Normally, if he did this last time, he wouldn't succeed because the Innate Qi would destroy the diary when it touched it... However, now that Yue Yang had managed to control his own Innate Qi, he was able to make it as light as wind and as gentle as water.

Indeed, this method worked well. Seems like this diary needed innate Qi to be opened!

Yue Yang was overjoyed.

Suddenly, there was a beautiful voice in his mind that resounded, "My precious darling, if you can listen to mom's voice, you must have already become an Innate Ranker. Mom is really happy for you, my darling. Mom has a lot of things to tell you. I want to tell you a lot of hidden secrets that I knew and pass on all the knowledge I have uncovered to you. However, there's a limited memory in this diary, so mom couldn't tell you everything... Darling, my son, please forgive mom. Mom is not a good mother, I couldn't give you anything in this world, nor the emotional support that you needed. Compared to Ah Xian, I really failed as a mother... i don't know how you managed to rise into the Innate realm, but I know that you must have worked hard, you must have spent so much effort to reach it. Mom is really proud of you."

"I really wished I could see how you look after becoming an Innate. Maybe you have become taller than mom right now, or maybe you have gotten married or fathered a son."

“My darling, maybe you think that Innates are the highest realm that a human can reach. However, mom wants to tell you that the answer is no. Innate is only the front door or a stepping stone to a much higher realm that humans could reach...”

“When you finally reach that higher realm, you would understand what is life actually. You would be an existence that not even gods could be. In the extreme point, you will understand all the complexity and secrets of life that would not be explainable in words, not even with a million of words. What mom has acquired, the knowledge that I have understood, is simply a thousandth of everything, or maybe less than that. However, my son, I hope you could continue to move forward in the path that mom had walked before, and search for more knowledge, walk a greater distance than me... Son, mom really miss you, I miss you every single day. However, regretfully, i can't live together with you... Ah Xian would be a greater mother to you than me. With her taking care of you, I feel very assured... My darling, mom can't give you anything, I can only tell you the knowledge that I have learnt and hope that it will help you in some way!”

Countless of knowledge suddenly poured into Yue Yang's mind.

If it were last time, he would definitely not be able to take it.

But after breaking through the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, his powers had advanced by leaps and bounds. The amount of knowledge that Yue Yang could store had also expanded. He was able to accommodate much more knowledge without a problem. Although he wasn't able to organize and fully comprehend everything, he was able to store them. Yue Yang

could slowly understand it later on.

The pitiful guy's mother wanted to pass on all her knowledge to her son. Who would have known that she would pass it on to Yue Yang, the guy from another world instead?

Of course, in Yue Yang's heart, he saw her as his mother.

Just like how Yue Yang viewed Fourth Mother as his other mother... After acquiring the knowledge, Yue Yang immediately turned into a whole new person.

The runes that he couldn't understand initially, he could slowly understand the meaning behind them.

As for the record of the Double Body Fusion skill in the diary that wasn't complete, Yue Yang could finally understand it completely. With the addition of Yue Yang's Innate Invisible Sword Qi, an Innate-ranked skill, and his unrivalled comprehending ability, he became even more knowledgeable about Double Body Fusion. He became more experienced, so much that he could even enhance the power of Double Body Fusion...

"Thank you mother!" Yue Yang forced himself to calm down, and beat down the impulse of jumping up and down and cheering out loud to the sky. He took a deep breath and sincerely thanked the mother who had passed on her knowledge to him, his voice a little shaky.

Chapter 274 – A Man Is The Most Handsome When He Is Seriously Working Hard

After getting the knowledge that the pitiful guy's mother had passed on to him, Yue Yang felt like his whole mind had been enlightened.

He was just like a student, who didn't know anything at first and was drowned in the knowledge of primary, secondary, high school, university or even higher. Although he wasn't able to fully digest it, at least he was already enlightened. As long as he had enough time, he would be able to absorb all the knowledge and become a real university student. That was Yue Yang's current situation.

Beasts, combat skills, runes, scope, knowledge, secrets... In short, every single thing was laid before his eyes, dazzling him and confusing him. He was almost drowned in the tsunami-like wave of knowledge.

“What happened to you?” The sickly beauty found out that Yue Yang's expression became strange. She felt like there was a strange kind of light in his face.

“From this diary, I received the knowledge that my mother has passed on to me.” Yue yang shamelessly called the pitiful guy's mother as his own mom.

However, he must first fix this first.

Before the fake Yue Qiu slandered him for being a fake Yue Yang, Yue Yang obviously had to tread carefully. He would definitely not let the women he loved suspect him.

Last time, he didn't have the chance to retaliate, but with the passing on of knowledge from the diary, Yue Yang wanted to hint to the girls that he was unmistakably the third young master of the Yue Clan. This was because he was able to acquire the knowledge that the pitiful guy's mother had passed on.

With this argument, no matter what kind of move the fake Yue Qiu would throw at him, these girls would definitely not believe him.

When Xue Wu Xia knew that he had acquired the pitiful guy's mother's passing on of knowledge, he believed that she would be very happy.

Yue Yang could feel that Xue Wu Xia did not care about whether he was fake or real, nor did she try to closely investigate the truth. But if he could inherit his mother's knowledge, this proved that the dark thoughts that Xue Wu Xia had suspected from the Virgo Temple was wrong. She would obviously feel more comfortable with this.

"Really? That's great!" The sickly beauty was extremely delighted. There was nothing that could make the sickly beauty happier other than gaining more knowledge.

In the sickly beauty's mind, even mountains of gold and silver

couldn't compare to the value of a book.

If Yue Yang had gotten anything else, she wouldn't be so excited.

This was actually the first time Yue Yang had seen the sickly beauty have such an expression. Her small face was actually scarlet from her extreme excitement, and her eyes seemed to radiate a wild glow of joy. She was so happy that she couldn't help but kiss his face multiple times with her cherry lips while she merrily cheered.

He felt a surge of happiness in his heart, and decided to give her a nicer surprise. "Wu Hen, while there is still no way to absorb even 1% of the knowledge I inherited from Mom, I seem to be able to decipher Runes now! For example, this Rune on my arm should mean 'Vitality'. Obviously, the meanings and variation behind this Rune are plentiful. Using just the word 'Vitality' to describe it is nowhere near enough. If 'Vitality' and 'Life' Runes are combined, then it would transform into 'Youth Restoration'; if combined with 'Battle', then it transforms into 'Plentiful Endurance'; if combined with 'Sweet Dew', it would become 'Curing Sickness'..."

"Wow!" The sickly beauty euphorically looked at Yue Yang, almost about to go insane with happiness.

She was a Rune fanatic.

She had always been one since she was young.

For the sake of Runes, she'd even continuously tested on her own body, to the point that her body was finally unable to bear it and she had almost lost her life.

Now that she'd heard that Yue Yang could understand the Runes, she was so excited that her cheeks were practically streaming with tears.

She embraced his arm, and repeatedly asked him to dispel her doubts, like a dehydrated person about to die that had just received a bottle of clear and fresh spring water!

“Runes are also called God's Language, as said inside the knowledge I had inherited. Mom also didn't know who created them at first, she only segregated them into several categories. One is “Ancient Runes”, these are what we are seeing right now. There is a total of 72 Ancient Runes, every single one expressing different meanings from the other. When combined, there are countless permutation that could be used. Another kind is the “Immemorial Runes”. There are a total of 36 Runes, and each of them are extremely rare. It would be extremely difficult for us to see. The Immemorial Runes are extremely strong. Right, the [World Exterminating Wheel] is created with an Immemorial Rune as the foundation... There is also another type of runes that are slightly weaker, they are called “Heaven Runes”. It was said that these runes originated from the Heaven Realm. Although its power is incomparable to the Ancient Runes, let alone Immemorial Runes, it is still extremely powerful to us, humans of the Soaring Dragon Continent. The Silver Runes that you have been researching on is one of the Heaven Runes. Different from the Ancient Runes and the Immemorial Runes, the Heaven Runes are bound to a limitation, that's why your body has been affected. The last type of

rune is “Dwarf Rune”. This Rune is actually not a type of summoning runes like the first two, it could only be used externally by engraving it in a metal object or an article. Furthermore, its effects are extremely weak... Not many people in the Soaring Dragon Continent knew about this, but the puppets that the Yue Clan had created was built by one kind of Dwarf Rune. According to the knowledge that was passed on to me by mother, right now, forget about the Soaring Dragon Continent, even in the numerous districts in the Tong Tian Tower, only a small number of people could use the Dwarf Runes... This kind of Dwarf Runes are actually a subdivision of Heaven Rune, but it had declined in use in the Soaring Dragon Continent for a very long time. Only the dwarves in the “Outer Realm” still used these runes to the present day. Hence, it was named the “Dwarf Runes”.

“So it was like that...” The sickly beauty felt intoxicated after hearing this.

“The Runes are a type of special summoning art. Like summoning beasts, each person has a limit to their abilities.” Yue Yang’s knowledge was like an unceasing torrent waves as he explained to the sickly beauty.

“You mean to say that there are too many Runes on my body, and I have reached more than full capacity?” The sickly beauty caught the main point of this issue.

“That’s part of the reason. The most important thing is that the Heaven Rune is a type of flawed Rune. It cannot compare to the Ancient Rune, let alone the Immemorial Rune. It has a large recoil damage effect on the user. Although you studied the Heaven Rune

and your body was able to gain things from it, you also pretty much paid the cost with your life.” Yue Yang mainly said this to encourage her not to focus her research on the “Heaven Rune” so that her body wouldn’t sustain any more harm.

大甜。

“Yes, I’ll be careful.” The sickly beauty obviously understood the intent behind his words. Seeing how tense he was for her sake, a sweet feeling rose in her heart.

“It’s a pity that although I inherited the knowledge, my understanding of the Runes still isn’t enough.” Yue Yang sighed. He had obtained a mountain of treasures, as well as the key to open it, but his power alone wasn’t enough to move such a large mountain.

It was like learning a language. He could read and write every word, but he had no way of writing out an entire essay.

Being able to understand the Runes didn’t mean he could use them.

Of course, Yue Yang still hadn’t completely absorbed the knowledge inherited from the pitiful guy’s mother. After he had digested it all, he’d definitely be able to use the Runes. Right now, he could only feel impatience, which was why he had sighed.

The sickly beauty hurriedly assured him.

She knew that being able to gain this passed down knowledge was already the greatest fortune.

In comparison, she had personally spent so many years to research it, yet gained nothing. That could only be called a failure...

“Don’t worry, we already have a certain amount of understanding about Runes. We no longer have to go around, unable to see the whole picture. As long as we have time, we’ll definitely be able to express its true power.” The sickly beauty held Yue Yang in her arms, her soft and silky body sticking to him as she lightly kissed his lips, calming him down.

“Come, let’s research a little. This, let’s start by the easiest one, the Dwarf Runes!” Yue Yang remembered that the Elder Yue Hai had ever asked Fourth Mother to give Yue Yang a Puppet Encyclopedia. At that time, he didn’t care about it, because the Puppet Encyclopedia could only show the complex puppet manufacturing and creation methods that made Yue Yang’s head spin. Hence he didn’t research it very much. However, after seeing it once again, aih... this was practically primary-school level!

The process of puppet creation would be extremely complex for a warrior that did not have related knowledge to this.

However, for Yue Yang who had received his mother’s inherited knowledge, it was simply a piece of cake.

Even though Yue Yang had never created one before, even when

he was looking at an unknown beast, he had immediately understood with one look. Ah, turns out this thing works this way... Just like a university student looking at a primary school question, even though it had many different variation, it was still very easy to understand.

In the Puppet Encyclopedia, the most mysterious and difficult Rune engravement was actually the easiest for Yue Yang.

This was even easier than the mantra that Yue Yang used to memorise when he was young, “one times one equals one, one times two equals two... lastly nine times nine equals eighty-one”. Yue Yang could easily understand the meaning behind each and every one of the Dwarf Runes. With one look, he was able to understand what kind of effect they would have when one rune was combined with another. He didn’t need to memorise them one by one like how the Yue Clan Elders had been doing.

In the Puppet Encyclopedia, Yue Yang had even spotted a dozen over mistakes.

The only thing that surprised Yue Yang was that in the combinations of runes that the Yue Clan Elders had copied from “Ghost Genius Yue Gong”, none of them were copied wrongly.

Yue Yang summoned the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice once again and clasped them in his hands. With Heaven eyes Divine Vision, he was shocked to see what he saw.

In each of the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice’s heart, the Runes

installed were absolutely not the Dwarf Runes, the only type of Runes that the Yue Clan could use. Instead, it was an Ancient Rune! In each of the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice's body and four limbs, there were even a few Heaven Runes that were combined with each other...

What an exquisite beast!

This Ghost Genius Yue Gong was indeed an extremely extraordinary fellow!

Only then did Yue Yang finally see the truth. He was completely shocked by the way the Ghost Genius Yue Gong had created this Quintet Golden Puppet Mice. He thought, no wonder Yue Gong could become one of the Yue Clan's Three Renaissance Heroes. With the knowledge he had grasped, if they could use it well, forget about reviving the Yue Clan, they could even improve the strength of the whole Da Xia Kingdom, of the whole Soaring Dragon Continent. It was a pity that the Ghost Genius Yue Gong died early. Otherwise he would definitely be a prominent character that would be praised even thousands of years after his death!

The common folks were not wrong in respecting Yue Gong as one of the two saints.

Ghost Genius Yue Gong, he was definitely worthy of the "Saint" title.

Compared to Yue Yang who had inherited the knowledge, the sickly beauty still couldn't understand the Runes fully even after

looking at it strenuously. Yue Yang continued to flip the pages instead of waiting for her.

However, she was at ease. As long as her husband could grasp all these mysterious summoning runes, she was fine with anything. She could slowly learn from him, she was not in a rush.

“Let’s take a look at your notes!” After he finished looking through the Puppet Grimoire, Yue Yang had a lot of thoughts in his mind. He wanted to put it into practice, but he didn’t have the required materials right now, otherwise he would have created a puppet as an experiment. He suddenly remembered the research that the sickly beauty had done. Overjoyed, he decided to take a look at the Heaven Runes, which were slightly more difficult.

“Here.” The sickly beauty happily gave her notes that she usually treasured a lot to Yue Yang. Her eyes were glistening brightly as she watched Yue Yang looking through her notes seriously.

What kind of man is the most charming?

Some women might like brave warriors who fought in bloody wars, thinking that generals who had succeeded in many battles were the most handsome.

Some women might like warriors who fought Giant Dragons. They thought these warriors had no fear at all. A warrior who dared to slay dragons was the most handsome and heroic.

In this world, there are people who liked princes who had high status. There are people who liked men who are courteous and elegant. There were even people who liked the rough and rowdy mercenaries... But in the sickly beauty's heart, she liked a scholar with a wide and vast library of knowledge instead. For example, she thought that the figure of Yue Yang, who had inherited the knowledge from his mother, studying the runes seriously with all of his heart, was the most handsome and attractive.

A man is the most handsome when he is seriously working hard.... The sickly beauty didn't remember when, but she had read that quote from a book before.

Right now, she felt that the quote was extremely true.

Chapter 275 – Platinum-Ranked Level 5, World Destroying Demon Wolf

Three days later.

Yue Yang brought the sickly beauty back to the Little Flower Garden. Right now, it wasn't the time for them to experience their two people world. There was still a huge load of things that Yue Yang needed to do.

At first, Princess Qian Qian and the others didn't thought that Yue Yang would return so quickly. They even thought that this brat would enjoy his life for a week before returning. Of course, that was not the main point. The main point was that when Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress saw the sickly beauty's appearance, they seemed to be looking out for something. Xue Wu Xia and Yue Bing welcomed them back warmly. One welcomed her cousin who had acquired a new life while the other threw herself into her brother's arms.

The sickly beauty was very wifely. After becoming Yue Yang's wife, even after coming to the manor in the Little Flower Garden, she still sat beside him.

With regards to the question "Did it hurt?" that Luo Hua City Mistress whispered, she simply smiled but didn't reply.

Princess Qian Qian thought that it would be weird if it was not painful!

Princess Qian Qian had already seen Yue Yang's little brother anyway. If such a monster enter her body, wouldn't she die of pain...

However, Princess Qian Qian was quite surprised that the sickly beauty's weak and fragile body was able to endure it. Furthermore, she saw that the sickly beauty's face was emitting radiance. Her complexion was not pale anymore, instead, she radiated with a rosy flush that was both gentle and refined. She exuded an indescribable beauty and mystery.

Princess Qian Qian thought that the sickly beauty would be injured because of Yue Yang, and would need to be carried back. She thought she would need a few months of bed rest.

But right now, not only has the sickly beauty's body turned out for the better, it was even shining with a bright radiance. It really made Princess Qian Qian wonder in confusement, could it be that being pushed down by Yue Yang had a beautifying effect?

"Yue Yang has already mastered the [Double Body Fusion]." Xue Wu Xia wasn't surprised at the sickly beauty's words. Since the sickly beauty had already done the [Double Body Fusion], with Yue Yang's genius talent in mastering skills, it wasn't strange that he had already mastered [Double Body Fusion] by now.

However, the sickly beauty's next words had thoroughly shocked Xue Wu Xia.

The sickly beauty had said, “He has also mastered Rune Powers...”

Yue Yang quickly supplied an additional explanation, “I don’t, I only mastered a part of it. Roughly said, I have mastered 10% of the Heaven Runes, 1% of the Ancient Runes and 0.1% of the Immemorial Runes. As for Dwarf Runes, it’s not really counted as a summoning rune, so there’s no use for it even though you have mastered 100% of it.”

He then explained the truth about Runes to Princess Qian Qian and the others, and also about the knowledge inheritance he had gotten from his mother.

Qian Qian, Luo Hua and the others were completely shocked.

Yue Yu was extremely touched when she heard it, “Xiao San managed to receive Aunt’s knowledge inheritance, this must be blessings from the heavens and our Yue Clan ancestors!”

Having the power of mastering Ancient Runes, even just 1% of it, was already an extremely destructive power... Furthermore, with the passing of time, Yue Yang would be able to absorb more and more knowledge. He would still be able to continue understanding and improving the Runes.

The information about Ancient Runes was extremely deep, hence it was more difficult to grasp. As for Immemorial Runes, it was needless to say. Yue Yang could only feel a small portion of the window to the knowledge.

Right now, Yue Yang wanted to focus on Heaven Runes.

In those three days, after Yue Yang and the sickly beauty was enlightened with their research, Yue Yang had mastered around 10% of the heaven Runes. The sickly beauty, on the other hand, mastered much lesser than Yue Yang. Although she had researched for a long time, she still couldn't comprehend them. She only managed to master around 1% of the knowledge. When they returned to the Little Flower Garden, she shared with Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the other girls the fruits of their labour. With all of them researching and studying altogether, sharing their knowledges, their learning speed became much faster. Each person learned new information in a different way after all. Maybe in some cases, Princess Qian Qian and the others would be able to do it and understand it better.

In order to strengthen her persuasive power, the sickly beauty summoned her Crystal Armor Beast.

In order to allow the sickly beauty's body to recover completely, Yue Yang had used a lot of Innate Qi to reorganize the Heaven Runes on her body.

Of course, he couldn't completely change everything in just a short time. However, Yue Yang didn't have to worry because it was only a matter of time. Everytime he reorganized the Heaven Runes inside her body in the correct arrangement, her body would change drastically.

The only problem was breaking up the Heaven Runes inside her body. Yue Yang would need to spend quite a lot of work on that.

The sickly beauty, whose Runes had been re-arranged and finally truly learned Heaven Runes, experienced a great increase in her powers.

When Qian Qian, Luo Hua, Yue Yu, Yi Nan and Yue Bing saw the Beast Armor that the sickly beauty had summoned, not only has the Crystal Armor 100% complete, her whole body had also become as transparent as a crystal... She looked like a crystal beauty.

Even after removing her crystal armour, Princess Qian Qian couldn't injure the sickly beauty when she tried to slash her arms with a dagger.

The sickly beauty said that because she wasn't an expert in combat skills, she could only showcase thirty percent of her powers. If it were Princess Qian Qian or Luo Hua City Mistress who had the Heaven Runes on her body instead, they would definitely be much stronger than her. When she said this, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress both became very excited. Other than hoping to improve their combat capabilities, they also envy the sickly beauty's crystal-like body.

"Since it is helpful to increase our combat abilities, i accept it!" Princess Qian Qian was not very interested in researching Runes, but she couldn't reject the possibility of increasing her combat abilities.

She didn't have to train anyway, she only needed to allow Yue Yang to try the Heaven Runes on her body.

With regards to whether Yue Yang would take advantage of her body when he does that or not, she decided to ignore it.

Heaven Runes were similar to beast summons.

It was just that it was not a living organism, it could only help its master but it didn't have any awareness... It could loosely be considered as special-type summon beast, but it didn't need to take up a space in the summoning grimoire.

When the sickly beauty was teaching the knowledge that she knew to Qian Qian, Luo Hua, Yi Nan, Yue Yu and Yue Bing, Xue Wu Xia pulled Yue Yang to the side and asked some questions about the sickly beauty. In the end, other than slightly praising Yue Yang for successfully accomplishing his attack, she sighed slowly, "My older cousin is extremely reserved last time. Even if you want to be good to her, it's too late for you to give her an unforgettable romance. But she would definitely be a good wife to you, be good to her in the future, okay! Love need not be stormy and passionate, it can also be smoothly flowing like an endless flow of water."

Yue Yang was slightly speechless, was she asking him to date Wu Hen after marriage?

But when he thought about it again, he felt that what Xue Wu Xia said made sense. The sickly beauty had a passive character, it

would be more suitable for her to date after getting married.

As he continued to think, he thought about how Wu Xia had spent so much effort for her and the sickly beauty. He couldn't help but feel extremely moved as he reached out his hands and pulled Xue Wu Xia towards him, hugging her tightly in his arms.

“...” Xue Wu Xia didn't reject him, but she gave him a look of rebuke.

Time passed quickly and the sickly beauty continued to pass on the knowledge of Heaven Runes that she learnt from Yue Yang to Princess Qian Qian and the others.

On the other hand, Yue Yang experimented creating a puppet beast with the materials that Xue Wu Xia got from outside.

Hui Tai Lang was still sleeping in the courtyard, snoring away.

That day, the old fox suddenly came running in a miserable state, as if there were a hundred hungry wolves chasing him from behind. It was only until he had teleported to the entrance of Little Flower Garden, saw Yue Yang and the others, that he finally sighed a breath of relief. “That's good. Brat, fortunately you didn't come out. Otherwise the sky will probably collapse! What did you say? You were about to storm into Yue Clan Castle? Why do you have to seek death when you can live your days happily here? Are you that bored of your life?”

Yue Yang was extremely speechless when he heard that. Seems like the old fox had learnt Fatty Hai's mannerisms and sayings.

Why do they have to pick up all the internet slangs that he had used in passing and blew it out of proportion?

He had not managed to speak before he was assaulted with the continuous torrents of the old fox's walking stick.

The old fox was definitely trying to return some personal grudge...

It had been difficult for him to nurture his precious daughter. However, before he managed to hear her call him daddy for a few times, Yue Yang had already snatched her away. The worst thing was that Yue Yang had never asked his permission nor gave them betrothal gifts, his precious daughter was given away to Yue Yang just like that. If Xue Wu Xia had not told him, he would even still be in the dark, unaware that his daughter had been ravished by this wolf, although he was her father.

In this kind of situation, how could he not be furious?

“Dammit, I’ll get angry if you hit me any more than this!” Yue Yang grab hold of the walking stick with one hand and the old fox’s collar with his other hand. His eyes glared at the old fox’s as he said, “Your daughter is about to die, what I did, I did it to save her, you understand? Furthermore, I like her and she likes me too. This is a union of love! Why are you causing trouble now?”

“Even if it’s a union of love, I still have to beat you up. You think it’s easy for me to have a daughter?” The old fox roared.

Betrothal gifts weren’t given, guests weren’t invited, even he as her father didn’t know about it.

This brat should be thankful that he didn’t fight him to death.

The sickly beauty suddenly shouted in alarm and ran forward, blocking right in front of Yue Yang. She seemed a little awkward and embarrassed as she speak softly, “What are you doing, it’s not his fault... Go in quickly, don’t be an embarrassment in front of the others. I’ll explain to you slowly inside!”

Yue Yang took the opportunity to wink at the old fox, telling him that he shouldn’t be jealous of him. Daughters would eventually marry and leave with their husbands sooner or later.

The old fox cried river of tears in his heart.

When he finally sat down inside and [drunk the tea](#) that the sickly beauty and Yue Yang had served to him, the old fox finally felt much better.

(Shiro: Chinese tradition – bride and groom will serve tea to their elders during marriage ceremony)

Furthermore, Princess Qian Qian and the others were all there. As the elder, he also found it embarrassing to be throwing a tantrum in front of them. After taking the cup of tea, the old fox

acted old and wise as he asked Yue Yang, “Stinky brat, what are you busy with these days? The whole courtyard is filled with broken stuff, don’t tell me you are trying to create a puppet beast? Let me tell you, you should give up quickly. You are not made for this stuff. You might be amongst the average in mastering combat skills, but with regards to creating puppet beasts... brat, do you even know what “Runes” are?”

The old fox thought that Yue Yang had learnt a little Rune from his daughter and wanted to create a puppet beast. He really wanted to mock and laugh at him in his heart.

This brat was usually such a genius, it was very rare to have a chance to mock him. He must mock him no matter what!

Furthermore, he was currently his father-in-law, he must definitely give him an earful!

At first, the old fox’s smile carried a little smugness.

However, Yue Bing, who could not accept her brother getting misunderstood, immediately retorted. Her words almost made the old fox lose face and could not face the world anymore. Only then did the old fox understand that he had made a mistake. Turns out this brat had acquired the knowledge that his mother had passed on to him and had become super strong right now. He was immediately speechless.

“Then what kind of beasts have you created? Seems like it’s a humanoid puppet beast?” The old fox cough a little and changed

the topic.

“I failed. I actually wanted to create a battle-type puppet, but who would know when I finished, it could only become a puppet that could only do menial work. When I created another, it ended up the same.” Yue Yang had actually wanted to create an extremely strong puppet beast. He had high ambitions, he wanted to create at least a Gold-ranked Level 6 beast and above. However, he lacked the materials and was unable to fulfil the requirements. When it was finally finished, Yue Yang discovered that it was only a Bronze-ranked Level 6 Beast. Yue Yang must as well modify it to become a worker beast to help him do his menial work, rather than taking it out to fight.

“Haha, I knew it would end up that way!” The old fox laughed until tears flowed from his eyes.

“No, that’s not right. Brother’s puppet is extremely strong, it’s just that it lacked the materials.” Yue Bing hurriedly helped her brother to explain.

Hearing Yue Bing’s explanation, the old fox looked at Yue yang and mumbled, “This fool...”

Letting a Bronze-ranked level 6 Puppet Beast to do menial work, that was a luxury that not even emperors could afford. A Bronze-ranked Level 6 Puppet Beast, even the Yue Clan Castle only had a few of them. This brat had actually said that he would only use it for menial work. The old fox was really speechless.

The old fox ran out the courtyard to see the puppet beast, and discovered that Yue Yang's puppet beast was indeed very good.

Clicking his tongue and praising Yue Yang, he asked, "These two puppet beasts are your first creations, you should keep them well for keepsake. Did you think of a name? Otherwise, do you want me to make use of my profound mind and nimble brain to think of one for you?"

Yue Yang didn't need to spend a lot of effort to name his beast.

The old fox asked him what are the names.

Yue Yang calmly replied, "The left one will be called Megatron, the right one is Optimus Prime."

When he said that, the old fox almost spit out his saliva. After coughing for a long while, he finally smiled weakly, "Did you think that those were suitable names for puppets that will do menial work? Forget it, how about this unfinished puppet? What are you going to call it?"

Yue Yang replied again with an extremely serious expression, "I am thinking of naming this Ultraman, I made it especially to beat up small monsters."

The old fox's head smashed right onto the ground.

Although Yue Yang who was detached from the outside world

had failed making Gold-ranked Level 6 puppet beasts miserably and that he only managed to acquire two Bronze-ranked Level 6 puppet beast, the old fox didn't belittle him. He must have the best materials in order to create a Gold-ranked Level 6 puppet beasts. Because he was too abnormal, everything he did was different from the others.

At first, the old fox was prepared to persuade Yue Yang to stay at the Little Flower Garden for a while more. He didn't want Yue yang to fight against the fake Yue Qiu yet.

This was because the fake Yue Qiu had at least a few Innate Rankers backing him up from behind the scenes. He also had the Thousand Goblins Sect, the Green Summit Sect and Zi Jin Kingdom's support. As for whether the Demonic Palace, the Demon Abyss or the Fallen Eastern Goblin Tribe Members were supporting him, the old fox couldn't be too sure.

In this kind of situation, he felt that it would be best if Yue Yang didn't open fire. He should wait for Elder Yue hai and Jun Wu You to come back first.

However, Yue Yang thought that now was the best time for attack.

When Elder Yue Hai and the others returned, they might be able to see through something wrong with Yue Yang. Hence, Yue Yang thought that he must eliminate the fake Yue Qiu before they come back. He was a fake one anyway, let's see who would emerge as the victor in a fight between impostor and another impostor. He shall see who had more capabilities.

Yue Yang didn't set off immediately because he was waiting for Hui Tai Lang to awaken from his sleep.

Hui Tai Lang was his good helping hand, Yue Yang would definitely bring it along.

In this upcoming battle, he might just be able to kill another two Innates. If Hui Tai Lang ate them, maybe he could even evolve to become the World Destroying Demon Wolf, which was much stronger than innate-rank!

After another day, Hui Tai Lang finally awakened.

It had become Platinum-ranked Level 5 World Destroying Demon Wolf... When it woke up, it opened its eyes widely, and its body was immediately engulfed in a pillar of Hell Flame that rose high up to the sky, almost 20 metres tall. Its aura that was as terrifying as a Demon King's was as strong as a hurricane, blasting off as a shock wave, spreading outwards in a circle. Even at the edge of a 5 km radius, one could still clearly feel its mighty aura. Its thunderous roar that could was even mightier than thunder reverberated through the air!

"It hasn't reached the limits of its potential yet. This fellow would definitely rise to diamond-ranked sooner or later!" The old fox was extremely shocked by the amount of energy inside Hui Tai Lang's body.

"Stupid dog, you are scaring Bing-er! I'll slaughter you and roast

your dog meat!” Yue Yang bestowed Hui Tai Lang with a kick.

“Wang!” Hui Tai Lang was extremely proud of itself at first, but when it heard Yue Yang, it hurriedly restrained its aura and pretended to be a Bronze-ranked Level 3 Iron-backed Demon Wolf. It then wagged its tail and hopped towards Yue Bing, showing that it was a loyal and obedient dog that would never scare its master.

“Time to go, our goal is the Yue Clan Castle!”

Under Yue Yang’s tutelage for these period of time, Princess Qian Qian’s strength had increased by leaps and bounds. She was kind of eager to test it out on her enemies and see how far has she improved. She was not the only one who thought that way. Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan and Yue Bing were also burning brightly with fighting spirit.

Of course, the person with the deadliest killing intent and fighting spirit was Yue Yang.

He punched his fist into the air and shouted, “Let’s go!”

Chapter 276 – Pursuit

Yue Clan Village.

The current Yue Clan Village was completely different than last time.

After being wrecked by the numerous experts from Xue Clan, although it had been rebuilt later on, due to Elder Yue Hai being taken hostage and the substitute Clan Leader Yue Shan running away, the new substitute Clan Leader Yue Qiu who had taken control had ordered the Yue Clan Village to be built into a defensive fort. The previously level ground had been barricaded with walls. The walls were much shorter than Castle walls but had just about the same thickness. The walls were made up of of a mud layer on the outside, a brick layer in the middle and a layer of wood right inside. As it had only been built not long ago, the wall wasn't very stable at the moment. There were some places that even required huge pillars of wood for support in order to bear the weight of the guards patrolling back and forth on top of the wall and not crack.

One of the Yue Clan branch family member, Lin Miao, and his cousin Lin Lei were doing day patrol duty together.

Under the blazing sun, they rounded the perimeter again and again.

Lin Miao had small guts, he did not dare to be like his cousin Lin Lei who had smuggled a bottle of beer under his clothes, drinking

it as they continued their patrol.

Although they obviously know no one would come, they still need to pretend they were patrolling.

The Second Butler who had just been promoted had an extremely bad temper. Furthermore, he was very petty and arrogant. He would often ride his fast horses and rode down from the Yue Clan Castle to the Yue Clan Village, intimidating and shouting at the branch families member like a fox in a tiger's fur.

(Shiro: Second Butler – Butler from the Second Branch of the family)

If the Second Butler caught them drinking beers when they should be patrolling, it wouldn't end by having their whole month's pay cut off, they would probably be caned too.

Of course, that dog's lackey would normally not check on them in this kind of blazing hot weather. His white and fat body that looked like a pig wouldn't be able to endure such torture.

“It was so much better last time, sigh!” Lin Miao sighed. Last time, before the Yue Clan Master was taken prisoner and the Substitute Clan Master escaping Yue Clan, although the status of the members of the Yue Clan branch families wasn't high, they didn't fall as low as slaves.

Even amongst the few young masters of the Yue Clan, other than Yue Bao who was a little irritating, the rest were still alright.

For example, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were only arrogant. Although it would be impossible to talk to them like equals, when they paid respects to them, Yue Tian and Yue Yan would still at least nod in response. The Fifth Young Master Yue Ting was more welcoming. He would greet each of them by their seniority warmly, without any arrogance at all. Sometimes, he would even introduce them to his friends when they saw him outside. These are the Lin Brothers from my branch family, these are the Three Shi Brothers, and so on...

As for that abnormal Third Young Master, although he killed people like they were ants, as long as they did not provoke him first, he would not meddle in other's business.

Last time he was mocked by a lot of the branch family members too, but he didn't pursue it further.

More accurately speaking, one might still be alive if they provoke this abnormal Third Young Master. If they provoked the Fourth Mistress that the abnormal Third Young Master respect the most or the Seventh Miss Yue Bing and Eighth Miss Yue Shuang that he adored the most, they would definitely be a goner.

The Third Young Master wouldn't discriminate against the people that he attacked. Forget about members of the branch families, he even dared to attack the previous substitute clan master Yue Shan.

That day, Lin Miao had personally watched the whole scene

when the Third Young Master was pulling the Fourth Mistress up to the Yue Clan Castle, his clothes soaked with blood.

At that time, Lin Miao was so scared that he almost peed his pants.

That was because he was one of the three guards that had attacked the Third Young Master at that time, and he was almost bitten to death by the Third Young Master's Iron-backed Demon Wolf. Fortunately he managed to dodge in a stroke of luck and wasn't attacked head-on. His colleague behind him, on the other hand, bore the brunt of the attack intended for him. Otherwise, Lin Miao's grave would probably be filled with weeds by now.

"Shh," Lin Lei humphed coldly, "The matters in the main family is not something you can discuss about!"

"There's no one here." Of course Lin Miao understood Lin Lei's logic, but he was in a bad mood, he didn't want to admit his mistake.

"Just do your patrol duty properly. If there's any problems, ring the alarm bell. If there are no problems, just continue to patrol. When it's time to switch, go home and rest. You can sleep or eat if you want. Otherwise you can find someone to vent your anger to. Why do you have so many complaints?" Lin Lei patted his younger cousin's shoulders and warned him, "If you want to live a long life, the only thing you need to do is to pretend you are blind, deaf and mute. Don't even dream that you can save the day! Even the Third Young Master who is an Innate didn't care about this matter, why are you, a Level 2 Braveman, putting your nose into other people's

business? Do you have the capabilities to back you up?”

“Brother Lie, I was wrong.” Lin Miao was afraid of this older cousin of his. It was not only because he was a Level 3 Hero, he also had a pretty sharp mind.

If Lin Lei had flaws, that would be his love for alcohol.

Actually, the current Substitute Clan Master Yue Qiu had thought of promoting him to Sentinel Captain of a hundred men team. However, he didn't do it because he hated the smell of alcohol from Lin Lei's mouth.

Lin Lei gulped another mouthful of beer and patted heavily on Lin Miao's shoulders again. “Let's go, we only need to do this for one more hour. Let's patrol one more round. Fucking weather, it's so freaking hot!”

However, Lin Miao was rooted on the spot. He was looking at a small black dot in a far distance, with a blank expression on his face.

Lin Lei was confused, what now?

He curiously turned around too and followed the direction that Lin Miao was looking at. When he see what his younger cousin saw, his expression immediately changed. The alcohol in his hands dropped to the ground and broke to pieces.

“E, Enemies! Quick, ring the alarm bell!” Lin Miao discovered that the black dot was very quickly approaching them. It turned out to be two giant humanoid puppet beasts that were pulling a luxurious horse cart with a rope. They ran with great strides towards the Yue Clan Castle. Although they weren’t very near yet, the killing intent they were emitting could even be clearly felt by Lin Miao, a Level 2 Braveman. Seemed like this was the person that the substitute clan master Yue Qiu was trying to defend against. He must ring the alarm bell now.

“Idiot, ring your head! Can’t you see that the Third Young Master has returned?” Lin Lei sent a flying kick and kicked at Lin Miao’s butt, easily knocking him to the ground.

“But isn’t the Third Young Master fake?” Lin Miao actually wished that the Third Young Master was the real deal.

But he didn’t have a choice.

Who would ever believe that there was a 20-year-old Innate?

Even if one started cultivating in one’s mother’s womb, one wouldn’t be able to become an Innate in twenty years. If people said that the Third Young Master was fake, it was said with a valid and logical reason. No matter how much of a genius one was, being able to reach Level 6 Elder at 20 years old was already a frightening existence. The Third Young Master had reached Innate straight away instead, how could anyone ever believe that he was the real Third Young Master?

Lin Lei sent another kick to Lin Miao's legs, "Why do you care if he's real or fake, you just need to recognize him as the Yue Clan Third Young Master!"

Lin Miao understood that Lin Lei meant well. He brushed off the dust on his butt and stood up, asking a little uncertainly, "Is it really okay not to ring the alarm bell? If the Second Butler found out about it, we would need to skin at least a layer of our skin!"

Lin Lei had already sobered up from his alcohol. He stretched his body like a panther and humphed, his forehead covered with cold sweat, "Even if we might be skinned in the future, it will be much better than getting our head chopped off right now!"

Below the walls, those two Iron Giants that were more than six metres tall had arrived with a boom, pulling along the horse carriage.

Yue Yang was sitting on top of that horse carriage.

He looked extremely calm and relaxed, as if he was coming for a holiday. However, the killing intent shown in his eyes could even make Lin Lei, who had almost gotten heat stroke from the blazing sun, shiver in coldness, as if he had been thrown into Antarctica. Goosebumps rose on his arms. As if he did not see the two people guarding the front gate, Yue Yang yawned as the two iron giants raised their iron fists and punched at the walls. They destroyed a part of the wall that the guards had painstakingly and arduously built in over a month, then leisuredly attacked the neighbouring semi-completed Castle walls as they strolled in, pulling the horse carriage.

There was also an Iron-backed Demon Wolf following behind them, looking as if it was bored as it nodded its head and wagged its tail as it walked... Lin Miao remembered that it was the Demon Wolf that had almost killed him. Its name and appearance was etched forever into Lin Miao's memories. Hui Tai Lang!

When the group entered into the wall perimeter, Hui Tai Lang glanced around and saw Lin Miao by accident.

Lin Miao immediately felt like he was about to pee in his pants.

That kind of Death Reaper like gaze was really all too familiar... He often see it in his dreams...

“Clang clang clang clang!” The alarm bell was rung by other patrol duty guards who were frozen in fear. Lin Miao and Lin Lei watched in horror as Hui Tai Lang leapt a hundred metres in distance in less than three seconds, then ripped the two Shi Brothers who had rung the alarm bell into shreds. They were killed in an instant. Lin Miao and Lin Lei looked at each other and saw the horror in each other's eyes. If they were the ones who had rung the alarm bell just now, they would probably be... This was definitely not an alarm bell, it was a funeral bell!

“Third Young Master, you finally returned!” Lin Lei trembling lips spoke out a sentence. Other than fear, his voice had a tinge of joy.

“Bro, Brother Lei, what are you doing?” When Lin Miao saw that

Lin Lei was running down the wall and towards the horse carriage, he even thought that Lin Lei wanted to fight to his death with the Third Young Master. Lin Miao hurriedly held him down with all his might.

“I won’t do anything, I just want to follow them and watch.” When Lin Lei saw Yue Yang turning back from his seat, he suddenly felt this burning passion in his heart and made a decision that he wouldn’t even think of doing a minute ago. This decision was extremely crazy, although Lin Lei wouldn’t think of doing it a minute ago, the current him would. He had actually put his life on stake for this gamble as he followed the Third Young Master’s horse carriage.

He knew that this battle would be a war between two beasts.

Yue Qiu and Yue Yang. This pair of father and son were just like two tigers. When they fight against each other, one of them would definitely die.

Right now, the most important thing was to stand on the correct team. If he tried to choose teams after the victor has emerged, it would already be too late. He must make a decision and follow his goal before the battle started, otherwise he would be finished. No one liked an easily swayed person, and no one would think that a person sitting on the fence was important.

Lin Lei had made a decision to support the slightly weaker Yue Clan Third Young Master.

This move was extremely crazy, he could lose his life anytime.

However, if he had chosen correctly, his life would be thoroughly changed. At least, he wouldn't need to bow his head in respect to the elders in the Yue Clan anymore. He could walk like a hero sticking out his chest and live as a person, instead of living as a dog that he currently was.

“Have you gone mad?!” Lin Miao thought that his elder cousin had gone starking mad.

“No, I'm not mad, and I'm not drunk. I am more sober than ever right now. Ah Miao, listen to me. Either you follow me along right now, or just kill me right here!” Lin Lei glared at Lin Miao, his gaze almost like a madman, shocking Lin Miao that he almost break out in sweat. Lin Miao thought about it and shook his head, “Brother Lei, I shall stay behind and continue to be a patrol guard here!”

“Bullshit. You obviously know that that is impossible. No matter who wins or loses, you wouldn't need to be a patrol guard anymore. The Third Young Master had breached into the Castle through our area, do you think nothing would happen to you if you stayed?” Lin Lei gritted his teeth and clenched his fist. He then turned around and dashed forward, chasing after the horse carriage.

Hui Tai Lang warned him not to get any closer, but it did not attack.

Of course, this was also because Lin Lei had raised his arms to

show his surrender, otherwise his neck would probably have been chomped off by Hui Tai Lang long ago.

Lin Miao was extremely anxious. He shouted idiot, idiot, for quite a long while, but when he saw a few hundreds guards who had heard the alarm surrounding the horse carriage, he painfully gritted his teeth as he punched his own chest a few times. After giving himself two hard slaps on his cheeks, he finally shrieked out with a hoarse voice, “Brother Lei, wait for me! Dammit I’m gonna bet my life too!”

Lin Lei didn’t praise him, but Lin Miao could see the look of praise in his eyes. Lin Miao couldn’t remember when he had last seen that kind of look on his elder cousin’s eyes.

Yue Yang who was sitting on top of the horse carriage also looked at them accidentally.

His lips curled up extremely slightly.

It was a smile but not smile.

“Wait a minute, how dare you! As a little brother, how could you not let this boss know? Instead, you just came here to fight all alone. How could you come out without this boss’ protection? I AM your big boss. If this matter was made known to the public, how could I show this Master Hai’s handsome face out to the world anymore!” Fatty Hai rode his Iron Rhinoceros and burst out from behind. Before he even arrived, his voice had thundered across the air.

“We are also here!” The people who appeared together with Fatty Hai were Ye Kong and the Li Brothers.

Chapter 277 – Fire Bow, Ice Arrow

The guards who came out because the alarm bell rung had the worst fate.

They knew that the Yue Clan Third Young Master was an Innate, and that he didn't so much as bat his eyes when killing humans. Whoever dared to block his path was equivalent to seeking death! However, the substitute Clan Master Yue Qiu was also a hateful person. Even the previous substitute Clan Master Yue Shan had ran away from him. Amongst the family members, Yue Qiu had captured whoever needed to be captured and killed whoever needed to be killed. He didn't spare anyone at all who looked even the least bit suspicious. The worst thing was that he actually didn't recognize his own son even though he was obviously an Innate. He even ordered him to be captured like a criminal... There was a saying that a tiger wouldn't eat its own son, but Yue Qiu didn't even spare his own son. If he knew that they had deserted the battle at the last minute, how could they still keep their lives?

Although the Third Young Master was an Innate Ranker, Yue Qiu had a few Innate Rankers backing him up. If this fight really started, things would definitely be bad...

The guards who were no stronger than ants felt really difficult right now.

If they advance, they won't be able to survive, if they retreat, they wouldn't be able to die even if they want to.

They really didn't know what to do!

Hence, they could only surround the two iron giants who were pulling the horse carriage and continued to retreat step by step.

Some of them saw Lin Lei and Lin Miao following behind from far away. They didn't quite understand at the start, but they suddenly realized that these two fellows had actually wanted to switch sides!

“Lin Lei, Lin Miao, what are you guys trying to do?” The clan general and guards wouldn't have the guts to stop Yue Yang's horse carriage, but they tried to find an excuse and make life difficult for Lin Lei and Lin Miao. It was an equal fight between guards. If they couldn't fight the Third Young Master who was an Innate, why couldn't they fight the Lin Brothers?

“I believe that the Third Young Master is not an impostor. There must have been a misunderstanding somewhere.” Lin Miao knew that it was too late to switch back, he decided to just force his way through.

“Brothers, please think smarter a little, don't forget your roots! I'm not betraying our Clan, I am being loyal to our Yue Clan. His Highness the Emperor and Old Marshal had recognized Third Young Master with their own mouths. When we were going through difficult times with the Xie Clan, Third Young Master had also stepped forward bravely and protected our Yue Clan. Right now, in the absence of His Highness and the Old Marshal, someone wanted to take advantage and cause trouble. Although I have no strength to fight them, I will definitely follow behind Third Young

Master, because only the Third Young Master is the successor of the Yue Clan! He is the hope of His Highness and the Old Marshall, he is not a stranger! I say, brothers, amongst all of you who are here, if you are still going to fight us, come out and try! I'll risk my life to fight you." Lin Lei pulled out his sword, his eyes sweeping across the guards and generals.

His words made everyone look down in guilt.

There were some who had close relationship with Lin Lei who shouted, "Lin Lei, why are you doing this... The fight between our superiors... it's not something that we can poke our noses into!"

Lin Lei pointed at Hui Tai Lang and shouted out emotionally, "Did you see that? The dog by Third Young Master's side had a dignity befitting of a human. We, on the other hand, are living as stupidly and cowardly as a dog here! I don't want to be treated like a dog, I want to be treated like human. Even if I could only be treated as a human for one day, I would die with no regrets!"

His words spoke out all the Yue Clan Village's heart troubles, shocking almost all of the guards and generals.

After a while, a few hot-blooded generals rushed out and stood together with Lin Lei.

Most of the people lowered their heads in shame, quietly retreating out of the enclosure... As for the rest of the people, along with Hui Tai Lang's roar, one of them screamed and started to escape, causing everyone to follow suit and scrambled back to

the Yue Clan Castle in fear. At this time, outside the Yue Clan Castle, a number of Innate Rankers started appearing in the sky. The light they were emitting were as bright as the blazing sun. They released their Qi at the same time, sending a terrifying shockwave attack towards Yue Yang, who was sitting on top of his horse carriage. The shockwave attack was like a giant tsunami that came crashing down from the heavens.

“Tch!” Yue Yang humphed in disdain.

He was no longer that Yue Yang who was pulling a horse carriage and his Fourth Mother up towards the Yue Clan Castle.

The past Yue Yang wasn't that strong, his strength was at the most at the level of a Level 6 Elder. However, today, he was a powerful warrior who had continuously killed over a dozen Innate rankers... Tu Cheng, Kuang Zhan, Duan Mu, Liu He, Goblin General Dream Eater, Goblin General Zi Diao, Bi Lin the two-headed snake, Fire-tailed Tortoise, and even the Nine-Headed Goblin Marshal who was so strong that he could kill Flying Tiger Ambassador in an instant, had all fallen under Yue Yang's feet.

Furthermore, with the help from Xue Wu Xia and the rest, his Innate Invisible Sword Qi had also reached the Fifth Level.

After practicing [Double Body Fusion] with the sickly beauty and mastering it, Yue Yang had even inherited the pitiful guy's mother's knowledge and mastered the knowledge of summoning runes...

How could this kind of Yueyang be pressurized by a few Innate Rankers?

With regards to those Innate Rankers' provocation, Yue Yang's reply was obviously his rudest, most disdainful pointing of middle finger!

Yue Yang almost felt nothing from the pressure that four Innate Rankers in the sky were releasing together, but Lin Miao was so scared that he almost wet his pants. His whole body shook violently as if he was someone who was in the middle of a snowstorm. He looked at Lin Lei and discovered that he was clenching his teeth. His hands had also turned white from gripping his sword too tight. Although he wasn't trembling from fright, Lin Lei's face was as pale as death.

Fatty Hai rode his Iron Rhinoceros and ridiculed them, "Are you kidding me? How could you guys be so shocked by a few Innates farting almost five kilometres away that your legs are trembling so violently? Are you guys truly men? Do you really have balls under your pants?"

"You, aren't you scared?" Lin Miao continued to shake violently as he asked. He saw that Fatty Hai's expression was still normal, so he suddenly felt respect towards this fatty.

"Bullshit, they are so far away, why would I be scared? Haven't you heard that I, Master Hai, has guts as high as the skies? Let me tell you, I'm not afraid of anything in heaven or earth. Other than beauties loving me too much that they are willing to die for me, I'm not scared of any... Fuck, that fellow is flying towards us! Yue

Yang, some ants have come, go and finish him. Your big boss must save his strength to help you beat up the strongest boss monster!" When Fatty Hai saw an innate ranker flying towards them like a meteor, he almost spit out his heart from fright. He hurriedly asked Yue Yang to attack.

Yue Yang jumped from the horse carriage roof.

Drawing a circle with his hands, he activated the Yin Ability on his left hand and Yang Ability on his right.

The ice and fire formed a beautiful and magnificent scenery in the sky. On one side, cold winds blew through countless drops of snow, it was so cold that it made people's teeth chatter. On the other side, it was so hot that it made people felt like they were inside an oven. Everyone opened their mouth, almost unable to breath from the heat.

Right now, the power of his Yin Yang Twin Fish Spherical Beheader was a hundred times much stronger than when he used it during the New Year's tournament.

Under Yue Yang's control, the ice and fire had turned into a terrifying tornado.

Ice and fire collided against each other in the midst of the storm, causing purple lightning to crackle from within.

In the sky, the Innate Ranker who was shooting towards them

secretly felt alarmed when he saw this.

But his flying speed was as fast as a meteor.

In this kind of situation where he was trying to hit them with all his strength, he didn't have any other choice, he could only force his way through.

The human meteor collided with the Ice Fire Tornado... That innate ranker who had the appearance of a middle-aged man was collided powerfully with Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade, causing a loud explosion. It was so loud that everyone almost became deaf. Some even experienced a momentary blackout. It was as if a thunderbolt had resounded right in their ears. Everyone swayed in shock, unable to think clearly. A lot of the guards who couldn't endure it fainted one by one onto the ground.

Although some generals were able to endure it, their bodies also slowly swayed and fell to the ground.

The shock wave from the collision of the two people was as powerful as a tsunami, sweeping through the earth, blasting away all the fainted guards and generals like dust. Most of the guards' beasts had died on the spot, some of them even had their limbs torn. Some of the generals who were still awake pierced their swords on the ground to maintain their ground and support their bodies, enduring the terrifying shock wave with gritted teeth... Almost everyone spitted out blood as their internal organs had been injured from the shockwave blast. Only Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers still stood proudly on their ground, looking up to the sky.

Lin Lei stuck his sword on the ground and propped his body so that he didn't fall. His mouth, nose and ears were all dripping with blood.

Lin Miao, whose body was weaker than Lin Lei, hugged Lin Lei's leg as tightly as he could, as if he was a person swept away by a river's current grabbing hold of a piece of log.

That horse carriage that looked fragile on the outside wasn't broken at all when the terrifying shock wave had subsided... On the other hand, at a far distance, the fortifying walls, houses and pagodas in the surrounding area had all collapsed. Pieces of broken bricks and wood flew in the air, as if an invisible gigantic demon's hand had swept them up into the sky.

On the surface, Yue Yang seemed to be evenly matched with that attacking Innate Ranker.

However, that arrogant Innate Ranker had launched a sneak attack and shot down like a meteor from the sky, using his full strength and the force of gravity to attack. On the other hand, Yue Yang had received his attack from jumping from the top of his carriage and delivered a blow equal in power.

That Innate Ranker only wanted to test Yue Yang's strength, he immediately went away after his attack.

But Yue Yang refused to let him go.

“I shall reciprocate your kindness!” Yue Yang didn’t try to chase after his opponent who had an extremely fast speed. Instead, he bent his left hand and condensed an immense heat energy, forming a gigantic Fire Bow. He drew a circle with his right hand and condensed a biting cold energy, forming three ice arrows that were colder than ice. Yue Yang then called out a chant, similar to when humans were summoning their beasts, but no one there ever heard of his chant before. It was extremely beautiful, pleasant sounding call, similar to the sounds of nature. One by one, Silver Runes appeared from his body and engraved themselves onto the arrows, adding a terrifying and destructing ability onto the three arrows.

“Summoning runes?” That quick Innate Ranker’s expression completely changed.

He had a strange kind of feeling that no matter how far or how fast he escaped, he wouldn’t be able to escape from this ice arrows.

Should he continue to retreat?

Or should he use all his strength to stop these three ice arrows?

He would be able to get his comrades’ support if he continued to retreat, but if he didn’t have enough defense, there was a very high chance that the arrow would pierce through his body... If he used all his strength to defend against the three ice arrows, he could only fight alone. If he couldn’t defend against them, his life would be in danger.

Even if he managed to defend against it, if this brat released another attack, he would still be heavily injured!

The hard decision loomed in front of him. Should he move forward or retreat?

Yue Yang called out another string of runes, and purple coloured electric currents appeared in his hands. They linked altogether and revolved around the Fire Bow and Ice Arrows in an extremely fast speed.

This time, let alone that Innate Ranker who was thinking whether to attack or retreat, even the three other Innate Rankers watching from afar turned pale.

They had the confidence to defend against Yue Yang's three arrows just now, but right now, they really didn't think they could defend against those ice arrows with fast purple electric current revolving around them... Even their beasts with the highest defense might be shot through straight away by these ice arrows that was filled with the power of runes! Previously, they thought that Yue Yang was just a newbie that had only stepped onto the Innate Realm. Who would know that this brat was so abnormal and possessed such a terrifying ability. This was definitely not an ability that an Innate newbie could have!

Definitely impossible!

“Su-Summon Grimoire...” The Innate Ranker who was about to be shot by Yue Yang finally couldn't endure his fear. He didn't

chose to attack nor retreat, instead, he chose the third choice, and that was to summon his Platinum Grimoire and hoped that his protective shield could defend against these three destructive ice arrows.

“Die!” It was as if Yue Yang was waiting for this moment. The killing intent in his eyes rose exponentially.

The three arrows imbued with his fire and ice ability and strengthened with purple lightning, disappeared from Yue Yang’s hands in a flash.

The grimoire’s protective shield that should have been able to block against all kinds of attack suddenly broke into pieces like an egg shell. As that Innate Ranker watched in shock, one ice arrow shot unstoppably through his heart.

Killing an Innate Ranker in an instant?

This, how could this be... Forget about the others, even Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and Li Brothers didn’t dare to believe that Yue Yang’s powers had become so surprising!

It could even penetrate through a grimoire’s protective shield that could block any kinds of attack?

How did Yue Yang managed to do that?

Chapter 278 – I Will Never Show Compassion For My Enemies!

“Lord Shun Tian, with your ‘Five Transformations Power’, can you see what had actually happened?” The youngest of the three Innate Rankers floating above the Yue Clan Castle, the one on the far left, carried a serious expression as he asked the Innate Ranker in the middle.

“This is a very cunning trick!” The one called Lord Shun Tian in the middle smiled slightly.

At this time, the one on the far right, the oldest one of the Three closed his eyes for a moment before he suddenly boomed, “Although that brat’s ice arrows are strong, they shouldn’t be able to pierce through Yao Guang’s protective shield. Even if it could, they could definitely not harm Yao Guang’s body. That cunning brat had actually attacked at the same spot. He had done something to the arrows. The first arrow was the strongest, and the second and third arrow had pierced the same spot that the first arrow pierced... The first arrow created a dent and the second arrow pierced through an inch of the protective shield. These first two arrows had not harmed Yao Guang at all. However, the third one pierced through the spot that had been weakened by the first and second arrow, hence it did not experience the resistance of the protective shield. That’s why Yao Guang was shot.”

The Innate Ranker in the middle named Shun Tian shook his hands, “Sir Moqi, victory means victory, failure means failure. You shouldn’t judge him like that.”

Pausing a while, he said again, “Being wise in tactics is also one of the advantages in war, especially in situations where power is evenly matched between the two sides. The wiser one will obviously gain the upper hand. Furthermore, this Yue Clan Third Young Master is indeed skillful in controlling his ice arrows. Being able to hit the same spot with all three arrows... I must say, this Yue Clan Third Young Master really has great skills, he is worthy of our recognition.”

The oldest Innate Ranker on the far right, Sir Moqi, nodded grudgingly, but he still glared at Yue Yang with a hint of hate.

The younger Innate Ranker on the far left started to think.

The Innate Ranker in the middle called Shun Tian then pointed towards Yue Yang and said, “Being able to create a fire bow and ice arrows attack means that the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master has fully mastered how to control his fire and ice ability. It hasn’t been long since he first became innate, but he already has such skillful control over them. He is truly worthy of praise, especially the fact that he still has strength even after he released the arrows. I think he has reached the level of Innate Level 3 now, maybe even Innate Level 4... Kai Yang, I’m afraid that you and Yao Guang might not be his match. Only I and Sir Moqi can be his match.”

“Is that so?” Kai Yang who was standing on the left, the youngest of the Innates, looked a little unconvinced.

Although he looked young on the outside, he was actually more than three hundred years old.

It could be said that he had been famous for a long time.

Of course, in the Innate world, three hundred years old didn't amount to much. At most, he could only be considered a young newbie.

Furthermore, Innate Rankers did not think that age, status or seniority was important, only power matters to them! Only power matters, so much that even a twenty something youngster like Yue Yang deserved to be respected by other Innates if he was powerful enough. Without power, even if one had lived for thousands of years, one must still respect and lower themselves in front of younger but stronger people.

The Innate Ranker who was fighting against Yue Yang, the one whose heart was pierced through by Yue Yang's arrow, was actually Kai Yang's comrade, Yao Guang.

Both of them belonged to the Seven Great Bears Innate Alliance.

"Cough, cough!" Yao Guang, whose heart was pierced by an arrow, was actually still alive. He was even still hovering in the air.

He summoned a healing-type beast and continued to heal the injuries in his body.

Because Yue Yang's purple lightning ice arrow had terrifyingly stored the power of fire, ice, purple lightning and heaven runes,

Yao Guang didn't dare to pull out the arrow head immediately, afraid that the power in the arrow would explode and shatter his body to pieces. The current him could only endure inside his protective shield as he continued to heal himself, hoping that he would be able to remove Yue Yang's powerful purple lightning ice arrow if he slowly healed himself.

Right now, he was so regretful that his intestines had turned green.

(Shiro – intestines turn green = regret. Just some of Chinese weird analogies. E.g., eat vinegar = jealous, lose face = lose reputation/dignity)

If he had retreated as fast as he could just now and hid behind his comrades, with the support from Sir Moqi and his comrade Kai Yang, he wouldn't have ended up so miserable. Although he might be able to leave from this ordeal unscathed, he had lost face in front of the Yue Clan guards and generals who were watching from below.

He was even thinking that he would definitely kill all these guards and generals after he finished removing the ice arrow's power.

He would definitely not let all these humans who were no better than ants continue to live after witnessing his embarrassing moment. He would definitely not let them secretly ridicule him, an Innate Ranker!

“Explode!”

Obviously, Yue Yang will not give Yao Guang a chance for recovery.

He reached out his hands and clenched it tightly.

Then, all of a sudden, the ice arrow that was stuck in Yao Guang's chest immediately let out a thunderous explosion!

Kaboom!

Yao Guang shrieked in unimaginable pain from the explosion, his chest completely blasted to bits. His internal organs flew in the air and turned into countless chunks of ice, scattering all over the place.

The Platinum Grimoire disappeared along with Yao Guang's loss of consciousness. The protective shield shattered and countless bits of flesh splashed down from the sky, forming a bloody rain.

Just like a meteor falling, Yao Guang's body smashed onto the ground, splattering all over the road towards the Yue Clan Castle, scaring the surrounding generals who had hurriedly tried to escape. There was a large hole on Yao Guang's chest, and the insides of his abdomen had all been blown apart. Only his shoulder above and waist below were mostly intact. However, that tough fellow was actually still alive even now.

Yue Yang immediately appeared in front of Yao Guang.

Looking at this pitiful enemy coldly, Yue Yang's killing intent rose exponentially, as if he was a Demon King.

"Spare..." Yao Guang was about to say 'spare my life', but he couldn't say anything else. There was an unspeakable terror and pain in his eyes as his tears flowed out. He miserably reached out his hands that was more like lumps of bloodied flesh to Yue Yang, pitifully begging for his life.

"Sorry, I will never show compassion for my enemies!" Yue Yang stepped onto Yao Guang's head and smashed his head until he die.

"Turns out this fellow is a fake Innate!" Fatty Hai shouted out, "Yue Yang, let me finish this crying watering pot. I am your big boss after all, if I can't help you finish some fake Innates, then I would let down my nickname of the Unrivalled Sexy Handsome Man. Damn him, I thought all Innates are very strong, who would know that he is even more afraid of death than me. This is really disappointing!"

"Yao Guang!"

Kai Yang who was floating above the Yue Clan Castle actually planned to fly and save Yao Guang.

However, he did not manage to reach on time before Yue Yang finished Yao Guang with a stomp. Kai Yang roared miserably as he maxed his strength and released his Innate Level 2 super strength, arriving in front of Yue Yang. Although Shun Tian had just warned

him just now that he was not Yue Yang's match, Kai Yang didn't care about anything much right now. His comrade had just died miserably, hence he was filled with fury and indignation. If he didn't have the last shred of control in him, he would have attacked Yue Yang blindly in that instant.

Within the Seven Great Bears, many had participated in the Innates Great War. Hence, a lot of their members had actually died, leaving only three people left, namely Yao Guang, Kai Yang and Tian Quan.

Now that Yao Guang had died, the Great Bears had been destroyed. Obviously Kai Yang would feel extremely furious.

Seeing Kai Yang in rage, Fatty Hai was so scared that he shivered and quietly shouted, "Yue Yang, this fellow seems to be the real deal, how about you fight him?"

If it was beyond your reach, you should just hide far away. Why would you come so near?

Yue Yang was speechless.

Maybe annoyed by Fatty Hai's words, Kai Yang furiously glared at him. Their highly reputable Seven Great Bears Innate Alliance had actually been criticised by a fatty that was far from an Innate. Fake goods? Watering Pot?!

Kai Yang released his Qi that was as powerful as a hurricane,

aiming right at Fatty Hai, pushing his heavy body a few steps back.

With just the power from his glare, he had pushed Fatty Hai a few steps back.

Innate Rankers must never be belittled!

With regards to the surrounding guards, no matter if they were injured or not, as long as they could still move, everyone started to escape far away. Just now, when the two Innates were fighting in the sky, countless of people had died. If they were to fight on the ground instead, wouldn't they all be annihilated? Forget about getting hit directly, even if one of their attacks just grazed their bodies, they would instantly be destroyed to pieces. The only ones who did not run away were Lin Miao and Lin Lei. They were bracing themselves behind the horse carriage, their appearance extremely miserable. However, at least they were not so scared that they wet their pants. The cowardly Lin Miao thought that it was quite an unbelievable feat for them.

Could it be that one's guts would increase when one followed the Yue Clan Third Young Master?

Hui Tai Lang happily lied in front of the horse carriage and yawned, as if it wasn't worried about the battle at all.

It was not time for it to help out yet!

It wouldn't be like Fatty Hai, foolishly coming out and snatching

its master's credit.

“Gold Mammoth, One-eyed Giant, I summon you! Attack that horse carriage!” Kai Yang didn't just think of fighting with the Yue Clan Third Young Master, he had also summoned Gold-ranked beasts to smash the luxurious horse carriage into bits. Previously, the story of how the Yue Clan Third Young Master had pulled his mother inside a horse carriage and stormed into the Yue Clan Castle had been praised by the whole world as a story of extraordinary filial piety!

Right now, if Kai Yang allowed Yue Yang to pull the horse carriage and stormed into the Yue Clan Castle the second time, the whole world would definitely be shaken.

As the enemy, he would definitely be the subject of everyone's censure and ridicule!

Furthermore, that luxurious horse carriage was surrounded by bits and pieces of the destroyed walls, undamaged and intact. Kai Yang was extremely annoyed looking at it, hence he decided to destroy it right in front of the Yue Clan Third Young Master!

As for whether he could fight the Yue Clan Third Young Master one-on-one, Kai Yang was never worried about it.

Behind him, there were still Sir Moqi and Lord Shun Tian.

They would definitely not let the Yue Clan Third Young Master

go, because they had been enemies with the Yue Clan for thousand of years. Destroying the Yue Clan was their only wish!

The gigantic Gold Mammoth, a Gold-ranked Level 6 Mammoth was like a hill that could move. Its long tusks glinted with a silver flash. It was obvious that it was a Gold Mammoth with lightning attribute, it was extremely rare. Beside the Gold Mammoth, there was a ten-metre tall One-eyed Giant. It was also Gold-ranked Level 6. A magnificent iron plate draped over his body as an armour, and it wore a large helmet on its head. There was a golden hammer hung on its waist that seemed to be able to pulverize anything... The One-eyed Giants were all foolish creatures. Their muscles were well-developed but their brains were extremely simple. Only a small percentage of them knew how to perform combat skills.

This Gold One-eyed Giant was obviously the kind that had extraordinary strength and splendid combat skills too.

“Yue Yang, I’ll leave those two to you. I want to fight this fellow!” The heroic-looking Princess Qian Qian suddenly jumped out of the horse carriage and strode forward. Her Silver Greatsword clanked behind her as she walked.

“Your Highness the Princess, are you sure you can you do it?” Fatty Hai was speechless. She was facing against an Innate, not a kid.

“Isn’t he just an Innate from that Seven Great Bears or whatever their name is called. He won’t be able to scare me away!” After going through several trainings under Yue Yang’s tutelage, fought against the Eastern Goblin Tribe and had her body renewed with

the Nirvana's flame, Princess Qian Qian's strength had greatly increased. Furthermore, she had even mastered a few Heaven Runes afterwards, so she was greatly confident right now. Although she had not reached the Innate Realm yet, Princess Qian Qian really wanted to test herself, hence she decided to fight against one of the weakest of the Seven Great Bears, Kai Yang!

“Princess, you are so heroic...I, I think I'll pass. I'll just fight against that stupid-looking elephant!” Fatty Hai knew the limits of his power and knew that he wouldn't be able to become a hero. Hence he could only switch his focus towards the Gold Mammoth and Gold One-eyed Giant.

Yue Yang's target was the other two Innates who were still floating in the sky, Moqi and Shun Tian!

The two of them were the real formidable opponents here!

Chapter 279 – My Choice Is To KILL YOU!

Before Fatty Hai summoned his Iron Rhinoceros and Hippopotamus to strengthen his body, Ye Kong who had summoned his King Kong Demon Ape to strengthen his body had charged forward towards the Lightning Gold Mammoth along with his Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle who had matured into an adult. No matter the level or rank, the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle was way below the Lightning Gold Mammoth. However, the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle had an unadulterated defensive abilities with its super hard shell that was as hard as iron. Even when facing against the Lightning Gold Mammoth, it could still stand its ground... Although it had been knocked back by the Lightning Gold Mammoth, the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle was not injured, it was only slightly stunned.

In the sky, Ye Kong who had strengthened his body with his King Kong Demon Ape raised his long rod and smashed it down, crushing the Gold Mammoth's head hard.

However, Ye Kong felt the impact of the attack instead, his hand almost became numb as he was sent flying away.

Behind, Fatty Hai who had borrowed the strength of the Iron-skinned Rhinoceros and Hippopotamus threw a Hippo Meteor Punch right at the Gold Mammoth's back.

This move was not very effective, but it did annoy the Fold Mammoth. Its tail that was charged with lightning slashed Fatty Hai into the sky. Below, the Li Brothers with the support of Gold Ant Guards brandished their swords and slashed forward like a

wind, attacking at the Gold Mammoth's legs.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers had perfect coordination with each other. Under the eagle-eyed Xia Hou Wei Lie's hell-like training, they had killed countless strong beasts together.

However, right now, they were actually unable to injure the Gold Mammoth in front of them at all.

This Gold Mammoth's skin was really too thick...

It had a very high vitality. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were extremely shocked after they tried to attack it once.

“What the heck? This idiot elephant's defense is really high, we couldn't injure it at all!” Fatty Hai felt that it was time for him to show the results of his secret cultivation. Otherwise, if they failed at this, he might even be trampled into meat paste by this Gold Mammoth!

“This way it would be more meaningful when we beat it.” Ye Kong's eyes were burning with fighting spirit.

“...” The Li Brothers didn't say anything, but they had also trained very hard, just as much Ye Kong and Fatty Hai. Although they were not as powerful as Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, they had also improved greatly.

On the other side, the Gold One-eyed Giant was charging towards

the horse carriage.

It raised its gold-ranked weapon high in his hands, a gigantic, heavy square-shaped hammer that seemed to be able to pulverize anything on earth!

The One-eyed Giant started to fight against 'Optimus Prime' and 'Megatron' that Yue Yang had created. However, their situation was completely the other way around compared to Ye Kong and the others.

The One-eyed Giant waved its hammer and smashed at Megatron and Optimus Prime's body, as if it wanted to smash them into bits with one blow.

If it were other puppet beasts, even if it was the Rock Puppet Beasts that could storm through thousands of soldiers forth and back, they would definitely be smashed to bits under this mighty hammer blow. However, the Giant Hammer was completely ineffective against the Bronze-ranked Level 6 mechanical puppet beasts that Yue Yang had created.

The two enormous puppets whose name was comically 'Optimus Prime' and 'Megatron' were unable to utilize any sort of combat skills. They were thoroughly puppet beasts that could only be used for menial work. They could only walk, carry, pull, push, grasp and smash at something, they were unable to do any kind of skills, nor dodge an attack... Of course, the crazy idea of learning combat skills and dodging attacks could only be thought of by Yue Yang's crazy imagination. In reality, other than the Ghost Genius Yue Gong from the Yue Clan, no one had ever succeeded in creating

puppet beasts that could use combat skills and tactics.

Although Yue Yang had failed his experiment of creating puppet beats that could use combat skills, he managed to create two slaves.

Of course, Optimus Prime and Megatron, the two slaves who were meant to do menial work, were equipped with defenses so high that people would pull out their hair in frustration!

The reason was because Yue Yang was too lazy. He didn't like training, especially when Optimus Prime and Megatron were only Bronze-ranked Level 6. To Yue Yang, these kinds of 'scrap metal' was not worth his time to train them.

Hence, the lazy Yue Yang had installed an Ancient Rune with his Innate Qi onto Optimus Prime and Megatron's body. This had also frustrated the old fox to the end when he heard it.

That Rune was called "Permanent Hardening".

Other than this "Permanent Hardening" Rune protecting both Optimus Prime and Megatron's nucleus, Yue Yang had also carved their outer surface with various Heaven runes, such as "Auto Recovery", "Metal Comprehension", "External Bones" and "Honeycomb Skin". The old fox thought that carving dubious runes such as "External Bones" and "Honeycomb Skin" onto the mechanical puppet's body was the biggest joke on earth... Why would metal puppets need bones? Alright, bones might still make a little bit of sense, but why would they need skin then? Could it be

that Student Titan was still dreaming of turning these 10-meter tall menial work slaves into female giant beauties?

Of course the old fox didn't understand at all, but after he tried to attack them a little, he finally understood how abnormal Yue Yang was.

Turns out that Yue Yang had installed insect's exoskeleton onto the two menial work slaves, allowing them to be equipped with a layer of metal exoskeleton outside their body. In addition, there was also the Honeycomb Skin that was able to endure great force and high temperatures. With the combination of the two runes, these two menial work slaves' defense became so high that it could make their enemies go to despair...

The old fox felt that he wouldn't be able to break these two menial work slaves even if he attacked them straight for three days and three nights.

The thing that made him really mad that he wanted to vomit blood was that these two menial work slaves still had "Auto Recovery".

This was because their nucleus was "Permanently Hardened".

Other than destroying the power of the Ancient Runes, no one could ever dream of destroying these two menial work slaves who had an empty head but endless endurance!

The Gold One-eyed Giant raised its giant hammer and smashed it on the bodies of Optimus Prime and Megatron, causing sparks of fire flying all over the place. Ear-splitting clashing sound filled all over the place, but the two menial work slaves didn't seem to be injured at all... More accurately speaking, every time they were injured a little, they quickly recovered back... The Gold One-eyed Giant was completely dumbstruck! When it was foolishly raising its square-shaped hammer and looking blankly at the two menial work slaves, the two puppet beasts who possessed the mighty and awe-inspiring names of Optimus Prime and Megatron but were not skillful in terms of combat skills at all suddenly pushed the One-eyed Giant down!

Of course, it was not the kind of 'push down' that Yue Yang did to the sickly beauty.

This was just a normal pushing down... The two menial work slaves simply pushed the One-eyed Giant onto the ground, and then started to stomp it with all their might... Their thinking process was simply to push down any object that hindered or obstructed them, such as walls, then stomp them flat to the ground. Then they could continue pulling the horse carriage over it!

They would definitely follow the thinking process that Yue Yang's programmed into them no matter what. It did not matter if it was walls or the Gold One-eyed Giant, they would definitely push it down and stomp it flat to the ground!

The tragic One-eyed Giant could only let out miserable wails under the furious stomps of four metal feet!

Hui Tai Lang had not joined the fight.

The order that Yue Yang had given it was to guard in front of the horse carriage and protect its young mistress.

If the Gold One-eyed Giant dared to move in a little closer and entered the area it was protecting, then it would definitely attack it. But as for right now, it let out another huge yawn and lied down, feeling bored because it did not have any enemies to bully.

A Gold-ranked Level 6 Beast was an extremely difficult opponent for Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others.

However, in Hui Tai Lang's eyes... What is Gold-ranked Level 6? It couldn't even remember how many other beasts it had eaten which were stronger than Gold-ranked Level 6. It had even eaten an Innate Ranker, what was Gold-ranked beasts even worth compared to that! The only thing that Hui Tai Lang was looking forward to was a Demon King's body. Yue Yang had said to Hui Tai Lang many times, even if it was only a dog, it must have high ambitions. It should try to eat at least a Demon King.

Hence, Hui Tai Lang's most important, lifelong wish was to eat a Demon King!

On the other side, Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears was fighting against Princess Qian Qian.

At the start, he thought that he could kill the beautiful swordswoman who was not an Innate yet in an instant with one attack. Who would ever thought that when they started fighting, not only he did not manage to kill her instantly, he, an Innate, was almost injured by Princess Qian Qian's attack.

Kai Yang felt really depressed fighting her.

Other than glaring at the Yue Clan Third Young Master at times, the feeling of being threatened gradually grew in Kai Yang's heart, making him unable to focus completely on his fight. He was also extremely annoyed fighting against Princess Qian Qian. When he released his ultimate moves that could kill his enemy instantly, Princess Qian Qian would summon her grimoire and defended with her protective shield. Kai Yang wasn't as powerful as the Yue Clan Third Young Master who could create Ice Arrows, hence he was unable to break Princess Qian Qian's defense at all... Since his ultimate moves were useless, he decided to simply fight using normal attacks. An Innate's punches and kicks were filled with power, they were not attacks that a non-Innate could defend against.

However, he quickly realized that he had actually met a combat skills genius.

Especially after listening to Yue Yang's advice and learning how to clutch onto her enemies' weaknesses, Princess Qian Qian who was an expert in attacking the enemies' 'joints' and 'cores' continued to beat up Kai Yang until he was mad as hell.

Princess Qian Qian's attack was divided into two stages.

The first stage was that she would attack Kai Yang's core whenever he was about to release his moves, rendering him unable to unleash his attack.

The second stage was to defend herself with her protective shield should Kai Yang managed to force his attack through. Otherwise, she would dodge then launch a counter-attack at the time when her enemy was at his weakest after he launched his attack. With these two kinds of attack, Kai Yang was unable to utilize even a tenth of his power. This really frustrated him to the end. Princess Qian Qian didn't advance prematurely because of impatience, she only tried to infuriate her enemy at the mean time, exasperating him and making him waste his energy. Princess Qian Qian actually still had a lot of 'poisonous moves' that Yue Yang thought her that she ever used...

At this time, inside the horse carriage, Luo Hua City Mistress was storing up her Aurora Light, waiting for the right moment to attack. She was prepared to work together with Princess Qian Qian and defeat an Innate, for example this Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears.

They had their own battle plan. They didn't need Yue Yang's help, they must complete it successfully on their own.

Yue Yang's power had greatly improved, and under his influence, they had also improved greatly.

Right now, they were not Innates yet. As long as they break

through the Innate realm, they would definitely be of greater help to Yue Yang!

“Interesting little friend.” The Innate Ranker called Shun Tian stopped at a hundred metres away. This was a distance that he felt safest in. Even though Yue Yang was just a junior, he, who was extremely cautious, would never belittle his enemy. Shun Tian looked at the expressionless Yue Yang and smiled a little. He welcome Yue Yang, “Yue Clan Third Young Master, maybe you can take a moment to consider joining us. I dare say that as long as you agree, you can be the leader of the Great Bears. I will allow and help you to organize the new Seven Great Bears... As for the Yue Clan Castle, don’t you think matters in the Soaring Dragon Continent is simply too boring? If you like, I can give you a continent that is bigger than the Soaring Dragon Continent. In the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and above, you can do anything you want at a continent in the Outer Realm. There will be no one to stop or limit you. As long as you agree, I will advise Yue Qiu to cancel all the orders of capturing you, ask him to reconcile with you and share the secrets of Yue Clan Puppet Palace!”

“Just now, is that Yao Guang a present from you? Were you the one who asked him to walk to his death?” Yue Yang’s words made Kai Yang, who was fighting Princess Qian Qian, so angry that his whole body trembled with fury.

“Actually, I needed an excuse.” Shun Tian didn’t deny it and smiled instead, “In the Soaring Dragon Continent, Innates are bound by the Innate Alliance Contract. We can’t launch an attack easily, otherwise Zhi Zun or other Innates would have a reason to kill us. I don’t want to give others that kind of excuse. Although it was unknown whether Zhi Zun, Elder Nan Gong and the others

could return safely, but I am cautious by nature. If the death of one of our comrade could excuse me of my sins, I wouldn't mind it at all... Since you have killed Yao Guang, I have a reason to take revenge. Yue Clan Third Young Master, you are a smart man. I think I don't have to say anymore to make you understand. Between us, there are only two ways, it's either one: friends; or two: foes. Choose it yourself!"

"I choose the third way that I have decided myself." Yue Yang raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade as the killing intent in his eyes surged. Then he shouted, "And that is to KILL YOU!"

Chapter 280 – King Of Black Light

Hearing Yue Yang's answer, that Innate ranker whose name was Shun Tian was not angered. Instead, he continued to smile.

“Brilliant choice.”

Shun Tian turned around and started floating back to the Yue Clan Castle, mumbling at the same time, “I know a lot of youngsters who are extraordinarily talented but arrogant and ambitious at the same time. I like youngsters' spirit and pride, but in some moments, being rational would be better than being impulsive. What a pity... Yet another bright star is about to fall!”

Sir Moqi, who looked like he was the oldest of the three, descended in front of Yue Yang calmly, with no sign of surprise at all.

Although Yue Yang's Fire Bow and Ice Arrow had instantly killed Yao Guang just now, this Sir Moqi seemed to still be full of confidence.

He even thought that he would definitely be able to kill Yue Yang.

Under Shun Tian's “Five Transformations Skill” analysis, Yue Yang, who had just stepped into the Innate Realm, was only at the level of Innate Level 3 or 4 at the most. Although Yue Yang had considerable power, especially amongst his peers – he was practically an unimaginable existence, Sir Moqi had full confidence

in bringing Yue Yang down. On the outside, Sir Moqi looked like he had the power of Innate Level 4, which didn't seem to be very far off from Yue Yang. However, only Sir Moqi himself knew that his abilities were way more than that. In order to make his enemies belittle him, he had practiced hard to hide his abilities since two hundred years ago. In reality, his ability was that of an Innate Level 5!

Amongst the levels of Innate Rankers, a person one level higher would be ten times more powerful.

He was two levels higher than Yue Yang, hence he was a hundred times more powerful! This difference was not something that could be made up for by Yue Yang's combat skills. It also couldn't be made up with Yue Yang's determination or defense...

Most importantly, Moqi felt that he could still definitely defeat the Yue Clan Third Young Master not only by the difference in their levels, but the difference in their strengths too. Before stepping into the realm of Innate Level 5, Innate Rankers would have to comprehend their own "Domain of Power".

When an Innate Ranker had comprehended their "Domain of Power", they would be an existence similar to Gods, omnipotent.

Moqi never told anyone before, but five years ago, he had comprehended his "Domain of Power" and possessed his own little Domain Area... In other words, as long as the Yue Clan Third Young Master entered his Domain Area, he would be able to kill the Yue Clan Third Young Master in an instant.

This was because, he was the God in his Domain Area!

Forget about Innate Level 3, even an Innate Level 4 would miserably be instantly killed by an Innate Level 5 Domain of Power. They didn't have any chance of defending the attack.

Sir Moqi continued to hide his strength selfishly, with the goal of using it when challenging Shun Tian to a battle in the future.

Because it was still too early to challenge Shun Tian, he must defeat even more strong enemies to improve himself in order to be able to catch Shun Tian off guard. Sir Moqi thought that Yue Clan Third Young Master was actually a very good stepping stone. He would definitely be able to increase his confidence by defeating such a talented youngster.

As for Yao Guang and Kai Yang, Moqi didn't care about their life and death at all.

He pretended to be furious only to deceive Shun Tian.

Yao Guang and Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears were only fit to become their lackeys. Their lives were only useful to measure the Yue Clan Third Young Master's true strength and be made as an excuse to take revenge at the Yue Clan Third Young Master. Although Zhi Zun, Elder Nan Gong and the others were exploring the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower right now and might not return to the Soaring Dragon Continent, there were still the people from Demonic Palace, such as Tian Zhu, Tian Fa and the others.

These people were neither friends nor foe, they must not provoke them at all cost.

(Shiro: Tian Zhu, Tian Fa and Tian Qian was translated as Sky Pearl, Sky Law and Sky Wrath at chapter 159. I'm changing it to their Chinese name instead.)

“If you don't mind, we can fight at another location, for example, in the Dimension of Duel. I hope to truly fight with you inside the Dimension of Duel instead of being constrained by the limitations of Innate Alliance Contract in the Soaring Dragon Continent.” Moqi was also a very cautious person. He had always lived behind Shun Tian's shadow. Even his speech, actions and various habits were similar to the strong Shun Tian.

He possessed an ability to defeat Yue Yang easily, but he was still worried that he would be heavily injured by Yue Yang. He was also worried that Shun Tian would discover that he possessed the power of an Innate Level 5.

Hence, he had cunningly suggested a request to fight at the Dimension of Duel instead.

“...” Yue Yang was speechless.

Even if this fellow thought that he was clever, he shouldn't have assumed that others were foolish, right?

Yue Yang was 100% sure that there was something up this fellow's sleeves. He was definitely not inviting Yue Yang to the Dimension of Duel only because he wanted to honor the Innate

Alliance Contract.

He definitely had some tricks up his sleeves!

With regards to Moqi's trickeries, Yue Yang still couldn't figure it out yet, but he felt that it must be related to this fellow's beast or Inherent Skill. The moment he entered the Dimension of Duel, Yue Yang thought that he would fall into Moqi's trap, becoming his prey.

"Very good." Yue Yang suddenly agreed, unexpectedly, his face was filled with a bright smile.

He took out a black coloured magic ball that would allow them to be transported into Dimension of Duel. It was the normal magic ball the Demon Abyss warriors would usually use, created by the old fox himself. Yue Yang smashed the ball between Moqi and himself and the ball burst into a black pillar of light, engulfing both him and Moqi inside, teleporting the two of them into the Dimension of Duel. At this time, a cold smile appeared on Moqi's lips. To him, it didn't matter whose Dimension of Duel they were in as long as he could hide his Domain of Power from Shun Tian.

As long as he could activate his Domain of power, this brat would definitely die in his hands. It didn't matter what kind of attacks, be it fire bows or ice arrows, they would all be rendered useless.

In that instant where his body was teleported, he had also summoned his beasts to kill Yue Yang's comrades outside. He wanted to show that he was helping Kai Yang from the Seven Great

Bears, so that he may be grateful to him in the future.

Rumble...

A thirty-metre tall Rock Giant whose body was as big as a small mountain burst out from the ground, splitting the earth.

This Rock Giant was a mighty Gold-ranked Level 9 beast. Amongst the beasts in Tong Tian Tower Level 5 and below, it was definitely a peerless existence.

It was a Gold-ranked Level 5 Gold King Beast, King of Black Light. Its body was more than 30 metres tall, and its whole body was covered with Black Light Rock Meteorite that was even harder than metal. Its two agile fists and head were covered with black coloured thorns, intimidating its enemies at first glance.

Even a giant dragon would meet its tragic end facing against this King of Black Light.

This was because the King of Black Light's defense was extremely high. Furthermore, it was resistant to fire and possessed the "Earth Shattering", "Rock Dust Meteor" and other skills. It had the ability to fight both short-ranged and long-ranged, it was an existence that a warrior of Innate Level 2 and below would find it difficult to handle. Moqi had secretly chanted his summon when he floated to the ground just now, making use of his "Telekinesis Inherent Skill" to hide the King of Black Light secretly under the ground. Before Yue Yang and Moqi entered into the Dimension of Duel, he ordered the King of Black Light to come out from the ground,

eliminate every single enemies, no matter friends or foe, and flatten everything onto the ground.

“My God!” When Fatty Hai saw the King of Black Light, he was frightened to death.

Gold-ranked Level 6 Lightning Mammoth was already a terrifying foe, now they even had to face this thirty meters tall, Gold-ranked Level 9 King of Black Light, the Rock Giant.

How could they survive?

Compared to this King of Black Light, the Gold Mammoth and One-eyed Giant were simply kid's toys, completely insignificant.

Lin Lei was so scared that his whole body trembled. Beside him, Lin Miao had gone ahead and fainted from fright... Faced against such a strong enemy, would there be even any use for them to continue the fight?

Hui Tai Lang felt that it was finally the right time for it to move. Although this King of Black Light whose body was covered with rock did not seem to be very delicious, its magic crystal might still be tasty enough. It had just started to stand up when a girl suddenly flew out from inside the horse carriage, stepping on Hui Tai Lang's head and jumping outside. Like a little kid who had just seen her most beloved toy, she jumped towards that thirty meter tall King of Black Light.

She turned out to be the girl who had yet to finish eating Duan Mu, Liu He, Dream Eater, Zi Diao, Nine-headed Goblin Marshal and other Innates, the Thorny Flower Demoness who had not evolved into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen... Of course, due to time constraints, she was still unable to digest all of her food, otherwise she would definitely have no problems to evolve into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

This little girl received a lot of its master's love, so Hui Tai Lang decided not to fight over some King of Black Light with her. That rock monster seemed to be hard to eat anyways.

Hui Tai Lang had also seen the Golden Beast jumping out of the horse carriage and charging straight towards the One-eyed Giant. Hui Tai Lang immediately gave up.

What a smart boy, it pretended to be an obedient kid when its master was here just now.

The moment its master left, it started to snatch preys!

Hui Tai Lang didn't care about whatever brothers' ethics or loyalty anymore, snatching preys depends on each individual's power anyway!

As the Thorny Flower Demoness, Golden Beast and Hui Tai Lang charged out to snatch monsters, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers hurriedly ran back to hide, otherwise they would definitely be turned into meat paste by the King of Black Light.

The Gold Mammoth also tried to hide from fright, but it didn't manage to avoid in time before it was grasped by the King of Black Light's hands and thrown into one side. The One-eyed Giant was even more tragic, it was kicked by the King of Black Light and sent flying over ten metres away. As for the two block-headed menial work slaves, Optimus Prime and Megatron, they were about to try moving this small mountain that could move, but they were immediately smashed into the ground by the King of Black Light's fists....

Gold Mammoth, One-eyed Giant and the two menial work slaves were all not the King of Black Light's match.

Fatty Hai was so scared that his legs were trembling like crazy. He felt that even if he transformed, he would also be swatted away immediately by the King of Black Light's slap.

"I shall transform and fight to my death with it! The three of you, quickly pull the horse carriage back. We can't fight against this fellow, only Yue Yang can do it." Although Fatty Hai was terrified, he still had his loyalty. He only ran until the horse carriage, he didn't abandon his comrades and ran away.

"Nonsense, you'll just run to your death if you go out there!" Ye Kong was completely speechless when he saw his Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle being overturned by the King of Black Light.

Suddenly, from the sky, a huge meteorite fall straight onto the King of Black Light's head.

With a loud explosion, the meteorite shattered into thousands of pieces, scattering all over the place into rain of fire.

However, the King of Black Light did not seem to be injured at all.

The Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang who were coming from afar was also dumbstruck. How could a meteor do no damage to it at all?

“Roarr!” The King of Black Light raised a huge rock that weighed thousands of kilograms and threw it to a far distance, smashing right into the Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang. The speed and power of the rock being thrown was comparable to a meteorite falling from the sky.

The Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang hurriedly avoided it in the sky, each of them dodging to the opposite side.

As a result, the rock missed them and smashed right into the Yue Clan Village ruins at a far distance. When the rock smashed on to the ground, an ear-splitting sound could be heard as the earth quaked and split apart. It was even more frightening than an earthquake.

Seeing the Yue Clan Third Young Master had left, Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears immediately felt relieved of a huge burden in his heart. He laughed out loud and flew into the air, starting to store his Innate Level 2 power in his hands to launch an ultimate move at Princess Qian Qian. Although he was on the winning side, Lord

Shun Tian who was the strongest amongst the three Innate rankers in terms of power, was still frowning, as if he was unhappy with the current situation, confused over a certain matter.

Even after Yue Yang left, he still felt that the biggest threat had yet to be eliminated.

Inside that horse carriage, there were definitely more powerful enemies hiding inside.

Moqi had tricked to fight Yue Yang inside the Dimension of Duel so that they could fight to their deaths. This seemingly clever move might just be a foolish move that would completely destroy him!

The Yue Clan Third Young Master was definitely not an idiot. He would definitely not abandon his comrades and pretended to be a hero, fighting against Moqi in the Dimension of Duel alone... The fact that he had done this showed that he had seen through Moqi's tricks and was confident of his victory. At the same time, he had also left some beasts behind to fight against Moqi's King of Black Light!

Shun Tian who was floating over the Yue Clan Castle deeply frowned his brows.

Yue Clan Third Young Master, what sort of tricks would he use to deal with Moqi?

Also, what kind of powerful beasts would he leave behind to deal with that Kind of Black Light?

Below, the King of Black Light was completely invincible, not even a single beast was his match. All beasts immediately ran away the moment they saw the King of Black Light!

That was, other than this girl who was wearing a flower wreath on her head and looked extremely innocent... Shun Tian was deep in his thoughts just now, hence he had not noticed her presence. However, now that he had seen her, his eyes immediately popped open wide. It was the first time a surprised expression crossed his face.

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen?

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who had disappeared for three thousand years had re-appeared again?

Chapter 281 – Shun Tian, Great Emperor Of Zi Wei

Shun Tian focused and discovered that this girl with a flower wreath on her head had not become a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen yet. It was still a Thorny Flower Demoness.

However, her potential... Even Shun Tian, an Innate Ranker, felt jealous of Yue Yang. He actually couldn't possess such a terrifying killing machine. Even though Shun Tian possessed five Holy Beasts in his arsenal, it was still difficult to constrain the feeling of greed and desire in his heart. Especially after looking at the Thorny Flower Demoness' intelligent and emotional looking eyes, which was almost nearing a human's. Shun Tian's heart was slightly shaken, he knew that this beast would definitely rise to become a Holy Beast in the future... It would be really unwise for him to allow this Thorny Flower Demoness to evolve into a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and become a Holy Beast.

Shun Tian's killing intent surged.

His terrifying killing intent surfaced from his heart, breaking out like a sudden flash flood.

He raised his arms and was prepared to take advantage of this moment when the Thorny Flower Demoness had yet to mature, to kill her in an instant.

“Eh? Isn't that the most honorable Great Emperor of Zi Wei? Lord Shun Tian, one of the emperors of the Fourteen Stars Innate

Alliance. Why would you come to the Soaring Dragon Continent, such a poor, secluded place? You seemed to have come out of malice. Are you about to unleash your attack and let thousands of people die?” Suddenly, from behind Shun Tian, an extremely seductive voice resounded. It was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Tian Fa. Along with a breath of fresh air, she appeared in the air, in a position slightly higher than Shun Tian.

“Turns out it’s the great enchantress Tian Fa. Haha, please do not joke around... The whole of Innate Alliance know that I am just an Emperor in name, I don’t possess any throne or significant position. With Zhi Zun’s existence, how can I, Shuntian, dare to call myself Emperor? The title of Zi Wei Fourteen Stars is also only an inside joke that others use to call me. I didn’t want to be called that at all. Today, I have come with my friends Yao Guang and Kai Yang to attend the ceremony for the new Yue Clan Substitute Clan Master Yue Qiu’s son to become Tian Quan’s disciple. I heard that Yue Qiu’s son is extremely gifted, he managed to become a Level 6 Elder at the age of 21. I was so happy when I heard that there was such a talented junior that I came down from the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.” When Shun Tian discovered the Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s arrival, his expressions were immediately filled with caution.

His killing intent disappeared without trace like snow melting in the heat of spring. He was filled with amicability instead.

As he explained with a smile, he turned around and bowed slightly at the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, “This is such a coincidental meeting. May I know why the Great Sky Demoness has come to this place?”

Even if he was an idiot, Shun Tian finally understood everything now.

Why did Yue Yang went into the Dimension of Duel with Moqi so fearlessly?

It was because the Great Sky Demoness Tian Fa had arrived!

Although Shun Tian wasn't present during the great Innate Battle between Yue Yang and Tu Cheng, he had heard about the whole story.

It was said that Tian Fa was extremely biased against the Yue Clan Third Young Master, helping him time and time again. She had even seduced his hidden strength with her Inherent Skill right in front of the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, allowing Yue Yang to kill Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan from the Thousand Goblins Sect smoothly.

The Thousand Goblins Sect Leader was extremely furious, but he was afraid of fighting both Tian Fa and Night Empress together, hence he didn't make his move.

However, it seemed like this Yue Clan Third Young Master might just be Tian Fa's little lover.

Otherwise, she wouldn't help him time and time again like this!

Although Shun Tian was one of the few Policy Makers of the

Innate Alliance and had the title of Emperor of Zi Wei, he was even more low-profile and cautious than the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. He always kept a low-profile when handling stuff, and would completely erase his trace. He would definitely not let anyone had the excuse attack him back.

Amongst the Innates in the Innate Alliance, Zhi Zun was at the top. She was an existence that no other person could surpass nor overtake.

Zhi Zun's title of Supreme One represented her existence that was unrivalled in the world.

Only the strongest warrior could be referred to as the Supreme One!

The Supreme One liked to cultivate the most. At normal times, she wouldn't even care about the matters of the Innate Alliance.

Under Zhi Zun, there were the Innate Invitor Elder Nan Gong, Night Empress from Tian Luo Kingdom, Tian Zhu and Tian Fa, the two Great Sky Demons from the Demonic Palace, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, the Sect Leaders from the Four Great Sects as well as Shun Tian, the Great Emperor of Zi Wei. These ten people were the real Policy Makers of the Innate Alliance, the highest ranked of all Innates. Other Innates such as the Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng, Vice Sect Leader Moqi Xu Ling and the other Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the Three Kingdoms were at the second rank, they could only follow the Policy Makers' orders. If it wasn't related to their own country, they didn't have the authority to make any kind of decision... The third ranked

Innates were like Yao Guang and Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears, or Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan from the Thousand Goblins Sect. They didn't even have the right to attend discussions or meetings at normal times.

Shun Tian's goal was to climb onto the position of the Supreme One.

He definitely would not fight against an Innate that had the same level as him. That was because it was an action that could possibly harm him. His enemy might even take advantage of him.

Especially this terrifying Tian Fa, the demoness. Her abilities couldn't be belittled... Although Shun Tian thought of his abilities highly, he wouldn't belittle Tian Fa's. Furthermore, with the risk of fighting against the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and Tian Zhu looming above him, he wouldn't act impulsively and start a fight with her!

People who wanted to be successful in the long run must learn how to conceal one's strengths and bide one's time. He must endure silently, be accommodating to others and be well prepared.

Shun Tian would definitely not fall easily into Tian Fa's provocation.

He had even asked Phoenix Fairy Beauty back with a question, his face full of smiles, as if he didn't know that she was here because of Yue Yang.

“I have no home, no fixed place to live, so I wander from place to place, unlike you, the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, who owned your own Heavenly Palace in the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower. It’s not very strange for me to come to the Yue Clan Castle, because I know a little friend here. I was just passing by and making sure that he wasn’t bullied by others.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty replied indifferently, then asked Shun Tian again, “Did I hear wrongly? Isn’t Yue Qiu dead? How did he come alive again?”

“I didn’t know that Tian Fa is so concerned about this matter. Yue Qiu was taken as prisoner of war after he lost his battle. Afterwards, he was ransomed by a girl who was infatuated with him, and was forced to exile in the Demon Abyss. Then, he had received the Seven Great Bear’s Tian Quan’s help and could finally return back to the Yue Clan. After the Yue Clan encountered the attack from the Eastern Goblin Tribe and was about to be destroyed, Yue Yang had stepped up and was determined to revive the Yue Clan. I heard that his son was extremely intelligent and had an unrivalled natural talent. At this time, it just so happens that Tian Quan had invited me down. Hence, I decided to come down to express my good wishes for Tian Quan who was about to accept a disciple.” Shun Tian had completely revamped the whole story, emphasizing that he was only a passer-by with no business here at all.

“Tian Quan is receiving a disciple? Yue Qiu’s son?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty started laughing, “Is Yue Qiu’s son called Yue Yang?”

“Yes.” Shun Tian nodded.

“If I didn’t remember wrong, didn’t Elder Nan Gong personally

come down to invite Yue Yang to join the Innate Alliance a few days ago? Tian Quan from the Seven Great Bears is only Innate Level 2 at the most, what kind of abilities did he have to dare receive an Innate as his disciple? Isn't this the world's greatest joke?" The Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed enchantingly. However, an endless stream of killing intent was hidden between her smile.

‘Yue Qiu’s son, Yue Yang, is an innate?’ Shun Tian’s acting skills were definitely of the Innate rank!

“That little kid is my young lover, I am very familiar even with each strand of his hair. How would I not know that he is an Innate?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked him back, “Don’t the Great Emperor of Zi Wei know that Yue Qiu’s son, Yue Yang, is an Innate? That day when Yue Yang killed Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan from the Thousand Goblins Sect, more than a dozen of Innates had witnessed it themselves. Zhi Zun had even said that she was Yue Yang’s Introducer, and that he had a very high potential to improve. She said she wouldn’t allow anyone to try finding excuses to kill him... Great Emperor of Zi Wei, you really didn’t know that?”

“I only heard that Yue Qiu’s son is a Level 6 Elder. Did he really manage to reach the Innate realm before reaching his 21st birthday?” Shun Tian seemed to have never seen Yue Yang before.

“With regards to how he managed to reach the Innate realm, you can ask him yourself, it’s no use asking me. Right, below, what on earth happened to Yao Guang? Who is so audacious, daring to kill him right under the Great Emperor of Zi Wei’s nose?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty pointed at Yao Guang corpse and asked.

“An extremely strange youngster. He was quite strong, and an Innate. However, I have never seen him amongst the Innate Alliance.” Shun Tian replied.

“Seems like the son of Yue Qiu that Lord Shun Tian knew is different from the son of Yue Qiu that I knew.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed, “Amongst the two of them, one of them must be an impostor. May I ask which Yue Yang is Lord Shun Tian supporting? The real one, or the fake one?”

“What’s real couldn’t be faked, what’s fake would eventually be known.” Shun Tian laughed out, replying and answering her smoothly.

“What’s actually happening below? Yao Guang from the Seven Great Bears died tragically and Kai Yang didn’t seem to be in a good position either. Shouldn’t you, as the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, help them to attack the enemies?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s killing intent was faintly discernable, her breathtaking, beautiful face smiled even more sweetly.

“It’s not appropriate for an Innate to get involved in the matters in Soaring Dragon Continent. Kai Yang wanted to take revenge for Yao Guang, I was unable to stop him although I have tried to advise him.” Shun Tian also smiled wider.

“So, Lord Shun Tian meant to say that you will follow the Innate Alliance Contract and will not bully those little friends below?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked.

“If they did not try to attack me...” Shun Tian smiled.

“Where is that strange youngster you are talking about?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked.

“He had gone to the Dimension of Duel with Sir Moqi Xu Ling. They seemed to have an old grudge between them, I was unable to stop them too.” When Shun Tian said this, he was particularly attentive to Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s reaction. If her expression changed when she heard this news, then there might be a higher chance for Moqi Xu Ling to defeat Yue Yang... However, Shun Tian saw that Phoenix Fairy Beauty revealed a looking down expression instead. He immediately felt a chill in his heart. Seemed like Moqi Xu Ling had been outwitted. Fighting against Yue Yang in the Dimension of Duel had guaranteed his tragic death.

Being able to be recognized by Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Tian Fa and Elder Nan Gong, becoming the source of fear of the Thousand Goblin Sect Leader to boot, Yue Yang was really not your ordinary brat!

However, he was definitely not like that foolish Moqi Xu Ling who was too confident on himself.

No matter how talented that brat was, no matter how fast he improved, it would still be too early to challenge Shun Tian in a hundred years!

Other than Zhi Zun, Night Empress and that terrifying Tian Zhu,

as the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian had the confidence to defeat everyone else, including the Innate Invitor Elder Nan Gong, the Strange Hundred Transformations Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and this Tian Fa in front of him. Of course, he, who was aiming for the Supreme One's position, would not easily reveal his real strength. With regards to fighting against other Innates in order to help Yue Qiu seize his position in the Yue Clan, that was a very foolish move. Shun Tian would definitely not do it... Unless Tian Fa started to attack him first, or if there were other high levelled Innate Rankers on his side, such as the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Floating Mist Sect Leader Bai Cang Yuan and Western Lion Pagoda's Li Chong Xuan to fight together with him against her, Shun Tian would never initiate an attack against the Sky Demoness Tian Fa. He would only attack when there is a hundred percent chance of winning!

A Sky Demoness like Tian Fa would require an all-out attack even when he had three other high-levelled Innates ganging up against her. Only then would they had the chance to kill her.

For Shun Tian, if Yue Yang was still not a threat to his position yet, he wouldn't risk making an enemy out of Tian Fa because of Yue Yang.

That brat was Tian Fa's lover...

The grudge for killing a love was more or less equivalent to the grudge of killing husbands or stealing wives, it would definitely not be resolved easily.

Furthermore, Yue Yang's Introducer was Zhi Zun.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty also knew that she wouldn't be able to defeat the Great Emperor of Zi Wei alone. This fellow was even more cautious than the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, he wouldn't leave a single trace of him when he commit crimes. If she forced her way to attack, they would only be at stalemate. There might not be a winner even if they fought each other for days. Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't have the patience and the time to waste fighting him, she was only here to cheer for Yue Yang. She just didn't want Shun Tian to use shameless, underhanded methods to launch a sneak attack on Yue Yang.

Of course, if Shun Tian had really attacked Yue Yang just now, Phoenix Fairy Beauty wouldn't be so friendly and amicable. She would definitely not let him go and attack. However, she didn't have any reason to attack now, so Phoenix Fairy Beauty could only tamper her killing intent down for the moment.

Below, Kai Yang whose strength had increased to Innate Level 2 was indeed much stronger than ever.

Princess Qian Qian couldn't fight him at all, she could only hide inside her protective shield and wait for an opportunity.

Kai Yang released a powerful shockwave blast, it was so strong that even the King of Black Light was pushed a few steps back... Of course, it could also be pushed back because of the Thorny Flower Demoness' attack, because the Thorny Flower Demoness had woved her thick thorny vines into a thirty-meter tall Thorny Flower Demon and was prepared to swallow the King of Black light in whole.

Facing against this Thorny Flower Demon, the King of Black Light couldn't defeat it easily like it had with its other enemies. It couldn't finish it with one move and became an invincible force anymore.

It was pushed step by step back, almost as if it was afraid of the Thorny Flower Demon.

Inside the Dimension of Duel, Moqi Xu Ling was trying to find Yue Yang.

Originally, in the Dimension of Duel, one would never be able to escape if the other party was not dead yet. However, the strange thing was that Yue Yang had disappeared in the moment Moqi Xu Ling and him was teleported into the Dimension of Duel! Where on earth did he go to?

Was he hiding himself?

Or had he escaped?

Chapter 282 – Black Hole Dimension, Meeting Empress Fei Wen Li Again

When Moqi Xu Ling entered the Dimension of Duel, he immediately summoned his Platinum Grimoire and raised his protective shield. He released his Innate strength and raised his strength to Innate Level 3 and above.

When he finished his preparation and tried to find Yue Yang, he realized that that brat had disappeared!

This, this was impossible!

In the Dimension of Duel, how could he escaped, disregarding the laws of the dimension?

At the start, Moqi Xu Ling thought that Yue Yang had hid himself. He summoned the sand beast ‘Storm King’, a Gold-ranked Level 8 Element-type beast. It didn’t have a physical body, but its power was enough to destroy a whole city. The only weakness it had was water, but Moqi Xu Ling discovered that in this Dimension of Duel, there was only a small volcano covered with hard ground. There was absolutely no water source at all. The heat energy from the volcano would help his sand beast Storm King and increase its strength, hence he did not hesitate at all and summoned it from his grimoire. Moqi ordered it to find Yue Yang who was hiding himself.

However, after one minute, the sand beast couldn’t find Yue Yang even after searching through every nook and cranny of the

Dimension of Duel.

Moqi Xu Ling was completely bewildered.

According to the rules, before he killed the enemy, he wouldn't be able to leave... This, this was really a bolt from the blue!

If he couldn't find Yue Yang and kill him, wouldn't he be trapped inside here forever? Moqi Xu Ling felt fear creeping into his heart, he almost went crazy with fear.

Right now, accurately speaking, Yue Yang had not left the area of Dimension of Duel yet.

He had only gone to a place that Moqi Xu Ling never thought he would go.

Black Hole Dimension!

When Yue Yang was teleported into the Dimension of Duel, he felt that Moqi definitely had some tricks up his sleeves. Hence, he thought the first one to make his move would gain the advantage. When Moqi was smugly summoning his grimoire and releasing his Innate strength, Yue Yang had pricked his finger and dripped his blood onto the Black Jade Pendant, then channelled his Innate Qi into it. Previously, he had sensed that he could go into the Black Hole Dimension again and meet Empress Fei Wen Li, however, it was difficult to do this secretly in front of the girls. Hence, Yue Yang immediately went to see Empress Fei Wen Li the moment he

entered the Dimension of Duel, hiding this fact from the rest of the girls.

As for Moqi Xu Ling, he was a dead man as far as Yue Yang was concerned.

Obviously, a dead man tell no tales!

If it was truly the Battlefield of Certain Death, Yue Yang's actions might not be successful, but this was the Battlefield of Certain Death that the old fox had created. It was the dimension that Yue Yang was transported to for the entrance test of killing the Magma Wyvern, the work that the old fox was the proudest of.

Although it was only the second time Yue Yang entered the Black Hole Dimension, Yue Yang's body, who had improved greatly from his Innate Qi and Nirvana's Flame, could more or less withstand the destructive force inside the Black Hole Dimension. He could faintly sense that this destructive force was kind of similar to the force of World Exterminating Wheel. Although they were different, they had similar effects. It was just that the Black Hole Dimension destructive force was much greater, and it stretched far and wide without any boundaries, unlike the World Exterminating Wheel which was some kind of attack. Yue Yang thought that if the seal for this Black Hole Dimension was an Ancient Rune or an Immemorial Rune, would he be able to make this Black Hole Dimension his own when he had completely mastered his Rune Knowledge?

He could set Empress Fei Wen Li free and trap powerful enemies inside the Black Hole Dimension in the future, making them his

prisoner until the end of their lives.

Becoming a prisoner in this Black Hole Dimension was definitely a terrifying prospect.

Without a physical body, they wouldn't have the chance to escape.

Even a strong being such as Empress Fei Wen Li who had slept for thousands of years couldn't leave, it could be seen very clearly that the power of this Black Hole Dimension is...

In the depths of the Black Hole Dimension, after one eventful year, Yue Yang finally saw Empress Fei Wen Li who was sleeping inside a crystal coffin again. She was still in her deep sleep, her face pale and her strength severely reduced. Her state was no different than when Yue Yang left her a year ago.

Xiao Wen Li floated out from Yue Yang's body and climbed onto the crystal coffin to look at Empress Fei Wen Li. Her big eyes were filled with tears.

Yue Yang rubbed her little head and comforted her, "It's okay, your mommy will definitely get better!"

"Unn!" Xiao Wen Li nodded obediently. She was more thoughtful compared to when she was first born. After living and fighting together with Yue Yang, within the period of one year, she had grown quickly in terms of wisdom and understanding. At the start,

other than understanding battle strategies, her way of thinking was not even as high as Yue Shuang, the little girl. The current her, however, was even smarter than Yue Bing right now. Although she still hadn't learnt how to speak, in terms of wisdom or emotional feelings, she was no different than a human. She had long surpassed the standard for Holy Beasts, she had possessed an emotional capacity of a human's

Yue Yang was confused as to why she had not rose in rank to become a Holy Beast yet.

However, with regards to his beloved baby, he felt that he should just let nature takes its course. Who knew, maybe Xiao Wen Li was actually a Mythical Beast, because she had already possessed a Diamond-ranked Grimoire the moment she was born!

After mastering the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi and comprehending a part of Heaven and Ancient Runes, he was a completely changed man.

He didn't need to be worried that Empress Fei Wen Li would suck his Innate Qi dry.

Yue Yang bit his finger and drew an Ancient Rune "Spirit Qi Spring" on top of the crystal coffin.

He then continued to channel his Innate Qi into the Runic Circle... Flickers of light flashed as Yue Yang's Innate Qi, with the additional support by the Ancient Rune, continued to flow into the crystal coffin and into Empress Fei Wen Li's body.

A minute later, under the influence of Yue Yang's Innate Qi, Empress Fei Wen Li's complexion turned much better.

From a pale colour, her cheeks looked a little rosy now.

She awoken from her deep sleep, when her eyes opened and she saw Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li, her eyes were immediately filled with tears, full of emotion.

Not caring about her weak body, she lifted the lid of her coffin and immediately hugged Xiao Wen Li who had dived into her embrace. Empress Fei Wen Li emotionally kissed her precious daughter before she raised Xiao Wen Li up high and cheered, "My darling baby has grown... Heavens, how many years have I slept? Three years, or five? Good girl, don't cry... Ouch, my head hurts. Little Yue Yan, how long have I actually been sleeping?"

"Only a year, your highness the Empress." Yue Yang purposely pretended to be respectful and courteous.

If it weren't for the fact that he was completely naked, he would be more confident. It was a pity that every piece of object would disintegrate into nothing inside the Black Hole Dimension.

Empress Fei Wen Li showed a disbelieving expression at first, then her expression changed into joy.

She reached out six of her snow-white hands and hugged Yue

Yang, before giving him a peck on his cheek, “You are really a lovable kid, I never knew that you would improve so much in just a year. Oh, let me see... Heavens, I really can’t believe my eyes. Isn’t your improvement a little too much? What kind of secret cultivation technique did you use? Oh no, my head hurts, could you please give me some of your Innate Qi again? Thank you!”

Maybe because she needed Yue Yang’s Innate Qi urgently, Empress Fei Wen Li kissed Yue Yang on his lips, not caring about Xiao Wen Li who was watching on the side.

She absorbed the Innate Qi in his body through his mouth.

If it weren’t for the fact that Yue Yang had mastered the Fifth Layer of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, his Innate Qi would have already been sucked dry by her.

The kind of ecstasy that was kind of suffocating yet pleasurable was really unforgettable for Yue Yang. He felt Empress Fei Wen Li’s cold body slowly turning warm under the power of his Innate Qi, and felt her virtual body slowly taking form and space. Of course, in order to heal her completely, Yue Yang thought that it wouldn’t be enough even if he gave her Innate Qi a thousand more times.

Right now, he was only supplying the Innate Qi that she needed urgently.

After kissing Yue Yang for a full three minutes, Empress Fei Wen Li let his lips go, feeling so comfortable and relaxed that she let out

a moan.

Her voice was sweet and charming, completely soul-captivating.

So much that it had even stirred the lower part of Yue Yang's body.

Yue Yang had not managed to breathe normally before Xiao Wen Li also hugged his neck, her mouth puckering up like an octopus as she copied Empress Fei Wen Li's action just now, smacking Yue Yang's lips a few times and refused to let go. She didn't know how to kiss, she only knew that putting lips together was a way to express love.

"Enough, enough." Yue Yang hurriedly appeased his precious daughter, giving her a small peck on her forehead.

"Ah!" Sure enough, Xiao Wen Li enjoyed it completely, feeling that she was more loved by Yue Yang than her mother.

"Tell me about what happened in this year!" Empress Fei Wen Li was especially curious about Yue Yang. She really want to know how he had been living the past year.

"It's a very long story..." Of course, Yue Yang wouldn't tell the whole thing in full detail, he only chose the main points and explained it to Empress Fei Wen Li. Even then, he still need to explain for thirty whole minutes in order to highlight the main events during the year. Afterwards, he asked Empress Fei Wen Li

about Holy Beasts, Mythical Beasts, Eastern Goblin Tribe, Supreme One Zhi Zun, Dragon Emperor and the Great Legendary Golden Winged Peng.

Of course, he also conveniently asked about some parts of Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes that he didn't understand.

In short, Yue Yang asked every question he had to Empress Fei Wen Li, who had been sleeping for ten thousands of years. He knew that her experience of ten thousands of years would definitely bring him better answers.

Empress Fei Wen Li hugged Xiao Wen Li as she sat inside her crystal coffin.

She then made a gesture to ask Yue Yang to sit beside her.

She reached out a hand and rubbed it at Yue Yang's head, chuckling, "It's been hard on you, little Yue Yang. I didn't manage to tell you a lot of things the previous time. You have gone through a lot. Now, I will try to tell you everything that I knew! Maybe humans and other races had gone through a lot of change after ten thousands of years, however, ten thousand years ago, humans were once the strongest race... With regards to Holy Beasts, there were many of them last time. There were even quite a handful of Mythical beasts... If you could go to higher levels of Tong Tian Tower, you would discover that the strong ones were not only humans, other beasts and other kinds of lifeforms were also very strong. The Eastern Goblin Tribe had always been strong since last time, they were one of the sub-branch of the Eastern Fairy Tribe. They pursued power relentlessly, unable to stop their thirst for

power. It was said that they had a fall out with the Eastern Fairy Tribe and was banished from their tribe... I have never heard of the Dragon Emperor, maybe he is a new Goblin King who ascended the throne when I was still sleeping! As for the Great Gold-winged Peng, lewend said that it was one of the Eastern Fairy Tribe race whose power was indescribable. It was said that its existence surpassed even God of Wars. However, these were only hearsay, I have never seen him myself. I think, unless you could surpass the Heaven Realm and reach the world above it, you won't be able to see it."

"As for Runes, I'm not very knowledgeable in it, I only know a little. Heaven Runes are runes that anyone can use. That is not the case with Ancient Runes, it had special requirements, so it is not suitable for everyone. Someone like you who are suitable to use all kinds of Ancient Runes are simply a weirdo. No one is like you. Also, you must know one thing, the Immemorial Runes are unique!" Empress Fei Wen Li told Yue Yang about a secret within a secret.

"What?" Yue Yang didn't understand.

"What I meant is that when you possessed an Immemorial Rune, then nobody else will be able to possess the same one. There is an Immemorial Rune in the middle of your World Exterminating Wheel, hence nobody else would be able to possess the same World Exterminating Wheel as you. Even though they could also have World Exterminating Wheel, there wouldn't be an Immemorial Rune in the middle of it. In other words, if you see other Immemorial Runes, it would be best if you snatch it away and make it yours. This is because Immemorial Runes are not only extremely strong, they are completely unique, the only one that

exist in this world. With an Immemorial Rune, nobody else would be able to possess the same one unless someone snatched it from you!” Empress Fei Wen Li’s words immediately made Yue Yang pumped up with the notion of becoming a robber.

“It’s good then!” Yue Yang liked unique things the best.

“Let’s talk about summoning grimoires... You must not have known the reason why all Innate rankers didn’t pursue a research on Storage Rings. Do you know why beasts could return inside their grimoires themselves without orders? Little Yue Yang, when you finally understood the true usage of summoning your grimoire, you would definitely be amazed!” Empress Fei Wen Li’s smile almost made Yue Yang’s curious heart explode with curiosity.

After this, what kind of secrets would Empress Fei Wen Li share with him?

Chapter 283 – Yue Yang's Domain Of Power

“The secret of the summoning grimoires?” Of course, Yue Yang wouldn't know anything about the secrets of the summoning grimoire.

For example, where did it come from?

These summoning grimoires, who created them? Is it created by humans or gods?

How could beasts be recalled into the summoning grimoire? How did his Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man use the Golden Bell, bracelet and weapon? How could Xiao Wen Li and the Bloody Queen Red move to their house to the Divine Grimoire? How did the summoning grimoire gave their owners their Inherent Skills? Where did the grimoire's owner's Guardian Beast that could never truly die come from? How could beasts level up from battle experiences?

There were countless of questions that Yue Yang had never truly thought of carefully.

The reason was because no one knew the answer.

Until now, when Empress Fei Wen Li decided to share him this secret, Yue Yang finally realized that the answer to all his questions had actually always been by his side.

“The summoning grimoire had countless of secrets that even I was unable to know of.” Empress Fei Wen Li hugged Xiao Wen Li as she fixed her eyes at Yue Yang, “However, according to my knowledge, the summoning grimoire, similar to the Ancient Runes and Immemorial Runes, first appeared ages ago; no one knows when. There is a very close relationship between the summoning grimoire and runes. It was said that they were first created by the Deities during the Immemorial Era. The summoning grimoire was a heavenly book that was created to allow humans to become stronger, a ladder for humans to reach the Heaven Realm.”

“Is there a limited amount to grimoires?” Yue Yang wanted to know how many grimoires are there, or whether there were an unlimited amount of grimoires.

“Yes.” Empress Fei Wen Li nodded with certainty. “I’ve never seen the document records, so I am not 100% sure. However, from the rumours, in this whole world, including Tong Tian Tower, Heaven Realm and Outer Realm, there were only 10,000 Bronze Grimoires, 5,000 Silver Grimoires, 1000 Gold Grimoires, 500 Platinum Grimoires and 100 Diamond Grimoires. This number is fixed, so if you have one Diamond Grimoire, that means that there are only 99 Diamond Grimoires left. If the 100 Diamond Grimoires quota has been met, even if someone has met the requirements to level up their grimoires to Diamond-ranked, they wouldn’t be able to rank up, unless they killed a Diamond-ranked Grimoire owner. Of course, not everyone can rank up to Diamond-rank, it is on a whole other level than Platinum-ranked Grimoires and below. It will not rank up just from accumulation of battle experience, it requires special conditions. One of them is Blood Link.”

“I see...” Yue Yang had an understanding. No wonder all the

Innate Rankers he met until now only had Platinum-ranked Grimoire. No one had a Diamond-ranked Grimoire before.

According to the numbers that Empress Fei Wen Li mentioned, Yue Yang could calculate.

In reality, the number of grimoire owners in the Soaring Dragon Continent were extremely low. Only the Four Great Clans, Four Great Sects, Three Royal Kingdoms and a handful of elite talents possess summoning grimoires. There were not even 200 Bronze Grimoires in the Soaring Dragon Continent. That was only around 1% of the quota of Bronze Grimoires. The number of Silver, Gold, Platinum Grimoires were even less than that.

The Demon Abyss was slightly stronger than the Soaring Dragon Continent, not to the point that they were able to completely crush the Soaring Dragon Continent. Yue Yang reckoned that there wouldn't be that much grimoires in the Demon Abyss than in Soaring Dragon Continent.

Just looking at the number of grimoire owners, it was apparent that the Soaring Dragon Continent was extremely weak.

Seems like the most powerful place in this world must be the rumoured Heaven Realm!

As for the Eastern Goblin Tribe and Demon Abyss, although they were a little better off than the Soaring Dragon Continent, they were still way below the Heaven Realm.

However, Yue Yang was the most curious about his own Divine Grimoire.

What's up with that Divine Grimoire?

Yue Yang hesitated a little before asking Empress Fei Wen Li this question.

Empress Fei Wen Li never imagined that Yue Yang would have a Divine Grimoire. She smiled, "Divine Grimoires are divided into Holy Grimoire and Godly Grimoires. The two of them had similar names and appearance, but they have different potential in strength and power. There are a total of 100 Holy Grimoires, but there are only 10 Godly Grimoires. No matter if it is Holy or Godly Grimoires, they are all unique existences, each has their own special power and abilities. Holy Grimoires would never be able to rank up to Godly Grimoires, but a Diamond Grimoire will be able to rank up to a Holy Grimoire. As long as the Diamond Grimoire owner kills the Holy Grimoire owner and fuse their grimoires together, a new Holy Grimoire will be created... As for Godly Grimoires, it is not possible to rank up a normal grimoire to Godly Grimoire. Theoretically, other than gods and deities, a godly grimoire is not something that lower beings could possess. However, it was said that it could be snatched away, as long as one has powers that surpassed Gods. A Godly Grimoire can be snatched away when one kills a God..."

"Kill a God and snatch his Godly Grimoire? Do Gods truly exist?" Yue Yang was completely speechless.

"No one has ever seen Gods, no one could prove the existence of

Gods. However, according to ancient rumours, there was once a God that had been killed by human warriors. He fell from the highest realm in the world, the Heaven Realm, and fell onto Soaring Dragon Continent. At the place where the God had fallen, humans decided to build a huge God Sealing Shrine. However, the God Sealing Shrine was ruined during the Great Hundred Tribes War. The later generations of mankind then called these ruins the “God’s Ruins”.” When Empress Fei Wen Li said this, Yue Yang started sweating profusely.

Turns out God’s Ruins had such a history.

No wonder, it was located in the most secluded place in Tong Tian Tower. Turns out it was a place where a God was sealed... But, do Gods really exist?

Yue Yang really couldn’t be so sure.

Maybe Gods are just stronger versions of Innate Rankers.

The picture of the Sword Goddess and the Old Taoist Priest flashed across Yue Yang’s mind. The Sword Goddess had the ability to destroy heavens and earth with just one move. Yue Yang had seen many strong Innate Rankers, but they were as insignificant as ants compared to her. If the Sword Goddess could appear in this world, then would she be a God-like existence? Or the Old Daoist Priest, seems like that fellow was an even stronger existence than the Sword Goddess.

With regards to Gods and whatsoever, Yue Yang decided not to

think about it anymore. He had not reached that level yet, so it was no use to think about it now.

“I have only heard Godly Grimoires from rumours, I have never seen one before. Hence, I am not that knowledgeable about Godly Grimoires, I only know that it exists... However, if you want to ask about Holy Grimoires, this grimoire in my hand is a Holy Grimoire.” Empress Fei Wen Li tapped on the crystal coffin lightly as she smiled sweetly towards Yue Yang.

“What special powers does your Holy Grimoire has?” Yue Yang had already guessed that she possessed a Holy Grimoire. He asked this because he wanted to compare it to his own Divine Grimoire.

Yue Yang highly suspect that the Divine Grimoire in his hands was actually the legendary ‘Godly Grimoire’.

He wanted to compare it to Empress Fei Wen Li’s Holy Grimoire.

If the two Grimoires were different, then his grimoire must be a Godly Grimoire. If he had the Godly Grimoire, he would have more beauties... Yue Yang felt that his future sexual life were filled with good prospects.

How could Empress Fei Wen Li know that this boy had a Divine Grimoire? She only thought that he was curious, hence she showed it to him.

Yue Yang was ecstatic.

This was because he realized that his Divine Grimoire was a little different from Empress Fei Wen Li's. There was a high chance that it was a Godly Grimoire. Of course, before he could be sure of that, he decided that would not say that he possessed a Divine Grimoire at the mean time. He would research about it in secret first. Maybe Empress Fei Wen Li was afraid that she would hurt Yue Yang's confidence if she spoke too much, so she didn't discuss this any further.

After understanding Yue Yang's current situation, she told him all the secrets regarding Bronze, Silver, Gold and Platinum grimoires.

“Anyone who possessed a grimoire actually possessed a storage space. No, it should be called a realm. The higher the rank of the grimoire, the more perfect the world inside it would be! The space inside a Bronze Grimoire is only a dark, empty space, there is completely nothing inside. A beast can only sleep when it enters into a Bronze Grimoire. On the other hand, the space inside a Silver Grimoire is filled with light and earth while the Gold Grimoire is filled with mountains and rivers. Beasts can continue to live when they enter the grimoire, they don't have to sleep. The space inside a platinum grimoire was even wider and more complete. There are birds and butterflies, flowers and trees, amongst many other things. Beasts can live very happily inside.” Hearing Empress Fei Wen Li's words, Yue Yang thought that it was quite similar to his Dream Realm.

At first, there was nothing in his Dream Realm, only light and clouds.

Afterwards, it slowly turned into a beautiful world with flowers and trees, mountains and rivers.

Yue Yang knew that it wasn't his doing, it was the Sword Goddess' powers...Who would know that inside the summoning grimoire, the same thing also happened.

When he was dreaming and entered his Dream Realm, could it be that he was entering the space of his own grimoire?

“Can I enter the space inside my grimoire?” Yue Yang asked.

“Ordinary warriors can only enter the space inside a Platinum grimoire, but an Innate Ranker can enter into the space inside a Gold grimoire, or even a Silver grimoire. If an ordinary warrior wanted to enter into the space inside a platinum grimoire, he must first acquire the grimoire owner's agreement. There must also be a Holy Beast to receive him, otherwise he wouldn't be able to leave once he entered. If you want to enter the space inside your grimoire, you have to learn how to use the special teleportation rune circle that is unique to your grimoire. I think it shouldn't be very difficult for you...” Other than teaching Yue Yang about how to enter into the space inside his grimoire, Empress Fei Wen Li had demonstrated it personally, pressing her hand onto Yue Yang's forehead.

A brilliant rainbow-coloured light started radiating brightly.

Yue Yang could feel that his body had not moved, but his soul

had quickly and mysteriously teleported into another place.

In that moment, he could sense a boundless, desolate world that was in ruins.

The whole world was frozen in ice, every living thing and buildings were all frozen in ice.

This was a completely dead world...

When Empress Fei Wen Li moved her hands from Yue Yang's forehead, Yue Yang felt his soul returning to his body. Everything that he saw just now seemed to be a dream.

“Due to the Black Hole Seal, I don't have the ability to send you into the space inside y Holy grimoire. I could only show you how just now so that you can have a sense of how to do it yourself. The space inside the Holy Grimoire is actually a beautiful world. The reason why everything is frozen is because there is not enough power to sustain it. As long as I can leave this Black Hole Dimension and recover my powers, everything will return back to normal.” Empress Fei Wen Li sighed lightly. She knew that although Yue Yang improved very quickly, he was still far from being able to rescue her out of the seal... She would be grateful if he could come inside the space every now and then to chat with her and give her some energy.

“Are you tired?” Seeing Empress Fei Wen Li's tired expression, Yue Yang knew that the Black Hole Dimension was affecting her greatly. It would be best for her to return to her crystal coffin,

continue to sleep, and recover more of her powers. He had learnt a lot of secrets from her and he had the confidence that he could enter the Black Hole Dimension again. He was not in a rush to ask more questions, there would be chance to do that in the future anyway.

“Little boy, have you learnt how to think about others in the one year that we didn’t see each other?” Empress Fei Wen Li chuckled lightly, but she didn’t refuse when Yue Yang carried her intimately into the crystal coffin.

“One last question. Why is it that the Innate Rankers that I have met so far are so different?” Yue Yang asked his doubt.

Amongst the Innate Rankers that Yue Yang had seen, they were mostly divided into two types.

One was the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Shun Tian, Elder Nan Gong, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Night Empress and the others. These Innate rankers were all strong beyond compare. Even Yue Yang, who had reached this kind of level, was unable to see through the depths of the powers they have hidden. The second type was innate rankers like Tu Cheng, Kuang Zhan, Duan Mu, Liu He, Yao Guang, Kai Yang and the others. Although they were innates, their powers were simply too insignificant.

Why was their powers so vastly different, although they were all innates?

Was it because of each person’s different cultivation method?

Or the depths of the comprehension?

Or was it because of other reasons?

Empress Fei Wen Li was slightly shocked when she heard Yue Yang's question. However, she quickly reacted and smiled, "I see, turns out the Innates in Soaring Dragon Continent could actually be faked. Little Yue Yang, what you have seen might just be 'fake Innates'... They didn't become Innate through hard work and cultivation, they become innates through external powers, for example with another Innate's help or with the help of some secret pill, pulling them into the Innate realm immaturely. These fake Innates, although they were innates, their powers would be extremely weak and they wouldn't be able to improve in their lives. They ought to be pitied... The real innate would have a Holy Beast that grew together with them and would possess their own Domain of Power that is unique to their own."

When Yue Yang heard her explanation, he finally understood.

Why would the Thousand Goblin Sect not care about him killing Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan? Why don't Kuang Zhan and Tu Cheng possess Holy Beasts?

Seems like Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan became innates through the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader's help.

They were probably created because the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader wanted a loyal subordinate. There wouldn't be any

problems if they died, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader would still be able to create another fake Innate if he wanted to. Hence, he wouldn't harbor a grudge for Yue Yang just because he had killed Tu Cheng and Kuang Zhan.

Yue Yang continued to think. It seemed like he didn't have a Holy Beast or Domain of Power.

Maybe Xiao Wen Li and the Bloody Queen could be counted as a Holy Beast forcibly. However, this was the first time Yue Yang had heard of 'Domain of Power'.

What is this Domain of Power?

"Your Domain of Power...I also can't see through it. It's hidden deep inside your mind. It seems like something related to fire, but it also seems to be something else. I can't be sure." Empress Fei Wen Li's words completely shocked Yue Yang.

Could it be that his Domain of Power was the mysterious power that appeared whenever he was unconscious?

He remembered when he was fighting against the fake Elder Tian Suo, the sealed demon Dark Golden Sceptre had appeared. He couldn't fight it and had fainted on the spot. When he awoke, he discovered that the Dark Golden Specter had been instantly killed by him. Yue Yang had always been confused with this matter. He only knew that there was a mysterious power in his body that continued to help him everytime he was in trouble. Could it be that that was his Domain of Power?

Yue Yang realized that there were actually a lot of secrets inside his body.

Forget it, he would understand it slowly.

The guy from another world was too lazy to think about it too much. He was about to give Empress Fei Wen Li some Innate energy so that she may recover some strength and exit this place.

“If you want to use your Domain of Power, it’s actually pretty easy. Try to feel it in your heart, feel the power inside of you... give it a try!” Empress Fei Wen Li lied down inside the crystal coffin as she spurred Yue Yang to try activating his Domain of Power.

“Okay!” Without her telling him, Yue Yang even thought that he had not have ‘Domain of Power’ inside his body yet.

At first, Yue Yang had many thoughts in his head, he was unable to calm down.

He was also unable to sense his Domain of Power.

However, along with Empress Fei Wen Li’s pointers, teaching him along like a teacher, Yue Yang slowly concentrated and could finally enter his Inner Realm for the first time. It was his first time being able to come into contact with the power inside his body when he was awake. He was able to grasp onto his Domain of Power, which was unique to him alone.

It was like a huge door of knowledge had slowly opened inside his mind.

Through his Inner Realm, Yue Yang discovered countless and mysterious powers inside his body, like a lustrous river of stars.

The closest power to him was the Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel that he was familiar with.

As for the powers furthest from him, Yue Yang was still unable to feel it clearly.

He only knew that it was as vast as the Milky Galaxy...

Yue Yang first tried to touch the Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, before trying to probe deeper. Suddenly, there was a mysterious power that discovered his presence. Like a meteor, it shot towards him, as if it was trying to attack and enter into his body... However, Yue Yang discovered that that power was extremely destructive and terrifying. He was so afraid that he started trembling. At this moment, there seemed to be a mysterious being coming out from his body. It opened its mouth and swallowed that mysterious power whole.

Then, like a star, it exploded inside Yue Yang's body.

In that instant, that mysterious power turned into a new power inside Yue Yang's body, it became one of the components of his

Domain of Power.

Yue Yang could now clearly feel the existence of his Domain of Power...

And that was “Devour”, a power that was even stronger than the Black Hole Dimension!

If he could use this “Devour” Domain of Power that could devour any kind of living things, why would he even be worried about the Thousand Goblins Sect or Shun Tian that were outside? Even Yue Yang was completely shocked by his own terrifying Domain of Power.

In front of Empress Fei Wen Li’s eyes, Yue Yang was completely entranced as his body suddenly ignited in Nirvana’s Flame.

The Nirvana’s Flame flared up in an instant and turned into a huge pillar of Nirvana Flame. It rose and immediately broke through the seal of the Black Hole Dimension, then disappeared without a trace like an exploding star. Empress Fei Wen Li was dumbstruck as she mumbled, “He possessed such a strong Domain of Power the moment he awakened it... This boy... Nirvana’s Flame, World Exterminating Wheel, Star Power... What other power does this boy possess?”

“The stronger he is, the faster I will be able to leave this place. This is a good thing!” Empress Fei Wen Li happily closed her crystal coffin and continued her deep sleep, waiting for Yue Yang’s next arrival.

At this time, inside the Dimension of Duel.

Moqi Xu Ling was scratching his scalp hard, almost going crazy. He really wanted to cry out loud.

His enemy had disappeared, and under the rule of the Dimension of Duel, he was unable to leave this goddamned Dimension of Duel.

If the Yue Clan Third Young Master had left this Dimension of Duel, then he would have to stay in this place forever... He really couldn't imagine such an ending. Whenever Moqi Xu Ling thought about how he would be staying here alone his whole life until he starved himself to death or died of old age, he felt an impulse of committing suicide.

The only thing that stopped him from committing suicide was the hope of seeing Yue Yang again.

He felt that this extremely cunning Yue Clan Third Young Master must be hiding at some place. It might be his Inherent Skill or his beast's ability. In any case, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to leave this place before he killed him.

"Lich Ring?" The sand beast that had almost overturned every single place inside the Dimension of Duel finally found the Lich Ring that Yue Yang had left behind after entering the Black Hole Dimension. When Moqi Xu Ling saw the ring, he became even more sure of his theory. He even guessed that the Yue Clan Third Young Master had secretly entered into the Lich Ring. However,

the Lich Ring could only store inanimate objects... Could it be that the Yue Clan Third Young Master is actually a zombie?

Moqi Xu Ling wouldn't be able to understand it even if his head exploded from the thinking.

Just as he was observing the Lich Ring, trying to understand it, suddenly, a pillar of Nirvana Flame shot out of empty air, revealing Yue Yang who had appeared like a meteor.

He was completely naked, without clothes covering his body.

When he saw Yue Yang's appearance, Moqi Xu Ling almost cried with relief. Heavens, this boy finally appeared!

Moqi Xu Ling was afraid that Yue Yang would try to hide again. He didn't care about trying to hide his real abilities anymore, he immediately unseal his Level 4 Innate strength, then released his Domain of Power, "Brat, go and die! Dying under my Domain of Power, it's not too bad for you!"

However, he had not even managed to attack when he discovered that the Yue Clan Third Young Master's body was also releasing Domain of Power, however faintly. Moqi Xu Ling was thoroughly shocked.

This brat, how could he master his Domain of Power?

Wasn't he just a Level 3 Innate junior?

“Which Domain of Power should I use? Forget it, I should just use the “Star Explosion” skill that I just mastered!” Yue Yang mumbled to himself, as if he was vexed about which Domain of Power to use. Moqi Xu Ling almost vomited out blood when he heard him. He had never seen such an abnormal person as this brat. How could he survive fighting against someone with different kinds of Domain of Power?

Chapter 284 – With Daughter In Hand, The World Is Mine!

It didn't matter if Yue Yang had mastered his Domain of Power. Moqi Xu Ling would not let his enemy had the chance to attack.

He roared thunderously as his body charged towards Yue Yang like a meteor.

As a true and real Innate, Moqi Xu Ling was very clear about the weakness of activating the Domain of Power. He had practiced for three whole years to reduce the activation speed of his Domain of Power by a second. Even if this brat knew how to activate his Domain of Power, how could his speed be faster than his? When he fall within his area of attack and received the power of his Domain of Power at full force, Yue Yang would definitely die... He must strike first to gain the advantage, and suffer the consequences later. Moqi Xu Ling had lived by this logic since three hundred years ago.

In a battle against experts, victory or loss was only a matter of one second.

Whichever Domain of Power activated faster, he would be able to attack his enemy faster. That was how victory was made.

“Drop dead!” Moqi Xu Lin believed that within nhis Domain of Power, the Yue Clan Third Young Master would definitely fall and become the miserable loser. How could he even dream of using his Domain of Power with his speed that was as slow as a snail?

A flash of light suddenly erupted from within Moqi Xu Ling's body and radiated more than thirty metres out, creating a huge halo of light.

Yue Yang who was within the halo of light, suddenly gasped in surprise, "Eh?"

His body that was floating in the sky suddenly fell sharp to the ground.

Although Yue Yang didn't really drop dead as per what Moqi Xu Ling had said, his body was restrained by an invisible force to the ground. His movements were severely restricted, as if a ten thousand kilograms of iron had been pressed onto Yue Yang's body. He felt a huge burden all over his body, it was difficult to even walk a step forward.

His originally quick and agile body became very slow. He even needed a long time to move his fingers.

This was Moqi Xu Ling's Domain of Power – "Heavy Pressure".

In reality, the Level 5 Innate Moqi Xu Ling was a newbie in terms of mastering his Domain of Power. Hence, the power he displayed from his Domain of Power was slightly lacking in strength... Right now, his "Heavy Pressure" could only make his enemies bear twenty times the weight of their body. This kind of Domain of Power could only be counted as Level 1 Beginner-ranked. Domains of Power were ranked by ranks and levels. There were Beginner,

Intermediate and Advanced-rank, and each rank is divided into three sub-levels. It could be said that in terms of mastering Domain of Powers, Moqi Xu Ling was just a newbie who had just stepped into this realm of power. He was only slightly ahead of Yue Yang who had just realized his power.

Domain of Powers such as Heavy Pressure was actually not considered a good Domain of Power.

A truly strong Innate could exert pressure just by releasing his Qi, this would have the same effect as the Heavy Pressure.

However, for an ordinary warrior, the Domain of Power was an invincible existence. An ordinary warrior's body would have been crushed if they couldn't bear the force of twenty times their own weight.

“Turns out this is his Domain of Power...” Yue Yang's Divine Vision could see that there was some kind of force rushing out of Moqi Xu Ling's body. However, the way that force was released was like a combustible fuel, there should be a limit to it. However, it was extremely effective for his enemies for a certain period of time and area. Yue Yang discovered that there was a halo of light in a radius of thirty meters. He immediately sensed that this was the area of effect of Moqi Xu Ling's Domain of Power. He immediately turned around and started to leave the halo of light.

“Where are you running away to!” Moqi Xu Ling discovered that this brat was really an indestructible cockroach. Not only did he managed to stay alive bearing the burden of twenty times his bodyweight, he was not even injured. Only his movements become

slower.

He immediately summoned a Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider and his Guardian Beast, a Gold-ranked Level 10 [Golden Eagle](#).

It was a Holy Beast-ranked Golden Eagle!

The Fishing Net Spider was not affected by Heavy Pressure. It easily jumped forward, so lightly as if it was flying.

It spat out white-coloured giant net and trapped Yue Yang's whole body. It then quickly moved the white-coloured giant net and wrapped Yue Yang inside into a ball, making him unable to struggle free from its trap. In the sky, Moqi Xu Ling who had fused together with the Golden Eagle finally release his strongest power, Innate Level 5...

The whole of Dimension of Duel was almost crushed.

The ground was split, making lava and magma flow through the whole space.

Within the space, Moqi Xu Ling's body released blasts of shockwaves relentlessly, even his Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider had to escape and hide. The other Gold-ranked Level 8 beast, the Sand Beast, on the other hand, rose up like a tiger that was bestowed with wings, its strength becoming stronger along with the violent shockwaves. It became a giant sandstorm that

could sweep away every single thing, turning at a speed that was unimaginable by humans. In the eye of the storm, there were hundred thousands of blades and knives swirling around, able to tear everything into shreds. Whoever was swept away by that giant sandstorm would definitely be torn to shreds and crushed into dust, becoming small particles of flesh swirling in the storm...

At this time, Moqi Xu Ling's hands suddenly glowed with a bright golden light.

He had condensed a ball of energy in the shape of a Golden Eagle.

Only an Innate Ranker who possessed a Holy Beast would be able to condense a ball of energy that had shape.

This kind of body of energy contained the willpower of the Holy Beast. Not only would its abilities become ten times stronger, it would also be able to move according to the Holy Beast's order. It would be able to automatically target its enemies and maintain its form for longer periods of time. Once it was released, as long as the Holy Beast was still alive, the body of energy would definitely hit its target.

"Golden Eagle Blast!" Moqi Xu Ling raised his hands that were carrying the Golden Eagle body of energy high and threw it right towards Yue Yang who was trapped inside the white-coloured ball of net.

"I'm right here." Yue Yang suddenly appeared right behind Moqi Xu Ling.

Maybe the Fishing Net Spider's net would be a difficult problem for other people. But for an Innate who knew how to manipulate space and teleport, it was extremely easy for Yue Yang to escape from the spider's net trap. Yue Yang condensed a Sword Qi in his right hand while he condensed one of his Domain of Power "Star Explosion" in his left. Yue Yang's Domain of Power was completely different from Moqi Xu Ling's Domain of Power, which was an Area-of-Effect attack. Yue Yang's Domain of Power was a bomb, before it explodes, it would not have any effect to his enemies.

However, as long as it hits its target, it would explode with a power that was as destructive as an exploding star.

Yue Yang then joined his hands to combine his attack.

The Innate Invisible Sword Qi on his right and Star Explosion on his left exploded right at Moqi Xu Ling right and left ears respectively at the same time. Yue Yang had actually copied Xue Wu Xia for this attack.

"Whoosh!"

However, the thing that shocked Yue Yang was that his Innate Invisible Sword Qi sneak attack had actually missed!

This was the first time it happened amongst all of Yue Yang's battles...

Yue Yang's attack was not exactly too slow, it was also not because the sneak attack was not launched at the right timing. He had completely seen through Moqi Xu Ling's attack pattern and launched a sneak attack right after Moqi Xu Ling was releasing his ultimate move. However, his sure-kill Innate Invisible Sword Qi had actually missed. This was beyond Yue Yang's expectations. Just now, right before Yue Yang's Sword Qi exploded at Moqi Xu Ling's head, a Golden Wing had appeared right behind Moqi Xu Ling's back. It pulled him away quick like lightning, making Yue Yang fail at his sneak attack.

Yue Yang's Sword Qi could only cut a few of its golden feathers.

"..." Moqi Xu Ling who had just barely escaped death felt his heartbeat rose up to 300 bpm. Without his Holy Beast's help, his head would have been exploded to bits by this brat.

He rubbed the fresh blood on his face, his heart filled with fury and fear.

Fortunately he had the help of his Holy Beast.

That Golden Eagle-shaped body of energy that had been thrown towards the white-coloured spider net turned around under the orders of the Golden Eagle Holy Beast, continuing its attack towards Yue Yang. Moqi Xu Ling stomped his feet angrily and leapt high up above the ground. He reached out his hands and pointed with his fingers, preparing to crush Yue Yang again within his Domain of Power. He would push him to the ground and let the burning lava burn this Yue Clan Third Young Master alive.

With his Golden Eagle Holy Beast, his speed was more or less the same as Yue Yang.

In terms of strength, as an Innate Level 5, he had confidence to crush Yue Yang down.

“Ssss...” That Fishing Net Spider was also quite loyal. When it saw that Yue Yang had escaped, it immediately leapt to the sky and emitted white-coloured giant spider net to trap Yue Yang all over again. As for that Sand Beast that still continued to revolve in its giant sandstorm, it had also slowly moved in closer towards Yue Yang.

“Die.” Yue Yang shot the ‘Star Explosion’ in his hands.

A streak of meteor shot out as fast as lightning and pierced into the Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider’s body... In that instant, a horrifying loud explosion reverberated through the whole space!

Like a star that had just exploded, the whole ground, rocks, mud, lava and other things disappeared without a trace. The whole of Dimension of Duel was filled with the aftermath of the blast, covered in a sea of fire. Everything had turned into dust! Forget about Moqi Xu Ling, even Yue Yang, the person who activated his Domain of Power, was trembling like crazy. He was terrified, it was like he had just seen the end of the world. He was almost exploded into dust inside this Dimension of Duel by his own move...

The powerful shockwave from the explosion made Yue Yang and Moqi Xu Ling both unable to hear anything.

At this moment, both of their ears had completely lost their ability to hear.

Moqi Xu Ling felt a buzzing in his head and felt like he was about to faint. Even if he was an Innate Level 5, he was thrown several meters back from the shockwave.

In front of him, a fist suddenly shot out towards him, hitting him square in his face. Drips of blood flowed from his nose...

Moqi Xu Ling was unable to open his eyes, he couldn't see at all, but he could feel that his enemy was storing his destructive Star Explosion again.

"Summon grimoire." Right when the second punch was about to hit him, he chose to summon his grimoire and raise his protective shield for defense.

The punch was deflected by the protective shield.

However, one finger had actually pierced inside the protective shield soundlessly. It was pointing right between Moqi Xu Ling's eyebrows.

Once again, the Golden Eagle come to rescue and reacted right in time, moving its owner's body away... Sst! The Sword Qi that was

able to instantly kill an Innate shot through Moqi Xu Ling's scalp, cutting his skin and leaving a terrifying bloody scar. If he was just a thousandth of second late, Moqi Xu Ling's head would have been split open.

The Golden Eagle-shaped body of energy shot towards Yue Yang. It was affected by the huge explosion, its powers has been greatly reduced. However, it was still very strong.

Under the orders of the Golden Eagle Holy Beast, it continued to charge right at Yue Yang.

Or maybe, the Golden Eagle wasn't even hoping of killing Yue Yang, it just wanted to survive!

At a far distance, the Sand Beast that had turned into a gigantic sandstorm became even bigger from the huge explosion. It carried a whole sky full of sand and stormed right at Yue Yang. Moqi Xu Ling realized that the young man in front of him was looking at his beast full of killing intention, and was deeply alarmed in his heart... He didn't manage to recall the Sand Beast when he saw Yue Yang's body flashing straight at the eye of the sandstorm.

In the eye of the sandstorm, everything was calm.

Yue Yang shouted as the Nirvana's Flame on his body shot towards the sky, forming a ten-meter tall Nirvana's Flame... This was one of his Domain of Power, "Nirvana Flame Pillar".

The Sand Beast might have been able to kill anyone in the world with a physical body. Its power could indeed destroy the heavens and the earth.

However, as a element-type beast, it would never be able to fight against the strongest element attack in the whole world – the Nirvana Flame. Under the flames of Nirvana Flame Pillar, its inner core immediately melted down..

Instant Kll!

The Sand Beast's magic core was refined by the Nirvana Flame. It became smaller suddenly, as all of its impurity was removed, leaving only the purest sand element energy inside.

The magic core slowly floated onto Yue Yang's hands.

The Golden Eagle-shaped body of energy also didn't seem to be effective under Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame. It caught fire and immediately burnt into nothingness.

Moqi Xu Ling's knees felt weak and he immediately fell to the ground... His enemy was simply too strong. This kind of enemy, he would definitely not be able to win against him. His provocation towards him just now was really an extremely foolish thing to do. His plan of going into the Dimension of Duel to hide his own abilities, turned to be digging his own graveyard... These two Domain of Power that Yue Yang had, only someone with the powers of Innate Level 7 and above could master them. However, this young man in front of him that was barely Innate Level 1 could

actually use them easily...

Could he even fight against this kind of enemy?

Moqi Xu Ling watched in horror as Yue Yang drew a circle with his hands as he chanted a chant. Countless dark golden, gold and silver runes started to appear and shone mysteriously and radiantly like the Milky Way. In Yue Yang's hands, a World Exterminating Wheel that was revolving non-stop slowly took shape... When Moqi Xu Ling saw all these, he felt complete despair and hopelessness.

His expressions turned ashen and his whole body couldn't stop trembling.

Three types. This brat actually had three kinds of unrivalled Domain of Power.

It was not that there wasn't any Innate who could use the World Exterminating Wheel. However, there was definitely no Innate who could form it with the power of so many runes. That was definitely his Domain of Power!

Star Explosion, Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel. These three Domain of Powers, every single one of them was capable of instantly killing anyone.

Now that he was facing against these three kinds of Domain of Power, how could Moqi Xu Ling not feel despair and utter

hopelessness?

“Go!” Yue Yang raised the World Exterminating Wheel in his hands and was prepared to throw it towards Moqi Xu Ling’s protective shield... Moqi Xu Ling saw his protective shield caving in under his enemy’s attack. It seemed to have the defense of a tissue paper against the onslaught of the World Exterminating Wheel. Just now, the mysterious Sword Qi had already broken through his protective shield once. Now, with the World Exterminating Wheel coming at him, he would definitely meet his tragic end.

‘No, no...’ Moqi Xu Ling released his greatest strength. However, he wasn’t trying to counter-attack, he was only trying to escape.

He was completely terrified by Yue Yang’s killing intent.

In that instant, he was no longer an Innate Level 5 warrior, he was only a terrified, panicked loser who was scared witless.

Moqi Xu Ling had already escaped a hundred metres away in just a tenth of a second, moving even faster than teleportation.

Yue Yang wouldn’t be able to chase after him even with teleportation.

However, Yue Yang’s World Exterminating Wheel that he had thrown could travel faster than any kind of time, speed or space. Moqi Xu Ling watched in fear as it slashed through his body...

Moqi Xu Ling completely lost all hope, he slowly closed his eyes and waited for his death. Just as he was about to be slashed in two, his Golden Eagle Holy Beast had actually saved his life the third time. It blocked the attack with one wing and cushioned its master's body with its other wing. The World Exterminating Wheel slashed across the Golden Eagle Holy Beast's wing and cut across Moqi Xu Ling's body from his left shoulder to his right abdomen... What the Golden Eagle Holy Beast could do was merely use all of its abilities and keep its master alive.

Moqi Xu Ling lost half of his body, but his head was still preserved due to his Golden Eagle Holy Beast's sacrifice.

He was still alive!

The Gold-ranked Level 10 Golden Eagle Holy Beast voluntarily came out of Moqi Xu Ling's body. It raised its broken wings and blocked right in front of Yue Yang.

Even at the last second, it was still protecting its master.

This is what Guardian Beast is!

This is the Guardian Beast that would never betray its master!

If Yue Yang didn't have Star Explosion, Nirvana Flame or World Exterminating Wheel, three kinds of Domain of Power that was impossible to defend against, the Golden Eagle Holy Beast would have continued to fight... However, right now, there was no more

meaning to fighting. It was only hoping to protect its master until its final breath. It wanted to die before its master.

Xiao Wen Li suddenly floated out of Yue Yang's body, bathed in rainbow light.

Her eyes that could speak a thousand words looked unblinkingly at the Golden Eagle Holy Beast's wing that had been slashed off on the ground.

Her little hands were cupped together as she bowed towards the Golden Eagle Holy Beast, like a warrior greeting another warrior. Similarly, that Golden Eagle Holy Beast bent its wings and bowed, bowing respectfully at Xiao Wen Li.

It turned around and looked at Moqi Xu Ling who was nearing death.

Its eyes were filled with a human's complicated feelings, it looked like love, or pity...

"I'm sorry, Sha Sha, I was wrong!" hot tears flowed out of Moqi Xu Ling's eyes as he cried out towards his Golden Eagle Holy Beast, "My wild schemes has caused your death. If only I have agreed with you and returned home at that time, all of this would not have happened. It was my fault for craving the Emperor of Zhi Wei's seat. I was too jealous of Shun Tian who possessed everything. My greed has harmed you to die! I'm sorry, Sha Sha, I'm so sorry..."

Bathed in a golden light, the Golden Eagle Holy Beast slowly changed its appearance to become a beautiful woman who looked to be in her thirties.

One of her arms had been slashed off, fresh blood flowed out endlessly out of her wounds.

She first shook her head at Moqi Xu Ling, then bowed to Xiao Wen Li the second time.

She then pierced her right hand deep into her heart.

Her long and sharp fingernails pierced straight through her heart... She fell down right into Moqi Xu Ling's arms. She looked at him emotionally at her last moment, not saying anything, before she slowly closed her beautiful pair of big eyes.

Moqi Xu Ling wailed painfully, his voice was beyond bereaved.

Tears of regret continued to flow down.

He had originally possessed a power that ordinary people would envy him for. He had a woman who would rather die in his arms than anywhere else. He had love and happiness that other people could only hope for, but everything was destroyed because of his greed.

“Kill me now... I can't let Sha Sha wait for me too long. I owed her too much!” Moqi Xu Ling cried out loudly.

Xiao Wen Li's Dual Icicle Blades slashed like falling snow.

With one slash, she cut off Moqi Xu Ling's head.

After killing off Moqi Xu Ling, she turned around and hugged Yue Yang who was waiting for her tightly, hot tears flowing out of her big eyes. Yue Yang slowly wiped it away from her face. Hugging her tightly, he kissed her forehead and said, "We must remember today. We must learn from other's mistakes, don't let our happiness slip away from our hands. We must become stronger and defeat all of our enemies. We must not let others stop us..."

"Unn!" Xiao Wen Li nodded obediently before she raised her Dual Icicle Blades to the sky, shouting loudly.

Her voice showed her bottomless fighting spirit, as if she was responding to Yue Yang's words.

Become stronger and defeat all of their enemies!

Her Diamond Grimoire suddenly appeared and the Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga, and a Serpent Demoness General that Yue Yang had never seen before also appeared in front of them. The Serpent Demoness General was also carrying a Dual Icicle Blade, but the Serpent Demoness General's Dual Icicle Blade was ten times larger than Xiao Wen Li's. The icy coldness that it emitted was terrifying. The moment she appeared, the ground that was still burning in flames immediately become frozen, turning the whole space into a blizzard hell.

This Serpent Demoness General looked like Xiao Wen Li in terms of appearance, but she looked more mature and dignified, as if she was a great general in a war.

Her body was covered in a platinum armor that was engraved with Heaven and Ancient Runes.

This mighty-looking Serpent Demoness General was actually one of Xiao Wen Li's Guardian beast, the Ice Serpent Demon.

Following Xiao Wen Li, the Stone-element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon all raised their weapons and shout out to the sky.

A ray of multi-coloured light suddenly rose up from Xiao Wen Li's body. On the Diamond Grimoire and the four beasts' body, five pillars of similar-looking dark golden light suddenly rose up, surrounding the multi-coloured light pillar in the middle. The group of light formed a giant pillar of light that shot endlessly towards the sky.

"Did she level up?" Yue Yang discovered in surprise that Xiao Wen Li had finally levelled up.

Xiao Wen Li had not shown any signs of levelling up no matter how many strong enemies had been defeated. Xiao Wen Li had only levelled up once when they were trying to pick the Starlight Indigo Grass and accidentally activated a Runic Circle. After such a long time, she finally levelled up again and become Diamond-

ranked Level 3.

Although this was a level up, it was extremely slow.

However, Xiao Wen Li's powers would greatly increase every time she levelled up... Yue Yang was really curious whether this Xiao Wen Li was actually a Mythical Beast. She could even be a Transcending Mythical Beast. She must have a different requirements for levelling up than other beasts, which was why it took her so long to level up! She was Empress Fei Wen Li's precious daughter, it would really be unbelievable if she was like an ordinary beast!

Yue Yang wasn't able to see clearly how Xiao Wen Li looked after she levelled up, because she immediately jumped into his arms and kissed his cheeks happily. It was as if she had scored 100 in her test and couldn't wait to tell her father about it.

Yue Yang was so touched that he almost cried. With daughter in hand, the world is mine!

Chapter 285 – Thorny Flower Demoness VS Tong Tian Beast

After Xiao Wen Li level up, she grew taller a little. However, she was still a cute and adorable loli.

Yue Yang was very patient, he didn't mind if she was still a little loli. Take your time growing up, I will be able to indulge my inner [Queer Uncle](#) a little more. He then thought about Empress Fei Wen Li. When he could finally rescue Empress Fei Wen Li out of the Black Hole Dimension, he would then be able to hold an Empress in his left, a little loli in the middle, and a Sword Goddess in his right. That kind of blissful life... He would become very happy just by thinking about it!

(Shiro: Queer Uncle – referring to a young to middle-aged male pedophile (Internet slang))

Carrying the sweet little loli, he gave those rosy cheeks a few fierce kiss.

Seeing her smile that was filled happiness, Yue Yang had this feeling of accomplishment in his heart. Would Queer Uncle attack just anyone under the sun? Of course not!

“I have decided, I will become a respectable Queer Uncle... No, I mean, I want to be happy!” Yue Yang declared his great ambition.

“Unn, unn!” The little loli nodded spiritedly, not realizing her own fate when she grew up.

Next, it was time to clean up the battlefield.

The Gold-ranked Level 8 Sand Beast's magic core was already at hand, and Yue Yang had already refined it with his Nirvana's Flame. The other Gold-ranked level 8 Fishing Net spider's corpse were completely shredded and scattered. Yue Yang had to search for a long time before he could finally find a magic core buried beneath all the sand and dust. The Stone-element Medusa seemed to be very interested with the magic core. She kept on looking at it, waiting impatiently. Yue Yang was speechless. This is a spider's core and you are a Medusa, you guys are completely of different species, you know... However, Yue Yang wouldn't be stingy about a Gold-ranked Level 8 magic core. He threw the magic core to the Stone-element Medusa.

The Stone-element Medusa immediately fuse the magic core into her Golden Bow, then absorbed the Fishing Net Spider's Poison Sac into her stomach.

A pillar of dark golden light shot up to the sky.

Purple, green and white light, three kinds of different coloured light shone out from the Stone-element Medusa's Golden Bow.

In the end, the light turned into three different-coloured arrows.

Yue Yang could see with his Level 5 Divine Vision that the Stone-element Medusa had levelled up. Furthermore, it had also evolved. After absorbing with the fake Nirvana Flame in Gemini Temple,

the Stone-element Medusa had a kind of fire-element attack. Although it was incomparable to the real Nirvana's Flame, it was still extremely powerful for normal enemies. It was the Nirvana Flame that the Gemini Temple had created after all, the imitation Nirvana Flame was also quite terrifying! Right now, the Golden Bow had also absorbed the magic core of a Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider and completed the requirement of an evolution. Other than stone and fire-element that the Stone-element Medusa had previously, a poison and spider net element attributes were also added... The Stone-element Medusa was unmistakably the weakest one amongst the four Guardian Beasts that Xiao Wen Li had, but right now, her powers had shot through the roof, overtaking the Storm Mermaid and getting closer to the Thunder Naga.

The old fox's experimental Dimension of Duel had been completely destroyed.

The whole sky and ground were all covered in dust.

There were no more hills, rocks or magma. Everything had been crushed into fine powder.

When Yue Yang packed Moqi Xu Ling's body, the Golden Eagle Holy Beast 'Sha Sha' that had transformed into human had completely disappeared, as if she had never appeared before.

The moment its master die, a Guardian Beast would turn into nothingness. It wouldn't be able to be resurrected anymore!

The Storm Mermaid might not fancy the Dimension of Duel that was filled with fire and dust, hence she blew into her Storm Conch and summon a rainstorm and giant tsunami, sweeping through the whole Dimension of Duel.

In less than two minutes, the rainstorm and tsunami had submerged the whole of Dimension of Duel under water.

After many great battles, the Storm Mermaid's summoning ability had also levelled up, becoming even more powerful. When the Dimension of Duel was submerged in water, the Stone-element Medusa had even summoned the Gold Tiger Shark that she had contracted, letting it swim freely inside for a while. It had been a while since the Gold Tiger Shark came out to play, it cheerfully swallowed the Fishing Net Spider's corpse remains. Although there were no magic cores, the Gold Tiger Shark was more than satisfied to be able to eat a Gold-ranked Level 8 Fishing Net Spider.

“Leave this fellow here, let's go out now!” Seeing the Gold Tiger Shark enthusiastically enjoying his meal, Yue Yang thought to simply leave this greedy fellow that couldn't fight at all behind.

On the mountainous road towards the Yue Clan Castle.

When Yue Yang was busy secretly meeting Empress Fei Wen Li in the Black Hole Dimension and killing Moqi Xu Ling, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the others were fighting a deadly battle with Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears. As for Hui Tai Lang, Thorny Flower Demoness and the Golden Beast, they were as powerful as their masters, completely overpowering their enemies.

The Gold-ranked Level 9 King of Black Light, Gold-ranked Level 6 Giant mammoth, and the Gold-ranked Level 6 One-eyed Giant had completely met their tragic end.

The King of Black Light was originally very powerful.

Before that cute, adorable and innocent-looking Thorny Flower Demoness appeared, it was an invincible existence in the battlefield, no other beast was its match. If one were to use a phrase to describe it, it would be described as – “He whose fist is bigger will be the big boss.” The Gold-ranked Giant Lightning Mammoth, the One-eyed Giant who knew combat skills, the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle whose defense was number one under the sky, the two menial work slaves puppets, Fatty Hai who could turn into a Behemoth Monster and Xue Tan Lang who was as cold as ice were all not the King of Black Light’s match at all.

The King of Black Light only needed to bash around, its thirty-metre tall body and its house-sized fists were more than enough to make him the big boss of the whole battlefield.

However, when the slender, beautiful Thorny Flower Demoness appeared, the arrogant fellow finally met its tragic end.

From the outside, it seemed like it didn’t even need to use more than its little finger to squash the Thorny Flower Demoness.

However, the moment the King of Black Light saw the Thorny Flower Demoness, it immediately retreated in fright.

As a Gold-ranked Level 9 beast, although it wasn't a Holy Beast that had intelligence, it understood who was its nemesis and what was dangerous... If it could choose its enemies, the King of Black Light would rather fight a human Innate than fight against this Thorny Flower Demoness.

A flower-like wings appeared on the Thorny Flower Demoness, and she floated to the sky.

With a movement of her hand, countless giant thorny flower vines and trunks shot out from the ground. There were more than thousands of vines, easily drowning the whole mountainous road with sea of flowers. The vines then grew and interweaved together to form an enormous vine giant. It had a body and a head, hands and legs, and was as tall as the King of Black Light, maybe even slightly bigger.

The appearance of the vine giant announced the start of the tragic life of the King of Black Light.

Firstly, this vine giant was immune to physical attacks. The King of Black Light's fists had no effect smashing onto the vine giant's body at all.

On the other hand, the King of Black Light had to struggle with all of its life's worth in order to break free of the vine giant's vines the moment it coiled around the King of Black Light.

From the ground, countless vines continued to shoot out,

destroying the ground as they wrapped around the King of Black Light's feet, dragging its feet and making its body tumble down onto the ground. The King of Black Light tried to break free, but its legs were wrapped around thousands of thick vines, completely bound within its thorough coiling. Although the King of Black Light possessed a powerful strength, its might was useless in front of this twisting and coiling vines.

“My god, that girl is simply too scary!” Fatty Hai was completely frightened by the Thorny Flower Demoness. Fortunately she was Yue Yang's beast. If she were their enemy, Fatty Hai couldn't even imagine the consequences.

“...” Forget about Fatty Hai, even Shun Tian, who was watching the battle from afar, the Emperor of Zhi Wei, had a complex expression on his face.

Right now she wasn't a Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen yet, but it could easily defeat the King of Black Light.

If he let her evolve into Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, wouldn't she be even more terrifying? Shun Tian wasn't able to eliminate the Thorny Flower Demoness with Phoenix Fairy Beauty glaring beside him like a tiger, he felt really gloomy inside. He had the confidence to eliminate the Thorny Flower Demoness right now, because she had not truly mature yet. If he waited until she evolve into Golden Crown Thorny Queen, she would definitely be a thorn in his plans!

The Thorny Flower Demoness battle against the King of Black Light continued.

The vines were effective in smothering the King of Black Light's movements, but they were not enough to kill it.

The King of Black Light was a Rock Giant, it didn't need to breathe and its body was as hard as a meteorite, unrivalled in its hardness. Its special attribute made it immune to physical attacks and coiling attack. Even siege equipments that would normally be used to attack castles wouldn't have any effect on it. It would probably only feel a tickle from that, it was completely immune to physical attacks.

Then how could the King of Black Light be killed?

If Fatty Hai were to think about the answer to this question, he wouldn't be able to answer even after ten years.

Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo were also thinking about the question. They knew that the Thorny Flower Demoness was the nemesis of the King of Black Light, but they were not able to think of a good idea in a short time.

The Thorny Flower Demoness was also nibbling her thumb cutely, tilting her head slightly to the side as she thought for a way out.

Her thinking expression made Shun Tian felt really jealous.

A beast that could think... How far was it from becoming a Holy

Beast? Even if the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was not an intelligent Holy Beast, she would still be a terrifying existence. If she could become a Holy Beast, her powers would not only be two or three times more powerful, she could even be ten times more powerful than right now! At that time, it would definitely be very difficult to kill her then!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty continued to stare at him, her face full of smiles. However, an intense killing intent was hidden behind that smile, as if she was ready to attack any time.

Shun Tian had no other choice, he could only repress his killing intent.

The Thorny Flower Demoness suddenly seemed to have thought of a way. The King of Black Light finally met its tragic end.

Countless vines rose from the ground, growing high up to the sky, creating a lush and dense forest. The King of Black Light which was bound on the ground was suddenly lifted up to the sky by the ten thousands of vines rising from the ground. Then, there were a number of vines pulling at its four limbs...

“Great idea!” Xue Tan Lang smiled as he praised her out loud.

“What is it?” Fatty Hai still couldn’t understand.

“Fool, the King of Black Light is an earth-attribute beast. On the ground, its powers were far stronger, and it could absorb the

earth's power endlessly. Although it wouldn't be able to absorb much, the Thorny Flower Demoness wouldn't be able to squash it and kill it because of that, hence they would continue to be in deadlock." Ye Kong had a great revelation.

"Away from the ground, she had cut off the King of Black Light's ability to absorb earth energy. The King of Black Light wouldn't be able to replenish its energy, and since the Thorny Flower Demoness was its nemesis, she would be able to absorb the energy on its body and hasten the exhaustion of King of Black Light's energy. Seems like the King of Black Light's defeat is only a matter of time now." The Prince of Tian Luo knew that the King of Black Light was destined to die, but he thought that as a Gold-ranked Level 9 beast, the King of Black Light was still a mighty existence, it would probably be able to endure for quite a long time.

(Shiro: [Chinese beliefs of five elements](#) – water, wood, fire, earth and metal. Wood conquers earth, hence Thorny Flower Demoness is the King of Black Light's nemesis.)

Countless thorny flowers started to drill into the King of Black Light's body.

Giant, ugly flower mouths also sprouted out from the vines, absorbing the energy of the King of Black Light little by little.

This kind of attack was very slow and had a weak effect, but it was enough to terrify the King of Black Light. It startled to struggle with all of its might, doing its best to struggle free from the entanglement of the vines. However, its struggles were fated to be futile. Maybe it would still be a long time before it die, but in the end, this kind of struggles would be useless!

In the Yue Clan Village ruins.

Gold-ranked Level 6 One-eyed Giant was shouting in pain miserably.

Its only eyes had been clawed out by Hui Tai Lang. The One-eyed Giant was rolling on the ground, holding its eyes in pain as it let out a miserable wail that made others' hairs stand on its ends.

Its eyes was the One-eyed Giant's greatest weakness... Hui Tai Lang's methods were ruthless! However, the Golden Beast was even more ruthless. Definitely not a vegetarian, it immediately gnawed at the One-eyed Giant's skull, making a huge hole. The One-eyed Giant's skull split open as the sound of skull crushing resounded through its ears.

The little Golden Beast didn't care whether the One-eyed Giant was dead or alive, it only cared about using the shortest way to get its magic core.

It was not the first time that it ate through an enemy's skull to get into its magic core.

Bone Dragon, Giant head... it would bite everything under the sun, regardless of race!

Hui Tai Lang was happy teaming up with this little Golden Beast. The Golden Beast was in charge of eating the One-eyed Giant's

skull while Hui Tai Lang savoured its four limbs, hence, it wouldn't disturb the little Golden Beast from devouring the One-eyed Giant's skull.

The little Golden Beast wanted to eat the magic core, but without its master's approval, Hui Tai Lang knew that it would vomit it out again.

They would get reward based on their merit.

Hui Tai Lang heard Yue Yang saying this phrase before, and it understood its meaning. He meant that the more work they do, the happier their master would be and the more rewards he would give them!

Under the situation of trying to garner more merit, Hui Tai Lang was more than happy to team up with the little Golden beast. The One-eyed Giant had really met its tragic end, becoming the first sacrifice to be offered to Yue Yang. At the same time, the Gold-ranked Level 6 Lightning Mammoth was frightened to death. It wanted to escape, but it was blocked by the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, who was trying to prove to it that Normal-ranked beast could also be awesome too!

The Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle stopped the Lightning Mammoth.

Although its powers were way below the Lightning Mammoth, its unrivalled defense was still enough to stop the Lightning Mammoth at the mean time.

Of course, there were also the two menial work slaves, Optimus Prime and Megatron.

Although they didn't have any attacking power, they were quite suitable to be named "Human Walls".

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers, Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo and the others saw that they had an opportunity to show off their strength. All of them didn't stand on ceremony and showed off their moves.

The Lightning Mammoth was heavily outnumbered, it was already its fate to suffer a defeat.

Its master, Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears, was extremely furious. He was about to fly over and save his beast, but with his innate sense, he suddenly sensed danger from behind him. Turning around, he saw a terrifying, deadly white aurora shooting straight towards him.

Shun Tian didn't care about Kai Yang, the One-eyed Giant or the Gold Mammoth's life and death. The only one that he cared about was the Thorny Flower Demoness.

The Thorny Flower Demoness couldn't defeat her enemy even after a long time.

Suddenly, she nibbled her fingers and started to think again.

As Shun Tian continued to watch her, his eyes turned colder and colder. She suddenly clapped her hands in happiness, as if she had thought of a good idea. She flapped her flower-like wings, flying beautifully towards the One-eyed Giant's head and caught the little Golden Beast that was still violently gnawing at the One-eyed Giant's skull.

The little Golden Beast turned into a sharp dark golden blade in her hands.

When the Thorny Flower Demoness held the dark golden blade, flapped her wings, and flew towards the King of Black Light, Shun Tian's poker face finally crumbled down. He showed a surprised expression as he asked, "Transformation? That beast that is sharing one body with its master, that little Golden Beast, could it actually be the 'Tong Tian Beast'?"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed coldly and said, "Lord Shun Tian, don't you think changing 'Tong Tian Beast' to 'Tong Tian Mythical Beast' would make it sound more appropriate for it?"

At this time, Shun Tian's face had completely changed. Jealousy and greed flashed across his eyes. He turned around and looked at the Phoenix Fairy Beauty as he asked in surprise, "What did you say? Did you mean that that little Golden beast had already contracted a grimoire? Has it fulfilled the criteria to become a Mythical beast already...? No, this is impossible!"

"Of course it has not right now, but who would know what will

happen in the future!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty revealed a dimple in her smile, but her eyes were filled with killing intent that became more intense with time.

She was waiting for the right time to attack.

For example, at the time when Yue Yang finally return.

Chapter 286 – Innate? Nothing Wrong In Killing Them!

Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears was squarely hit by Luo Hua City Mistress' Aurora sneak attack.

Although his face became filthy with grime, he was still an Innate Level 2 warrior, hence his body quickly recovered from his injuries. Only his clothes were destroyed, making him looking dishevelled. With regards to Luo Hua City Mistress sneak attack, Kai Yang was extremely furious. He immediately summoned a Sinister Spitting Worm Beast. Its extremely long and thick body looked like an oversized maggot. It opened its ugly mouth and let out a black ball.

Ye Kong accidentally saw that there was something wrong over there and quickly ran over. Seeing that the black ball did not look like an energy ball, but look like a normal ball, he tried poking it courageously.

Kaboom!

A loud explosion resounded.

The black ball exploded loudly right at Ye Kong, sending him flying away.

“Have a great journey in your afterlife!” Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears flew down from the sky quickly and caught up with Ye

Kong who was thrown in the air. He clutched Ye Kong's chest and burst his Innate Qi.

“No!” Fatty Hai saw Kai Yang's movements, but he wasn't fast enough to save Ye Kong. When he finally reached Ye Kong, Ye Kong had already been shot to the ground by Kai Yang's Innate Qi. Fatty Hai knew that an Innate Ranker's attack was not something an ordinary warrior could defend against. Even if Ye Kong's body had the enhancement of his King Kong Demon Ape, getting hit by an Innate Ranker's attack would definitely not bode well for him... Fatty Hai was filled with grief and indignation as he shot his Hippo Meteor Punch right at Kai Yang's back.

“Annoying bunch of ants!” Kai Yang felt a slight pain at his back. He was completely angered by Fatty Hai's attack.

If he wasn't an Innate, if he was a Level 8 Emperor instead, he would probably be heavily injured internally and vomiting blood.

Fatty Hai looked like he was only a Level 6 Elder at the most, but he was able to let out a Level 7 Overlord's punch. Other than becoming furious, Kai Yang was also quite curious. How could a fatty have such a quick speed and strength?

Kai Yang's reactions were very quick, he immediately swept a turning kick right at Fatty Hai's chest.

Fatty Hai flew to the ground like a cannonball, smashing with a loud explosion.

In the sky, Princess Qian Qian's great sword heavily smashed at Kai Yang's head.

Her sword qi was like a giant white tiger, fiercely smashing on Kai Yang's head. At this time, her Emperor Sword Qi, White Tiger Power and Heaven Runes all joined together, exploding right at Kai Yang's head. Even if he was an Innate Ranker with an extremely high defense, he felt disoriented and saw stars in his eyes. This slash of sword was filled with the energy that Princess Qian Qian had stored for a long time.

Princess Qian Qian's White Tiger Power, Emperor Sword Qi and Heaven Runes combination attack broke Kai Yang's defense and sent him flying.

Kai Yang vomited blood.

However, he still had energy to counter attack.

He used his right hand to support himself up from the ground, then flew at lightning speed back at Princess Qian Qian.

"Summon grimoire!" Prince of Tian Luo rushed to Princess Qian Qian's front and summoned his grimoire. His protective shield appeared and blocked Kai Yang's attack. Princess Qian Qian picked up her great sword and jumped over the protective shield, slashing at Kai Yang at the moment when he had missed his attack.

"Twenty-fold Snowstorm!" Xue Tan Lang also rush forward to

kill. He joined hands together with the giant snowman that he summoned, smashing the force of a twenty-fold snowstorm onto Kai Yang's right chest. On one side, there was the White Tiger Power, and on the other, there was Twenty-fold Snowstorm. Kai Yang's impatience for revenge had resulted in him being attacked by Princess Qian Qian, Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang... However, his body that had suffered heavy blows was still enduring fine. Bursting his Innate strength, he flew over Xue Tan Lang and Princess Qian Qian, laughing out loud as he beat his own chest, roaring madly, "I am an Innate! Ants, can you even do anything to me? Worms who overestimated your own abilities, come! Show me whatever moves you guys have! Before you die, I shall give you guys the last chance to show off how weak you guys are!"

"[Thunderbolt]!"

A loud shout resounded from his ears.

Following that, a lightning shock that was even more terrifying than a bomb exploded right at Kai Yang's left ears.

"[Ice Frost]!"

At the same time, another attack exploded at Kai Yang's right ears. It was [Ice Frost], an attack that was even more powerful than [Thunderbolt]

These was Xue Wu Xia's attack.

Kai Yang's face distorted in pain as he held both of his ears that were bleeding profusely, screaming out miserably. Xue Wu Xia immediately followed with [Crane Dance] and [Swallow Shears] when her attack succeeded, and finally finished with one of her three ultimate moves, [Swan Tread].

Previously, Xue Wu Xia had observed how swans flew over water flawlessly, stepping gracefully on the water surface as they flapped their wings and flew to the sky. By watching this, Xue Wu Xia had an idea of improvising one of the Xue Clan's combat technique and created her own move, [Swan Tread]. Furthermore, under Yue Yang's advice, she had improved it further, making it a stronger kicking move. When Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears was about to counter-attack in fury, Xue Wu Xia's body floated high, her beautiful swan-like pair of legs flew with a power that was as strong as princess Qian Qian's slashes. She kicked at Kai Yang's face eighteen times at one go..

As Kai Yang's face burst open and his teeth fell out to the ground, she beautifully fly to the sky.

This was Xue Wu Xia's [Swan Tread], the one and only swan dance in the whole world.

Kai Yang was furious. He pushed the ground with his hands, prepared to shot towards Xue Wu Xia like a bullet.

He was an Innate Ranker. If he was beaten to the point that he fell to the ground, he would definitely be the world's greatest joke.

“Awoo!”

A Demon King-like presence suddenly burst out as a Platinum-ranked Level 5 World Exterminating Demon Wolf pushed Kai Yang to the ground forcefully. Its gigantic mouth bit at Kai Yang's head relentlessly as its sharp teeth dug into Kai Yang's throat. Fresh blood bleed out profusely. This was obviously Hui Tai Lang who had been eyeing its innate ranker meal for a very long time.

Kai Yang released his innate qi as he struggled with all he had.

However, Hui Tai Lang was similar to Yue Yang in terms of behaviour. It wasn't afraid of Innates.

It bit him firmly, not even yielding a little bit. Kai Yang tried punching it ten times, and it returned him ten slashes from its claws. Hui Tai Lang's body was heavily injured from the punches, but Kai Yang's chest had also become badly mutilated, some parts of his chest was even clawed to the point his ribs were revealed. Fatty Hai charged forward as if he wanted to throw away his life, tangling his hands and legs around Kai Yang's right arm, with the sole purpose of stopping Kai Yang's right arm movement... On the other side, Ye Kong whose ribs had been broken and was vomiting blood, also charged forward as he roared out loud.

Xue Tan Lang wasn't able to stop them, hence he decided to help by kicking Kai Yang's lower body.

At this point of time, Xue Tan Lang didn't care about dignity or respectability anymore. Following Yue Yang's words, he aimed for

the place where guys would feel the most pain!

Being compassionate to enemies is equivalent to being cruel to yourself!

Kai Yang felt an excruciating pain that almost made him pass out. Fortunately, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong who were injured were unable to stop him. Kai Yang struggled with all of his worth to free himself from the two people and Hui Tai Lang who refused to yield no matter what. When Kai Yang finally managed to tear Hui Tai Lang away from him, it even tore a part of his face and swallowed it into its stomach, treating it as an appetizer before the main course.

At this time, Kai Yang who had lost half of his face, body drenched in blood, ears smashed into pieces, skull broken in and a few broken ribs stood up miserably.

If he wasn't an Innate Level 2 warrior, he would have died long ago.

But he had never been so badly injured in his whole life.

More than that, he had never experienced such an embarrassment in his whole life!

He was a great and respectable Innate, yet he was beaten so badly and miserably...

“All of you, I will definitely kill you!” Kai Yang roared out furiously.

“Whoosh....Kaboom!”

From the sky, there was a meteor that was summoned by the Prince of Tian Luo. It fell at an alarming speed and smashed right into Kai Yang’s body. In that instant, the whole ground shook and dust scattered all around.

When the dust settled, they found that Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears was actually still alive.

He stood up straight on top of the shattered meteorite, bleeding out from every part of his body.

Although he had been hit by a meteor attack, he was only heavily injured, he did not immediately die. He even had some energy left to counter attack. On the other side, Princess Qian Qian who had just finished killing the Sinister Spitting Worm raised her great sword, and with flickers of her sword flash, she shot forward, her sword splitting the air apart. A ten-meter long sword qi, enhanced by her White Tiger Power and Heaven Runes split the air apart and slashed on top of Kai Yang’s head ruthlessly... Kai Yang’s body twitched a little, his hands were still storing up energy, as if he was prepared to unleash one last ultimate attack and die together with everyone.

Xue Tan Lang was about to rush forward to attack, but Xue Wu Xia suddenly floated back down to the ground and shouted,

“Everyone get away from here, I’ll finish him!”

In the sky, heavy snow rained down, along with her descent.

Even Xue Tan Lang wouldn’t be able to summon a Fifty-fold Snowstorm, but Xue Wu Xia summoned it easily, smashing it right onto Kai yang’s head. Kai Yang raised his right hand and forced his innate strength to collide against the Snowstorm. His face that was dripping with blood revealed a sinister looking expression as he laughed maniacally, “If I should die, all of you must accompany me to die! All of you, none of you will live!”

Kai Yang was completely in despair, he was prepared to commit suicide bombing. He increased his innate strength relentlessly, so much that even his stomach started rumbling.

Everyone immediately retreated.

However, this shameless Kai Yang had actually charged towards the horse carriage.

In the horse carriage, there were Yue Yu, Yue Bing, Yi Nan and Luo Hua City Mistress... Princess Qian Qian and the others were shocked, they immediately charged forward to stop him. Before Princess Qian Qian managed to arrive, suddenly, the Li Brothers who had not spoken at all during the battle appeared from the sides of the horse carriages.

They had never forgotten their responsibility of protecting the

horse carriage. Unless they die, Kai Yang would never be able to go past them. They stood right in front of the horse carriage!

The Li Brothers attacked Kai Yang harmoniously, each of them grabbing hold of one of Kai Yang's arms.

They moved right at the same time, and carried Kai Yang up.

Carrying Kai Yang who had become half-crazed, they jumped towards the Yue Clan Village ruins at a distance, away from the horse carriage and their comrades who were desperately pursuing them.

Fatty Hai charged forward madly as he roared, "Bastards, that fellow is mine! Let him go now!"

Ye Kong didn't say anything because his mouth was filled with blood that he vomited from stress and fury.

Luo Hua City Mistress bit her lips tight. She had already stored her Aurora and could unleash it at Kai Yang at any time. However, the Li Brothers' were in the way, making her unable to unleash her attack! In the sky, even faster than Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia had teleported and managed to catch up to the Li Brothers and Kai Yang who was about to explode. On her forehead, the mysterious Runic Circle that was hidden had re-appeared once again, escalating her Yin Power to the maximum... Her snow-white hands pierced straight through Kai Yang's back.

The thing that her hands had captured was Kai Yang's bloodied heart.

"It's too late! All of you must die!" In the midst of excruciating pain, Kai Yang from the Seven Great Bears let out a smug, malevolent laughter.

"Oh, really?" Xue Wu Xia replied with a cold smile.

The heart in her hands had turned into an ice block from the coldness of her Yin Power. In Xue Wu Xia's grasp, the frozen heart immediately shattered into countless pieces of ice.

Starting from Kai Yang's chest, an unstoppable ice frost started to spread rapidly throughout his whole body. If it weren't for the Li Brothers quick reaction, letting Kai Yang go just in time, they would probably be frozen in ice too. Xue Wu Xia unleashed another round of [Crane Dance] and sent a flying kick at Kai Yang's frozen body, using the momentum to retreat back to the ground... Kai Yang who smashed heavily onto the ground finally detonated. Countless blocks of ice exploded outwards, splashing everywhere through the sky and the ground.

Under the freezing power of Xue Wu Xia's Yin Power, the explosion effect had been greatly reduced.

The Li Brothers who had been blasted away by the shock wave was caught by Ye Kong and Fatty Hai... Ye Kong and Fatty Hai didn't say another word and started to beat up Li Qie and Li Ge badly, before hugging them together tightly... At the last moment,

they had tried to sacrifice themselves to protect the rest of their friends. This proved that they were truly brothers-in-arms!

The One-eyed Giant who was heavily injured let out a painful howl as it died.

On the other hand, that Lightning Mammoth whose head had been beat up badly was still fine.

The reason was that when its master, Kai Yang, had been surrounded by enemies, it, who didn't have much loyalty in the first place, had already betrayed its master.

It hid on one side, not daring to become enemies with Princess Qian Qian and the rest... Furthermore, it was also very smart. It did not choose to run. Otherwise, Hui Tai Lang wouldn't mind eating a mammoth's meat for once!

At this time, Shun Tian who was floating on top of Yue Clan Castle felt so embarrassed that he covered his face with his hands, unable to bear watching any further. A highly respectable Level 2 Innate, Kai Yang, who was proclaimed as the number one of the Seven Great Bears, had actually been defeated by a bunch of kids. It wasn't that he wanted to deny the abilities of Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, and the rest of them, he just felt that Kai Yang was simply too weak. This kind of Innate, he really wasn't of much use dead or alive!

Shun Tian was still very calm right now, because he still had his traps laid out inside the Yue Clan Castle. Even without Moqi Xu

Ling, Kai Yang and Yao Guang, he would still be alright.

As the mastermind, he had never had much hope for his useless subordinates. He would always be able to carry out his plans without them.

If it wasn't for the presence of Tian Fa here, Shun Tian wouldn't even care about whatever that happened in front of him.

The Thorny Flower Demoness who had turned the little Golden Beast into a long sword was still chopping at the King of Black Light piece by piece, trying to carve out its magic crystal. When she finally dug out the huge magic crystal, she smiled happily like a flower blossom. Carrying the heavy magic crystal in her hands, she flew up and down happily in the sky, her flower-like wings flapping enthusiastically.

The little Golden Beast's eyes were completely crazed, it almost drooled as it looked at the magic crystal.

It transformed itself into a winged-beast and flew around a little clumsily, following the Thorny Flower Demoness, as if it wanted to swallow the magic crystal whole... The King of Black Light was still alive, but the Thorny Flower Demoness and the little Golden Beast had completely forgotten about him.

Boom!

The King of Black Light's body let out a loud sound as its giant

torso broke apart into pieces.

“Eh?” Shun Tian saw that something was wrong. Why did the King of Black Light die? Could it be that its master, Moqi Xu Ling, that Moqi Xu Ling who thought that he was smart enough to hide his Innate Level 5 power without anyone knowing about it, had actually died by the hands of the Yue Clan Third Young Master? Not even an hour has passed. Had the Innate Level 5 Moqi Xu Ling died just like that?

Shun Tian groaned out a little. Seems like he had to start the second part of his plan early.

He didn't look below and immediately descended onto the Yue Clan Castle.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty also descended onto the horse carriage. Ignoring Fatty Hai and the others' perverted drooling gazes as they looked at her, she comfortably sat on top of the horse carriage, her snow-white legs dangling in the air. Her toenails that had been dyed in Balsam extract swayed lightly and leisuredly from side to side.

Luo Hua City Mistress of course recognized Phoenix Fairy Beauty. She opened the curtain of the horse carriage and looked at her.

Princess Qian Qian raised her great sword and swung it at Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others, sending them all flying away. Even Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang who did not manage to escape in time were not an exception.

In the next moment, brilliant rays of light shone out.

Yue Yang, whose whole body was drenched as if he had just crawled out of a water jar appeared in front of the others, not a single wound in his body. The others, who were originally tensed and worried about him could finally relax. Princess Qian Qian was very happy that he had returned, but she would obviously not show it on the outside. Instead, she humphed out, “Why are you so slow?”

“I have taken a bath and changed my clothes first... What’s wrong? Did I arrive late?” YUe Yang’s snickered mischievously.

“If you come a second later, you would have really been too late. Just now, someone wanted to self-detonate, everyone almost had a tragic ending!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled lightly, as if she was a naughty fox who had sneakily eaten some chickens.

“... Then where the heck did you go to? Can’t you just kill that fellow in one move?” Yue Yang was really annoyed when he heard her.

“I have a heavy responsibility on me. I have to watch those monsters over there.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty pointed towards the Thorny Flower Demoness and the little Golden Beast that were flying all over the sky. “If I hadn’t watch them on your behalf, your two precious babies might have already been snatched away by others! Why don’t you hide your good things to yourself? Revealing them to the public might seduce others to commit

crimes, you know?

“Yeah, they really do seduce others to commit crimes...” Yue Yang’s gaze was fixated on the Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s tall mountains and deep valley, his drool almost dripping out of the corner of his mouth.

“Lend me your ear for a while.” Princess Qian Qian couldn’t stand looking at this scene anymore and started to twist Yue Yang’s ears, saving him from Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s breasts. Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others hurriedly pretended to be good boys, fixing their gazes straight ahead and gulped their saliva back down. However, they understood clearly that this big-breasted beauty was only interested in Yue Yang, not towards them. It’s not good to think too much. They hurriedly cleaned up the battlefield and checked if they could obtain some loots. They had beaten a small boss, an Innate Level 2 warrior after all. Following Yue Yang’s way of speaking, he would definitely have dropped some good items.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian forfeited their rights, they didn’t take part in the splitting of loots.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers, Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang played rock-papers-scissors. Fatty Hai who was extremely lucky emerged victorious.

He chose the Lightning Mammoth that wanted to surrender. He already had two strengthening-type beasts, the Iron Rhinoceros and Little Hippopotamus. If he could have another Gold-ranked Level 6 attack-type Lightning Mammoth, his powers would definitely increase greatly. This was his best choice.

Xue Tan Lang's luck was also not that bad, he came in second.

He chose Kai Yang's Platinum Grimoire. The third winner was Ye Kong. He didn't choose Yao Guang's Platinum Grimoire nor the Gold-ranked Dual Arrow Blade weapon at Yao Guang's waist. Instead, he chose the One-eyed Giant's corpse. On the outside, he explained that he wanted his King Kong Demon Ape to eat the corpse of a Gold-ranked Level 6 One-eyed Giant and see if it could level up. However, in reality, he wanted to give the Platinum Grimoire to Prince of Tian Luo. As for the Gold-ranked Dual Arrow Blade, he wanted to give it to the most suitable wielders, the Li Brothers.

Even though Ye Kong didn't have a good weapon, he still had the Bronze-ranked Giant Pestle that Yue Yang had given him previously. That weapon was acquired with much difficulty from the Gold-armoured Puppet that Lich Suo Ge had summoned after all.

Prince of Tian Luo also chose the Platinum Grimoire, leaving the most valuable Dual Arrow Blade to the Li Brothers, Li Ge and Li Qie, who were the most suitable owners for the blades.

The rest of the loot such as Kai Yang's and Yao Guang's corpse were all hogged by Yue Yang, the corpse hoarder... He did not even let the King of Black Light's corpse off, it was made of Obsidian Meteorite after all. If he managed to refine it well, he would be able to create the highest grade materials of "Metal Essence of the Meteorite" and "Obsidian Emperor Heart". Otherwise, he could still make good quality materials of "Metal Crow Obsidian" and

“Iron Essence of the Meteorite”.

Of course, other than Yue Yang’s Nirvana’s Flame, other people would just be dreaming if they wanted to refine the King of Black Light’s corpse into “Metal Essence of the Meteorite”.

“Bring those to me!” Like a slave owner, Yue Yang started exploiting his beasts.

“Boohoo...” The Thorny Flower Demoness handed the King of Black Light’s magic crystal over to her evil master reluctantly, with tears on the verge of streaming down her face. It was the magic crystal that she had acquired with much difficulty after all, it would be weird if she didn’t cry.

“Woof!” Hui Tai Lang was used to handing over good stuff, it prioritized gaining its master’s favor by offering him the One-eyed Giant’s magic crystal.

It understood that although its master acted forcefully, he was only strict because he had to manage all of his beasts. When it comes to distributing rewards based on merit, he would still be fair towards them. Whoever worked the hardest would be rewarded the most.

After Yue Yang confiscated all the magic crystals, he pointed towards the Yue Clan Castle and shouted like an evil Hitler, “If you want to eat these crystals, go and work hard for it now!”

All at once, Hui Tai Lang, Thorny Flower Demoness and the little Golden Beast raced against each other towards the Yue Clan Castle, trying to overtake each other.

Everyone was speechless.

Just like the saying, “like master, like beasts...”. No matter what kind of good beast it was, it would definitely be led astray in Yue Yang’s hands!

Chapter 287 – Blood Test To Identify Familial Relations?

At the front gate of the Yue Clan Castle.

Like how Yue Yang had brought Fourth Mother to the Yue Clan Castle last time, history repeats itself.

The only difference was that Yue Yang had many followers behind him this time, instead of being accompanied by only his sister last time. Currently, there were Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers, Yue Yang's blood-soaked brothers-in-arms that could give up their lives for him. There were also Yue Bing and Yue Yu, whose life or death were interdependent with him. There were Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang, the two warriors who were unafraid of strong enemies, voluntarily lending their hands to help their future brother-in-law. There were also two other guards from the Yue Clan Branch Families, Lin Lei and Lin Miao... Of course, the most supportive ones were still the determined and united beauties. Yue Yang who had fought his war alone that time was now accompanied by Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Xue Wu Xia and Yi Nan. There were also the Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was extremely interested in him and would rather see him than explore the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian tower with the other Inmates. She was also none other than one of the Great Sky Demons of the Demonic Palace, Tian Fa!

Previously, Yue Yang's enemy was the substitute clan master Yue Shan.

This time, his enemy had become the fake Yue Qiu, who had

easily defeated Yue Shan.

This fake Yue Qiu had come prepared with the backing of various Innates behind him. There was also the extremely strong Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, on their side. That was why Yue Qiu had dared to challenge the guy who had become an Innate at twenty-years old, Yue Yang, who was talented beyond compare.

If Yue Yang, the guy from another world had not come to the Soaring Dragon Continent, if the Yue Clan did not have a descendant like Yue Yang, everything would have completely changed.

Jun Wu You and the other protectors of the Soaring Dragon Continent would have been held captive by the Easter Goblin Tribe, and died in the midst of the chaotic war between the Goblin Tribes. As for the Yue Clan that had thousands of years of history, it would completely collapse under the hands of the fake Yue Qiu... Yue Yang realized that he had inadvertently changed everything. The plan that their enemies had planned for decades or even centuries were completely changed because of his appearance!

Today was the turning point for the future that they would have.

If the fake Yue Qiu won, the Yue Clan would never recover. If Yue Yang won, the Yue Clan would be revived, and the Soaring Dragon Continent would see justice prevailed!

The front gate of the Yue Clan Castle was tightly closed.

Just like a year ago.

“Seems like the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei had a grand plan prepared!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty revealed a cold laugh.

“Since that is the case, we shall wait outside...” Yue Yang was a little shaken. Previously, he had never been able to strongly feel his enemies’ strength. However, after mastering the Fifth Level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, other than his heightened five senses, his sixth sense had also become much sharper. Princess Qian Qian who had the Six Records Inherent Skill also agreed with Yue Yang’s decision.

Her Six Records Inherent Skill could sense that the current Yue Clan Castle was like a colossal, man-eating prehistoric monster.

If they were really to blindly charge inside, they would definitely fall into their enemies’ trap.

Rather than being injured this way, they should just wait outside for their enemy’s reaction and followed through. At least, they would be able to take control of their own situation this way.

Yue Yu and Yue Bing had been following Yue Yang’s warning, they did not leave the horse carriage no matter what happened. They would definitely not give their enemies the chance to attack them. Yue Yang believed that his enemies would try to kidnap the two ladies, because the two of them were the most effective weapons to be used against him... However, Yue Yang would definitely not let his enemies succeed. Especially since the Phoenix

Fairy Beauty had also arrived, Yue Yang had the confidence to handle the whole situation at hand.

“We are fine, don’t waste your spirit qi.” Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers were all suffering from different extents of injuries. Amongst them, Ye Kong’s injuries were the most serious, he had some ribs broken.

Ye Kong felt that he wouldn’t be able to help much in the upcoming battle, hence he didn’t want Yue Yu to waste her energy to heal him.

There would definitely be harder battles ahead. Yue Yu was the only summoner with healing abilities. She must only use her Healing Water Ball at the most critical moments. Ye Kong tried to advise her, but how could Yue Yu sit still and do nothing? She insisted on summoning her Healing Water Ball and healed Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers.

At first, Fatty Hai was heavily injured, but after contracting the Gold-ranked Level 6 Lightning Mammoth, he was able to draw support from the Lightning Mammoth’s great vitality and healed most of his injuries.

Fatty Hai was very happy, a wide smile spread across his face.

Finally, finally he managed to own a Gold-ranked beast... As for the foolish words he had said last time, about how he would only contract Gold-ranked, beautiful female beasts, Fatty Hai decided to forget about it first. Ye Kong also did not tease him in the light of

the upcoming great battle. Instead, he found a big rock and sat down to rest. He wanted to recover his strength in order to fight in the next battle. Yue Yang approached him and quietly threw him a magic crystal... Ye Kong was extremely shocked. He discovered that it was the magic crystal of the Gold-ranked Level 6 One-eyed Giant. Furthermore, Yue Yang had refined it with his Nirvana's Flame, hence the energy inside it was extremely pure.

Yue Yang's Level 5 Divine Vision discovered that Ye Kong's Bronze-ranked Level 5 King Kong Demon ape was in the midst of evolution. If it could eat and digest the energy of a pure magic crystal, it would definitely improve greatly.

The King Kong Demon Ape that was carrying the corpse of the One-eyed Giant suddenly dropped the corpse to the ground.

A waterfall of drool almost flowed out of its mouth.

Its gaze locked onto the Gold-ranked Level 6 magic crystal in its master's hand, not moving even a single inch.

Ye Kong finally snapped back to his senses and gave the magic crystal to the King Kong Demon Ape. Since Yue Yang had given it to him, he wouldn't stand on ceremony and immediately received it.

The King Kong Demon Ape immediately swallowed the magic crystal in one gulp when it received it. Thinking that it could not show its appreciation enough, it excitedly jumped up and down and beat its chest, as it screeched happily. Hui Tai Lang was

annoyed when it saw the King Kong Demon Ape, it barked, “Woof woof!”, at it a few times. It felt that the big gorilla was really foolish. Isn’t it just a Gold-ranked Level 6 Magic Crystal? That thing was completely incomparable to the Eastern Goblin Tribesmen’s Orbs... For the first time, Hui Tai Lang felt that it was much stronger than that foolish ape. It was not the matter of levels or abilities, it was the difference between their intelligence and experience.

Hui Tai Lang felt that its ambitions were far greater than the ape.

Its dream was to eat a Demon King. Could an ordinary beast even dream about that?

As for intelligence, Hui Tai Lang suddenly thought of something that had never crossed its mind before when it looked at the King Kong Demon Ape. This gorilla seemed stupid to it, does it mean that it had become smarter?

Hui Tai Lang didn’t understand how a dog could become smarter than an ape. It looked at Yue Yang and decided that it might be because it had chosen to follow the right master.

Hence, it happily approached Yue Yang and rubbed itself against him.

“If you want to eat an Orb, put up a good fight later, kill all of our enemies!” Yue Yang threw an exceptionally alluring bait to his beasts.

“Unn, unn!” The Thorny Flower Demoness finally learnt how to act obedient and fawn on her master.

“Woof woof woof, meow, awoo...” Hui Tai Lang didn’t know how to speak, otherwise it would definitely replied its master “I guarantee all the work done” confidently. It knew a lot of foreign languages, but human’s speech and voice were too difficult to imitate. On the other side, the King Kong Demon Ape had levelled up from the magic crystal of the Gold-ranked Level 6 One-Eyed Giant. It had skipped Silver-rank completely and became Gold-ranked straight away. It had also levelled up to Gold-ranked Level 3... Two minutes later, due to the the extremely pure magic crystal that had been refined by Yue Yang’s Nirvana’s Flame, the overly pure energy made the King Kong Demon Ape level up again to Gold-ranked Level 4.

It was a pity that its body could only endure an evolution to Gold-ranked Level 4. Otherwise it could definitely level up even more.

Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang were jealous to death when they saw this.

However, since Yue Yang had the ability to refine magic crystals, they were in no hurry.

In the future when there was another beast’s magic crystal that was exceptionally suitable for their beasts, it wouldn’t be too late to find this brother-in-law and asked him to refine it for them... Gold-ranked beasts were definitely going to be deadly baits forever, no warriors could ever say no to them... Of course, that was with the exception of Yue Yang, the abnormal guy whose beasts were

either Platinum or Diamond-ranked!

Beside the horse carriage, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Li Brothers were shouting in joy, rejoicing for the fact that the King Kong Demon Ape had levelled up to Gold-ranked Level 4.

Every warrior would always long for the time when their beasts levelled up.

From the Yue Clan Castle afar, the sound of huge chains resounded as the drawbridge was lowered. With a loud booming sound, it thudded to the ground. The Yue Clan Castle Front Gates were then pushed open by puppet beasts that wouldn't get tired. Following that, a stream of endless elite Clan Guards started pouring out.

Although Yue Yang was not close to these Clan Guards, he could recognize in first glance that these people were from the Yue Clan Branch Families!

Amongst the guards, there was a man of around forty years old who looked like Yue Yang. However, he looked more mature and dignified. The scar on his face added to the rough and staunch look that he gave off. From the outside, this man had a dragon-like presence. He was mature, earnest, dignified, intelligent and had all the good qualities of a leader under the sun. He was indeed a Clan Master material. Most importantly, he gave this indescribable charm that he was a natural-born leader. He attracted others to follow him just by standing there.

On his left, there was a younger man who looked very similar to Yue Yang. However, his skin was slightly tanned.

This young man was also definitely not ordinary. It was obvious that he was one of the elites amongst the younger generation. He gave off a kind of heroic-feeling to the others.

“Seems like they are the fake Yue Qiu and Third Young Master...” Fatty Hai humphed lightly. He discovered that the two fakes had disguised themselves really well. If this fake Yue Yang stand beside the real Yue Yang, other than the difference in their skin tones and the fact that the fake Yue Yang looked a little more mature, they really looked quite similar, no big difference at all.

Other than their behaviour, the greatest difference between the real and fake Yue Yang was their powers.

The fake Yue Yang’s abilities were merely of a Level 6 Elder.

In other people’s eyes, by comparison, the existence of this fake Yue Yang was actually more logical. After all, it was really unbelievable for a person to reach the Innate Realm by twenty years old, like this abnormal Yue Clan Third Young Master! Being able to reach Level 6 Elder at twenty years old was already an impressive feat. Even Yan Po Jun, Feng Qi Sha and other talented younger generations could not reach that level! Only talented younger generations such as the Prince of Zi Jin and Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei could reach the level of Level 6 Elder when they were only twenty years old... Xue Tan Lang looked at the fake Yue Yang and suddenly humphed in a low voice, “He is a Level 6 [Advanced]-Elder with the power of darkness and flames. Leave

that fellow to me!”

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong wanted to try out their newly gained abilities too, but hearing that the fake Yue Yang was a Level 6 [Advanced]-Elder with powers of darkness and flames, they immediately shut off their mouths.

An enemy like that was indeed best left to Xue Tan Lang, the ice cube guy.

Ice is the opposite of fire, Xue Tan Lang is the best person for the job.

Other than the fake Yue Qiu and Yue Yang, there was also the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei Shun Tian behind them, and Heavenly Imperial Guardian representatives that had come to be judges. There was only one from Da Xia, and that was the Ascetic Practice Saint, one of Da Xia’s Heavenly Imperial Guardian. Beside him, there were also Heavenly Imperial Guardian from the Tian Luo Kingdom. There was also only one Heavenly Imperial Guardian. The middle-aged man wore a white long robe and looked like a scholar instead of a Heavenly Imperial Guardian.

On the right and left of the two people, there were two Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the Zhi Jin Kingdom. One of them was tall and and the other one was skinny. The two of them looked like they were as strong as the Ascetic Practice Saint.

In addition, there was also the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder from the Thousand Goblins Sect.

Her appearance made others shiver in fear.

Since the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder from the Thousand Goblins Sect had appeared, wouldn't the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader be somewhere near?

Behind them, there was still a demon-like Innate whose body was covered in flames. Yue Yang had seen him before, this demon-like Innate had called himself a Demon Abyss Traitor. He was very friendly with humans and was willing to stay behind in the Soaring Dragon Continent to live. Yue Yang wasn't very interested in that guy, instead, he was interested in the Marquis of Zhi Jin, who was trying to hide himself behind the demon-like Innate... Yue Yang was never afraid of strong enemies before, but in his mind, he was always more wary of someone with a clever mind than someone with brute strength... The Marquis of Zhi Jin was extremely intelligent and cunning, Yue Yang would rather fight against another Innate than see him again for the second time.

Marquis of Zhi Jin's presence was definitely not a good thing!

The furthest one inside was the only Innate from the Seven Great Bears left, Tian Quan.

His expression was extremely grieved and sorrowful. Two Clan Generals beside him carried a memorial tablet that was created in the last minute each, with the names of "Yao Guang" and "Kai Yang" written on them.

The other side had more than seven Innates... Although Ascetic Practice Saint and the middle-aged scholar would remain neutral or even help Yue Yang, the other side would definitely still have some moves up their sleeves. For example, the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader that had been hiding himself. The presence of Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader alone would already be enough to overwhelm Yue Yang and the others, let alone fighting against so many other Innates...

This battle, forget about ordinary people, even the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was scowling, thinking that it was really unlikely to win.

Yue Yang belonged to that awesome group of people who wouldn't feel an itch even if he was covered in fleas.

He didn't mind facing against many Innates on the other side. The only ones who made Yue Yang felt threatened were three people, the self-titled Great Emperor of Zhi Wei – Shun Tian, the fake Yue Qiu and Marquis of Zhi Jin!

These three fellows were formidable opponents in Yue Yang's heart.

This was because these three people possessed the kind of high intelligence that a normal person wouldn't have. You can't tell whether a person is smart from their face, but a smart person is different from a fool. Of course, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to tell his enemies' IQ with his Level 5 Divine Vision. He was able to tell it by his feeling. The fake Yue Qiu had the ability to bring him so much problems although he wasn't an Innate. The other one was the Marquis of Zhi Jin who was hiding his strength, he must never

ignore him even for a second... Of course, the most frightening one was the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian. This Great Emperor of Zhi Wei was simply too frightening. If he had even the slightest chance, he would definitely kill him with all he had!

The two sides stand on opposite, daggers drawn.

Although Yue Yang's side was weaker, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were filled with fighting spirit. They definitely would not balk away just because their opponents were Innates.

Even Lin Miao and Lin Lei, the two relatives from the Branch Family were doing their best to stand upright. They stood beside Ye Kong and the others in front of the horse carriage. After the battle just now, they had understood a few things.

No matter if they were Innates or not, anyone from the opposite side had the ability of killing them in an instant with one move.

Rather than being a coward and be instantly killed, they would rather stand proud and be instantly killed. They would become a great man who could laugh at their deaths!

If they wanted to be cowards, there would be many opportunities for them to be cowards in their lifetime!

But if they wanted to be heroes, there would only be one moment for them to be heroes... They had made their decision.

“Today, I have invited eight distinguished guests here in order to bear as witness for our Yue Clan.” The fake Yue Qiu started bowing respectfully at the few Innates and three Heavenly Imperial Guardians. “The Yue Clan was truly unfortunate. I, Yue Qiu, as the Substitute Clan Master, reluctantly assumed power in the midst of crisis to bring stability. I will definitely capture anyone who wants to rebel or disguise themselves as fakes. I will protect my Yue Clan so that it will not fall for another thousands of years! Right now, based on the three Heavenly Imperial Guardians’ suggestions, in order to distinguish between real and fake, I, Yue Qiu, under everyone’s approval, will perform a blood test to identify familial relations!”

“Blood test to identify familial relations?” Yue Yang was speechless when he heard that. Does ancient people play with this kind of stuff too?

“I don’t know, will the Substitute Clan Master Yue Qiu agree to a blood test? Mr. Yue Qiu, you have lived in the Demon Abyss for more than a decade, could it be that your blood has been contaminated by the demon race? Are you still Yue Clan’s descendant?” Princess Qian Qian who had the Six Records Inherent Skill would never be fooled. She would be able to tell immediately if someone was sincere or being fake. It would be hard to even conceal a half real and half fake plot from her extremely sensitive observing power.

“Of course. In order to be fair, I have especially invited a friend who was born in the Demon Abyss but was actually a human warrior, Mr. Chi Liao. The blood of a Yue Clan’s descendant is completely different from a Demon’s blood. We will use Mr Chi Liao’s blood as the standard. Every single Yue Clan descendant

would need to drop their blood into this Holy Water Bottle. If there is any kind of abnormal reaction, everyone will be able to bear witness to it, fair and square!” Before the fake Yue Qiu had finished speaking, Yue Yang had completely understood everything.

This was a huge, great conspiracy.

And using blood test to identify familial relations was only the first part of the plot...

Chapter 288 – Yue Yang's Big Comeback!

The blood test to identify familial relations was fairly easy.

On the table, there were three bottles filled with Holy Water. That Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao dripped his blood into the bottle in the middle and set it as the standard. Then, the fake Yue Qiu and Yue Yang, Second Uncle Yue Ling, Yue Yan, Yue Feng, Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Yue Bing could choose the bottle in either left or right to drip their blood. If the reaction was similar to the demon's, then it was obvious that they were not of Yue Clan's descendant.

From the outside, this blood test to identify familial relations seemed to be perfectly fair, no problems at all.

However, as the guy from another world, Yue Yang know that this extremely simple blood test was very easy to manipulate.

The biggest mystery was that why was Yue Qiu so sure that Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Yue Bing's blood would have the same reaction as Chi Liao's blood?

This invisible expectation made them greatly suspicious... If he had not played any kind of tricks, why would he be so sure that everyone not on their side was a Demon? Couldn't it be a human trying to disguise as the Third Young Master? Why must they be of Demon race? If he was using the Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao's blood as an example, wouldn't that mean that the fake Yue Qiu had already foreseen that Yue Yang and the others' blood would have

the same reaction as that Demon Innate Ranker?

“...” Luo Hua City Mistress and Princess Qian Qian shot each other a glance. They thought that Yue Qiu had definitely set up some tricks, but they still didn't understand his real reason.

“Since it's that way, we'll participate in the test.” Yue Yang made a decision.

Refusing the test would give his enemies the excuse to capture him.

As long as he managed to see through this despicable, shameless fakers' schemes during the test, he would be able to turnaround the situation.

Of course, Yue Yang felt that no matter what, there would be no avoiding a falling out with Yue Qiu. The only difference was that whether the Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia and Tian Luo, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the middle-aged Scholar, would have a reason to fight on their side.

The Demon Innate Ranker walked forward and cut a small wound on the palm of his left hand with his sharp nails, dripping his demon's blood into the bottle of Holy Water. The moment the demon blood dripped into the bottle, the originally clear Holy Water inside the bottle immediately boiled, as if a monster was trashing the water inside. The Holy Water inside quickly boiled and formed some steam that rose up to the air...

Everyone had seen it clearly. The demon's blood was not unable to mix with the HOly Water, it would be boiled away the moment it was mixed.

Following that, the fake Yue Qiu came forward.

He cut his finger with a dagger and dripped his blood onto the left bottle. Other than shining slightly, there was no other reaction.

The fake Yue Qiu had also set a very good example, proving that a Yue Clan's descendant's blood would not have any reaction with the Holy Water. Even if there was a reaction, it was only a slight light... Other people would think that Yue Qiu's blood was extremely pure!

Following that was the fake Yue Yang. He dripped his blood on the bottle at the right. His blood also produced a little bit of light.

What does this mean?

This meant that the three Holy Water bottles were all the same, there will be no problem choosing whichever one.

“Next, we would like to see Yue Shan's son, Yue Tian's blood reaction. My older brother Yue Shan had been killed by a demon twenty years ago. When I heard about the news in the Demon Abyss, I thought that no matter what, I will stay alive and return to the Soaring Dragon Continent. This is because I can't let the Yue

Clan fall into a demon's hand. I can't let the Yue Clan be destroyed by people of my generation! Previously, when Elder Zu Zhong and I captured Yue Shan, a demon had appeared and rescued him away... Right now, I want to show everyone the evidence for that!" The fake Yue Qiu clapped his hand as the fake Yue Yang and Yue Yan dragged Yue Tian, whose body had been weakened out. Yue Bao cut a long wound on Yue Tian's finger with a silver knife, and dripped his blood into the left bottle.

"Tss...tsss..."

The Holy Water in the bottle revealed the same reaction that had happened when the Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao had dripped his blood. Steam immediately rose up into the air.

According to this test, there was no doubt that Yue Tian was a devil's spawn.

Yue Tian's face went pale as he fell to the ground disappointedly, as if someone had just pulled his spine out.

Yue Yan, Yue Bao and even Yue Feng, the three Yue Clan descendents then dripped their blood onto the left and right bottles one by one. Everyone of their blood did not have any reaction with the Holy Water at all, only a slight light was produced. Amongst them, Yue Feng's light was the strongest. Yue Yan's blood produced some reaction, but Yue Bao's blood almost didn't have any reaction at all. Everyone could see that amongst the three people, Yue Feng had the most potential as his reaction was the strongest. Seems like the strength of his lineage was also the best.

Yue Yan laughed coldly at Yue Yang and said, “Son of a bitch, it’s your turn now!”

Yue Yang looked up 45 degrees to the sky leisuredly, completely ignoring his arrogant, vile cousin.

“Aren’t you just someone else’s dog? You are so happy becoming someone’s dog, that’s really rare! Yue Yang is too lazy to bother with an idiot like you. As his big boss, it’s really annoying for me to watch you. Yue Yan, you fool, if you have the guts then come out and fight me, see if i don’t beat you up black and blue. If you have no skills then just sit in the corner and wait, don’t be an embarrassment to others. Exposing yourself like this, do you think you are so cool?!” Fatty Hai couldn’t bear hearing Yue Yan’s insult.

“Fatty Hai, do you have an itch in your body? This is our family matters, what business do you have here? If you make me angry, I swear I will cut your flesh and feed it to the dogs!” Yue Yan shouted back furiously.

If Fatty Hai dared to say that kind of words to him a year ago, he would have killed him immediately.

However, the current Fatty Hai was not someone that Yue Yan could kill easily. Forget about Yue Yan, even one of the three Great Killing Stars, Yan Po Jun, could not deal with Fatty Hai. if Yue Yang knew that Fatty Hai had also just contracted a Gold-ranked Level 6 Lightning Mammoth, he would definitely not challenge Fatty Hai for a duel.

That fake Yue Yang assumed the actions of a future Clan Master and stopped Yue Yan, “Fourth Brother, why do you have to lower yourself to the likes of him? With everyone watching, no matter how much ruckus they make, they wouldn’t be able to deny their relations with the demons!”

Yue Yu walked out, her teeth biting her lips.

She firmly spoke with a determined voice, “I’m not a Demon, I’m definitely not. I’m a Holy Water Healing-type summoner!”

Yue Yu definitely would not believe that she was a demon, and she would also not believe that her father was a demon. Although his father was crazy about gaining power and conquering the Yue Clan, he was definitely not a demon... She had also seen Yue Tian’s blood test result just now. Even though the reaction showed that he was a demon, she would definitely not believe that her older brother Yue Tian was a demon. Their enemies had definitely played some kind of tricks.

Although she knew perfectly well something was wrong, she couldn’t see any holes in the situation. The only thing she could do was to use her own blood to prove her father’s innocence.

How could a healing-type summoner with Holy Water attribute be a demon too?

This was definitely impossible!

Yue Yu dripped her blood into the bottle confidently.

At first, there was absolutely no reaction at all... However, a few seconds later, the water in the bottle slowly boiled and produced some steam that almost overflowed out of the bottle.

“Impossible!” Yue Yu was completely dumbstruck. She never thought that her blood would give out the same reaction as the demon’s blood. In that instant, she felt as if her soul had been broken. Was she truly a demon too? Was she truly a demon’s daughter? Like her older brother Yue Tian, was she also a demon’s spawn?

“Haha, let’s see what you have to say now!” Yue Yan laughed out loud.

Yue Yu’s body started to tremble as her tears flowed out unstoppably.

She wanted to deny him, to rebut him.

But her lips trembled unstoppably, she had no way to prove her innocence.

Yue Bing wanted to run down the horse carriage and hug her older sister, but Xue Wu Xia shook her hand, telling her not to come out. Yi Nan hugged her tightly, afraid that she would do something rash and affect Yue Yang’s concentration.

Princess Qian Qian, on the other hand, was worried about her best friend. She immediately rushed out and hugged Yue Yu's trembling body as she comforted her.

Right now, everyone's gaze was fixed right at Yue Yang.

There was no meaning to proving that Yue Tian and Yue Yu were descendants of a demon. Only when Yue Yang was proved to be a demon would this matter truly be settled.

Would Yue Yang agree to the blood test? There was Yue Tian and Yue Yan's blood as sample before him, and then there was the reaction of Yue Yu's demon blood. A lot of people thought that Yue Yang would be very foolish if he agreed to the test, he would just earn himself the name of a demon. Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others all thought this way. Prince of Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang glanced at each other and was about to stop Yue Yang from having the blood test. They had understood that this was a scheme set up by their enemies. It didn't matter if Yue Yang agree or disagree, there would be a trap laid for him. He wouldn't be able to escape his enemies' scheme.

"You don't have the guts to go through the blood test, do you? I already said before, you are the son of a bitch! You are the bastard son of a demon!" Yue Yan mocked Yue Yang ruthlessly.

"Shut up, you retard. There's no place for you to speak here. You are like a fool, becoming someone's lackey so easily. Do you think you can earn your food by becoming a fool? Go away from me,

otherwise I'll kill you in one move!" Yue Yang glared at him with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and blasted Yue Yan away with his Qi.

"You, you..." Yue Yan and Yue Bao were shocked by Yue Yang's glare until they fell to the ground. They were completely scared off. They wanted to refute him and rain curses on him, but they were afraid that Yue Yang would really kill them in one move.

They were very clear about Yue Yang's temperament.

This brat would not be influenced by force or persuasion. In the whole of Yue Clan, other than his grandfather, the Clan Master Yue Hai and the Fifth Elder that had always protected the Fourth House, he didn't care about anyone else at all. When he said he would fight, he would really fight; and when he said he would kill, he would really kill. Even the substitute Clan Master Yue Shan had almost been killed by him at that time. At the New Year's Tournament, in front of the Da Xia Emperor Jun Wu You, he had acted nonchalantly, even stepping on a Southern Floating Mist Sect Elder's head.

Ever since he knew that Yue Yang was an Innate, Yue Yan decided not to provoke this brat any longer.

If Yue Qiu had not returned, brought strong evidences with him and support from many Innates, Yue Yan would definitely not dare to provoke Yue Yang at all.

The fake Yue Yang's gaze turned cold when he saw Yue Yang blasting away Yue Yan and Yue Bao with just the power of his gaze

alone.

There was a hint of jealousy that crossed his eyes.

In comparison, this Level 6 Advanced Elder was really incomparable to the Innate Yue Yang...

Yue Yang didn't bother with Yue Yan anymore as he unhurriedly strolled over to the table.

He took the silver knife on the table and observed it, then sniffed it a little too. Then, he threw the silver knife back to the ground. The fake Yue Qiu revealed a mocking smile on his face. Was he trying to find a clue on the silver knife? That was impossible, he obviously knew that Yue Yang would be suspicious about that. However, he believed that Yue Yang would never understand the real trick behind this scheme.

“All of my life, this is the first time I heard that I am actually a demon!” Yue Yang took out his Eye Destroyer Dagger and carefully pricked a wound on his finger, oozing out a drop of blood.

He only let out a drop, then he quickly took back his finger and put it into his mouth, sucking the blood back into his body, as if he was reluctant to lose anymore blood.

Fatty Hai and the others all came in closer, nervously watching for the reaction in the bottle.

At first, there was no reaction inside the bottle at all.

Just as Fatty Hai and the others were about to sigh in relief, suddenly, the bottle exploded. However, not a single drop of water had flowed out, all the water had instead turned into steam. The white steam rolled as it rose up, just like a white-coloured demon rising up to the sky... Everyone was completely speechless. Wasn't this reaction too strong? This brat's blood had actually gave a stronger reaction than the Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao. Could it be that this brat was a Great Demon King?

“Turns, turns, turns out that you are really a demon!” Yue Yan screamed out emotionally. Being able to prove that Yue Yang was a demon meant that they have won!

“Shut up. I haven't finished testing...” Yue Yang didn't tremble nor panic, it was as if he thought that this was normal. His facial expression was extremely calm, as if he had never seen the bottle shattering to pieces and water turning into steam.

“Even if you try again, you are still a demon!” Yue Bao had also become so excited that his face turned red. He was also hoping for Yue Yang's downfall.

“The two of you, come up here. Drop some blood in this bottle. You guys, try it too!” Yue Yang gestured to Lin Miao and Lin Lei to drip some of their blood. The fake Yue Qiu's expression immediately changed, and the fake Yue Yang immediately stopped Yue Yang from doing that with the reason that Lin Miao and Lin Lei were not Yue Clan's descendants. Yue Yang laughed coldly, “Not only them, I want you guys to try it all once again. Do you

think you can play tricks with me? Do you think you can set me up in a trap with that underdeveloped brain of yours?”

Hearing Yue Yang’s confident tone, Fatty Hai immediately became confident too.

He became smug and immediately drip his blood into the right bottle of Holy Water.

In the end, unfortunately, his blood showed the reaction of a demon blood... Fatty Hai stare dumbly before bursting out into a loud laughter, “Turns out not only the Yue Clan, the Hai Clan’s blood is also contaminated with demon’s blood. Haha, this farce of a blood test, do you want me to laugh to my death?”

Ye Kong’s blood also had the same reaction as the demon’s blood.

Lin Miao and Lin Lei who were trembling in fear had also showed the demon’s blood reaction.

Even Li Brothers, Prince of Tian Luo, and Xue Tan Lang’s blood showed signs of demon’s blood... Yue Yan wanted to argue that they were all really demons at first, but then Princess Qian Qian stepped up and drip her blood, and the result was that she had a very strong and potent demon’s blood. Yue Yan immediately shut his mouth. He couldn’t say that Princess Qian Qian was also a demon, could he? Her father was Jun Wu You after all. If he accused the Emperor of being a demon, Jun Wu You would probably sentence them all to death!

The most surprising thing was that Yue Yang had dripped his blood into the the middle bottle afterwards.

The result was: An explosion of bright, radiant light.

It was beautiful beyond compare, there was even a tinge of rainbow light within the bright light.

This kind of result was really the complete opposite of the Demon Chi Liao's blood test result... Yue Yang then took out his Eye Destroyer Dagger and cut a small wound on Hui Tai Lang's body. He dripped some of its blood into the battle, and immediately the demon's blood reaction started again.

“My dog grows by eating Demon King's meat. This Iron Backed Demon Wolf with flame and dark metal attribute showed the same reaction with Mr. Chi Liao's blood.” Yue Yang's word made Fatty Hai burst out laughing, because Yue Yang had inadvertently likened Chi Liao to a dog. The Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao was immediately angered when he heard it, and he furiously glared at Yue Yang. Yue Yang didn't care about him and pointed at the fake Yue Qiu, Yue Yang and Yue Yan instead, “Can you guys test your blood one more time? If this time, your blood has the same reaction as my dog's blood, I'm sorry, you'll have to explain why in front of everyone here. Didn't you say that your blood is a pure Yue Clan's descendant's blood? My dear gentlemen, what are you waiting for? Come up here and test it out quickly. Everyone will soon be able to see who is the real Demon, and who is the real Yue Clan's descendant...”

The fake Yue Qiu and Yue Yang stared dumbstruck at Yue Yang.

They knew that Yue Yang would not back down easily, but they never thought that Yue Yang's counter attack would be so sharp.

Could they refuse him in front of all their witness?

If they were really going to test it again, then how could they be able to hide the truth from these Innate Ranker's eyes?

Chapter 289 – Hey, Can You Stop Drooling!

The fake Yue Yang had a sullen expression, but he didn't say anything.

Yue Yan looked around the surrounding and realized that no one dared to stand up. He furiously shouted, "I'll go! Even if you are a good-for-nothing loser who plays tricks, I'm not afraid of you!"

"Go away!" Yue Yang glared at him coldly.

"What did you say?" Yue Yan was bewildered. Why did this abnormal loser not want him to take the blood test again?

"I say you are an idiot! Should I allow an idiot to take the test? Nobody stood up to take it, why are you standing up for? Are you worried that your low IQ is not embarrassing enough that you want to make a spectacle of yourself even further?" Yue Yang slapped Yue Yan hard, making the Fourth Young Master's head spin and fall to the ground. Yue Yang pointed at Yue Bao and the fake Yue Yang, then commanded with an icy voice, "You two, come up and test your blood."

The people around started to understand what was going on.

Seems like the Third Young Master had the ability to see through his enemies' blood test tricks. Although Yue Yan was extremely hostile towards him, he didn't suspect Yue Yan, he only suspected Yue Bao and the others.

There was only one true Yue Clan Third Young Master... This Third Young Master on Yue Qiu's side, no matter if he's real or fake, he must be tested once again.

However, why did Yue Yang still pointed towards Yue Bao for a second blood test?

Could it be that there was a problem with Yue Bao too?

Everyone was bewildered. They started looking at Yue Bao, and discovered, to their surprise, that his face was pale as death. Under Yue Yang's icy gaze, Yue Bao's body was trembling unnaturally, as if he was trying to tamper down some kind of fear. Yue Bao shifted his gaze and took glances at the fake Yue Qiu, as if signalling to him to speak out and save him. The fake Yue Qiu had difficulties saving himself too, hence he didn't bother to pay attention to him. The fake Yue Yang wanted to speak out, but immediately shut his mouth when the fake Yue Qiu glared at him, signalling to him not to speak out and save Yue Bao that easily.

Yue Bao became panicked, he started screaming out, "I am a Yue Clan's descendant, I shouldn't be suspected at all. I have already tested myself just now, I don't have to be tested again, i don't want to be tested again. He is a demon, everyone shouldn't believe in his words!"

Hui Tai Lang charged out from beside Yue Yang and pinned Yue Bao to the ground.

Its huge mouth opened wide and grabbed Yue Bao, dragging him and throwing him right under Yue Yang's feet. Its movements were faster than lightning.

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong cooperated harmoniously, one of them pressing Yue Bao down and the other used a the silver dagger to cut Yue Bao's arms.

When the blood was dripped into the middle bottle from the silver dagger, the demon's blood reaction appeared... Although it was a small reaction, everyone could clearly see that Yue Bao's blood test result was completely different from his previous one. Could it be that he was actually not Yue Ling's son?

"No, no, I'm a Yue Clan's descendant, I'm not a demon, you guys are just playing tricks!" Yue Bao was so scared that he started crying.

"I don't think you are worthy enough to be a demon... Tell me about the dark energy you are hiding inside your body. Who gave it to you? Where did you get your beast? What did that person tell you to say?" Yue Yang started questioning Yue Bao coldly. Yue Bao's father, Yue Ling, had wanted to come out and speak out for his son. However, when he saw his young son Yue Feng started to tremble in fear, he sighed and picked him up, tightly hugging him, and did not give Yue Bao a second look. Yue Ling was not a fool either, he could see through a lot of things, but he couldn't speak out because he had to protect himself, his wife and his little son. He could only choose silence.

"Fourth Brother asked me to do all of this!" Yue Bao clenched his

teeth and pointed at Yue Yan, shouting out.

“What?” Yue Yan was dumbstruck. How did the responsibility fall onto him now?

“Fourth Brother said that we must kill you no matter what. He asked me to cooperate with him, and even said that the evidence would definitely be against you. I have been listening to his orders all along, that’s why I did what I did. This blood test to identify familial relations, it was also all Fourth Brother’s idea! Everything was his plot!” Yue Bao cried out loudly.

“You, you, I...” Yue Yan looked around the surrounding in hopelessness.

Right now, no matter if it was the fake Yue Qiu’s side or Yue Yang’s side, he was an enemy to both of them.

Yue Yan discovered that he was all alone. The comrade that he had risked his life to believe in had actually abandoned him without hesitation. They had even pinned all the blame onto him. At this time, even his father did not dare to put up a good word for him. Only then did Yue Yan discovered that he was a piece that everyone could abandon anytime, a pawn, a stepping stone.

He had only been naively hoping for Yue Yang to fall, wanting to step on the person he hated the most in the world under his feet.

He didn’t care about anything else, and didn’t care which side

was wrong or right. He just wanted him to die.

He only realized how absurd he was in the end.

Turns out that the thing he wanted the most had become some other person's bait.

Because of his grudge, he had become some other person's pawn... Moreover, he had become a pawn with a tragic end...

When Yue Yan turned around and saw the fake Yue Clan Third Young Master's mocking gaze, an indescribable agony etched deep inside his heart. This guy who was mocking him behind could not even compare to that abnormal trash. At least that abnormal trash still recognized him as a descendant of the Yue Clan without even looking at the blood test result. On the other hand, this heartless impostor from the Demon Abyss had actually abandoned him at the time he needed him the most. Yue Yan was filled with hate, regret, fury and sadness as he shouted out in pain, "Die, let's all just die together!"

Yue Yan didn't charge at Yue Yang. Instead he attacked the fake Yue Yang.

"Boom!"

Yue Yan whose fury had filled his heart was not the fake Yue Yang's match at all. Forget about winning against him in this kind of crazed mental state, Yue Yan would not be able to win against

the Level 6 Elder fake Yue Yang even under normal circumstances. With just a punch, Yue Yan was sent flying away and thrown to the ground, his ribs broken and internal organs injured, making him vomit blood and was almost dying.

He struggled and tried to stand back up.

However, he fainted in the end due to his injuries.

Fallen on the ground, blood continued to trickle out of his mouth. His consciousness started to fade, and he fainted.

Yue Yang clapped his hands and praised, “Good attack, nice punch! This guy who tried to be my impostor, how should I address you? Don’t think that you can disguise as me just by looking like me. Yue Bing, tell this idiot what’s your brother’s Inherent Skill!”

Yue Bing nodded emotionally when she heard that it was finally her turn to speak up.

She took a deep breath and tried not to be nervous, forcing her voice to be steady and not tremble, “All of you listen. All tricks are useless in front of brother, because brother’s Inherent Skill is [Conceal]! He is able to see through other people’s concealed secrets. My brother has long known whatever secrets you guys are hiding!” Yue Bing’s words made everyone present speechless.

Turns out this brat had such an abnormal Inherent Skill!

No wonder he could easily expose such a strange blood test. Turns out this brat had an Inherent Skill that could see through concealed secrets.

Fatty Hai immediately moved away from Yue Yang the moment he heard that, afraid that Yue Yang would discover his secret.

“You don’t have to stay so far away from me. I’m not interested in your secret hobby of wearing flowery underwears.” Yue Yang kicked the fatty away and made the audience speechless once again. No wonder the Yue Clan Third Young Master was so abnormal. Having the Conceal Inherent Skill, having the ability to search through other’s secrets and weakness, it would be strange if he’s not strong!

“Be quiet, shush!” Fatty Hai jumped up and tried to cover Yue Yang’s mouth nervously. Ye Kong and the others started laughing at his futile attempts.

“I think everyone is now more or less aware of the situation. There is only one conclusion. You guys are pot calling the kettle black. You guys are the demons, but you are trying to turn me into one instead. As the reputable Third Young Master of the Yue Clan, I hereby issue an order: From today onwards, all of the descendants of Yue Clan, be it from the branch family or the main family, must leave the fake Yue Qiu’s side. Otherwise, I will treat you all as a traitor. The fake Yue Qiu and Yue Yang are the main offenders for the Yue Clan troubles. Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao, please leave this vicinity immediately, otherwise, I will treat you as an enemy of the Yue Clan... Tian Quan from the Seven

Great Bears, as the teacher of the fake Yue Yang, I order you to sever one arm right now and announce that you will sever all relations with the fake Yue Yang. Only then will I let you leave this place alive...”

“How about us?” the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the Kingdom of Zhi Jin asked coldly.

“If you guys want to stay, I think the cemetery behind the mountain will make a good place for your accommodation. Otherwise you can just let our pet Hui Tai Lang have a feast of its life and send you both on your journey.” Yue Yang knew that the real moment of a conflict break-out had come.

“Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, my apologies. You guys are in the wrong. If you guys couldn’t prove that Yue Qiu is the real deal, we will choose to believe in Yue Yang’s words. As the true descendant of the Yue Clan, Yue Yang had the power to expel you guys. Even if you are all Innates, you shouldn’t help the evil.” The Ascetic Practice Saint stood up and supported Yue Yang determinedly.

“The fake Yue Qiu and Yue Yang are suspected of being demons. Please prove your real identity immediately, otherwise I will assume that you guys are demons!” The Tian Luo Kingdom’s Heavenly Imperial Guardian, the middle-aged scholar stood up and shouted loudly. When the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Zhi Jin Kingdom strode forward towards him, the middle-aged scholar Heavenly Imperial Guardian’s expressions changed as he shouted furiously, “If you two are helping them to fight, this means a declaration of war between Zhi Jin versus Tian Luo and Da Xia Kingdom!”

“We just wanted to remind you that there are people who had opened the gateway to the Demon Abyss in the capital of Tian Luo and Da Xia. Hundred thousands of demons were pouring into Soaring Dragon Continent relentlessly, swallowing both soldiers and civilians. They are even marching to your Imperial Palaces as we speak. As the country’s Heavenly Imperial Guardians, I believe you two will not simply standby and watch, right?” One of the Zhi Jin Kingdom Heavenly Imperial Guardian that was slightly shorter coldly laughed, “Do you know why we set up this blood test to identify familial relations thing? It is to keep you guys here. Your State Grandmaster has already gone to the Eastern Goblin Tribe with his troops. The Night Empress is also not here. Since the two of you are also here, the capital is now empty. No one is there to protect the capital. Who is to blame for this? It’s your own faults for trying to meddle into other’s business!”

“I understand.” The Ascetic Practice Saint was completely furious as he nodded, “Before going back to destroy the Demon Legion, I will first kill you guys and take revenge for our country’s citizens!”

“With just the two of you?” The taller of the two Zhi Jin Kingdom Heavenly Imperial Guardians started laughing loudly, “Our powers are more or less equal, it would be difficult to decide the winner even after sparring a thousand times. How can you guys say such things?”

“Ascetic Practice Saint, if you are forgetful, I can remind you again. Other than the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, on my side, there are still myself, and Tian Quan, two other Innates.” The Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao pointed at the Ascetic Practice Saint,

“Actually, I have been wanting to kill you guys for a long time now. The relations between Da Xia and Tian Luo had always been very close, you guys have been helping each other since forever. We had waited for so long for this chance today, this is really an opportunity sent to us by the heavens...”

“Little Yue Yang, run away from here now!” The Ascetic Practice Saint suddenly turned around and looked at Yue Yang, “If there’s an opportunity in the future, please take revenge for us!”

“Since I have come here, I have no wish to return.” Yue Yang shook his head and pointed at the Yue Clan Castle, commanding at Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others, “There must be some kind of huge teleportation portal circle inside, the enemies will use human lives as an offering. Your job is to attack the Yue Clan Castle and destroy the teleportation portal circle!

“Understood. Do you have any other orders? Destroying teleportation circles is a piece of cake!” Fatty Hai crushed his fists together, his fighting spirit soaring to the sky.

As long as he didn’t have to fight an Innate, Fatty Hai thought that his current strength could turn the whole castle upside down.

Yue Yang chuckled a little when he heard him, “Then after you destroy the teleportation circle, could you please try to kick the Blood Prison Demon King who might have already teleported here back to the Demon Abyss?”

Fatty Hai immediately shuddered when he heard that.

He immediately howled in fear and rushed madly towards the Yue Clan Castle, bypassing the Innate Rankers on the other side.

Of course, the ones who were faster than him were Ye Kong, Prince of Tian Luo, Xue Tan Lang, and the Li Brothers, who broke into a dash the moment they heard Yue Yang... In the sky, the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder, fake Yue Qiu, Yue Yang and other warriors quickly followed after them to stop their advancement... The fake Yue Qiu took one last glance towards Yue Yang before he went, his expressions filled with smugness. Maybe he was smug because this whole plan was carried out by him, and although Yue Yang had seen through it, he wasn't able to do anything.

The victors become kings, and losers become slaves.

As long as they killed Yue Yang, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the others, who else would ever know of this truth?

Only the Marquis of Zhi Jin and the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei Shun Tian started to frown almost at the same time.

The two of them felt that since Yue Yang had seen through their plans, they wouldn't be able to proceed with their plans so smoothly. Yue Yang might have been trying to gain the Ascetic Practice Saint's and the Scholar's support when he expose the blood test trickery just now in order to gain their help. But how about now? He obviously knew something was wrong. Why didn't he force his way into the Yue Clan Castle?

He was even not surprised nor fearful at all. Facing against such an overwhelming plot against him, he was still so confident and unperturbed.

Was he pretending to be calm?

Or did he really have the confidence to turn things around?

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty had been resting inside the horse carriage all along, as if having her beauty sleep.

Until now, when everyone was about to fight, she slowly walked out of the horse carriage, smiling seductively, “Aih, seems like you guys are going to start fighting. It’s been a long time since I watch Innates fight, I also want to participate. By the way, Sect Leader Duan Mu who has been hiding in the corner silently watching the others, I don’t know that you have such a hobby. Aren’t you going to come out and say hi to everyone?”

It was as if some kind of space distorted in the air, before it quickly returned back to normal.

A middle-aged man wearing a crane-robe floated down to the ground, appearing in front of the crowd. The aura he brought with him was not ordinary.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty introduced him to Yue Yang, “This is an almost immortal Innate, his name is Duan Mu Long Cheng. He is

the current Sect Leader of Green Summit Sect. Right, the Moqi Xu Ling you killed just now was his Vice Sect Leader. Be careful or he might cause you troubles, okay!”

“Hmm, great timing. We can finally resolve the thousand years debt between the Green Summit Sect and the Yue Clan.” Yue Yang nodded.

“Be careful!” Xue Wu Xia personally carried Yue Bing while Princess Qian Qian carried Yue Yu and Luo Hua City Mistress carried Yi Nan. They were preparing to leave and advance towards the Yue Clan Castle. They wouldn’t be able to display their full strength staying here. Their goal was to go into the Yue Clan Castle, destroy the teleportation circle and foil the attempt of their enemies getting reinforcements from the Demon Legion. The Marquis of Zhi Jin looked at Yue Yang seriously before he waved his hand and lead the Zhi Jin the soldiers of Zhi Jin who disguised themselves as the Yue Clan guards to chase after Xue Wu Xia and the others.

In the Marquis of Zhi Jin’s heart, the most frightening one amongst their enemy was Yue Yang while the second one was Phoenix Fairy Beauty. However, the third one wasn’t the Ascetic Practice Saint nor the Scholar, it was the mysterious female thief that had once injured him very badly and made him suffer huge losses. He could recognize her with one look, and he had also recognized her identity. It was the Young Mistress from the Xue Clan!

Second Uncle Yue Ling also looked at Yue Yang.

He didn't speak, he only carried his seriously injured son Yue Yan away while holding his little son Yue Feng with his other hand.

Seems like no matter who was right or wrong, he wasn't about to die in the midst of the great war.

The Yue Clan must not be without an heir... He was willing to be branded a coward in order to keep a descendant of the Yue Clan. Otherwise, the Yue Clan would be completely destroyed...

"I leave the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei to you. As for that Duan Mu, Tian Quan and Chi Liao, leave them to me!" Yue Yang didn't forget to take advantage of Phoenix Fairy Beauty before the war started, hugging her tightly and burying his face into her abundant breasts that could drown men in ecstasy. He breathed in the fragrance satisfiedly, "If I could hug you like this everytime I get into a fight, I am willing to fight everyday!"

"Why don't you consider my feelings a little? Don't lick, hey, can you stop drooling..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty shouted out in surprise.

Chapter 290 – The Rifle Shot The Bird That Pokes Its Head Out First!

Taking the advantage that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang were intimately hugging each other, Duan Mu Long Cheng, Tian Quan and Chi Liao immediately released their Innate Power.

Tian Quan was a little stronger than Yao Guang and Kai Yang.

When he released his Innate Power, he reached Innate Level 3. His qi exploded out, turning into a shockwave that shook the whole ground. However, the Demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao was stronger than Tian Quan. Although he was also at Innate Level 3, it was obvious that Chi Liao was much stronger than Tian Quan. The Hellflames that he released spread out and collided with Tian Quan's qi, producing a deafening sound... The place where the two people's qi collided with each other seemed to break apart. The black and burning Hellflames sputtered across the sky while the ground had turned into a sea of fire as the Hellflames burnt everything, including the sand, gravel and stones on the ground.

Duan Mu Long Cheng, the cunning fellow had also released his Innate Powers soundlessly.

There wasn't a shock wave blast nor a sea of fire.

A silent light yellow light radiated out soundlessly, forming a hundred meter radius around Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Shun Tian didn't release his Innate Power, instead, he summoned a sparkling crystal diamond grimoire that was radiating with rainbow coloured light.

Placing his hand softly on the diamond grimoire, he summoned his Guardian Spirit Beast.

It was a Diamond-ranked Level 9 humanoid beast, a gold-coloured giant that was almost five-meters tall. He wore a crown on his head and a platinum-coloured armor on his body. There was a golden sword at his waist and he wore a pair of silk boots. "Tai, go on rampage!" The Golden Giant that looked like a Great Emperor clapped his hands together in one thundering sound and swung them downwards. Its tyrannical Emperor's Aura swung down like a gold-coloured storm, pressuring down onto Yue Yang with a power that was even stronger than Moqi Xu Ling's Domain of Power, [Heavy Pressure], that made his enemies bear twenty times of their own weight.

"Woof!" Hui Tai Lang and Thorny Flower Demoness sensed danger, they hurriedly hid behind Yue Yang.

The ground on which Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was standing on became concave soundlessly.

Although Yue Yang immediately summoned his Silver Grimoire and erected his protective shield, he was still kind of unable to defend against the enormous power pressuring down on him from the sky.

The shape of his protective shield became a little concave.

Yue Yang was extremely shocked.

The extremely strong Demon Ha Xin still needed his own finger to poke through the grimoire's protective shield

However, this Great Emperor Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, didn't even need to lift a finger. He simply needed to summon his beast and ordered him to attack, With an attack that was still separated by air, he was able to unleash a force that could almost damage a grimoire's protective shield... Seems like the Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant was an existence that was Holy Beast or stronger, an extremely strong opponent. The thing that made Yue Yang speechless was that the Golden Giant was also a Guardian Spirit Beast who would never die unless his master died. Under the pressure of the Emperor's Aura from this Diamond-ranked Level 9 Holy Beast, Yue Yang was unable to protect himself. Seems like he was still not strong enough to fight against that Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian.

“Lord Shun Tian, we should probably go to some other wide open space to fight. It's inconvenient to fight in this narrow space.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty's killing intent flashed across her beautiful eyes.

She ignored the pressure from that Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant, floating through the sky effortlessly.

Before turning into a streak of meteor and disappearing, she

waved her hands towards Yue Yang.

She then smiled with a smile that could probably make others crazy about her and said, “Little rogue, you dared to be act misappropriately towards me. I shall teach you a lesson later when I return!”

Yue Yang laughed, “I will definitely wait for your return. By the way, I don’t mind being on top or bottom!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed out when she heard this.

Her red lips, white teeth, clear eyes, rosy cheeks and that dimple at the corner of her smile made Yue Yang choke with emotion. Her shoulders shook slightly as she laughed, she was definitely a sight to behold. Yue Yang was completely transfixed, his saliva almost dripping from the edge of his mouth. Upon seeing this, Phoenix Fairy Beauty became even happier as she threw him a wink and a hot flying kiss, “If you are not defeated by your enemies... I shall consider it!”

Wa!

Yue Yang felt that his current heartbeat must have shot up to 500 beats per minute, almost exploding from too much stimulation.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty not only have a sexy body, she was also extremely seductive.

With regards to Yue Yang's advances, she didn't reject him like other girls. Instead, she teased him back. Yue Yang started to imagine in his heart, if he teased Phoenix Fairy Beauty even further, would she push him down instead?

"My blissful sex life, I really can't wait for it!" Yue Yang swallowed his saliva in secret as he watched Phoenix Fairy Beauty's figure turning into a streak of light, quick as lightning as she disappeared towards the nearby forest. Yue Yang couldn't stop his daydream even after she disappeared. That Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, had also followed her along. Before he left, he shot a last glance towards Yue Yang, then whispered something to Duan Mu Long Cheng. He also left his Golden Giant to help out here, before chasing after Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

With regards to Shun Tian and Tian Fa's fight, it might be difficult to even determine the victor if they fought for day and night.

The two people were more or less had equal strength.

Even if he, as the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei might have been stronger a little, he wouldn't be that much stronger than her. The real battle was between Duan Mu Long Cheng and Yue Yang. As long as Duan Mu Long Cheng could kill Yue Yang, it wouldn't matter what the result of the fight between him and Tian Fa was.

There were Duan Mu Long Cheng, the Innate Level 6 Ranker and Green Summit Sect Leader, and two Innate Level 3 Rankers Tian Quan and Chi Liao fighting against Yue Yang. If they were still unable to beat that Innate Level 3 Yue Yang, then Duan Mu Long

Cheng and the others should just commit suicide. Shun Tian believed that his battle plan would not fail regardless of other factors. No matter how crazy, cunning, or abnormal Yue Yang was, he would definitely be defeated without a doubt!

Different from Yue Yang who was still daydreaming even after Phoenix Fairy Beauty was gone, the Ascetic Practice Saint and Scholar had started fighting against the two short and tall Heavenly Imperial Guardians from the Kingdom of Zhi Jin. They were all Heavenly Imperial Guardians, their strength were more or less the same, of an Innate Level 5.

Without the help of a third party, even if they fought for one whole day and night, it would be difficult to decide the winner.

Rumble!

The mountains at a distance was destroyed into pieces from the Ascetic Practice Saint's attack.

The Scholar who was on the other side of the mountain created a whirling tornado and attacked the enemies in front of him. His opponent was the taller Heavenly Imperial Guardian of the Zhi Jin Kingdom. As the Scholar's opponent, he didn't seem to feel nervous at all. This was because he knew that the longer he stall for time, the better the whole situation would be for him.

At this time, Tian Quan and Chi Liao started summoning their beasts, preparing to kill Yue Yang. They didn't care about whatever rules of the Innate Alliance anymore.

Tian Quan's summoned beasts were all flying-type beasts.

Gold-ranked Level 7 "Storm Griffin", Gold-ranked Level 7 "Red-crowned Wyvern King", Gold-ranked Level 6 Giant Bat and Gold-ranked Level 6 Harpy. His plan was to use his flying beasts' speed and flexibility to attack the Thorny Flower Demones on Yue Yang's side. With the support of Duan Mu Long Cheng's [Weaken] Domain of Power, even the Diamond-ranked Thorny Flower Demoness wouldn't be able to avoid the attacks from his flying beasts. She was fated to die tragically... Furthermore, that Thorny Flower Demoness who seemed very strong was actually only Diamond-ranked Level 1!

The Thorny Flower Demoness was an expert in land fight. She could summon a sea of flowers on the ground, hence it wouldn't be weird that the King of Black Light who couldn't get off from the ground was defeated under her hands.

However, facing against four flying beasts, what would the Thorny Flower Demoness do?

Duan Mu Long Cheng's [Weaken] Domain of Power was able to affect every single organism, including Innate Rankers who were weaker than Duan Mu Long Cheng. Their strength would be decreased tenfold. How could the Thorny Flower Demoness reverse the situation under this kind of conditions?

That was an impossible feat to do!

Chi Liao's goal was to kill Hui Tai Lang.

The Demon Innate had summoned Gold-ranked beasts with fire attributes.

Fire Hydra, Cerberus, Lava Giant, Magma Wyvern and a Fire Witch who wielded a flaming whip on her hands.

Within the [Weaken] Domain of Power and a ground covered with a sea of blazing flames, Hui Tai Lang had to fight against 5 Gold-ranked Level 6 or Gold-ranked Level 7 fire-attribute beasts from the Demon Abyss... Forget about Chi Liao who thought that Hui Tai Lang would definitely not be able to win, even Yue Yang thought that it would be a very difficult fight for Hui Tai Lang. Hui Tai Lang would probably win on one-on-one, but against a crowd?

It's really hard to say!

Yue Yang's enemies were both higher in numbers and stronger.

His strongest opponent was the Innate Level 6 Duan Mu Long Cheng, the Sect Leader of Green Summit Sect who possessed the [Weaken] Domain of Power. His powers might even surpass a Demon King's.

Yue Yang was unable to comprehend the real strength of Demon King Ha Xin, because he did not have Divine Vision Level 5 at that time.

However, Demon King Ha Xin's power displayed superficially at that time was more or less the same as what Duan Mu Long Cheng had displayed currently. If the Demon King Ha Xin didn't purposely hide his strength, then he might not even be able to defeat this Duan Mu Long Cheng who possessed the [Weaken] Domain of Power. Yue Yang didn't even bother to consider Tian Quan and Chi Liao. These two Innate Level 3 fellows could not even compare to Shun Tian's Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant. Yue Yang would never acknowledge their existence... The pressure from the Golden Giant's Emperor's Aura seemed to intensify under Duan Mu Long Cheng's [Weaken] Domain of Power. It became even more powerful!

With regards to this Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant, Yue Yang had no other choice but to regard him seriously.

“Alright, since you guys are bullying us with numbers, I won't be courteous anymore.” Yue Yang then immediately summoned five more beasts in one go... and those beasts were: the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice.

“Pfft!” Tian Quan spurted out his saliva.

He almost fell straight to the ground from the sky

Normal-ranked Level 1 Puppet Mice that had no fighting abilities? What use would they have? Tian Quan immediately burst out in laughter the moment he saw them, he felt like he was about to die from laughter.

The Fire Mouse from the Quintet Puppet Mice scampered out of Yue Yang's protective shield unhurriedly, completely unaffected by the [Weaken] Domain of Power and the Emperor's Aura at all. This was because it was not a living organism, it didn't had fear nor living body, hence it would not be affected by any mental, spirit or flesh injuries. The hellflames was also ineffective against it. Even the Fire Hydra didn't bother to attack it as it watched the Fire Mouse with its eyes.

The Fire Mouse scampered out slowly, its little head turning left and right, searching for something.

It felt like the Fire Mouse was simply a normal mouse seeking for food.

Five seconds later, the Fire Mouse found out about the Dynamite Trap that Chi Liao had secretly created with his hellflames. Furthermore, it also succeeded in activating it...

Kaboom!

A thunderous sound shook the whole ground.

The whole ground shook uncontrollably from the huge explosion, but that Fire Mouse had actually continued to climb forward slowly and unhurriedly, searching for the next Dynamite Trap. When it succeeded in activating the second Dynamite Trap and managed to blow the nearby Cerberus away. Chi Liao finally realized that this Fire Mouse was actually his Dynamite Trap's weakness! His expressions completely changed as he roared

furiously, shooting down to the ground from the sky. He clenched his fist, prepared to destroy the annoying little puppet mouse with one move.

“Let me give you a word of advice: The rifle shot the bird that pokes its head out first!” Yue Yang appeared behind Chi Liao’s back in a flash with a World Exterminating Wheel in one of his hand and Nirvana’s Flame on the other.

He had waited for this opportunity for a very long time.

As long as he matched his enemy, he would be able to counter-attack the moment they show a weakness.

Yue Yang’s counter-attack would be deadly, ultimate attack.

He would definitely not do a sloppy job.

He would kill his enemies in a single move!

Chapter 291 – As A Minor Character, You Shouldn't Be Too Arrogant!

Chi Liao was stupefied. The shadow of death loomed over his head.

He knew the terrifying strength of the Third Young Master. First, Yao Guang had been killed. Following that, even Moqi Xu Ling had died by his hands. With regards to fighting against him, Chi Liao did not dare to act even a little bit carelessly. However, he never expected that Yue Yang's attacks would be this fast. At the moment when the World Exterminating Wheel flew out, Chi Liao had immediately summoned his Platinum Grimoire, hoping that its barrier would be sufficient enough to protect himself. As long as he could survive for at least a second, he would have ten ways to escape.

Unfortunately, he could not summon his grimoire out.

This was because Chi Liao had been bound in mid-air by the [Binding] Inherent Skill.

Everything, including his body, spiritual qi, mind, consciousness, and even his soul, was completely bound for three seconds. He had no way to resist!

After Xiao Wen Li had risen in level, her [Binding] Inherent Skill had improved as well. Even when it had not improved, it had successfully bound Moqi Xu Ling who was a Innate Level 5 Ranker. Of course, it wouldn't have any problems to bind Chi Liao right

now.

If Yue Yang needed it, he could increase the duration of the [Binding] to beyond three seconds.

By doing this, Yue Yang was only trying to confuse Duan Mu Long Cheng.

He had wanted to misled this Green Summit Sect Leader. He wanted to give the impression that his [Binding] Inherent Skill could only bind Innates like Chi Liao or weaker, but not Innate Level 6 Rankers like Duan Mu Long Cheng. When the best opportunity arose, then he would kill Duan Mu Long Cheng off. Of course, Yue Yang's ambitions did not stop there. He wanted to team up with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty to kill off the Great Emperor Zhi Wei, Shun Tian.

Shun Tian would definitely be able to find out about the [Binding] Inherent Skill through his Golden Giant. Yue Yang thought that he should use it sparingly to fool the Great Emperor Zhi Wei, in order to secure the best opportunity.

Three seconds...

Forget about Yue Yang, who was the kind of guy that was proficient at sneak attacks, even normal warriors could slap Chi Liao a few times over that duration.

During a battle, even if you lost control of the momentum for just

a second, it was enough to cause your death!

The World Exterminating Wheel sliced across Chi Liao's neck.

The Demon body which could withstand even Gold-ranked weapons was sliced apart like tofu in the face of the World Exterminating Wheel.

There was no hint of resistance as the World Exterminating Wheel spun across!

Yue Yang's right hand, blazing with Nirvana's flame, thrust deep into the abdomen of Chi Liao, pulling out his demon heart with sheer force and immediately refined it.

Behind him, the space seemed to almost shatter.

Duan Mu Long Cheng had come attacking.

This was the so-called "mantis stalking the cicada, unaware of the bird behind".

Ever since Yue Yang summoned the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice, Duan Mu Long Cheng had a feeling and guessed that Yue Yang would kill Chi Liao. However, he did not tip off Chi Liao, but rather watch him fall into Yue Yang's plans... He borrowed Chi Liao, and made him into the "cicada", to cover himself and act as a decoy. This allowed him to become the "bird" that would kill Yue Yang from behind!

Duan Mu Long Cheng was very clever. He was definitely a clever little bird.

With a single move, his Innate Level 6 power was sufficient to level a small mountain. Such terrifying amounts of strength was gathered in his right fist.

Without revealing any presence at all.

When Yue Yang killed Chi Liao, his sneak attack from behind had succeeded, landing a heavy blow on Yue Yang's chest.

Duan Mu Long Cheng sacrificed Chi Liao, using his companion's life as decoy and successfully hit Yue Yang... With a cry, Yue Yang vanished, teleporting away instantly. His body fell a few hundred metres away.

Even though he tried his best to escape, but the fist of an Innate Level 6, still left a deep mark behind his back. Duan Mu Long Cheng's terrifying fist almost caused Yue Yang's spine to break into pieces. Fortunately, Yue Yang had learned the [Space Teleportation] Technique from the old fox and practiced it to the point where he could transfer himself by a quick thought. Moreover, he had the "Elegant Sword Dance" that he had cultivated, one of the "Mysterious Three Stances", which was extremely useful against sneak attacks. If not for these two things, he would have been heavily injured by this blow.

Yue Yang's mouth was full of blood. However, he was neither

upset nor angry.

He had even laughed.

Towards Duan Mu Long Cheng's sneak attack, he was not surprised at all.

Long before he had killed Chi Liao, Yue Yang already thought that Duan Mu Long Cheng would sneak an attack on him as he killed Chi Liao. So, he had 30% of his concentration remaining to take notice when Duan Mu Long Cheng would move. The only thing he did not expect was that Duan Mu Long Cheng was much faster than he had imagined. This cunning Green Summit Sect Leader was actually a speed-type Innate with speed as his focus, and not a long-range attacker Innate who had power as his advantage.

Yue Yang was not willing to miss the opportunity to kill Chi Liao. He would rather take the blow and kill Chi Liao.

Even if Chi Liao and Tian Quan were not dead, they would not pose much of a threat to him.

However, they were incredibly potent threats against Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and the others. Once Chi Liao and Tian Quan knew that they were unable to match up against him, they would definitely switched their targets to kill Fatty Hai and the others. In that case, the situation would be very bad.

Duan Mu Long Cheng was extremely powerful and could not be easily killed.

On the other hand, that Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant that looked like a Great Emperor was a Guardian Beast. There was no meaning in killing it at all. Shun Tian could just spend a little bit of qi for his Guardian Beast to recover his full strength and summoned him again... Therefore, Yue Yang's targets could only be Chi Liao and Tian Quan!

At this point in time, Tian Quan and the Golden Giant, who were watching the battle situation from above, moved at the same time.

Although they were not as fast as Duan Mu Long Cheng, but there seemed to be a great deal of harmony between them.

The two of them splitted up in the skies.

Tian Quan from the Seven Great Bears charged towards Hui Tai Lang and Thorny Flower Demoness.

He knew that the moment the grimoire owner moved, the grimoire's protective shield would immediately disappear. Without the protection of the protective shield, he would definitely be able to kill Hui Tai Lang and the Thorny Flower Demoness in one move.

Hence, Tian Quan rushed forward and attacked Hui Tai Lang and the Thorny Flower Demoness in full force.

He didn't think that Yue Yang would be such an abnormal existence, whose grimoire's protective shield would not disappear even if he moved. It would only disappear if the time limit was reached or when Yue Yang recalled his grimoire back.

Otherwise, the protective shield would continue to exist as long as Yue Yang's Silver Grimoire still existed.

This was completely different from other people.

On the other side, the Golden Giant shot down from the sky and attacked straight at Yue Yang.

He was a Holy Beast, so he was extremely clever. He knew that Yue Yang was injured right now, and it seemed like he was not about to give Yue Yang any time to catch his breath,

“Rampage!”

The Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant's charged at Yue Yang, his pressure immense like a tsunami. Before Yue Yang had the chance to avoid it, Duan Mu Long Cheng's punch had reached him again. Yue Yang was extremely shocked as he failed to see through Duan Mu Long Cheng's sudden acceleration in speed even with his Level 5 Divine Vision. Yue Yang had the confidence to avoid his punches, but due to his sudden acceleration, he wasn't able to dodge them in time. Although Yue Yang couldn't manage to avoid it on time, he had already prepared Innate Qi in his body. He created a vortex with his Qi and nullified the force of Duan Mu

Long Cheng's punch that was about to hit his right side.

Yue Yang counter-attacked at the same time.

The World Exterminating Wheel that had killed Chi Liao instantly earlier swerved like a boomerang towards Duan Mu Long Cheng's back under Yue Yang's will.

The Nirvana's Flame on his right hand shaped into a sword of flame, piercing straight into Duan Mu Long Cheng's chest.

“Too late.”

Duan Mu Long Cheng twisted around like a snake.

His punch swung fast as lightning at Yue Yang's right side, shocking Yue Yang's whole body.

He didn't manage to feel the pain before Duan Mu Long Cheng kicked him hard again on the knee.

If Yue Yang had not avoided the kick quickly, his little brother below might have also been kicked by Duan Mu Long Cheng... Duan Mu Long Cheng turned, his body twisting like a fried dough twist, avoiding the dangerous World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame. At the same time, his other leg turned and flew towards Yue Yang's face. His movements were extremely quick. If Yue Yang did not have Heaven's Eyes Divine Vision to see his attacks, he would have been beaten black and blue.

It was only then that Yue Yang finally realized.

This cunning Duan Mu Long Cheng had an Inherent Skill that gave him speed boosts.

With this Inherent Skill, even if Yue Yang thought that he could defend on time, he would still be wide open for attack.

It wasn't because his reaction was not quick enough, nor was it because his defense was not strong enough. The reason he kept getting hit was because the timing of the attack that he had calculated had been messed up due to the Speed Boost Inherent Skill.

Duan Mu Long Cheng's punches and kicks had suddenly accelerated during motion, landing straight onto his body. The defense that Yue Yang had been preparing became ineffective.

"I see!"

When Yue Yang understood his opponent's pattern of attack, he immediately smiled.

His smile was extremely mysterious.

Duan Mu Long Cheng's kicks continued to rain down on his face, but Yue Yang wasn't in a hurry to dodge. Instead, he took the

initiative to face the attack.

He moved his hands slowly, drawing a big circle and used his flow to break through Duan Mu Long Cheng's speed...

His Innate Qi spun around like a whirlpool,

This time, even when Duan Mu Long Cheng's kicks suddenly accelerated, they were useless against Yue Yang's hands that were moving in a slow, circle-like motion. Like clouds, the energy packed onto his attacks dispersed quickly. Not only had his speed decreased, it was even difficult to move an inch forward. At first, his hands moved quick as lightning, but in the end, he was moving at snail's speed.

Yue Yang's revolving hand had succeeded in defending this attack... Duan Mu Long Cheng's expressions changed. He wanted to withdraw from Yue Yang, but it was too late.

He felt his body still trying to kick Yue Yang, although he willed his body to withdraw.

This weird phenomenon was definitely caused by the Yue Clan Third Young Master.

Duan Mu Long Cheng knew the reason but he didn't have any idea how to break the spell. Within the effects of the slow-motion circle, he was completely helpless.

Yue Yang's Twin Fish formed a huge circle as his Yin and Yang ability fused together, easily dispelling the kinetic energy of Duan Mu Long Cheng's heavy punch and converting it potential energy that was transferred onto Yue Yang's legs.

(Shiro: To be honest, I don't really understand what I'm translating in the past few paragraphs...I imagine it's something like [this](#) – Fun fact: for some reason, that non-sensical movie is one of the highest grossing movies in Hong Kong lol)

Yue Yang bent his body backwards like a bow, his hands touching the ground.

He threw his body upwards and shot out his legs like an arrow.

He flipped his body upside down, sending an upwards kick.

A crescent-shaped Sword Qi mysteriously appeared right in front of Duan Mu Long Cheng's chest, chin and face.

Although Duan Mu Long Cheng managed to roll away in time and avoided Yue Yang's powerful counter-attack, he wasn't able to dodge it completely. He felt a sharp pain on his chin, which was Yue Yang's target, The moment a crescent-shaped Sword Qi appeared on Yue Yang's leg, Duan Mu Long Cheng's beard, skin and flesh were immediately cut off from his face.

Duan Mu Long Cheng felt like his chin was about to be broken into pieces. He felt a sharp pain in his head, making him almost fell to the ground in pain.

However, his senses told him that he was in danger of being killed by his opponent in an instant if he stayed there for more than a second.

He forcefully bounced his body and rushed back to safety.

Yue Yang shot out an Innate Invisible Sword Qi from his feet and almost killed Duan Mu Long Cheng... A long scar appeared at the right side of Duan Mu Long Cheng's face, from his chin all the way to his ears.

If Duan Mu Long Cheng had not avoided in time, there would have been a hole through his head. There would be a window on his head, exposing his brain matter to the outside!

He used his Innate Level 6 strength to strengthen his defense and protect his body, but he was still unable to defend against that Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

Duan Mu Long Cheng retreated hundreds of metres back.

Fear crept into his heart.

World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana's Flame, and this mysterious Sword Qi. These three things were all weapons that could eliminate that brat's enemies in an instant. They wouldn't even realize it when they die. No wonder Moqi Xu Ling couldn't even last half an hour fighting against this brat. From just now, the

fight had not even lasted a minute, yet his life was already in danger, almost dying by Yue Yang's three weapons. If he had not known that Yue Yang was strong at the beginning and fought him with 100% of his abilities, he would perhaps have... If he had just been careless for a moment, he would probably ended up like Moqi Xu Ling, tragically dying under Yue Yang's feet.

“Not bad.” Duan Mu Long Cheng praised Yue Yang for the first time.

“You are really abnormal!” Tian Quan, on the other hand, cursed at Yue Yang instead.

The reason was because at first, he thought that the moment Yue Yang left, the protective shield would also disappear. He had happily swooped down like a great eagle, prepared to attack Hui Tai Lang and Thorny Flower Demoness with a heavy blow.

He never thought that even after Yue Yang left the perimeter of the protective shield, that damned shield still existed.

His heavy blow shook the shield greatly, making it wobble unstoppably.

However, Hui Tai Lang and the Thorny Flower Demoness inside were completely safe and sound.

Two pairs of eyes looked at him as if he was an idiot... This kind of feeling of being looked down by beasts deeply hurt Tian Quan's

heart.

No matter what, he was also an Innate.

Furthermore, he was a part of the Seven Great Bears Alliance!

But he was actually being looked down upon by two meager beasts right now. How could he not be furious?

Tian Quan had put in all of his strength into the attack, but turned out that the protective shield did not break under his force. He was so angry that he could vomit blood.

The worst thing was that Hui Tai Lang had taken advantage of the time when Tian Quan was catching his breath. It turned around, raised its butt and moved it outside the shield. Shoving its butt towards Tian Quan's face, it relaxedly let out a huge, loud, and stinky fart before quickly withdrawing back inside the shield.

As one of the honorable Seven Great Bears, Tian Quan was actually forced to sniff a dog's fart. His blood boiled so much that he felt like he could explode any moment.

He met annoying dogs before, but he never met such an aggravating dog in his life!

But Hui Tai Lang had just had to be out of his reach right now. He couldn't hurt even a strand of its hair.

Tian Quan was unable to kill Hui Tai Lang and the Thorny Flower Demoness, hence he could only direct all of his anger towards, Yue Yang, their master.

But Yue Yang ignored his existence.

Yue Yang didn't even sweep him a glance, as if Tian Quan of the Seven Great Bears had never existed in this world before.

That level of disregard completely drove Tian Quan mad.

He was a respectable, honorable Innate, and yet he was actually looked down upon?! He was unable to take revenge on his humiliation after being bullied by a dog, and when he wanted to seek revenge on its master instead, he was actually looked down upon and was humiliated even more! All of his life, Tian Quan had never suffered such humiliation before! If he didn't destroy Hui Tai Lang and Yue Yang into smithereens, then Tian Quan wouldn't be able to soothe the grudge in his heart. Even if he die, he wouldn't die in peace!

Yue Yang was actually really ignoring that fellow. Although Tian Quan was a little stronger than Yao Guang and Kai Yang, if not for Duan Mu Long Cheng, Yue Yang could kill that fellow who overestimated his abilities any time.

The thing that confused Yue Yang was that Chi Liao, whom he had killed just now was actually still alive.

Chi Liao only had his head left. He had suffered serious injuries and was nearing death, but that Demon Innate Ranker was actually still alive.

Chi Liao's head in the sky summoned a Advanced Platinum Grimoire and raised his protective shield. He then immediately summoned fire to replenish his strength and recover his body. Yue Yang could see with his Level 5 Divine Vision that the reason that Chi Liao did not die was because he had not used damaged him enough. Furthermore, that fellow had a unique Inherent Skill that allowed him to avoid death. Yue Yang only paid attention to Duan Mu Long Cheng's attacks just now, he was unable to deliver the killing blow... If Yue Yang didn't choose to use his Nirvana's Flame to rene Chi Liao's demon heart and ignited his head with Nirvana's Flame instead, Chi Liao would probably be dead.

The problem was that Yue Yang needed that demon heart.

If he had burned Chi Liao's head with Nirvana's Flame instead, the moment he died, his demon heart that was filled with energy would also be destroyed.

That way would be too wasteful...

Yue Yang looked at the ugly Chi Liao's head. Other than having only one life, what else do this fellow have? He was completely not a threat. It's just that those Gold-ranked beasts that he summoned didn't die from his death, hence it was quite unfortunate. Seems like Hui Tai Lang needs to work hard for a while more.

“Hui Tai Lang, what are you waiting for? Are you just going to eat for free without doing any work?” Yue Yang was definitely a worse dictator than Hitler.

“Woof!” Hui Tai Lang was actually getting bored of waiting.

“Damn dog, you finally came out. See if I don’t tear you to shreds!” Tian Quan felt that he should first kill the dog, roast it and eat it whole, then gave its remains to its master... Or perhaps should he first kill its master, then watch it die as he chopped off this dog’s four limbs so that it would die from bloodloss. Otherwise, he could perhaps look for Mad Devouring Ants to eat this damned dog alive until only its head was left, then send its head back to its home.

However, before Tian Quan prepared to make a move on Hui Tai Lang, there was a sudden breeze on his back.

There was an unbridled, extremely furious voice resounding from his back, “You, why are you still here? You should have died long ago! Letting someone like you live is simply a waste of space and food! Remember, as a minor character, you shouldn’t be too arrogant!”

Chapter 292 – Domain Of Power, Power Up!

Duan Mu Long Cheng's expressions turned cold.

Of course he had the power to save Tian Quan, but the danger he felt as a warrior made him hesitate at the last moment.

Was the Yue Clan Third Young Master trying to trap him? When he ambushed Chi Liao just now, he had set him up on a trap. Fortunately his Speed Boost Inherent Skill had fooled the timing of Yue Yang's defense. However, after exchanging blows, Yue Yang had seen through his Inherent Skills ability. Right now, Yue Yang had turned his back against him again. Could Yue Yang's action of ambushing Tian Quan be a trap he laid against him?

As an extremely cautious person, Duan Mu Long Cheng would rather let Tian Quan die than put himself in danger.

It was not his way for dying for a friend!

If Tian Quan was killed, it was his own fault... Duan Mu Long Cheng decided that he wouldn't help Tian Quan no matter what!

with regards to Yue Yang's rude behaviour, Tian Quan was beyond furious.

He was an Innate, a level 3 Innate at that.

When he rampaged through the Tong Tian Tower, forget about this brat, even his parents were still in their mother's womb! Did that brat really think that he had no skills at all? As an Innate, he had his own pride and strength that belongs to him.

“Humph, I have been waiting for you for a long time!”

Tian Quan was definitely not someone who would sit still and wait for his death. He laughed coldly and turned his body around, then summoned a brilliant Star Light shining on his hands. He then shoved his strongest move, “Thousand Shooting Stars”, right onto Yue Yang's chest. His attack that was made up of Star Light had an extremely strong penetration ability, able to break most of his enemies' defense. Furthermore, it was set to only explode when it had penetrated into his enemy's' weakest internal organs. This way, he would be able to destroy his enemies more easily!

This move was the combination between Tian Quan's Shooting Star Inherent Skill and his own combat techniques.

Last time when he used this move on his enemies, he was simply invincible. Even the Eastern Goblin Tribe who had strong bodies did not stand a chance against him.

Let alone a human's body.

A human would definitely be finished the moment he landed the attack.

Yue Yang was hit by Tian Quan's Thousand Meteors.

The Star Light penetrated into his body, pushing him several steps back. However, there was no pain reflected on his face, instead, there was an amazed expression instead, as if he couldn't believe that Tian Quan managed to land a hit on him. Tian Quan thought that this brat was definitely done for. Although he looked okay on the outside, in reality, his internal organs had been seriously injured. Unless this brat had some kind of unique Inherent Skill, such as Devour Inherent Skill that could nullify this kind of Star Light attack, how could his internal organs withstand such a terrifying attack?

"You are done for!" Tian Quan said in certainty, shaking his forefinger at Yue Yang smugly.

This was his signature move.

Everytime he managed to kill or injure his enemies heavily, he would shake his forefinger at his enemy to show his disdain.

Tian Quan knew what would happen next. Within 5 seconds, this Yue Clan Third Young Master's body would explode into pieces. At the very least, his chest would explode out. His ribs would be shattered, his heart, lungs, intestines and what not would all explode out and become fragments of flesh, scattered all over the ground!

That was the scene that Tian Quan would want to see the most in his life. Like raping a virgin girl, that scene would make his whole

body happy with excitement, so excited that he would have goosebumps all over his body.

“Cough, cough!”

Yue Yang touched his chest and coughed a few times.

There was some blood on his mouth, but this scene was completely different from that kind of gore that Tian Quan had expected, where Yue Yang’s chest would burst open, pieces of flesh would explode out and blood spurting everywhere.

Tian Quan was completely dumbfounded when Yue Clan Third Young Master’s body didn’t show any signs of exploding.

What happened?

Tian Quan waited for a long time. The Yue Clan Third Young Master should have exploded long time ago, how could he still be fine?

He would never imagine that Yue Yang’s Domain of Power was actually [Devour]. His Star Light attack just now was equivalent to tonic for Yue Yang... Yue Yang’s cough was actually because he was healing the injury that Duan Mu Long Cheng had caused him just now. Duan Mu Long Cheng’s Innate power had been amplified with his [Weaken] Domain of Power, hence it was very effective, causing a lot of damage to Yue Yang’s body.

That was why Yue Yang had took this advantage to heal himself and recover his strength.

Yue Yang knew that Tian Quan had misunderstood him. Of course, he wouldn't care about this fellow's reaction at all.

Tian Quan's Star Light power and Inherent Skill was completely ineffective against Yue Yang. Moreover, to a certain extent, Tian Quan's Star Light was a help to Yue Yang. It has the ability to help Yue Yang charge his Domain of Power [Star Explosion] more quickly.

"You, how could you be completely fine?" Tian Quan really couldn't understand.

He had obviously landed a hit on his enemy, but his enemy turned out to be completely fine.

This was really too strange!

Yue Yang rubbed the trace of blood on his mouth and laughed evilly like a demon, "That is really a fine attack, it's just that it's too weak. If you have put more strength in it, it would have been even better... Previously, I didn't really understand how my Domain of Power works, but since your Star Light power was kind of a help to my powers, I finally understood how it works. Turns out my Domains of Power is not outside, but inside my body. Or rather, my Domain of Power has not yet reached the level where it can be used outside. Ha, I was actually worried about how my Domain of Power was so different from others? But from your

attack just now, I have truly understood how to use it thoroughly! In order to show my appreciation towards you, I have decided to bestow you the chance of becoming the first person to taste the power of my Domain of Power!

“Impossible!” Tian Quan was almost driven mad. Not only was his attack ineffective, he was actually helping this brat?

He roared furiously.

He raised his hands up high, preparing to attack Yue Yang once again.

However, he thought that if his attack had actually helped Yue Yang, wouldn't he be a fool if he attacked Yue Yang with the same attack once again? He immediately took back his hands and retreated backwards, preparing to escape and hide behind Duan Mu Long Cheng.

Duan Mu Long Cheng stood at a far distance, continuing to watch with a cold gaze.

He didn't believe that Yue Yang was completely saying the truth, but he understood that the Yue Clan Third Young Master must have some kind of reason when he said these.

Maybe it was another trap...

That Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant was also extremely

clever. Possessing a high intelligence, he had been following Duan Mu Long Cheng's movements. He would only attack when Duan Mu Long Cheng moved to attack Yue Yang. When Duan Mu Long Cheng stayed still, he also waited silently for an opportunity to make his move. This was not by the orders of Shun Tian, but from the intelligence of a Holy Beast. In this battle of wits, the Golden Giant was definitely smarter than the current Hui Tai Lang. Only Xiao Wen Li who could connect her mind with Yue Yang might be better than the Golden Giant in terms of intelligence.

Of course, Hui Tai Lang's intelligence was also increasing by the day under Yue Yang's influence.

Becoming a Holy Beast was definitely not going to be its final evolution!

“Look at the stars I created!”

Tian Quan rushed towards the sky to escape, but no matter how fast he was, he wouldn't be able to be faster than Yue Yang.

Yue Yang reached out his hand and grabbed tightly onto Tian Quan's ankles.

Yue Yang's Domain of Power [Star Explosion] flashed in Yue Yang's hands. At first, it was only a small ball, but it gradually became bigger and more condensed, turning into magnificent spectacle. Then, countless of Star Light shot outwards, turning into a myriad of shooting stars, that joined together again in the sky to form a star... Although the diameter was not even one-meter

wide, the power packed inside it completely terrorized Tian Quan. Even Duan Mu Long Cheng who was watching from far away frowned.

“Save me, save...” When Tian Quan saw that Duan Mu Long Cheng continued to stand without moving, he became panicked. He quickly turned towards the Golden Giant to ask for help.

He tried to unleash an attack towards Yue yang, but it was all completely ineffective. His attacks had only increased the size of that star.

On the other hand, that star’s power could definitely obliterate him.

When the star burst out, it shot out brilliant Star Lights that could easily tear Tian Quan’s body into shreds, or even destroy him into pieces. Tian Quan’s Innate defense was completely ineffective against this Star Explosion that became bigger with time.

In the sky, the Golden Giant who had swooped down, prepared to save Tian Quan, immediately abandoned his plans when he saw the bright Star Explosion that Yue Yang had exploded. He turned around and immediately escaped. He could clearly sense that the destructive power of this explosion was in no way less than the World Exterminating Wheel. The World Exterminating Wheel was small in size, hence it was easy to dodge. However, this star on the other hand, would probably be able to obliterate everything in an area hundreds of meters in radius the moment it exploded.

Duan Mu Long Cheng and the Golden Giant immediately shot up to the sky.

Flying at top speed to escape.

However, Yue Yang had actually dragged Tian Quan along as he chased after the two of them.

“AHHH!” Tian Quan was obviously not a fool.

He could sense that his life was in danger. If that Star Explosion really exploded, then he would definitely be destroyed to dust. He was cunning and prompt in making decisions. Immediately, he released a light sabre on his hand and slashed at his right leg, cutting it off with no second thought. Losing that bloodied leg, he escaped frantically, hoping to escape from the Star Explosion's area of effect... As for his plan of escaping towards Duan Mu Long Cheng and cooperating with him to fight against Yue Yang, it was completely out of the question now. Duan Mu Long Cheng's cold, heartless expression just now had deeply wounded Tian Quan's heart.

Tian Quan gasped for breath to calm himself down and summoned his grimoire, raising his protective shield to protect himself.

Just now when he was in the hands of his enemy, his Spirit Qi was suppressed, hence he was unable to summon his grimoire. Now if he still did not summon his grimoire, he would probably

not have any chance of escaping all of this...

“I’ll send you off to your journey!”

A sound that sounded like a Death Reaper’s call suddenly resounded from behind.

I’m done for... Tian Quan’s head was drenched with cold sweat. He had not managed to summon his grimoire, yet his enemy had already caught up to him.

Yue Yang released Star Explosion towards Duan Mu Long Cheng. He didn’t need to use Binding Inherent Skill to bind Tian Quan, he only let the ball of star pass through Tian Quan’s body. This was because its speed and power would be increased this way. The Star Explosion would not explode on Tian Quan’s body, it would only create a huge hole on his chest... Duan Mu Long Cheng was extremely crafty, he knew how to teleport. However, against Yue Yang who had Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, teleport or disguise would not be effective at all. Forget about Duan Mu Long Cheng, Yue Yang could even sense some traces of the extremely strong enemy that had been hiding here all the time.

That extremely strong Innate had been hiding his presence all along, watching the situation secretly.

Yue Yang had already discovered that fellow long ago. He had arrived the moment Phoenix Fairy Beauty left. Yue Yang didn’t know why he didn’t attack him. Maybe he wanted to know his true strength and power... Yue Yang felt that Tian Quan was simply the

bait that that hidden ranker had set up!

That hidden ranker was about to make use of Tian Quan, even Duan Mu Long Cheng, to get a sense of the strength that Yue Yang was hiding.

Who on earth was this hidden ranker?

According to Yue Yang's guess, this hidden ranker's powers were probably not inferior to the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian. Then who could he be? Thousand Goblins Sect Leader?

Yue Yang couldn't understand his enemy's identity and goal for coming here at this moment. However, right now, the most important thing was to kill Tian Quan and injure Duan Mu Long Cheng heavily. He should pretend not to know about the hidden ranker's existence now and try to think of ideas to ambush him later... Maybe Zhi Zun and Elder Nan Gong had returned from the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, hence the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader had not made any move towards them. Or maybe it was for some other reason.

“Rumble...”

As Yue Yang continued to think, his Star Explosion had already released an extremely shocking, world-shaking huge explosion.

Its power was ten times more than what Yue Yang had used to kill Moqi Xu Ling just now!

Chapter 293 – Taking Down The Enemy, Barging Into The Demon's Palace

The Star Explosion shook the whole heaven and earth.

The whole of Yue Clan Castle quaked from the explosion. The grounds in front of the castle split apart, the soil crumbling down the crevice. A pit dozens over meters wide and a few metres deep shockingly appeared at the position where Duan Mu Long Cheng was standing just now. The previously neatly laid out road had been completely destroyed. In the center of explosion, Duan Mu Long Cheng had already disappeared, it was unclear whether he was alive or dead. The Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant at the side of the explosion was drenched in blood, his clothes torn and tattered. It seemed like he had been injured quite badly.

He held his golden longsword in front of his chest. The blade of his sword was still shaking from the impact of the attack.

This emperor-like Holy Beast could actually use Sword Qi to strengthen his defense and protected himself from the destructive Star Explosion.

Even though he was standing quite a distance away from the center of explosion, and that his body had an extremely high defense of a Diamond-ranked Level 9 beast, Yue Yang was quite amazed that he was able to withstand the impact of the Star Explosion Domain of Power.

Other than Hui Tai Lang and the Thorny Flower Demoness, the

beasts on the ground were all either blown away or escape hundreds of meters away.

Long before Tian Quan was completely destroyed by Yue Yang's Star Explosion, all of his summoned beasts had all abandoned him and escaped...

The Gold-ranked Level 7 Storm Griffin had died on the spot. It was Tian Quan's Guardian Beast, and it was also the only beast that didn't betray Tian Quan. The Gold-ranked Level 7 "Red-crowned Wyvern King", Gold-ranked Level 6 Giant Bat and Gold-ranked Level 6 Harpy had all flew into the sky, doing their best to avoid the powerful impact of the Star Explosion.

Yue Yang had started his counter-attack.

In the sky, the Bloody Queen Red rushed down.

She let out a blood-curdling Banshee Scream. The Giant Bat who had the sharpest sense of hearing immediately fell unconscious, whirling down to the ground from the sky.

The giant Red-crowned Wyvern King flapped its wings desperately, trying its best to shake off the Thorny Flower Demoness behind it.

The Harpy had the fastest speed.

However, no matter how fast she was, she would only struggle in

vain in front of Xiao Wen Li.

Xiao Wen Li shot out her Binding Inherent Skill and slashed her Dual Icicle Blade, sending making the Harpy's head flying in the air... On the ground, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and Hui Tai Lang had already started their killing competition. Ah Man fought against the Fire Hydra while Hui Tai Lang picked the Cerberus as its opponent. There was also the Reaper Mantis whose level was hardly enough to fight against the Magma Wyvern, however, when the Magma Wyvern saw the Reaper Mantis, it had immediately turned around and ran with all it had... Reaper Mantis had always been the mortal enemies of the dragon race. Even the Fluorescent Bone Dragon, Ruthless Scarlet Dragon, Hell Black Dragon all scampered away when they saw a Reaper Mantis, how could a Magma Wyvern stand a chance?

The Lava Giant came over to help the Magma Wyvern, but its speed was simply too slow.

The Fire Witch who held a Flame Whip on her hands prepared to whip Barbarian Cow Shadow who was nearer to it. A long, flaming whip whirl down from the sky as it landed hard on Ah Man's body.

The Bloody Queen also had a Flaming Whip ability. Although she wasn't as skillful at it compared to Banshee Scream, it was definitely still a strong ability.

Holding the Dragon Slaying Dagger and Eye Destroyer Dagger in her hands, she instantly killed the Giant Bat who had fallen unconscious and was gravely injured just now.

Her second target was the Fire Witch.

The Lava Giant raised its scorching fists and was about to smash them hard onto Hui Tai Lang who was biting onto the Cerberus. However, without the Lava Giant realizing, the Golden Beast had managed to jump onto its head. It ignored the burning flames and immediately dug in to eat.

Even the King of Black Light's body which was made of obsidian, its hardness unrivalled in the world, was unable to withstand the Golden Beast.

Obviously, this Lava Giant who only used lava and magma to protect its body wouldn't stand a chance.

On the other side, after getting bitten a few times, Hui Tai Lang finally exploded in anger. Its Demon Qi exploded as it turned from Bronze-ranked Level 3 straight to Platinum-ranked Level 5... It was too lazy to fight with its full force just now, who would know that it would be bullied by the Cerberus instead... Hui Tai Lang was furious, its black Hellflames rose up to the sky as its Demon King-like Qi burst out. Initially, the Cerberus had an easy time biting Hui Tai Lang and creating multiple bloody wounds, but when Hui Tai Lang rose up to Platinum-ranked Level 5, the teeth in all three of the Cerberus mouths were immediately shattered into pieces, unable to withstand the hardness of Hui Tai Lang's flesh.

Their sharp teeth completely did not stand a chance against Hui Tai Lang's defense!

This was the Defensive Technique that Yue Yang had taught Hui Tai Lang. It originated from one of the most low-classed combat technique, “Hammer Crushing Stone Technique”.

Yue Yang had changed it a little, turning the offensive moves into defensive instead.

Using its Qi to envelope its whole body, Hui Tai Lang would mold its Qi into a hammer whenever its enemy tried to attack it, and smash it at its enemy instead... This was Yue Yang’s wish, but of course, Hui Tai Lang was still unable to do this yet.

It could combine its Demon Qi with the metal element in its body and channel them all over its whole body. The moment it received an enemy’s attack, it would be able to strengthen the part of the skin that was attacked immediately, then use its Demon Qi to attack its enemies back.

Although it was still not able to reach the results that Yue Yang had wished for him, it was more than enough to stop the Cerberus’ attack.

Hui Tai Lang who had suddenly rose to Platinum-ranked Level 5 had a dramatic increase in both of its offense and defense.

With one it slash, it tore open the Cerberus’ chest, while its sharp teeth bit at the Cerberus’ poisonous dog head on the left, tearing it away forcefully. Immediately, the three-headed Cerberus became a two-headed Cerberus. It rolled on the ground wailing in pain.

Seeing its opponent weakened, Hui Tai Lang didn't show any mercy and pinned it down with its claws as it bit it mercilessly and turned it into food, clawing its flesh to find its demon crystal and swallowed it whole.

However, the fastest one to win their battle was obviously not Hui Tai Lang.

Other than Xiao Wen Li who had killed her opponent in one move, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man had activated its Doom Eyes and instantly killed the Fire Hydra... Even the demon Innate Ranker Chi Liao who only had his head left and was hiding behind his protective shield was also killed on the process.

It was the Bloodeye Double Kill. When the Doom Eyes was activated it had a small probability of activating Bloodeye Double Kill, which would kill another nearby enemy.

Previously, at the Aquarius Temple, Ah Man had ever used the Bloodeye Double Kill to kill both the Aquarius Temple Guardian and the beast goddess hadow. If it weren't for Yue Yang's good luck that Ah Man had accidentally activated Bloodeye Double King, Yue Yang would never be able to pass the Aquarius Temple! Right now, Yue Yang's luck had turned around once again. Chi Liao who was hiding behind his protective shield and thought that he was safe, was actually killed by the Bloodeye Double Kill because his beast had died from the Zoom Eyes...

The moment Chi Liao died, his beasts all exploded.

However, it was only the Magma Wyvern and Lava Giant.

The Fire Witch's head had been pierced by the Dragon Slaying Dagger and died... As for the Cerberus, its magic crystal was already inside Hui Tai Lang's stomach. Hui Tai Lang had even burped a few times.

Yue Yang's beasts weren't only better in terms of speed and abilities. Living under Yue Yang, they had to learn how to fight for kills and merit.

Everything must be done quickly, otherwise they would only have other's leftovers.

In this kind of terrifying condition that was even worse than hell, Yue Yang's beast had to learn how to kill quickly.

It can be said that currently, the slowest beast to kill its enemy right now was the Reaper Mantis, which was famous for its high speed, agility and deadliness!

※ ※ ※

Duan Mu Long Cheng had already disappeared. Yue Yang stood quietly in the middle of the fighting ground.

With his Level 5 Divine Vision, he swept his gaze across the surrounding.

“That was a really quick escape!” Yue Yang realized that Duan Mu Long Cheng who was hiding himself had soundlessly escaped to a nearby hill. That fellow was completely uninjured. He had immediately escaped the moment he saw his companion dead. Yue Yang also discovered another person hiding who had moved a little. Yue Yang wasn’t able to see his movements with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, but he was extremely certain that this fellow was actually Duan Mu Long Cheng’s bait for him so that he could kill him.

In a place further away, two spheres of light that was shining brightly like a star was chasing at each other.

That was the Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Shun Tian who were battling.

There wasn’t any changes between the two people’s situation right now, they had only been trying to find each other’s weakness. If only one of them could find the other party’s weakness, it would mark the turning point of this battle.

As for the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar versus the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of the Zhi Jin Kingdom, the four of them were engaged in such a heated battle to the point that Yue Yang couldn’t see where they had gone anymore.

In the sky, Xiao Wen Li threw the Golden Giant down, then turned into a rainbow coloured light and returned back to Yue Yang’s body.

Immediately afterward, Yue Yang teleported to chase after Duan Mu Long Cheng who was in hiding.

The Bloody Queen, Thorny Flower Demoness, Golden Beast and Reaper Mantis took over Xiao Wen Li and fought together against that huge Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Giant. On the ground, Hui Tai Lang, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man also exerted their strongest power to kick the Golden Giant's huge body back to the sky, ambushing the Golden Giant and cooperation with the Bloody Queen and the others, attacking the Golden Giant from the top and the bottom... As their opponent was a Guardian Beast, there was no meaning to killing it. Hence, the Bloody Queen and Hui Tai Lang only attacked it to annoy it, stalling for time so that the Golden Giant wouldn't disturb Yue Yang's fight. They didn't go for the kill like the usual.

Just as Yue Yang managed to catch up with Duan Mu Long Cheng, he suddenly burst out in laughter.

His laughter was extremely sinister.

As if his evil plan had succeeded, his whole face was filled with smugness and accomplishment.

He activated his Weaken Domain of Power the second time and activated his Speed Boost Inherent Skill at the same time, punching straight at Yue Yang...

“You are doomed!”

Duan Mu Long Cheng's eyes glinted with a cruel, cold expression as his fist flew with the speed of a shooting star, landing squarely in Yue Yang's chest. Yue Yang had wanted to dodge it in the beginning. Even when facing against Duan Mu Long Cheng's Speed Boost Inherent Skill, he had the confidence to avoid it completely. However, at this time, there was a sinister shadow that appeared soundlessly at Yue Yang's back. A huge, ghost claw-like hands suddenly touched the back of Yue Yang's head.

A strange kind of power that felt like Binding Chains, but slightly different, restricted Yue Yang's movements.

This was the Numb Inherent Skill. Yue Yang felt his whole body going numb and he lost control of his body.

Although it was only a short 1 second, it was extremely deadly.

"Curse you!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty flew over from afar like lightning, traversing space and time as if time never existed. She, who was hundreds of kilometres away had overcome the flow of space and time, appearing right in front of Yue Yang and saved him. Someone had also arrived, with a speed as fast as hers, and that was the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian! His hands let out a shining radiance as if they were two stars. His body were also emitting thousands of light rays that were as sharp as swords as he threw his punch towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty's back and his other punch at Yue Yang's face.

"Numb." The dark shadow reached out his ghost claw-like right hand towards Phoenix Fairy Beauty, activating his Numb Inherent Skill.

“Go away!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty shouted angrily.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty sent the Innate Level 6 Duan Mu Long Cheng flying with one kick, and then sent another kick at the dark sinister shadow with her other leg. Her extremely fast right hand had knocked right onto the punch that the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian, had launched towards Yue Yang. Her left hand hurriedly pulled Yue Yang away, helping him to escape from the controls of the Numb Inherent Skill. However, Phoenix Fairy Beauty wasn't able to defend herself and suffered the full brunt of Shun Tian's punch. Pain coursed through her body, making her face distort in suffering as a drip of blood flowed out from the corner of her mouth.

Behind her, the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian had raised his fists again and was preparing to land another punch at the back of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's head.

Yue Yang forced himself to ignore the pain and dizziness that he felt from the powerful attack by Duan Mu Long Cheng that he suffered just now. He reached out his hands and hugged the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body, then turned around and activated Binding Inherent Skill on the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian with all that he had.

The Binding Inherent Skill was only strong enough to bound Shun Tian for less than half a second.

Fortunately it was enough to buy them time.

That dark sinister shadow forced himself to endure Phoenix Fairy Beauty's kick and reached out his ghost claws, pricking the into the back of Yue Yang's head.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty protected Yue Yang with her beautiful shoulders, blocking the attack just in time.

The ghost claws left 5 bloody holes on her silky shoulders, but Phoenix Fairy Beauty still had the chance to swing her arms and punched the dark sinister shadow's face, making him retreat in defeat. Shun Tian who had only managed to break free of the Binding Inherent Skill continued to swing his second punch. Yue Yang activated World Exterminating Wheel on his left hand and created a Nirvana's Flame Sword on his right hand. He did not defend himself at all, he focused on offense instead... Shun Tian's punch landed right on Yue Yang's arms as he avoided Yue Yang's World Exterminating Wheel. The World Exterminating Wheel lost control and swerved into the wrong direction. At this time, Shun Tian had also sent a kick at Yue Yang's wrist, deflecting the Nirvana's Flame Sword. At the same time, Shun Tian also headbutted Yue Yang with a force that was akin to a shooting star.

“Uoohhh, I'll fight you to the death!”

The Runes covering the whole of Yue Yang's body suddenly lighted up as his Nirvana's Flames soared. He gathered his greatest power to headbut against Shun Tian with all he had.

A thunderous sound resounded as Yue Yang felt excruciating pain

on his forehead, as if his head was about to burst out.

Blood slowly dripped from his mouth.

Shun Tian's powerful strength was not something that Yue Yang could defend against at this point of time.

However, the strange thing was that Shun Tian was actually more injured than Yue Yang... There was a small hole on his forehead, where blood continued to flow out relentlessly. On the other hand, there was only some redness on Yue Yang's forehead. Actually, if it wasn't the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, if it was Duan Mu Long Cheng instead, he would probably have died on the spot.

When Yue Yang reached Level 5 of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, he wasn't restricted to releasing the Sword Qi from his fingers or legs anymore. He was able to release it at any of the blood acupoints on his body. The Yin Tang Acupoint on his forehead had unleashed a Sword Qi at the instant when he headbutted Shun Tian, at the point where Shun Tian's offense was at the highest and his defense was at the lowest. Yue Yang's Sword Qi had pierced through Shun Tian's forehead and into his skull.

Furthermore, Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame had burnt off the layer of Innate Qi that was protecting Shun Tian's body, preventing him to take out the Sword Qi pierced into his skull right away.

This gave Yue Yang the chance to brutally trash around Shun Tian's head with the Sword Qi that had penetrated deep into his skull. Even though Shun Tian was a very strong warrior who was

equal to Phoenix Fairy Beauty in strength, he couldn't help but to writhe in agony.

Seeing Shun Tian falling into Yue Yang's trap, Phoenix Fairy Beauty immediately attacked, taking advantage of the situation.

“[Sky's Law]!”

A purple-coloured lightning suddenly appeared in lightning speed, under Phoenix Fairy Beauty's summon. With a power that could annihilate everything, it exploded right at Shun Tian's head.

This kind of terrifying, destructive power was in no way weaker than Yue Yang's Star Explosion. It might even be stronger.

Only World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana's Flame, those kind of cheat-like skill that was unrivalled in terms of destructibility! Of course, there was also the fact that Yue Yang had not yet fully mastered the World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame yet. If he could master the World Exterminating Wheel to the point where it could truly exterminate the world and master the Nirvana Flame to the point it could burn the whole earth, then there would be no other skills in this world that could truly match to them... Yue Yang had only started his path as an Innate not long ago, hence the amount of skills that he had experimented and comprehended was very little. He had only taken the first step into the world of Innate. Obviously, he couldn't compare to Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Shun Tian, those thousand-year-old geezers at this point of time.

Yue Yang was able to succeed in his trick and pierced Shun Tian with his Sword Qi just now, this alone was enough to shock everyone present... What kind of Sword Qi was that, how did it have so much power?

After suffering a shot of Innate invisible Sword Qi and another shot of Tian Fa's Purple Lightning, Shun Tian was almost unable to endure it anymore.

He screamed out in pain.

He didn't care about Yue Yang or Phoenix Fairy Beauty anymore. He escaped at the first chance.

When the dark sinister shadow saw this, he also wanted to leave and escape. His claws that was enveloped in green, ghost-fire like aura flashed away from Phoenix Fairy Beauty as he turned around and left, escaping quickly. Yue Yang ignored his pain and grabbed onto the dark sinister shadow... The two of them activated their Inherent Skills at the same time, the dark sinister shadow unleashed Numb onto Yue Yang while Yue Yang unleashed Binding Inherent Skill in order to completely stopped the dark sinister shadow's plans of escape.

The two party were only unable to move for a second, but as far as Phoenix Fairy Beauty was concerned, that was more than enough to beat the dark sinister shadow black and blue.

“[Original Sin], [Resentment], [Redemption]!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty unleashed three moves in one go, her hands shining bright like suns.

The dark sinister shadow's body shook hard as three huge bloody holes suddenly appeared on his chest, left rib and right leg respectively. One could even see to his bones. Phoenix Fairy Beauty hugged Yue Yang with one hand and turned around, swinging her other arms and landing a punch on the dark sinister shadow's face, causing his nose to dislocate as blood flowed out continuously from it, "Take this back!"

She then sent a kick towards the dark sinister shadow's stomach, just as he was about to escape again, "And this is the interest!"

The dark sinister shadow quickly retreated.

However, he wasn't able to retreat very far away when the World Exterminating Wheel that Yue Yang had released with his right hand spun quickly towards him.

That dark sinister shadow seemed to be a warrior on the same level as Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Even though he had been heavily injured, he could dodge the World Exterminating Wheel easily. However, he didn't predict that Yue Yang would suddenly stabbed his back with a spear made out of Nirvana's Flame, piercing deep into the dark sinister shadow's stomach... The dark sinister shadow screamed out in pain. Although his body wasn't burnt completely by the Nirvana's Flame, the place where the spear had pierced his body had completely melted away. His skin and flesh had been completely destroyed, making him scream out in pain. His screams resounded throughout the whole mountain.

Almost at the same time, two rays of laser-like light ray shot out from the dark sinister shadow and Shun Tian's fingers.

The two light rays intersected right on top of Yue Yang's face. So close! He was almost destroyed by the shots!

If he had really been hit, Yue Yang's little life would be gone!

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty had saved him once again.

She pinned him to the ground, her ample breasts pressing against his chest as she studied his face. In that crucial moment, she had snatched him back from the grips of the Grim Reaper... The dark sinister shadow and Shun Tian saw that they did not manage to kill Yue Yang even with the best timing and scheme. When they saw that Phoenix Fairy Beauty had started to condense her Sky Law's power, they immediately escaped to different ways. They didn't want to fight Phoenix Fairy Beauty to their deaths or suffered more damage to their bodies.

The dark sinister shadow disappeared without a second word.

Shun Tian flew to thousands of meters away. The injury on his forehead that was continuously bleeding out made him look a complete wretch, but it also made him look sinister. He was a complete change from the respectable look he had as the Great Emperor just now.

“Brat, don’t be too smug for long. Our next meeting will be your funeral.” Shun Tian’s words implied that Yue Yang was lucky this time because the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had protected him. If she hadn’t, Yue Yang would have been dead long ago. Yue Yang knew that it was too early for him to fight against Shun Tian right now, but he believed in his quick growth. The next time they meet, he might be strong enough to be Shun Tian’s opponent. Just like the Marquis of Zhi Jin, the first battle they had was extremely difficult, but in less than a year, he had surpassed him by leaps and bounds... In the future, he might even surpass Shun Tian, the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei by leaps and bounds too. Shun Tian would definitely not be his last boss, he was probably only one of Yue Yang’s stepping stones that was a little harder to climb!

“You sure talk big!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty shouted furiously as she swung her hands, unleashing the Sky Law’s power of Purple Lightning towards Shun Tian. Shun Tian didn’t wait for the attack to reach him, he immediately disappeared into thin air.

When Phoenix Fairy Beauty saw that Shun Tian had left, she deactivated her Sky Law’s power and fell weakly right into Yue Yang’s arms.

In reality, it wasn’t that she didn’t participate in clearing the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. She had discovered that something was wrong and was afraid that something would happen to Yue Yang, hence she returned back halfway through the expedition. She was already injured at the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, but fortunately, she managed to hide the fact from Shun Tian. She had even managed to team up with Yue Yang and defeat Shun Tian and the dark sinister shadow, injuring their enemies heavily.

When the crisis was over, she immediately lost all of her strength and fell into Yue Yang's arms.

Yue Yang quickly channeled some Innate Qi into her body and healed her wounds.

Hui Tai Lang, Bloody Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow, Reaper Mantis and the rest of the beast hurriedly came towards their master and protected him, so that Yue Yang, who was also injured, would not be disturbed.

Duan Mu Long Cheng was both happy and fearful. He was happy because now that Tian Fa had fainted, it was the best opportunity for him to attack. However, he was fearful because the Yue Clan Third Young Master had actually been able to inflict such serious damages onto Shun Tian and the dark sinister shadow. If he suffered a blow of Nirvana's Flame Spear onto his stomach or a Sword Qi on his forehead, he wouldn't get away with just serious injuries...

"Come!" Yue Yang channeled his Innate Qi into Phoenix Fairy Beauty with one hand while he beckoned at Duan Mu Long Cheng with his other hand.

"Humph!" Duan Mu Long Cheng wanted to attack him in his heart, but he was afraid of falling into Yue Yang's trap.

If Tian Fa was only acting unconscious, then he would be foolishly charging towards his death!

Duan Mu Long Cheng stamped his feet in frustration as he abandoned the thought of attacking Yue Yang and Tian Fa. He decided to escape far away, hide in a place that Tian Fa would never find and only come out when it was safe enough to do so. Yue Yang also knew that this was his chance. If he didn't kill Duan Mu Long Cheng now, he would probably come back and find him in the future. When Duan Mu Long Cheng started to escape, Yue Yang carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty and pursued him relentlessly. Right now, the situation had turned around, and the more time passed, the more advantage Yue Yang would gain... As long as Phoenix Fairy Beauty woke back up, then Duan Mu Long Cheng would definitely meet his tragic end!

Of course, Duan Mu Long Cheng suspected that Tian Fa wasn't really unconscious. She might have suffered a serious internal injury, but she should still have some power to kill him.

She might kill him in an instant if he dared to make his move.

The moment he thought about this, Duan Mu Long Cheng ran away ever more quickly.

In an instant, he had teleported to the Yue Clan Castle. He was even faster than lightning as he charged into the chaotic battlefield of the Martial Arts Plaza.

He didn't care about the surrounding battle. Before Yue Yang succeeded in catching up to him, he had jumped into the huge, blood red, strange-looking teleportation gate in the middle of the

Martial Arts Plaza. Yue Yang didn't have the time to think, he carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty and followed Duan Mu Long Cheng immediately.

As Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo, Princess Qian Qian, Yue Yu, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan, Xue Wu Xia and the others watched, Yue Yang entered the teleportation gate like a shooting star. Other than Xiao Wen Li who had turned into a rainbow light and was inside Yue Yang's body, Hui Tai Lang, Bloody Queen, Thorny Flower Demoness, Barbarian Cow Shadow and the others didn't manage to follow him...

The moment Yue Yang entered, he realized that he had teleported into a completely different world.

A blood-coloured moon shone down from the sky. There were splendorous and majestic palaces everywhere, and the whole place was decorated with rocky gardens and flowing water. Demon King statues could be seen everywhere. However, the thing that worried Yue Yang was that on top of this Demon Abyss Imperial Palace, there was a black vortex that spun continuously. Evil, sinister Demon Qi endlessly burst out from it from time to time.

"My god, this is the Imperial Palace where the Demon King lives!" Yue Yang never thought that he would arrive at this place chasing his enemy. He had thought that he would only be teleported to some random parts of Demon Abyss.

Just as Yue Yang was about to abandon his pursuit and return to the Soaring Dragon Continent, he heard a strange calling from the bottom of his heart...

It seemed familiar yet distant at the same time... This, who was calling him actually? Yue Yang was completely amazed. In this Demon Abyss Imperial palace, how could there be a friend of his?

Also, what does this calling even mean? Was it real or was it his mere illusion?

Yue Yang hesitated slightly. Right now, he was in a dire situation. It would be difficult to even protect himself, do he really need to follow the calling that he heard?

In the end, he gritted his teeth and made a big decision.

Chapter 294 – Rescuing The Mysterious Sealed Being

Duan Mu Long Cheng was nowhere to be found.

Yue Yang thought that it wasn't because he was too slow or that fellow had escaped too quickly. It was because he had been teleported to a slightly different place because of some reason.

If he had teleported to somewhere in the Soaring Dragon Continent, this slight deviation in teleportation point might not even be a few hundred metres.

However, teleporting from the Soaring Dragon Continent to the Demon Abyss, the extremely huge continent, a slight deviation in the teleportation point would result in a very wide distance.

If he had appeared in another place, it would have been alright.

But he had actually landed right here in the Demon Abyss Imperial Palace... It was the legendary Imperial Palace where the Demon King resided. If a Great Demon King happened to be at home today, Yue Yang, who was carrying the unconscious Phoenix Fairy Beauty, would really be in great danger. However, that familiar yet distant calling in his heart made Yue Yang unable to stop his curiosity... Why would there be a mysterious being that was calling out to him inside the Demon King's Royal Palace?

This kind of calling made Yue Yang really feel out of the world.

At first, he had even thought that he was merely imagining it. Or maybe it was caused by the black vortex whirling on top of the Demon King Imperial Palace.

However, after observing and sensing the calling more carefully, Yue Yang realized that it truly existed!

“Let’s go and see!” Yue Yang didn’t know whether he made the right or wrong decision, but he knew that he had definitely taken a risky choice. He had entered the tiger’s den with no prior information about the Demon Abyss Imperial Palace at all. He was even carrying the unconscious Phoenix Fairy Beauty, while trying to find that mysterious being that was calling out to him. Even a fool knew that he shouldn’t be doing this.

The problem was if Yue Yang didn’t go, gave up his search and returned back to the Soaring Dragon Continent, he wouldn’t have a peace of mind all his life.

He is an adult. Sometimes, some things might just not be smooth sailing.

Sometimes, one must risk it all and throw caution to the wind. If one was always cautious about everything, that wouldn’t do! Yue Yang’s was completely fired up, and he immediately made his decision.

Yue Yang carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty on his back and tied her to him with a cloth, just like how he used to carry Yue Bing.

He then put on his Gemini Mask and summoned the Gold-ranked Mask's "Evil Shadow".

He ordered the Evil Shadow to search the opposite area he was going.

Although its powers were only half of Yue Yang's and it could only stay for an hour, it was more than sufficient to attract the enemy's' attention. Yue Yang felt that the longer he stayed at the Demon Palace, the more danger he would face. At any point of time, a Demon King or some strong enemy could sense his presence in this Palace... Maybe the enemies had already noticed his presence and was rushing over to him.

As Yue Yang carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty and followed in the direction of the spirit calling in his mind, he continued to channel Innate Qi into her to help her heal her injuries more quickly.

Indeed, on the Evil Shadow side, countless demon guards had rushed out, detecting an intruder.

Another demon guard had shouted loudly and started running towards Yue Yang. Seems like they had some kind of Protector Orb security system like the one in the Da Xia Imperial Palace.

Yue Yang had never seen the Protector Orb in the Da Xia Imperial Palace, but he had heard the old fox and Princess Qian Qian talked about it before. It was said that the moment the Protector Orb detected an intruder with killing intent, bad intentions or evil thoughts, the Protector Orb would immediately change colour.

Furthermore, it would also emit a special light and activate the security alarm.

Under the State Grandmaster's [Reveal] Inherent Skill, the Protector Orb could even show the intruder's location and evaluate his abilities.

Tian Luo Kingdom had Protector Lens. It was said that it was more powerful than the Da Xia Kingdom's Protector Orb, it could even show the intruder's appearance.

Since Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom both had this kind of Artifact for security, the Demon Abyss Imperial Palace should have it too. Yue Yang's only hope was that his Counterfeit Inherent Skill could be of use here, tricking his enemy into evaluating his abilities wrongly. Then, they wouldn't see the need of alerting the Demon King. It would be best if the Demon King was not home. Otherwise, Yue Yang who had disturbed the Demon King's peaceful life would definitely suffer his wrath... Yue Yang moved even more quickly, teleporting at places where he could hide his body. He would grab at any opportunity to hide for as long as he could.

On the opposite side, the Evil Shadow made the most ruckus he could ever make.

Loud noises and explosions resounded, attracting most of the demon guard's attention.

In the sky, more than ten demon guards flew in the air as they

chased after the Evil Shadow. Two of them were Demon Commanders.

Yue Yang wasn't interested in Demon Generals now, he wasn't even interested in Demon Commanders, although he had so much difficulties fighting the Demon Commander Ma Li Ang last time.

Ma Li Ang, the Demon Commander, was extremely famous amongst Soaring Dragon Continent's warriors. He was even regarded as one of the Three Great Demon Commanders by human warriors. However, in an Innate's eyes, that fellow was not even worth of mention. They were as insignificant as ants, maybe similar to soldier ants that could fight a little. However, they were still ants no matter what!

Yue Yang was only worried about Demon Marshals and Demon Kings...

Demon Marshals were not like the Marshals in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Demon Marshals could only attain that title because of their strength and abilities, whereas human Marshals mostly attained that title due to their vast experience serving in the military. Their personal strength and ability did not matter, because human Marshals did not need to lead the army in battles. He must be at the rear and plan the battle strategies. Demon Marshals was the other way around, he would lead the Demon Legion in front fiercely. He would be the first enemy that the opposite party would face.

Forget about Demon Marshals, even Demon Kings were the same too.

The battle style in the Demon Abyss were completely different from human's battle style.

Even the few Demon Marshals that the old fox had told Yue Yang before were mostly Innates. One of the Great Demon King Baruth's subordinates, Demon Marshal Duran, was even an Innate Level 5. That was the strongest Demon Commander, his power was more or less equivalent to a Demon King's... If he appeared as an enemy in a war, no amount of soldiers would be enough to kill him.

Demon Marshal Duran mostly lived in the Tong Tian Tower Level 6 or 7. He mostly would not participate in the battles at the lower levels.

In the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower, he was the only Demon Commander whose name had spread far and wide.

Yue Yang truly hoped that the place he had teleported into was not the Great Demon King Baruth's Royal Palace. This was because the Great Demon King Baruth was one of the three Great Demon Kings in the Demon Abyss. Baruth's rank was even higher than the Demon King Ha Xin, who had managed to kill Yue Yang in an instant last time. If Phoenix Fairy Beauty was in good health and Yue Yang was able to fight together with her, he wouldn't be afraid intruding into the Royal Palace. He could just escape if he wasn't strong enough to defeat them. But right now, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was unconscious due to her injuries, she still hadn't woken up yet.

If they met Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran right

now, Yue Yang thought that he would definitely face a difficult battle.

He had just finished fighting against the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian and the dark sinister shadow, whom he suspected was the Thousand Goblins' Sect Leader. He had not fully recovered yet. If a Demon King really appeared right now, he would really be in trouble...

After teleporting from a huge flower garden, Yue Yang had teleported into various strange-looking Demonic Towers.

Yue Yang realized the spirit calling's voice had sounded nearer.

It became clearer, as if it was some sort of call for help.

Yue Yang teleported one last time and arrived at the edge of a huge plaza. He realized that the huge plaza that was covered in obsidian stone was as big as ten soccer field. In the middle of the plaza, there was a huge Demon King statue.

“My god!” Yue Yang realized that what he feared had truly happened.

This Demon King statue was the Great Demon King Baruth.

Previously, the old fox had shown Yue Yang the picture of Baruth, so Yue Yang could recognize him right away. There were a few similarities between Baruth and Ha Xin, but they were

distinguishable.

Baruth's horn was twisted in a wider radius, and he had two tusks on his lower jaw. He also had a pair of bone-like long feelers. His appearance was slightly more intimidating than Ha Xin, bolder and more powerful. In terms of size, Baruth was one metre taller than Ha Xin. Of course, one wouldn't be able to see it from the statue, because it was built much larger to scale. The statue was easily hundreds of metres tall, its height seemingly reaching the cloud. Anyone from all directions could definitely see it.

However, Yue Yang only took a glance at that gigantic statue and then ignored it. The statue couldn't grab his complete attention.

The one that grabbed Yue Yang's attention was the crystal pillars that were surrounding that gigantic statue.

There were around a dozen crystal pillars that were different in length.

The tall ones were around ten metres tall, and the shorter ones were around a few metres tall.

They were emitting a radiant light of power and energy. The Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes that were carved on top of the crystal pillar were arranged in various arrangements. They were extremely profound and mysterious.

Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and was able to see

an anomaly. He felt that the pillars were not merely to revere upon the Great Demon King. Their main purpose was to serve as a seal. Through some kind of sacrifice or prayers, these crystal pillars would continuously grow even more powerful and strengthen the power of its seal

That mysterious being that was calling out to Yue Yang's soul was sealed right in the middle of the Demon King Statue in the middle of the pillars.

"I know you are there, but how do I save you?" Yue Yang was troubled.

The plaza was filled with different kinds of demon monsters.

They ran in all direction, as if they had suffered a shock. Many demon guards were dragging along various demon monsters and beasts and killing them in front of the Crystal Pillar Seal, offering their' blood as sacrifice. There were also Evil Liches of the demon race, chanting relentlessly in front of the Crystal Pillar Seal as they waved the skull staff in their hands.

Maybe the mysterious being trapped inside the Crystal Pillar Seal had sensed Yue Yang's presence and was struggling continuously, wanting to break the seal.

The huge plaza that was covered in obsidian stone continued to shake and tremble.

That hundreds of metres tall Demon King Statue was also shaking, cracks continued to form all over the statue. The cracks became bigger overtime and the huge statue looked like it could shatter anytime. More evil lichs participated int the sacrifice dance ceremony as dark, terrifying black aura flashed out from their skull staves. Transforming the demon blood on the ground into more dark energy, they concentrated their powers into the Demon King Statue... Yue Yang realized that the more sacrifice was offered and the more blood was shed, the more dark energy could be created to fix the cracks on the gigantic statue, continuing to seal the mysterious being trapped inside.

Of course, the main reason was because the Crystal Pillar Seal had received more energy. After absorbing more energy, the seal would be more secure, hence it would be able to restrict the movements of the mysterious being inside.

“The enemies have come to ambush. You guys, bring in more sacrifice quickly! We must definitely not let ‘it’ escape, otherwise, you would all turn into my Hell Black Dragon’s food!” Demon Marshal Duran riding on a Hell Black Dragon suddenly appeared in the sky. His shout was loud as thunder, alarming the demon monsters below until they started to tremble. Demon Marshal Duran could sense something out of the norm. He felt that the plaza was a little different than normal today, but that might be because of the effect of the seal weakening... As there was already the Evil Shadow who was wrecking havoc on the other side, Damon Marshall Duran didn’t think about his doubt too much. Otherwise, he would definitely be able to find Yue Yang who was holding his breath and hiding in a corner.

Demon Marshal Duran never imagined that a human would have

the COunterfeit Inherent Skill and was able to conceal himself from him.

Riding on a Diamond-ranked Level 6 Hell Black Dragon, the Demon Marshal Duran started flying towards the direction of the Evil Shadow.

He knew that there were two or three invaders. However, he thought that one of them was extremely strong, and the other two was nothing much by comparison. Demon Marshal Duran guessed that the strongest one out of the invaders had purposely made a ruckus to attract the demon guards attention. He never thought that the ones hiding were Yue Yang and the unconscious Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Otherwise, he would definitely search for them until they were found.

At this time, Duan Mu Long Cheng was standing in an ancient battlefield. Countless demon monsters were waiting to be teleported.

According to the rules, the more offering that was made, the more number of people they could teleport... Almost thousands, or even tens of thousands low-ranked demon monsters or beasts were thrown into the black hole as sacrifices. However, the teleportation gate was still unable to teleport so many demon monsters into Soaring Dragon Continent. The thing that frustrated the three Demon Marshals the most was that the two teleportation portal they have created had failed as they faced a few small technical issues. Hence they wouldn't be teleported to the place they had targeted at first.

“A twenty year old innate? Did he chase after you? Your Excellency Sect Leader Duan Mu, we never heard of a twenty-year old Innate before! Alright, we won’t doubt you, but where is he?” The three Demon Marshals were extremely respectful towards Duan Mu Long Cheng. Seems like they were not only well-acquainted, they were also quite close.

“I’m sure he had chased after me. But that brat is an expert in hiding, I think he is hiding at some kind of place right now.” Duan Mu Long Cheng replied determinedly.

“Since you have said so, we will report it to the Demon King.” The three Demon Marshals decided to report the news.

“There is an invader... in the Great Demon King’s Royal Palace... He is a human ranker... That human ranker is running towards this place at a very fast speed, he is around hundred metres away!” Suddenly, a lich had received a very strange report from his beast. The Lich immediately shouted out.

“That’s him!” Duan Mu Long Cheng immediately confirmed Yue Yang.

“Demon Marshal Duran is chasing after him...” That Lich’s beast had received some other news, and the Lich quickly shouted out the news.

At this point of time, in the Obsidian Plaza, Yue Yang felt completely relieved when he saw that Demon Marshal Duran had left.

Since the Great Demon King Baruth was not home and Demon Marshal Duran was chasing after his Evil Shadow, he would definitely not stand on ceremony to them anymore. Every second here means more danger for him. Yue Yang took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and released his purple flames, slashing his blade down from the sky and killed two Liches that were dancing for the offering. He then slashed his blade again, and countless demon monster fell to the ground dead, as if Yue Yang was cutting wheat with a sickle.

When the demon monster finally rung the alarm, Yue Yang had already finished killing all the Liches and demon monsters around the crystal Pillar Seal.

Yue Yang released First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash and cut at the gigantic statue with full strength. Yue Yang wanted to destroy the statue and rescue the sealed mysterious being inside. Although he didn't know what the mysterious being was and what relations it had to him, Yue Yang had this kind of strange feeling that he had to save it no matter what.

The Demon King Statue didn't shattered into pieces, but the crack on the statue had greatly widened.

At the same time, the sealed mysterious being also let out a happy cry and continued to struggle. The whole ground trembled like crazy as it rumbled thunderously.

“Dammit!” Demon Marshal Duran seemed to have sensed what

was going on. He immediately took action as he furiously roared, his terrifying voice deafening everyone's ears. He rode his Hell Black Dragon and turned around, flying with a speed faster than before as he rushed back to the Obsidian Plaza.

Chapter 295 – Breaking The Cocoon, Rebirth Of A New Life

Clang!

The Demon King Statue didn't move at all. Other than a line of shallow mark, even the crack didn't grow bigger.

Yue Yang was speechless. This Demon King Statue was obviously not something that can be broken by a piece of blade... If one saw it this way, how strong would that mysterious being sealed inside the Demon King Statue be, if it could cause cracks just by moving its body? If it weren't for the Crystal Pillar Seal, that mysterious being would definitely destroy the whole Demon King Statue just by turning over in its sleep. Compared to Yue Yang, what kind of special existence would it be?

It wasn't wise to stay for a long time right now, he should leave soon to avoid more trouble.

Yue Yang decided to use his ultimate move.

Summoning a World Exterminating Wheel in his hand, countless Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes started to spin all over his body, as if they were a sea of runes. Yue Yang swung his World Exterminating Wheel and hit the Demon King Statue right in the middle.

Immediately, half of the Demon King Statue fell down and

crashed loudly onto the ground.

The body was destroyed, and the stone carving of demon horns on the Demon King Statue's head was broken off.

When the statue shattered into pieces, a glimpse of an enormous, crystallized energy shone out with a brilliant and radiant light. Losing the support of the Crystal Pillar Seal, the statue wasn't able to repair itself again. Yue Yang was overjoyed. He immediately flew over, thinking of taking the enormous crystallized energy away and keeping it for himself.

Unexpectedly, the Crystal Pillar Seal on the ground suddenly shone with a net-like white light. Thousands rays of white light appeared and moved like a living thing, like a girl's soft arms and twined around Yue Yang's body. It gracefully, yet unstoppably pulled Yue Yang down, as if it wanted to seal Yue Yang too. Yue Yang was completely stunned. He didn't manage to rescue the mysterious being, on the contrary, he was about to be sealed as well? Yue Yang hurriedly tossed out his World Exterminating Wheel to destroy the Crystal Pillar Seal. Previously, Yue Yang was even thinking about studying the Crystal Pillar Seal, thinking that it would help him to undo the seal on Empress Fei Wen Li later on. He never thought of destroying it so quickly, but the situation was extremely dangerous right now, so Yue Yang wouldn't care about so much anymore. He would destroy the Crystal Pillar Seal first with his World Exterminating Wheel.

The World Exterminating Wheel that never failed in subduing his opponents strike right at the Crystal Pillar Seal.

However, completely outside of Yue Yang's expectation, it didn't easily slash through the seal. Instead, it was reflected back to Yue Yang.

Within an instant, it returned back into Yue Yang's body.

Could it be that it was impossible to destroy the Crystal Pillar Seal? Yue Yang was just thinking about this when the Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes on the Crystal Pillar Seal suddenly appeared. The powerful light shone out thousand times brighter, illuminating the whole of the Obsidian Plaza with its bright radiance.

The demon monsters who came to attack Yue Yang screamed out in pain when they were engulfed in the white light.

The weak monsters that were nearest to the Crystal Pillar Seal was immediately vaporized, as if they had just been shot by Luo Hua City Mistress' Aurora. Those demon monsters that were slightly further away had parts of their bodies melted away, making them scream in pain as they die. The furthest ones, who were also the strongest ones, immediately screamed out in pain as they rolled on the ground. Other than the two Demon Generals who had managed to escape into the sky, and whose body were emitting out smoke slightly, all the demon guards have completely been wiped out.

Even the lowest-ranked demon monster that were at a far distance had started to melt.

The net-like white light continued to pull Yue Yang to the ground. It had also captured Phoenix Fairy Beauty and had started to wrap both Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang in its light, like a huge cocoon.

Countless Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes started to float about, falling slowly, one by one, onto Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body. Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body turned transparent slightly, as if she was about to be sealed. On the other hand, the Ancient Runes and Heaven Runes did not have any sealing effect on Yue Yang's body.

Instead, they were like a wave of tsunami, entering into Yue Yang's body and fusing together with the Runic Circles that had already existed in his body, breaking it down and re-creating a brand new Runic Circle.

After the new set of Runes entered Yue Yang's body, his World Exterminating Wheel had also improved to a whole new level.

The Runic Circle in his body had become even richer and more profound.

Yue Yang was slightly shocked. He didn't know that the Ancient Runes in his body could still level up. Furthermore, this kind of improvement seemed to be due to the fact that he had acquired new Ancient Runes.

"My god." Yue Yang was completely safe, but he realized that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body was about to disappear.

He didn't know how to stop this kind of sealing process. Would Phoenix Fairy Beauty really end up being sealed here?

There must be a way, there must be... Yue Yang forced himself to calm down and worked hard to sense the energy flow in his surrounding. He wanted to destroy the seal, rescue Phoenix Fairy Beauty and that mysterious being who had been sealed in this place for god knows how long. At this time, in the sky, the furious Demon Marshal Duran had returned, roaring loudly as he rode his Hell Black Dragon.

The Hell Black Dragon felt an inexplicable fear from the bright, dazzling light on the ground.

It completely refused to land as it let out a pitiful whine.

Demon Marshal Duran had also felt a little unwell. He knew how terrifying the sealing power of the Crystal Pillar Seal was. It was an Artifact that an extremely strong warrior from the Demon Abyss had brought here from the Heaven Realms ten thousand years ago. They were thinking of using it to seal Zhi Zun before, it was a pity that that plan was never realized.

The Crystal Pillar Seal had become a treasured Artifact of this Demon Palace, passed down from generation to generation.

Three hundred years ago, the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran was at Level 7 of the Tong Tian Tower when they met an injured, peculiar beast. Thrilled with the

unexpected prey, they invited various Demon Abyss Rankers and brought several Demon Kings and ten Demon Marshals to subdue the peculiar beast. Who would know that unexpectedly, although the peculiar beast was injured, it could still kill 2 Demon Kings and 8 Demon Marshals in the battle. Even the Great Demon King Baruth was heavily injured. Furthermore, they were unable to subdue or capture it. In the end, Demon Marshal Duran had used the Crystal Pillar Seal to seal it instead.

If this peculiar beast ever broke free of the seal, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Black Vortex...”

Demon Marshall Duran was forced to use the strongest defensive mechanism in the Royal Palace, the Black Vortex that had stored the energy of the Demon Moon and blood of demons for thousands of years. It was one of the treasures of the Blood Prison Demon Abyss.

Only that would surpass the bright energy of the Crystal Pillar Seal, that would in turn seal the terrifying white light.

The Black Vortex in the sky slowly descended to the ground under Demon Marshal Duran’s orders.

In the whole of the Demon Palace, other than the Great Demon King Baruth, the Demon Marshal Duran was the only Ranker with the ability to control the Black Vortex.

This was not a matter of summoning abilities, it was a matter of honor and trust. The Great Demon King Baruth didn't even authorize his children to control the Black Vortex, including the current heir to the throne, the Crown Prince of the Demon Palace. Instead, he conferred the authority of controlling the Black Vortex to his most trusted friend and battle comrade, Demon Marshal Duran! He was someone who would rather give up his chance to be promoted into a Demon King in order to serve and help his friend as a Demon Marshal!

Demon Marshal Duran took out a Dark Demon Pearl and exerted a huge amount of Demon Qi as he chanted Heaven Runes continuously, controlling the descent of the Black Vortex to suppress the white light.

It was the start of a great battle between light and darkness.

Both were each other's nemesis.

Both powers melt the other side away, clashing against each other relentlessly.

The Black Vortex that had stored thousands of years of dark energy was at a better position. It was able to suppress the energy coming out from Crystal Pillar Seal and covered the whole sky of the Demon Palace with darkness.

Bathed in the dark energy of the Black Vortex, the Hell Black Dragon's powers increased multiple times.

It confidently swooped down this time, charging towards the white light below and breathing out a long, terrifying Dragon Breath. Its goal was to attack Yue Yang who was enveloped inside the cocoon.

More demon guards, Demon Generals and Liches started to appear from the Demon Palace, offering their slaves and low-ranked demon monsters as sacrifices into the Black Vortex like crazy. As the demon blood turned into energy, the power of the Black Vortex quickly overpowered the power of white light coming out from the Crystal Pillar Seal, returning the Crystal Pillar Seal into its former state.

At this time, in the Ancient Battlefield, the three Demon Marshals and Duan Mu Long Cheng had heard about the news.

They immediately abandoned their plans of attacking the Soaring Dragon Continent and hurriedly returned back.

Compared to their plans of attacking the Soaring Dragon Continent, the mysterious beast sealed within the Crystal Pillar Seal in the Obsidian Plaza was more important. The moment it broke free from the Crystal Pillar Seal, the whole of Demon Abyss would be engulfed in catastrophe.

The Demon Abyss Blood Prison was a distinguished place, home of three Great Demon Kings and six Demon Kings.

Right now, there was only three Great Demon Kings and one Demon King. Not counting the number of Demon Marshals that

died, they have already lost five Demon Kings.

This was all done by the mysterious holy beast.

Even human warriors were not able to kill these five Demon Kings in a thousand years... Alas, this mysterious holy beast had only needed one day to kill five Demon Kings, even seriously injuring the others. The whole of Demon Abyss were quaking in fear from this mysterious beast!

Furthermore, when it killed all those Demon Kings, it was suffering from heavy injuries.

If it wasn't injured and was fighting against them in its peak condition, the consequences would be really unthinkable.

“Quickly! That brat Yue Yang is actually trying to release the holy beast. Stop him quickly! Don't spare him at any cost!” Duan Mu Long Cheng was obviously a human warrior, but he was extremely concerned with the matters of Demon Abyss. It was really peculiar. Duan Mu Long Cheng and the three Demon Marshals abandoned all their soldiers and returned back to the Demon Palace with the fastest speed they could muster, arriving at the Obsidian Plaza.

In the Obsidian Plaza.

Demon Marshal Duran was riding his Hell Black Dragon as he swooped down from the sky. With the power of the Black Vortex,

the terrifying dragon's breath spurted out right at Yue Yang who was trapped inside the cocoon.

However, the dragon's breath immediately vapourized in the midst of the white light, turning into nothing.

Yue Yang who was trapped inside the cocoon released the full strength of his Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

A static-like sound resounded as he tried to forced his way out of the cocoon... Demon Marshal Du Lan thought that Yue Yang was the mysterious beast who wanted to break free out of its cocoon and seal. His expression immediately changed as he summoned five meteors to create a meteor shower, raining it down onto Yue Yang who was inside the cocoon. The meteors that ignited in red, fiery flames increased in power as it streak through the Black Vortex. It crashed down hard, breaking through the resistance of the white light. Although half of it was melted away from the white light, it still contained the power that could destroy heaven and earth. It smashed right into the cocoon, causing a huge explosion.

The cocoon held some kind sealing power that could withstand any kind of internal and external attack.

Other than Innate Invisible Sword Qi, Yue Yang had even tried to break it using his Yin Yang Ability.

When the meteor smashed into the cocoon, it was shaken greatly, but not a single crack was formed on it.

Although Yue Yang who was trapped inside wasn't injured, he was shaken by the blast of the impact, his head and eyes dizzy.

“Roar!”

The Great Demon King Baruth finally arrived. His body, which was more than fifteen-metres tall and engulfed in hellflames, appeared at the Obsidian Plaza. Seeing the Crystal Pillar Seal that was shaking incessantly like it could shatter anytime and his own statue that had already shattered to the ground, he was immediately furious beyond control.

He charged towards the Demon Palace walls, his huge arms breaking one of the pagodas on top of the palace walls.

He raised it up high and threw it at the cocoon that was distance away, with a power that was even greater than Demon Marshal Duran's five flaming meteor shower.

As the cocoon suffered multiple attacks, it shook violently as the light it was emitting turned dimmer and dimmer. It looked like it was about to break into pieces. Although Yue Yang was quite shaken by the violent impacts, the cocoon that was preventing him from leaving suddenly revealed a big hole, making him feel really happy. Seems like he could finally escape out of the cocoon. It would be best if they could send a few more attacks and destroy the seal below in the process, Yue Yang hoped.

Of course, even if he could leave now, Yue Yang didn't have any

plans of rushing out immediately. He definitely didn't want to become his enemy's target.

The Great Demon King Baruth roared thunderously as he condensed a powerful pillar of light in his hands, similar to what Demon King Ha Xin had shot out before. However, the colour was a little different, and it was much more powerful.

The dark-purple coloured light pillar shot out towards Yue Yang.

After going through the Black Vortex, the dark-purple coloured Demon King's light pillar's power increased multiple times. It practically had the power to destroy the whole heaven and earth!

It heavily smashed onto the cocoon that was already broken.

The cocoon immediately shattered as most of its energy was used up to cancel the impact of the Demon King's light pillar. A small amount of it shattered into countless balls of light, scattering in every direction. That dark purple-coloured demon king light pillar immediately produced a thunderous explosion when it smashed onto the ground.

The useless Yue Yang, on the other hand, had summoned his grimoire and erected his protective shield to protect his little life.

Are you kidding? How could he bear the brunt of that light pillar attack head-on?

Most importantly, Yue Yang had already calculated the angle. Before the demon king light pillar was shot out, he had set up his protective shield so that the light pillar would be refracted and shifted in the direction that would destroy the Crystal Pillar Seal on the ground. He felt that he wouldn't be strong enough to fight against a Demon King alone, that would be crazy. He definitely needed a helping hand, such as this mysterious beast who could cause an earthquake in this Obsidian Plaza just by wiggling its body. He would have a higher chance of winning then.

The power of the demon king light pillar was extremely terrifying, but it was still not enough to break the seal.

Yue Yang was about to go to despair.

What kind of damned seal was this? Why was it so hard to break?

When the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran saw that there was a young human warrior in the middle of the explosion, they immediately understood that this brat was the one that had been causing trouble.

They were extremely furious, and was prepared to charge forward and slaughter Yue Yang... Baruth's Demon Claws stretched forward... Yue Yang believed that he would definitely be able to poke a hole through his protective shield. Previously, the Demon King Ha Xin had tried it before, and he had almost killed him with just a finger. However, Demon King Ha Xin was stuck at the teleportation portal at that time, he wasn't able to come out and extend his arms far enough. With the addition of Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill, Yue Yang could fortunately avoid

getting killed. However, right now, he didn't have anything at all. There was no teleportation portals to stop the Demon King's movements, and he was in his enemy's nest, where he was fighting alone against countless demons. The worst thing was that Phoenix Fairy Beauty was about to become transparent and disappear. Seems like the seal was very effective towards her. If he escaped here, she would definitely be sealed here for life...

Yue Yang's heart was really in a mess this time.

Should he fight, or escape?

Why did he always meet powerful enemies? He had just fought against the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian and the dark sinister shadow who was possibly the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. Now, he had met another two powerful enemies, the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran. He was all alone, how could he fight this battle?

Rummmmbllleee....

Suddenly, the ground on Yue Yang's feet started shaking violently. The weaker demon monsters all fell to the ground, while the Demon Generals also couldn't stand on their feet stably.

As the Crystal Pillar Seal trembled, some pillars tilted and fell to the ground while some sunk deeper into the ground...The Sealing Circle had been broken by the mysterious being who had saved its energy for a very long time. White light shone out from the big Sealing Circle and it shattered in an instant. Countless rays of

white light turned into arrows of light, shooting out in every direction, instantly killing every demon monsters present... even the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran had to stop their advance and defend themselves with their hands. The Hell Black Dragon spurted its dragon's breath and stopped a few arrows of light, but missed one that cut across its abdomen. Even with the defense of a Diamond-ranked Level 6 body, a severe cut was immediately formed on its skin, and the wound bled out heavily.

The whole ground was shaking so violently that the Demon Palace was also shaking, the firm palace walls falling to the ground.

The grounds in the Obsidian Plaza split open.

The Demon King Statue's leg exploded into millions of stone fragments. The stone fragments blew out with so much power that it didn't fall onto the ground until several miles away.

A huge black hole appeared on the ground as the sealed Demon Qi burst out to the sky like a spring fountain. Less than three seconds later, a shining cocoon floated out, it was even bigger and stronger than the one that trapped Yue Yang before. However, the surface of the shining cocoon had started to slowly peel off, as if something was about to break free out of the cocoon. When Yue Yang saw this, he didn't care about the Great Demon King anymore. The most important thing to do now was to save this comrade-in-arms. He immediately used his fastest speed to rush there and created a net of Sword Qis from his Innate Invisible Sword Qi, in order to help breaking the shining cocoon... The Great Demon King Baruth

and Demon Marshal Duran had also rushed out with their fastest speed to stop Yue Yang.

Four gigantic Demon Claws charged at Yue Yang's small body from the sky.

If any of this claws reached Yue Yang, his body would definitely be torn into shreds.

“Kill or be killed!” Yue Yang didn't have the time to summon a World Exterminating Wheel, he could only unleash his Nirvana's Flame that shot up brightly to the sky... the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran wanted to kill him?

Then they must pay the same price!

Baruth and Duran were both experienced fighters. They obviously knew that Yue Yang had unleashed the Nirvana Flame Pillar, but they didn't back out at all. The four terrifying demon claws attacked Yue Yang from the front and back, passing through the Nirvana Flame Pillar and smashing right at Yue Yang's body. Yue Yang's ribs and spines were almost immediately shattered, and his internal organs all suffered a heavy damage. Demon Marshal Duran's sharp claws had only managed to cut Yue Yang's chest open before he was repelled by the Nirvana Flame Shield, hence he wasn't able to pierce through Yue Yang's body. The Great Demon King Baruth's sharp claws, on the other hand, had managed to break through Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame Shield and pierce deep inside Yue Yang's body. He had even managed to pierce through the body of Phoenix Fairy Beauty, whose body was transparent and was about to disappear.

Fortunately, Yue Yang had used Binding Chains and managed to stop him for a tenth of a second. Using the [Elegant Sword Dance], he managed to avoid the attack a little, protecting his head, heart, and other vital parts.

One of Baruth's claws had pierced through Yue Yang's lungs to his shoulder, before it pierced through the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's transparent body.

His other sharp claw had penetrated into Yue Yang's right thighs and pierced into Phoenix Fairy Beauty's leg. Another claw had pierced through Yue Yang's left leg and out from his calf. The Great Demon King Baruth was about to pinch them with both of his claws, wanting to tear Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty to bits.

But Yue Yang would never give him the chance to do that.

Xiao Wen Li's Binding Chains was used once again.

At the same time, he ignored the pain and immediately teleported, escaping to ten metres away.

He didn't have time to heal his wounds. In any case, if he kept his Nirvana Flame up, it would heal his wounds automatically. Yue Yang's left hands immediately condensed a World Exterminating Wheel while his right hand condensed Star Explosion. His policy was to return tit for tat, and he was about to send a counter attack to his enemies.

Yue Yang had received a huge damage because he wanted to save the mysterious being just now. How could Yue Yang be such an altruistic person?

Actually, under the scorching flames of Nirvana Flame that could burn through anything in the world, Baruth and Duran did not escape completely unharmed. Demon Marshal Duran had to tear the skin on his arms that had been ignited by the Nirvana Flame. He had an ability to shed his skin. The Nirvana Flame had only injure the surface of his skin, it didn't burn through his flesh and bones.

The Great Demon King Baruth had also quickly take his hand back and blew it with a Demon King's ball of light from his mouth.

There was a little demon monster that looked like Baruth inside the ball of light.

The Nirvana Flame could not be extinguished, but it could be shifted away. Baruth transferred the Nirvana Flame onto the little demon monster's body who became weaker and weaker in his arms and finally disappeared. That little demon monster which had been burnt by the Nirvana Flame was immediately killed on the spot, turning into ashes.

Miraculously, the mysterious being was that struggling relentlessly inside the shining cocoon finally broke free.

Seeing the Nirvana's Flame, it didn't show a shred of fear.

Instead, it was completely overjoyed.

It was as if Nirvana's Flame would not cause any harm to its body. The moment its head bored out of the cocoon, it immediately charged into Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame Pillar, happily allowing the Nirvana's Flame to burn through its whole body.

Yue Yang who was rapidly healing his wounds with his Nirvana's Flame was completely shocked to see this sight.

This, could this fellow be...

Chapter 296 – Moe, Natural Airhead?

The mysterious being had a dragon head with deer-like horns. It had a pair of beautiful lion's eyes, coupled with a tiger's back, snake's scales all over its body, and an ox's tail.

Isn't this the legendary mythical being [Qilin](#)? The only different thing was that the Qilin's legs was adorned with four beautiful claws instead of horse hooves that were often described in fairy tales. Yue Yang stared for a few seconds as he vaguely recalled that the male Qilins, 'Qi' had claws while female Qilins, 'Lin' had horse hooves... Could it be that this fellow was male? But no matter what, it was still a Qilin. How could it take a bath in his Nirvana Flame?

Hmm, maybe this fellow is a Fire Qilin?!

As the Qilin bathed in Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame, its previously dark green body slowly melted away, turning into white jade in colour that sparkled magnificently.

A mysterious white-coloured light exuded out from its body, bright like a star yet soft like the moonlight.

Baruth had wanted to attack again, but the Qilin immediately opened its mouth and shot out a beam of light.

When the Great Demon King Baruth, who was so powerful that he almost killed Yue Yang in an instant saw this, he immediately scampered away to avoid the enemy's attack.

On the surface, the beam of light that did not require any charging time looked like it did not have any combat power. It looked like a holy, healing, white light. However, less than a second afterwards, Yue Yang changed his opinion. That was because as the light beam collided onto the palace walls, it completely shattered the palace walls that were made of obsidian stone into pieces, leaving an extremely deep hole on the ground that was easily hundreds of metres deep. The power of this white light was even stronger than Baruth's Demon King Light Pillar! The only difference between the Demon King Light Pillar and this white light beam was that the white light beam wouldn't explode. It would only annihilate anything on its path, quite similar to Luo Hua City Mistress' Aurora Light. It's just that they were completely different in terms of power and the distance it could extend to.

This Qilin was really very powerful. Could it be that it was a Mythical Beast?

But it was a male...

Yue Yang was extremely disappointed. He had risked his life to save a male Qilin, not a female Qilin! This is really sad.

Before Yue Yang managed to throw the World Exterminating Wheel and Star Explosion in his hands to the enemies, suddenly, he felt a sharp pain on his arm. His body was suddenly jerked away, and the scenery in front of him looked like he was flying in the sky. Yue Yang was startled to find that the Qilin had actually grabbed his arm with its mouth and escaped... What the heck... He

thought that the Qilin could show its mighty power and kill the Great Demon King and the others on the spot the moment he rescued it, who turns out that it was actually a wimp!

Fortunately he was still carrying Phoenix Fairy Beauty on his back. Otherwise Yue Yang would really beat it up with all he had.

Escaping from its enemy although it was a Mythical Beast.

Isn't this Qilin too incompetent!

Yue Yang grabbed onto the Qilin's neck and climbed onto its back. How could he endure hanging by his arms on its mouth for an extended period of time?

When the Qilin realized that Yue Yang had climbed onto its back, it immediately became hostile and bucked Yue Yang off from its back, completely not seeing him as its life saviour at all. This Qilin really had no loyalty, it had abandoned Yue Yang and escaped on its own. When Yue Yang fell hard onto the ground, he realized that Baruth and Duran had surrounded him from the front and back, leaving him no path to escape.

Why didn't they chase after the Qilin? Why did they surround him instead? What kind of logic is this... Yue Yang's head hurts. He had worked so hard to rescue the Qilin, who would guess that it actually had no loyalty at all!

In the sky, Demon King Ha Xin and another Demon King had

appeared.

Yue Yang started to sweat profusely.

As expected, the Demon Abyss was a tiger's den... He had truly poked the hornet's nest this time, Demon Kings were appearing before him one by one.

“What the heck happened here?” The only thing that made him happy was that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had finally woken up. Looking at the scene before her, she asked in surprise, “Has the Demon Abyss invaded the Soaring Dragon Continent? Have all the Great Demon Kings had come to attack?”

“No, this is the Demon Palace.” Yue Yang hurriedly replied her.

“What the heck are you doing in the Demon Palace?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was completely shocked. They had just finished fighting with Shun Tian, why would he go to the Demon Palace and pick a fight with Great Demon Kings?

“A holiday trip!” Yue Yang answered full of certainty.

“...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was speechless.

The Great Demon King Baruth obviously recognized Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Forget about him, even Demon Marshal Duran and the other two Demon Kings recognized Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Seems like they have fought on the higher levels of Tong Tian

Tower before. The Great Demon King Baruth suppressed his anger and spoke, “I was thinking who it is that invaded us, turns out it is you, Tian Fa. You, human Innates, have broken the Ancient Oath and invaded our Blood Prison Demon Palace. Since that is the case, we will not comply with the Ancient Oath either, we will invade your Soaring Dragon Continent now...”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty immediately denied it when she heard him, “What are you saying? I just woke up from my sleep, I didn’t even know that this little fellow had brought me to the Demon Palace. Furthermore, your place is so dark and terrifying, I wouldn’t want to come here even if you invited me!”

When Demon King Ha Xin saw Yue Yang, he immediately recognized him, “It’s you!”

Yue Yang was speechless. He was wearing the Gemini Mask on his face, yet he could still recognize him. Isn’t this Demon King Ha Xin’s ability to sense other’s Qi and power too powerful?

With regards to Demon King Ha Xin’s furious reaction, everyone was completely baffled. Ha Xin had not stepped into the Soaring Dragon Continent for more than a hundred years, how could he get acquainted with a young human warrior? This young human’s Life Energy Flow didn’t even seem to be over twenty years old, and he definitely never appeared on the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower before. How could Ha Xin had met him before? Amongst them, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was the most baffled of all. She didn’t understand how Yue Yang could have enemies that bore a grudge towards him even in the Demon Abyss. How many people had this brat offended? With regards to Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s questioning

gaze, Yue Yang could only smile apologetically towards her. He also didn't want to incur the Demon King Ha Xin's wrath...

Who would be so tired of life that he made a Demon King his enemy? But at that time, there was really no other way!

"This human boy was the one who cut off my arm a year ago." Demon King Ha Xin's words made everyone speechless. Seems like this brat had caused a great trouble.

"A young person who had the talent to control World Exterminating Wheel is really a talent in a thousand years!" The other Demon King sighed, "Could it be that another Supreme Elder will appear in the Soaring Dragon Continent? Seems like we have to kill that boy even if we have to give it our all."

"Don't misunderstand, I don't have any interest in the Supreme Elder position. My only aspiration in life is to have a happy sexual life." Yue Yang hurriedly pretended to be an incompetent guy.

"My dear Baruth, my friend, why didn't you introduce the honored guest who had come to visit you to your old friend? Could it be that you were afraid that I would embarrass you because I'm old and useless now?" On the other side of the sky, in the southeast direction, another two shadows appeared. Those were great warriors from the other race in Demon Abyss, the Netherworld Undead Race. They were Lich Kings.

The Demon Abyss was ten times larger than the Soaring Dragon Continent, but there were only three great powers.

One of the most powerful powers that often wage wars against humans was the “Blood Prison” Demon Race. With Demon King as their leaders, the Demon Legion’s name was notorious throughout the world. The second power was the “Netherworld” Undead Race, with Lich Kings as their leaders. This power was made up of zombies and undead, and they were also mankind’s nightmare. The third power was called “Eternal Night”, Fallen Beings Race. It was said that ten thousands of years ago, there was a fallen angel from the Heaven Realms that came to the Demon Abyss to establish a new power. They rarely fought with humans in the lower levels of Tong Tian Tower, much less try to invade the Soaring Dragon Continent. However, from the Fourth Level of Tong Tian Tower onwards, even residents on the Outer Realms Continent, all knew about the Fallen Beings Legion. Their powers were not any weaker than Demon Legions and Undead Legions.

Different from humans, the beings in Demon Abyss lived in a culture where the strong preys on the weak. Hence, there were massacres everywhere.

However, King-ranked warriors that were at the top of the food chain were very united with each other.

On the other hand, in comparison, if it weren’t for the Innate Alliance that created a treaty to maintain peace and stability, human Innate Rankers would have already waged wars between each other.

The Three Great Kingdoms, Four Great Families, Four Great Sects, Demon Palace, Thousand Goblins Sect and various other

organizations had all operated separately, going on their separate ways. It's just that due to the Innate Alliance, coupled with Elder Nan Gong's mediation between rankers and the enforcement to follow the Innate Alliance Treaty had finally brought peace for everyone.

Yue Yang recognized one of the Lich Kings as Lich King Grun.

This fellow was his enemy.

Previously, Yue Yang had fought with Grun before, and he had even killed the Flame Lord that he released. Right now, even the Hui Jin Magic Blade that he was wielding was made from the Flame Lord's heart and the Bone Dragon's Magic Crystal. He didn't know whether this Grun was the kind of warrior who forgets small things easily. Yue Yang was just a small, insignificant matter to him then. Yue Yang hoped that the Lich King Grun would not remember him, but obviously, that was not quite possible.

(Shiro: Chapter 78)

When Lich King Grun saw Yue Yang with his green ghostly eyes, he started laughing uncannily, "By the way, I recognize this young Innate. He killed one of my followers in the Battlefield of Death before. I have tried to attack him before, but he easily avoided the whole thing and escaped."

"He had some kind of Binding ability to restrict our movements for a second." Demon King Ha Xin supplied.

"My god, how could you have enemies EVERYWHERE?" In spite

of the situation, Phoenix Fairy Beauty couldn't help herself as she burst out into laughter.

“You think I want to? They were the ones trying to kill me first, so I'm forced to defend myself. I wouldn't be so much of a pain in the ass to seek trouble with them first, ya know? They are the ones that are guilty, yet they wanted to pin the blame on me!” Yue Yang was furious.

“The problem now is that there are three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings on the other side. Do you think they would act in their good conscience and recognize their own mistakes?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty continued to giggle as she draped her arms over Yue Yang's shoulders, pressing her ample breasts onto his back as she whispered in his ears, “It's a pity that I really have no strength in my body right now, otherwise I will definitely help you fight...”

If it weren't for the fact that Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the most respectable and widely known Tian Fa, was here, these few Demon Kings would already have surrounded Yue Yang and trample him to death.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was injured and her strength wasn't as strong as before, that they could see.

However, they were definitely not going to underestimate her.

Even if Tian Fa was seriously injured, if she fight with all she had, there was still the possibility that she could kill one of them.

Nobody wanted to be the unlucky one. The three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings were secretly communicating with their Demon Abyss telepathy, preparing the best strategy of attack to kill the two of them.

No matter what, they would not let this good chance slip off. If they could kill this young Innate who had so much potential and the extremely strong Ranker Tian Fa here, the human Innates would definitely suffer a huge loss. Furthermore If the Supreme Elder met some kind of mishap in the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and could not return to the Soaring Dragon Continent, the Soaring Dragon Continent would definitely meet their end, unable to avoid their fate to die and be annihilated...

Under the Black Vortex, the Demon Kings' and Lich Kings' powers had increased multiple times.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's powers, on the other hand, were being suppressed by the Black Vortex. Although the Black Vortex didn't really have a huge effect on them, they were still influenced a little. The difference in strength between the two sides had become greater.

Fortunately, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's injuries had become a little better after Yue Yang channeled a huge amount of Innate Qi to heal her. Furthermore, because she was about to be sealed just now and her body had become slightly transparent, the Nirvana Flame that Yue Yang released just now didn't really cause any damage to her body... Of course, it might be because of other reasons, but Yue Yang couldn't really understand how Phoenix Fairy Beauty had gained the ability to withstand his Nirvana Flame at this time.

Could it be that his Nirvana Flame had an awareness? Did it know who was his friends and foes?

Yue Yang didn't have the time to think much about it, but this thought had flashed across his mind.

"What do we do now?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty could sense that the three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings were secretly discussing their battle strategies. They were going to attack soon.

"If you ask me, who do I ask!" Yue Yang had really ran out of ideas now. They couldn't use teleportation scroll to escape because of the Black Vortex, which had restricted the space and dimension with the powers of dark energy. If they ran away with their legs, they wouldn't be able to outrun the Demon Kings. Other than fight them with all they had, Yue Yang really couldn't think of any other ideas.

If Phoenix Fairy Beauty weren't here, he could probably hide inside Empress Fei Wen Li's Black Hole Dimension.

He could train inside the dimension and only come out again when he had become stronger. Otherwise, he could probably try to release Empress Fei Wen Li from the seal. No matter how many Demon Kings there were, she would definitely be able to beat them black and blue.

However, right now, the cruel reality was that not only was Phoenix Fairy Beauty here, she was also seriously injured.

Although Yue Yang was afraid of death, he would never abandon an injured woman and escape on his own. He wouldn't be able to do it, especially when this girl had risked her own life to save him and had even used her body to protect him from a deadly strike... If he abandoned a woman he liked, who had saved his life, and escaped on his own, forget about the others, even Yue Yang would look down on himself.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly sighed, "Actually, I have an idea!"

She seemed to have an idea to send Yue Yang away, but needless to say, she would have to pay the price of sending Yue Yang away with her own life.

Yue Yang didn't even want to hear it, he immediately shook his head and rejected it, "I'm a man, you have to listen to me in crucial times like this. If I say go, we go. If I say fight, we fight!"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty hugged Yue Yang as she happily kissed his cheeks, "Aww, little Yue Yang, you are so manly~! If you become more manly than this, I will really fall for you!"

The three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings didn't care about Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's touching moment, they all had hearts of stone.

Together with Demon Marshal Duran, the six extremely strong warriors surrounded Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty from six directions and condensed their powers at the same time.

They were about to attack together and kill the two people in the middle in an instant.

However, in the sky, a white light suddenly flashed.

The Qilin who had ran away just now had actually returned. It tilted its head and looked at Yue Yang for quite a while, and suddenly, to Yue Yang's surprise, asked in human language, "Why aren't you running away?"

"Eh?" The voice that Yue Yang heard didn't sound like a male, but a female's. He immediately felt much better and asked, "Why did you come back?"

"I got lost. I wanted to ask for directions to return back to Tong Tian Tower or the Heaven Realm." Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the Demon Kings and Lich Kings almost fell to the ground when they heard this.

"A naturally-born airhead?" Yue Yang thought that the greatest personality a girl could have is airheadedness.

"I said Heaven Realms, not airhead, stupid. You don't know how to go to Heaven Realms? You are really an idiot!" The Qilin's girly voice made Yue Yang burst into laughter. For a talking beast, other than humanoid beasts, Yue Yang really have never seen a beast with a beast appearance that could talk. Furthermore, she sounded so cute. The most moe thing was that she was a naturally born airhead.

“I don’t know how to go to the Heaven Realms, but I know how to go to Tong Tian Tower!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty replied. Looking at her smiling appearance, Yue Yang knew that her foxy side was about to act up again.

“No, mommy said that girls are hypocritical, selfish and they get jealous easily. They can’t be trusted.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was speechless when she heard the Qilin’s words.

“You are definitely right!” Yue Yang clapped his hands and praised it.

“Those weakling demons should know where Tong Tian Tower is... It’s a pity that I haven’t fully recovered yet. Otherwise, I would have already captured one of them and make him show me the way out from here.” The Demon Kings felt like banging their heads on the wall when they heard the Qilin’s words. They were weakling demons?

“Did you come from the Heaven Realm?” Even the Demon Kings actually wanted to know the answer to Yue Yang’s question.

The Heaven Realm had only existed in legends. What was it like?

Right now, nobody knew.

If this mythical beast who lost her way really came from the Heaven Realm, she would definitely knew a lot about the Heaven Realm! At the very least, she could prove that Heaven Realm truly

existed!

The airheaded Qilin answered Yue Yang's question negatively instead , "I'm definitely not from the Heaven Realm. The Heaven Realm is so boring, there's no fun places to visit there. The people there are also very fierce and unreasonable. I don't like the Heaven Realm! If it wasn't for the fact that I have to go through the Heaven Realm to get back home, I would definitely not go to that kind of place. It's a super boring place!"

Yue Yang then pointed at the Great Demon King Baruth, and asked the Qilin, "Look at this demon who sealed you. If he goes to Heaven Realm, how strong would he be on Heaven Realm's standard?"

The Qilin thought for a moment, then gave an answer that made everyone break out in sweat, "I don't know... I only stayed in the Heaven Realm for a few hundred years, so I'm not very familiar with the situation there. But if you compare his strength, I think he is more or less on the level of those foolish mercenary soldiers who does random errands here and there?"

Baruth almost cried. He was only at the level of mercenary soldiers in the Heaven Realm?

Lich King Grun gave the Great Demon King Baruth a hand signal, indicating that they must re-capture this Mythicall Beast whose strength had not fully recovered yet and seal her again. They could slowly research her later. Maybe the key for them to go to the Heaven Realms lies on this Mythical Beast.

“Is there a realm higher than the Heaven Realm? If there is, is there any Old Daoist Priest that likes to fly around on a sword?” Yue Yang asked again.

“I can’t talk anymore, mommy said that my throat hasn’t fully matured yet, so I can’t talk too much. Otherwise, if I hurt my throat, I won’t be able to sing anymore.” The Qilin seemed like an obedient child, always listening to her mother’s words.

“...” Yue Yang suspected that the Qilin was actually teasing him. Couldn’t she just answer him with a yes or a no?

“I’m tired, lend me your house to rest for a while.” The Qilin then flew over quickly and knocked Yue Yang to the ground. Yue Yang hadn’t had the time to shout out in pain when she looked at him as if she felt wronged and said, “Hey, just say it if you don’t want to welcome me to your house. Do you know that rejecting a guest to enter one’s house is extremely rude? Forget it, I don’t care if you don’t welcome me, I’ll just go in myself!”

The Qilin didn’t wait for Yue Yang’s reaction. It immediately turned into a flash of rainbow light and entered Yue Yang’s body.

Yue Yang was completely speechless. It’s fine if she didn’t want to help him in battle, but she also wanted to borrow his body to rest. Who taught this girl her rude manners?

The Great Demon King Baruth immediately made a condition with Yue Yang, “Brat, if you and Tian Fa agree to stay here, we can

forget about the matter just now and treat you guys as VIP guests. If you guys try to leave, we will invalidate all of our promises and immediately kill you guys on the spot. I will give you guys 1 minute to think, go and discuss it with Tian Fa!” If the three Great Demon Kings and Lich Kings didn’t consider the fact that the Qilin from the Heaven Realm was inside Yue Yang’s body, they would definitely not let Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty off. But right now, this brat was a hot commodity, it wouldn’t be bad if they put him on house arrest now and slowly questioned the Qilin about Heaven Realm later.

Before Demon King Baruth even finished speaking, a rainbow coloured light suddenly flashed from Yue Yang’s body.

A young girl with antlers on her head suddenly appeared in front of Yue Yang as she pitifully pointed at him with her little finger, “The little kid in your house is a real bully! She had actually kicked me out... Ah, I forgot to change my appearance!” As she spoke, she returned to her Qilin appearance with a flash of rainbow light.

The three Great Demon Kings felt like this was a golden opportunity, they immediately charged forward to attack.

They charged down from the sky, and cooperated together to capture this Mythical Beast that could easily change her appearance. The two Lich Kings targeted Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty, but they focused their attack more on Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Demon Marshal Duran who was floating at a far distance took out his Dark Demon Pearl and continued to enlarge the Black Vortex in order to increase his comrades strength. With the power of the five strongest warriors in Demon Abyss, coupled with the

buff from the Black Vortex, it wouldn't be impossible to subdue the enemy.

Suddenly, a clear-sounding bird call that sounded even more soothing than sounds of nature resounded, reverberating through everyone's soul.

A pillar of Nirvana Flame suddenly blasted up to the sky.

Yue Yang realized that the Nirvana Flame didn't come from his body. To his surprise, two mysterious, yet familiar beings that he had never seen before had floated out of his body and ignited a magnificent pillar of Nirvana Flame that blasted all the way to the skies above...

Chapter 297 – Phoenixes, Colourful Immortal Phoenixes

They were phoenixes. Two phoenixes glowing in golden light.

They were not the kind of red, fiery bird they have in the west, they looked more like the immortal, colourful Phoenixes from the East. Their body was decorated with a rainbow of colours. The Nirvana's Flame coming out from their bodies were ten times denser and more powerful than Yue Yang's Nirvana's Flame. It glowed a little with golden light, making it look holy and beautiful.

From the outside, these two Phoenixes looked exactly the same no matter which angle one was looking from.

The Nirvana Flame Pillars that they were emitting twined with each other.

Only then did Yue Yang finally realize.

Turns out that the soul-penetrating bird call that he heard before was these Phoenixes' voices.

However, he had never contracted them before, so how did he manage to possess these two Phoenixes? Xiao Wen Li was given to him from Empress Fei Wen Li. Hui Tai Lang was picked up from the side of the road. Bloody Queen made contract with him voluntarily. Each of his beasts had their own history, but these Phoenixes appearance was completely out of the blue.

Where were they from?

Could it be that these Phoenixes were the Guardian Beasts from the Divine Grimoire? Just like his [Phantom Shadow]?

However, long before he had contracted the Divine Grimoire, Yue Yang had already heard those bird calls that sounded like the sounds of nature. Furthermore, it had happened more than once.

Could it be that... could it be that these Phoenixes were the same as Heavenly Sword Goddess?

Yue Yang's thoughts flashed around. Could it be that these Phoenixes lived inside the Universal Pouch, just like the Heavenly Sword Goddess? Or could it be that they were Phoenixes' eggs inside the Universal Pouch before, but they had hatched for some reason and belonged to him now?

If it was really like that, then would there be any other precious stuff inside the Universal Pouch?

The three Great Demon Kings and two Lich Kings retreated a little when they saw the two Phoenixes rising to the sky.

When they looked again and thought that these beasts that they never saw before didn't look very strong, that they looked more like beautiful, decorative pets, they immediately worked together to attack once again. This time, their target was to capture Yue

Yang. This was because even though the Phoenixes were just decorative pets, they were still able to bathe in Nirvana Flame. That was not an easy feat to do. They didn't want to change their plans anymore and decided to take Yue Yang down, then question him slowly later.

If it were a minute ago, Yue Yang would definitely carry Phoenix Fairy Beauty and ran away immediately.

However, the situation was different right now.

When the Phoenixes appear, Yue Yang immediately felt a surge of Nirvana Flame power in his body, as if they were about to erupt and explode.

Before, the three Great Demon King's speed of attack was too fast for Yue Yang to see even when he uses his Level 5 Divine Vision. However, he was able to easily see the three Great Demon Kings and two Lich Kings movements and trajectory right now. Before they managed to get to him, Yue Yang's body reacted automatically, moving by instincts, as if there was some kind of secret strength that guided him in his heart. His body moved to intercept the Demon Kings and Lich Kings' attacks automatically.

The Nirvana Flame that filled his body, the kind of fire that could burn away everything, powered up by the two Phoenixes, erupted from his body like a volcano.

Yue Yang first swung his punch towards the Great Demon King Baruth's claws.

He stopped his opponent's punch with his punch. At first, Yue Yang thought it would be very difficult for him to do so, but turns out it was extremely easy to stop the Demon King's punch.

"Eh?" The Great Demon King Baruth was completely dumbstruck. This brat did not even have a hundredth of his strength, how could he stop his punch so easily?

"Go away!" Yue Yang was obviously very happy. He ignited his left fist with Nirvana Flame and stopped Demon King Ha Xin's punch with his other hand. At the same time, he even sent a kick towards the Lich King Grun who had tried to ambush Phoenix Fairy Beauty. He could actually endure the concurrent attacks from the three strongest warriors in Demon Abyss. This kind of result, forget about the Demon Kings and Lich Kings, even Yue Yang couldn't believe it himself.

With the buff from the Phoenixes Nirvana Flame, he could actually have enough power to defeat three Demon King-ranked warriors in the Demon Abyss?

What kind of logic was that?

If Yue Yang had not received the Phoenixes' buff, he wouldn't be able to endure a single attack from the Demon Kings. At the very most, he could only support Phoenix Fairy Beauty in battle. Otherwise, he would probably only be able to use Binding Chains and Innate Invisible Sword Qi combo as an ambush.

His Yin Yang Ability, Spherical Beheader, Ice Arrow, First Slash: Earth Splitting Slash and other combat techniques were all effective against Demon Generals, Demon Commanders and Demon Marshals.

It could even be used against warriors of Innate Level 3 and below.

However, it seemed like it was ineffective against Demon Kings, who were at least Innate Level 8 and above. It could even be a mistake for him to launch those attacks against them. Baruth, Ha Xin and Grun were definitely not inferior to Shun Tian or Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. Previously, when Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty had worked together, they had to use up all their moves before they managed to defeat Shun Tian and the dark sinister shadow. Furthermore, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was the main attacker at that time. Afterwards, Yue Yang had fought Baruth alone, and although he had to protect the Qilin and wasn't able to avoid the attack, he understood that he wouldn't be able to defeat Baruth even if he were to fight him in the optimum condition.

Furthermore, right now, the three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings were powered up from the Black Vortex buff, their abilities increasing multiple times.

Yue Yang had defended himself against two Demon Kings' and one Lich King's attack, making the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was prepared to attack with all she had and die, stare blankly in shock, completely dumbstruck.

This brat was abnormal, that she knew. But she never knew that

he was abnormal to this extent... Being able to stand against three Demon King-ranked warriors all alone... She might be able to do it in her peak condition, but it wouldn't be so easy for her.

If she fought against three Demon Kings, she would suffer serious injuries the moment she let down her guard. That was certain.

She would definitely not be able to be like that brat, being able to stop the Demon Kings attacks just by extending his arms and legs. This, this was really too unbelievable.

Other than Zhi Zun, no other human warriors could so easily stand against three Demon Kings alone.

The other Great Demon King who didn't attack Yue Yang was called Ou Gen. When he was in the state of shock, he was forced to retreat by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's punches. As for the other Lich King that Yue Yang didn't recognize, he had a rather tragic fate compared to the others. He, who had the highest-ranked existence amongst the Undead Race had been sent flying with the Qilin's headbutt. Yue Yang could even hear the sound of his ribs and bones breaking as he flew.

In the eyes of weak human warriors, he was an extremely strong existence, a Lich King.

However, in the eyes of the airhead Qilin who got lost, he was only a skeleton that was slightly bigger than the rest.

Baruth, Ha Xin, Ou Gen and Grun were completely shocked. They weren't shocked by the fact that their comrade had been sent flying by the Qilin, but because Yue Yang had actually managed to stop three of their cooperative attacks alone. They all knew Yue Yang's abilities. Even with World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame, this youngster would definitely not be able to fight against a Demon King-ranked warrior. As he had not fully mature yet, with his potential, he might even surpass the Supreme Elder in the future. However, he was only at Innate Level 3 currently. If he weren't so abnormal, an Innate Level 3 warrior would immediately be killed in an instant if they ever meet a Demon King.

However, he could actually stand against three Demon Kings right now. This was definitely not his own power.

This was the power of those two mysterious beasts!

Those two mysterious beasts, what on earth are they actually? Where did he get them from? If they could obtain a beast that could increase their strength to this extent, their dream of going to the Heaven Realm would not be a dream anymore...

The three Demon Kings immediately retreated. Lich King Grun rushed to his comrade's side and asked, "Ma Fa, are you okay?"

"I just broke a few ribs, my demon heart is alright." That Lich King called Ma Fa shook his head with a serious expression, "Grun, I remembered a legend I heard before."

"Eastern Immortal Tribe." Demon Marshal Duran was the first

one to react.

(Shiro: For those who are confused, there is Eastern Goblin Tribe, and Eastern Immortal Tribe. Eastern Goblin Tribe are the Flying Tiger Ambassador and the others who attacked Yue Yang during the tournament. Eastern Immortal Tribe are the two Dragon Girls who were with the Elder Nan Gong when Yue Yang was offered a position in the Innate Alliance. Eastern Goblin Tribe is the sub-race of the Eastern Immortal Tribe, which is much more powerful.)

“Right.” Demon King Ha Xin’s demonic eyes glared at Yue Yang furiously and nodded, “Only the legendary Eastern Immortal Tribe would be able to exert so much effect for their power up. I know an Osprey from the Eastern Immortal Tribe. He told me before that there is a special kind of holy power inside every Eastern Immortal Tribesmen’s body. It has the ability to increase one’s strength and also contained purification abilities. It would be an extremely terrifying ability if each member of the tribe activated their ability and buffed each others’ strength in stacks... It was said that the humans of the Soaring Dragon Continent actually came from the same place as the Eastern Immortal Tribe. During the Ancient Times, the Eastern Immortal Tribe had exiled some of their member to the Soaring Dragon Continent. They were different from humans of the Mysterious Orchid Continent, Heaven Wind Continent, Coro Continent and other continents in the Outer Realm... I daresay that this brat had inherited the blood of Ancient Humans, awoken his Ancient Blood and obtained the powers of the Ancient Humans. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to reach Innate at twenty years old, let alone being able to stand against us.”

“Is that really true?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at Yue Yang as if she wanted to peel off his skin layer by layer to find out what’s

inside.

“Maybe, possibly, probably that’s true.” Yue Yang replied.

Of course he wouldn’t be able to say that he was from another world. He also couldn’t deny completely that he had not awoken any kind of Ancient Blood before. Forget about others, even he himself wouldn’t believe himself if he said those words.

Right now, he should just let the misunderstanding about Ancient Blood, Ancient awakening and whatever shit continue. Maybe these Demon Abyss bosses would hesitate in attacking him that way.

Yue Yang didn’t know how long the Nirvana Flame Buff could last on his body, but if it disappear, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and he would have to escape no matter what. Indeed, with his words, the three Great Demon Kings, two Lich Kings and Demon Marshal Duran immediately turned pale.

Guessing and getting the positive reply was two different things.

Indeed, this brat had awakened his Ancient Blood and obtained the hidden potential of an Ancient Human.

“...” Baruth knew that right now, the best course of action was to risk it all and eliminate this brat with all they had. However, the biggest problem was not how to defeat him who had gained super strength from the buff, nor how to defeat Tian Fa who was

protecting him, nor how to trick that airheaded Qilin to join their side... Instead, it was how to deal with those two beautiful Phoenixes, who didn't look like they had any combat power but whose gaze was actually so deadly that they felt they were going to be killed instantly anytime!

Baruth didn't know why these two beautiful creatures were not attacking them, but he had discovered with his extremely sharp senses of a Demon King that as long as he harbored killing intention in his heart and thought of attacking, he would feel extremely terrified, as if he was in a life-threatening danger.

He felt as if he was going to be killed by his opponents in the next instant.

If he didn't have any killing intention at all, then those two beautiful creatures looked like they were completely harmless!

Baruth felt like he wouldn't be able to image the hidden powers that these two beautiful creatures were hiding. They were creatures completely outside of this world. They probably belonged to the world that was even higher than the Heaven realm. That's why they were such a magical existence.

The Qilin returned back to her horned young girl look. She looked like she was 14 or 15 and had an extremely cute appearance. There was a golden horn on her light green hair.

Her horns weren't long nor sharp, it looked short and harmless.

However, Lich King Ma Fa's ribs who were a hundred times stronger than Bone Dragons had broken with just a ram from these horns.

If he had not avoided quickly enough, Lich King Ma Fa's injuries wouldn't simply be a few broken ribs...

She wore a light-green coloured gown. There were drawings of clouds on the gown making it look extremely beautiful. Her smooth shoulders were revealed, along with her slim and tender arms. Yue Yang felt like kissing those arms when he saw it. Her snow-white legs were covered in red shoes, which were decorated with pink little balls at the front. The shoes looked exactly like the ones that those little chinese children in New Year Pictures wore.

The Qilin girl looked very cute, domestic and harmless, very suitable to be kept as a small pet cat. At night, she could also be used as bed warmer.

But she was extremely strong.

If she got angry and threw a tantrum, Yue Yang thought that all of his bones would probably be completely broken.

"It's those two girls who kicked me out just now! As their dad, why didn't you teach them manners?" The Qilin girl pulled at Yue Yang's sleeves in annoyance, complaining to him. She looked like she would cry if Yue Yang ignored her.

“Two girls? Mine?” Yue Yang started to sweat profusely. When did he start having two Phoenix girls? Could it be that the Old Daoist Priest kidnapped other people’s daughters and shifted the blame to him? If the Phoenixes’ parents came to find him, he would probably be turned into ashes with a blow of their breath. He was definitely not these two girls’ dad. Even if he was, he couldn’t do anything about them.

Furthermore, the one who was wrong was not those two Phoenixes, but this lost Qilin who barged into other people’s house as she liked.

The two dazzling, colourful immortal Phoenixes were twirling in the sky calmly at first, but it seemed like they had understood what the Qilin was complaining about. They immediately cried out in protest.

Their voices that sounds like the sound of nature resounded out, resonating with everyone’s soul.

They looked as if they were about to swoop down and teach that complaining Qilin a lesson...

Before those two Phoenixes swoop down, that Qilin immediately escaped and disappear, so quickly that even Yue Yang couldn’t see it with his Level 5 Divine Vision.

“Greetings, your honours Demon Kings and Lich Kings. We apologize for disturbing you today. If you have free time in the future, please invite us for afternoon tea...” Yue Yang swooped

Phoenix Fairy Beauty up in his arms in one move and immediately turned around to leave, rushing to catch up to that airheaded, lost Qilin with all he had. He didn't know if he could use her as a bed warmer in the future, but he thought that he should pick this Qilin girl up first. In any case, she couldn't return to her home anyway. He could raise her like her mother for this period of time.

“Shall we chase after them?” Lich King Grun noticed that the two Phoenixes were still twirling in the sky, as if they were watching them attentively. It seemed like if any of them had the thought of chasing after Yue Yang and the others, they would feel some kind of terrifying fear and threat that they would be attacked.

“Forget it.” Demon King Ha Xin who was usually the most courageous in battles gulped his saliva as he shook his head and reject the stupid idea.

Fighting against beasts that were way out of their league was definitely not a good idea.

Furthermore, the other party didn't have any intention of attacking. If they forced their hand, it would be equivalent to seeking their own death.

Indeed, with Demon King Ha Xin's words, those two Phoenixes immediately turned into rainbow coloured light and disappeared quickly, with a speed that even put those three Demon Kings who ruled over the Tong Tian Tower to shame. Compared to those two beautiful beasts, the three Demon Kings would only be able to eat dust at their backs even if they tried with all their efforts. Their speed were completely at a whole new level, it was as if the

difference between their speed was like between a meteor and a snail.

The thing that made them more speechless was that when they came back to their senses, the Demon Marshals that were accompanying Duan Mu Long Cheng just now had arrived and had news to report.

Their ally, Duan Mu Long Cheng, had been killed.

“Who killed him?” Baruth noticed that the Demon Marshal looked panicked. Weird, was it Tian Fa?

“The ones that killed him were two extremely beautiful flying beasts that looked completely harmless!” One of the Demon Marshals thought that Baruth wouldn’t believe their story, hence he had even added some description of the beasts. Of course, although the story that he described later on was quite long, what happened was actually quite simple. Duan Mu Long Cheng had seen some enemies and was about to attack them and helped the few Demon Kings, but he was killed in an instant instead.

“Where’s his corpse?” Ha Xin wanted to give their ally a proper burial.

“His body has been completely burnt away. Forget about his corpse, even his soul was completely destroyed by the Nirvana Flame. There’s completely nothing left.” The Demon Marshals replied.

“...” The Three Demon Kings and two Lich Kings looked at each other in dismay. They knew how strong Duan Mu Long Cheng was. He was at least Innate Level 6, but he was instantly killed. Fortunately they did not try to attack and those two beautiful beasts also did not initiate an attack on them. Otherwise, the consequences would be too horrible to bear.

Chapter 298 – If Sluts Act Like They’re All Mighty, They’ll Get Struck By Lightning!

When Yue Yang and the Great Demon King fought, at the Yue Clan’s castle, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others were fighting furiously too.

Within the crowd, the one who had the easiest time was Xue Tan Lang.

Although that fake Third Young Master was a Level 6 [Elder], his levels were raised unnaturally by Innates. It was not something that he had cultivated himself. Against Xue Tan Lang, this genius who had trained hard since young, not only could he not win the upper hand against him, he was also restrained easily. He could not even use half of his power. If the fake Third Young Master did not have two generals from the Zi Jin Kingdom assisting him, he would have suffered a great loss under Xue Tan Lang’s hands.

It was impossible for the fake Third Young Master to win. No matter whether it was in terms of strength, techniques or beasts, Xue Tan Lang completely dominated him.

Due to Yue Yang’s appearance, as the supreme genius and the hope of the Xue Clan, the pressure on Xue Tan Lang was tremendous.

After a long and hard year’s worth of cultivation that was close to being self-torture, Xue Tan Lang was able to make tremendous progress in his strength. Along with the tutoring given from his

older sister, the fake Third Young Master was not even Xue Tan Lang's opponent at all. If not for wanting to capture this fake Third Young Master alive, and clear the name of his future brother-in-law, Xue Tan Lang would have achieved victory long ago.

As for the two generals that Zi Jin Kingdom had dispatched, their strengths were not even at the level of the fake Third Young Master. They were exhausted by the high-speed blizzard that Xue Tan Lang had made, and was unable to catch up.

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong had the hardest fight.

The two of them had attacked the fake Yue Qiu in a pincer attack. They were suffering against the fake Yue Qiu's technique 《Armageddon Slash》.

Although this Yue Qiu was fake, the techniques he learned were real.

If not for their beasts having incredible defense along with the newly contracted Thunder Mammoth, a Golden Devil Ape that had become Gold-ranked from Bronze-ranked having great improvements in strength, they would have been beaten black and blue by the fake Yue Qiu. The Li brothers were trying to help, but they were too busy to. This was because some of the Demon Generals that had come out of the teleportation portal were attacking them from all sides. Thankfully, one of the strongest Demon Generals were instantly defeated by Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress. Otherwise, the Li brothers would not be able to fight against the reinforcements who were pouring out

unceasingly.

“Kill, kill!” The Li brothers killed until their eyes were red. The loot that they seized just now, the Gold-ranked weapon Dual Arrow Blade, allowed them to fight like tigers with wings attached.

The number of demons that the two had slain were approaching a hundred. However, there were even more demons coming out from the teleportation gate. They had not kill enough at all.

Although some Yue Clan’s guards could not understand the situation, not knowing whether to help Yue Qiu or Yue Yang, they knew that the invasion of the demons was a disaster. There were many people who took up their arms and fought against the demons. They had decent strength and could kill some low-ranking demons.

The Yue Clan Castle’s martial arts plaza was in a complete mess. There were many people who were fighting obliviously.

Aside from the Yue Clan’s guards, there were also very few elite soldiers from the Zi Jin Kingdom who took up their weapons to fight against the demons. The reason could be because once the demons came out, they had disregarded friend or foe and killed on sight. Therefore, the Zi Jin soldiers were also forced to battle to protect their lives. Lin Lei and Lin Miao’s strength could at most bully the weakest Green and Yellow Goblins. Any stronger and they would not even be able to cause one to budge. Lin Miao was especially scared. Once Lin Miao saw a strong demon appearing, he would flee far away, even rolling, crawling and screaming to draw the attention of the demons towards the elite soldiers of the Zi Jin

Kingdom.

In fact, this plan on bringing trouble to others had really caused many deaths of Zi Jin elite soldiers.

Princess Qian Qian was fighting against the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder.

The Thousand Goblins' Sect's Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's strength was extremely high. She was a Level 8 [Emperor] and her strength was already near the level of a mini-Innate. If it were Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, they would probably be beaten nearly to death within ten blows. However, after Princess Qian Qian's body was purified by Nirvana's Flame, coupled with training her body with Ancient Runes and [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang, although she had not broken through to the Innate realm, she dared to fight against Innate Rankers even though she was not an Innate. Not only that, she had the ability to seriously injure the opponent. It could be seen that her offensive abilities was incredible.

The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder won in terms of speed, moving up and down to dodge blows. She would definitely not take Princess Qian Qian's greatsword head on.

At the same time, her claws were smeared with deadly poison, hence Princess Qian Qian had dealt with her carefully.

Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and Yi Nan were fighting together against the newly promoted Hundred Wings, Hundred Eyes and

Hundred Claw Demon Elders. These three Demon Elders had a huge gap in strength compared to the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder. They only had the strength of a [Elder]. If Luo Hua City Mistress' [Aurora Light] hit the target, one of them would definitely be instantly killed.

Although the three Demon Elders' names were great, their strength were only sufficient to take down Yue Yu. They could not even gain an upper hand against Yi Nan, who possessed the Gold-ranked beast "Spirit Mirror".

Yi Nan's special ability, once used, would probably cause any Demon Elder to go insane.

She was finding the best opportunity to do so, especially against Hundred Eyes who used mainly "cat-eyed" beasts. They had slowly walked into the death trap that Yi Nan had set up, who was preparing to create a dream of death for them. It would cause the fears from the bottom of their heart to surface, causing them to slowly lose their sanity...

Within the foes, the strongest was none other than Marquis of Zi Jin.

Xue Wu Xia personally fought against this formidable opponent.

Aside from her, nobody else could fight against Marquis of Zi Jin.

With regards to this opponent of hers, Xue Wu Xia would rather

fight against a Level 1 Innate than this fellow with all sorts of devious and underhanded tricks up his sleeves. Marquis of Zi Jin, the Demon Abyss Prince who hid his strength was the future successor of the Demon King. A few months ago, after winning against Grandma Chi and suffered serious injuries from the battle, he had fought against Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia. In the end, he had almost killed Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia that day... It was from him that Yue Yang had learned the technique [Space Teleportation].

“I’m not interested in fighting against you!” Marquis of Zi Jin teleported out of the Yue Clan’s Castle.

“Then scram!” Xue Wu Xia used [Light Wind Teleportation] in the same way, chasing after him closely.

Marquis of Zi Jin dodged the attacks from the Bloody Queen. Before Hui Tai Lang could, Marquis of Zi Jin had picked up the head of the demon Innate Chi Liao after he blew up.

Hui Tai Lang was so angry that its fur stood on end.

It was not easy for to scare the enemies away just now. Before the loot even had time to be digested in its stomach, it had been picked up by a demon. That was its nourishment, after all. The enraged Hui Tai Lang pounced towards Marquis of Zi Jin. In the sky, the Reaper Mantis and Bloody Queen rushed down at the same time. The Barbaric Cow Shadow and Thorny Flower Demoness also came in from the sides...

If it were another enemy, they would definitely be in their graveyards by now.

However, this Marquis of Zi Jin had a plan to escape.

He did not rush to teleport away. Instead, he summoned his grimoire and raised a barrier to block Hui Tai Lang's pouncing attack.

Beasts were summoned one after another, drawing away the attention of Hui Tai Lang and the Reaper Mantis who were chasing to kill him. Xue Wu Xia noticed that this fellow did not summon through his grimoire, but had rather took out summoning crystals. Her heart shook. She recalled the Thought Transmission that Yue Yang had sent her before the battle begun. This fellow Marquis of Zi Jin might not be here to assist the fake Yue Qiu in battle. He might be here to cause trouble, or perhaps he was close to becoming an Innate, but lacked something necessary. Perhaps he required an item or needed to learn some kind of special technique meant for Innate Rankers.

Xue Wu Xia felt that what Yue Yang said was very logical, especially after seeing Marquis of Zi Jin picking up Chi Liao's splattered head. This action confirmed her doubts even more.

The head of the demon Innate Chi Liao was definitely something necessary for Marquis of Zi Jin to become an Innate.

"I will take my leave now. I'm happy for the gift you sent me. When there's an opportunity later on, I will pay you back a

hundred times for it, I swear on my name as the future Demon King.” Marquis of Zi Jin opened a golden teleportation scroll, then scratched out a few bloody scars on his chest and face.

“Eh?” The Bloody Queen Red had sufficient intellect to make judgements about the movements of the enemy. However, she could not think of the underlying meaning of Marquis of Zi Jin’s actions.

The little golden teleportation portal opened, and three men came out from it.

One of them was a ferocious-looking Innate Ranker. Xue Wu Xia could identify at first glance that he was one of Zi Jin Kingdom’s Five Enshrined Elders. This Innate, called “Lou Wei”, was the Zi Jin Kingdom Palace’s Chief Official. Originally, he was born in the small country called Yue Zhi. He was one of the officials under Yue Zhi Kingdom. Later on, he betrayed his King and defected to the Zi Jin Kingdom. Afterwards, he led the army himself, and crushed the whole of Yue Zhi Kingdom flat, taking all of the king’s women for himself. He became one of the most infamous, most ungrateful rebel who sided with the enemy.

Because one of the daughters of the king of Yue Zhi was a secret disciple of the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion. The public did not know of her special identity. Later on, she was raped and murdered by Lou Wei, causing the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion to send two great elders to kill Lou Wei.

Under the obstruction of the Zi Jin Kingdom’s and Lion Pagoda’s Rankers, the two great elders were heavily injured. However, they

still forcibly castrated Lou Wei before allowing him to escape with his life.

Due to this, the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion announced that they would never take in a female disciple from the Zi Jin Kingdom.

The public did not know the reason, and thought that the king of Zi Jin had once disrespected the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion. Nobody knew that he was actually protecting shitty people like Lou Wei. Therefore, the Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion held endless wrath towards him. The public thought that Lou Wei had been punished, but the pseudonym “Palace Moon” was given to him, and he became the chief official of the Zi Jin Kingdom’s Palace.

(Shiro: Palace Moon is “Gong Yue/宫月” in Chinese. On the other hand, “Gong Xing/宫刑” means castration. The chinese character Gong/宫 on its own means Palace or temple, but chinese characters can completely change meaning when grouped with other characters. So I’m guessing the Gong was taken from Gong Xing, while the Yue was taken from the Northern Moon Fairy Sect. Technically the pseudonym Gong Yue can also mean Castrated Moon, haha.)

Behind Lou Wei, the second person had pale white skin. He held a androgynous appearance, and was Lou Wei’s most beloved male pet, following him wherever he went.

(Shiro: Androgynous – partly male and partly female in appearance; of indeterminate sex)

After being cultivated for a long time under Luo Wei’s efforts,

these two male pets of his had the strengths of [Elder]s. Their killing methods were extremely cruel and vicious. They would frequently slaughter everyone. The warriors in the world secretly called them the “Two Chrysanthemum Spear Dogs”. Of course they would not dare to call them that outside, and they were only called the “Two Chrysanthemum Spear Generals”.

(Shiro: Sorry for the repeated interruptions... Chrysanthemum is also [slang](#) for “anus” and is often associated with gays in Chinese.)

“My Lord, why is there blood dripping from a wound? Who was the one that was so audacious to hurt your million dollar body, uncle?”

Lou Wei looked to the sky, as if he was ignoring everything else around him.

With regards to Marquis of Zi Jin, he had only greeted him slightly, as a salute to Marquis of Zi Jin. Then, he asked with a kind of voice that was as soft as a woman’s but sounded absolutely repulsive.

Although Xue Wu Xia was a girl, she shivered as she heard his voice.

Thankfully she had already digested the food that had went into her stomach. Otherwise, she would puke them all out hearing this kind of voice.

There were veins popping out of Marquis of Zi Jin’s temples as well, as if he could not stand this fellow. However, he still acted as

if he was hurt, and coughed twice. “This lord has been hurt and needs to recuperate urgently. It’s hard to battle anymore, I’ll leave it all to you, Chief Official.”

Lou Wei smiled and nodded. “Relax, this Chief Official already has plans. I’ll definitely complete the task beautifully, and not let my lord feel disappointed!”

With a sway of his body, Marquis of Zi Jin almost fell.

Thankfully his legs supported him on time. He quickly opened a teleportation scroll and left as if he were escaping.

“How would you like to die? You should all know that the one thing this Chief Official hates the most are pretty girls. If they’re prettier than this Chief Official, they all have to die! Little Ju, Little Hua, what are you waiting for?! These are all good dogs! When this Chief Official finished defeating them, you guys can contract all of them. As for those women, those that should be skinned will be skinned, those that should be broken will be broken. You two, do the job beautifully! If you dare to cheat on me, I won’t be agreeable to it you know...” Lou Wei’s words caused Hui Tai Lang to puke instantly, until its entire body cramped.

(Shiro: Ju Hua means chrysanthemum)

“This... Could it be that this fellow was the slut that the Master told us about?” The Bloody Queen Red was pointing at Lou Wei as if she had suddenly realised this, and asked her future mistress, Xue Wu Xia.

“Slut? Un, are sluts tasty?” The Thorny Flower Demoness did not speak. However, the expression that came out from her eyes had this meaning.

“It’s not like this. A slut, a slut is the kind of thing that you would hit with all your might. No, it’s not a food! Ah, who cares! Just go eat him later!” The Bloody Queen did not like how the Thorny Flower Demoness ate people. However, she felt that if the Thorny Flower Demoness ate this fellow Lou Wei, then the disgust in her heart would subside a little. Therefore, this was the first time that she did not object to the Thorny Flower Demoness eating people.

“I agree.” Xue Wu Xia nodded. This was also the first time ever since she was born that she thought eating someone up was not a bad idea.

“Woof, woof woof!” Hui Tai Lang refused. It felt that this kind of slut, once eaten, could cause the stomach to go haywire. It refused to eat Lou Wei.

Boom boom boom boom boom...

It was still the Barbaric Cow Shadow Ah Meng’s movements that were the most practical. She erupted in vigour, stamping on the ground as she rushed towards Lou Wei.

She waved her fists and punched at him.

Of course, nobody was slower than her.

In the air, the Reaper Mantis and the Bloody Queen had arrived at the same moment. From the ground, innumerable thorns lashed out. That was the masterpiece that Yue Yang had devised for the Thorny Flower Demoness, “The Great Thorny Flower Treant”. It had once destroyed the 30-metre tall Obsidian King without breaking a sweat. Again, it moved, comprising of thousands upon thousands of thorny vines.

Hui Tai Lang was at the left flank while the Golden Beast was at the right. Their future mistress, Xue Wu Xia, held thunder in one hand and ice in another. She clasped them together, filling the whole terrain with hail, going with Ah Meng to attack from the front and behind.

Innate?

How many Innate Rankers had everyone helped Yue Yang to kill? Were all Innates absolutely powerful?

Could an Innate say disgusting words?

Just because a person was an Innate, can they be slutty?

Hui Tai Lang had regrets in his heart. If only he could speak like the Bloody Queen, then he would definitely tell this slut, so that he would not be too arrogant. Just like his master said: Don’t act all mighty, or you’ll get struck by lightning!

Chapter 299 – Blood Bath, Struggles, Victory

“Kill her!”

At the Yue Clan Castle, two Demon Generals and two Zi Jin Kingdom’s Generals rushed towards Yue Bing and surrounded her.

This kind of strange situation where demons and humans joining forces together to attack a girl was a sight that would probably not be seen in a hundred years. At first, neither of the Demon Generals nor the Zi Jin Kingdom Generals wanted to join forces. Instead, they tried to find their own opponents to fight. However, they soon discovered that the Demon Legion had suffered serious losses under a girl’s plant-category beast’s attacks. If they allowed her to continue her slaughter, all of the demon monsters that came out from the teleportation gate would probably be completely annihilated.

The two Demon Generals and two Zi Jin Kingdom Generals had no other choice but to join forces and attack her.

However, even after that, Yue Bing still managed to control her Treant Defender and continued to massacre the Demon Legion.

After her brother’s considerate teachings, Yue Bing was no longer the young widow who could only be bullied by others. She was as unrelenting and courageous as ever, but her combat power and confidence had increased hundred folds.

“[Tree Thorns]!”

Yue Bing stood inside her barrier and ordered her two Treant Defenders to slaughter the Demon Legion.

Countless sharp tree thorns started springing up from the ground and surrounded the whole group of demon monsters, injuring everyone. Some of the smaller demon monsters were impaled by the tree thorns and died immediately on the spot. Some monsters with bigger bodies were only injured on their legs.

Those with quick reactions had flown to the sky before their legs were impaled.

However, no matter how small their injuries were, as long as the tree thorns cut their skin, they would immediately die on the spot.

This was because the tree thorns were imbued with the [Antiaris] poison. This was an ability that Yue Bing had acquired at the Scorpio Temple, the reward from Scorpio Temple when her [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill had levelled up. Low-levelled monsters wouldn't be able to resist the Antiaris Poison even if they had some poison resistance abilities. As for the Zi Jin Kingdom soldiers, needless to say, they were instantly killed.

Arrows and fireballs rained down and smashed onto the two Hundred Years Treant Defenders' bodies in succession.

Everyone knew that plant-type beasts were weak to ice, fire and thunder-type attacks. Amongst them, fire-type attacks were the easiest to launch, especially when the Demon Legion were more proficient in fire-type attacks, even more than dark-type or poison-type attacks.

When the flames ignited on the Hundred Years Treants' bodies, Yue Bing remained calm and summoned the "Green Light Tree Demoness".

Green Light Tree Demoness possessed three kinds of special skills: [Regenerate], [Green Rush] and [Spirit Root]. When she released her green light ball that increased the strength of the Treant Defenders, those flames on their bodies disappeared and leaves started to spring out from their bodies. She had greatly increased the attack power of the Treant Defenders, making them bigger and their leaves lusher.

A Demon General suddenly charged forward, regardless of the situation, intending to pin his enemy down and give his comrades more time to charge a huge fireball.

Yue Bing quickly flew out from within her barrier.

The current Yue Bing was not only a summoning master, she was also proficient in combat skills.

Before the Demon General manage to attack, he had already been knocked down to the ground by Yue Bing's whirlwind kick in the air.

“[Coiling Roots].” Yue Bing pointed at the Demon General and immediately, countless tree roots and vines sprung out from the ground as the two Treant Defenders bound the Demon General with their roots. The Demon General struggled to free himself relentlessly, but suddenly, countless tree thorns sprung up from the vines, impaling the Demon General to death immediately. After the Green Light Tree Demoness released [Spirit Root] and powered up the two Treants, their giant roots penetrated deep into the Demon General’s body and absorbed his life force forcibly to replenish the energy that they consumed.

The whole battle had not last even half a minute, but the Demon General, who was ferocious as a tiger and healthy as a horse before had now turned into a dried up corpse that had their energy absorbed dry.

The rest of the Demon Generals didn’t even dare to save him, afraid that they would end up with the same tragic fate.

Countless demons threw their fireballs, creating a sea of fire.

However, as far as Yue Bing, the seasoned fighter of hundreds of battles, this heavy rain of fire was only equivalent to a drizzle. She jumped high from the Treants’ shoulders and flew through the rain of fire, landing right on top of the head of the demon who kept throwing those fireballs.

She stomped the demon monster dead, then smashed it flat with the giant arms of her Treants. The whole earth was shaking violently, even the houses at a far distance was swaying uncontrollably.

The demon monster that was smashed had become a meat paste.

The other demon monsters weren't able to escape too, they were completely trashed left, right, up, down by the two Treant Defenders. A demon monster who had an especially tall and big physique was even raised by those treants and smashed onto the nearby castle walls. "Boom!" It crashed onto a house below and was buried alive in the blocks of bricks. When Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others were still fighting desperately, Yue Bing had already charged into the teleportation gate. She was an unstoppable force, advancing forward like a hot knife through butter.

The ferocious, evil demon monsters were completely defeated under her hands.

"Boom, boom, boom!"

Yue Bing and her Treants started attacking the teleportation gate. The moment the surrounding demon monsters started attack them, they were immediately killed on the spot with Yue Bing's deadly [Antiaris] poison.

Waves and waves of demon monsters charged forward, replacing those that was killed. Very quickly, they became a wall of corpses around Yue Bing.

Seeing the situation, the fake Yue Qiu immediately abandoned Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, the two tenacious opponents. He released one of the moves in his <> technique, the [First Slash: Earth

Splitting Slash] right towards Yue Bing.

Yue Bing's figure flashed and she beautifully dodged it completely.

At the same time, a large amount of tree vines and roots quickly sprung from underneath the fake Yue Qiu's feet, twining around his legs in a flash.

The fake Yue Qiu spun his blade and cut the tree roots away. However, just a moment after he regained the freedom of his body, Yue Bing had already kicked at Yue Qiu's chest, with a speed so quick that completely shocked the fake Yue Qiu. Fatty Hai was yelling "Be careful!" from afar as the fake Yue Qiu stood back up and charged forward again, a black light beam suddenly shooting out of his forefinger straight at Yue Bing's forehead.

In that crucial moment, Yue Bing dodged the deadly attack at the last second by bending backwards.

Taking advantage of the situation, the fake Yue Qiu charged forward with an unbelievable speed... Yue Bing somersaulted back continuously to avoid his sword, making the fake Yue Qiu pierce into empty air. He furiously threw her a kick, treacherously attacking Yue Bing's back.

Yue Bing's body was hit and she flew over ten metres away. She crashed into some demon monsters and was almost smashed by a Demon General's hammer.

However, Princess Qian Qian had arrived in a flash and swung her great sword at the Demon General, saving Yue Bing right in time.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai was completely furious and went berserk, their eyes were red like a hungry wolf's. They didn't care about their safety and charged forward.

Even when sword blades pierced into their body, they didn't care at all.

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong used the special skill they used to fight against Kai Yang of the Seven Great Bears just now. This was a skill that Yue Yang had patiently created for them, it was the most effective skill to use against an opponent that was hard to be defeated or who had high agility. The fake Yue Qiu's blade had sunk deep into Fatty Hai's shoulders, until his bones, and Ye Kong's chest was also pierced through from front to the back. However, the two people completely disregarded the consequences and charged forward, unafraid of death. Their hands wrapped onto the fake Yue Qiu's arms as they pushed the fake Yue Qiu down to the ground.

The fake Yue Qiu released his Qi and injured the two internally. Blood dripped out from their mouths.

But Fatty Hai and Ye Kong continued their tight grip, not loosening them at all.

The Li Brothers arrived and managed to pierce their Dual Arrow

Blades onto both of Yue Qiu's leg in the chaos.

Boom...

A large amount of Qi exploded as Yue Qiu screamed out in pain, blasting Fatty Hai and Ye Kong away. However, before he had the time to jump away, the Li Brothers abandoned the weapons in their hands and charged forward like a hungry wolf too, gripping his legs like an unbudgeable chain. The fake Yue Qiu rained down his fists on them, beating the Li Brothers body to the point that their Ant Soldiers' Armors broke to pieces and their ribs shattered. However, the Li Brothers still gritted their teeth and held on, gripping at Yue Qiu's feet like giant claws. They wouldn't let go even after Yue Qiu's ferocious rain of attacks.

"Die, you piece of impostor trash!" Fatty Hai roared violently with a body full of wounds as he gripped Yue Qiu's back in his deathly grip. He twisted his two legs on Yue Qiu's hips and locked Yue Qiu's throat with his arms.

"You are seeking death!" The fake Yue Qiu elbowed Fatty Hai in his ribs, almost breaking every rib he had. Fatty Hai spat out a mouthful of blood.

"You are the one who will die!" Ye Kong didn't have time to find his pike weapon, he simply took a stone and smashed it hard on Yue Qiu's head. When the fake Yue Qiu was disoriented for a few moments, he gripped at Yue Qiu's right arms tightly. The fake Yue Qiu ferociously pummeled at Ye Kong's ribs with his left hand, causing his blood to splatter everywhere. However, Ye Kong gritted his teeth and continued to twist at Yue Qiu's right arms,

pulling at it with the power of his whole body. Prince of Tian Luo who was initially refined and dignified had become a little crazed right now. He had never fought with Ye Kong and the others before, but seeing that Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers, four people, were still unable to hold the fake Yue Qiu down, he yelled out in fury and quickly flew over to help them.

He clamped down the fake Yue Qiu's only free limb, his right arms and together with Ye Kong, Li Brothers and Fatty Hai, he twisted the fake Yue Qiu's body and smashed his head to the ground.

Fatty Hai's nose was broken, fresh blood continued to flow out.

As the five people finally succeeded in suppressing the fake Yue Qiu, his body suddenly changed in appearance, and he turned into a demon monster that was covered in burning flames. His height was more than five metres, and his strength was powerful beyond compare. Fatty Hai and the others weren't able to stop him even with the strength of five people.

In the sky, a meteor-like shadow appeared.

Yue Bing raised the Giant Pike that Ye Kong had thrown away just now and smashed it hard on Yue Qiu's head.

Boom!

She was blasted away by the fake Yue Qiu's Qi.

“Let me do it!” Princess Qian Qian abandoned the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder she was fighting and released the power of the White Tiger within her. Her Sword Qi exploded as her great sword slashed down with a power that could destroy heaven and earth. The fake Yue Qiu who had turned into a demon monster suddenly spluttered a ray of light beam from its mouth and broke Qian Qian’s great sword into two.

Princess Qian Qian was beyond furious. She used the half of her great sword to smash at Yue Qiu’s head repeatedly.

The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder’s claws charged forward, prepared to rescue Yue Qiu.

Behind her, a blast of wind as cold as the Arctic wind blew.

There was a Giant Snowman who was about to ambush her.

However, faster than the Giant Snowman, Xue Tan Lang who had frozen the fake Third Young Master into ice had attacked her instead... The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder avoided Xue Tan Lang’s attack and counter-attacked, slashing at Xue Tan Lang’s chest with her claws. She almost clawed out his heart...

“Newbie, this level of coldness means nothing. I’m not someone a newbie like you can handle, you are still young and immature, you should learn this point!” The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder then moved as fast as lightning. Xue Tan Lang was completely not her match, especially after he had used up his

strength to defeat the fake Third Young Master. He was immediately beaten black and blue by her, he almost had no chance of retaliating. When the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder turned around, she found that her ally, the fake Yue Qiu, was in a dangerous situation. Princess Qian Qian and Yue Bing was smashing his head with their weapons... Although a demon's head was more durable than a human's, if his head was smashed repeatedly like that, it would definitely shatter.

“Unless I die, forget about going there to help.” Xue Tan Lang gritted his teeth and attacked. He knew that he was not the Hundred Transformations Demon Elder's opponent right now, but as long as he had the ability to delay her for a minute, that fake Yue Qiu would definitely die.

“Go away, just scram!” The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder punched him repeatedly at Xue Tan Lang's chest.

She couldn't kill him in such a short time, so she decided to send him flying away with punches and rescue her ally first.

Suddenly a sound that sounded like ice breaking resounded from her back. A deadly, biting cold wind that penetrated straight to her bones blowed at her as a voice resounded, “If he's not your match, do you think I can be your match?”

The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder turned around and found Xue Wu Xia, whose mouth was dripping with blood standing right behind her, glaring at her coldly. She was so shocked that she shivered as she shouted in alarm, “Where's Marquis of Zi Jin? Did you kill him?”

Xue Wu Xia shook her head and wiped the blood from the corner of her mouth, “I only killed that slut called Luo Wei... If you don’t mind, I can send you off to accompany him in his journey in afterlife. If you like eunuchs, I think he would be quite compatible for you.” As Xue Wu Xia spoke, the Bloody Queen Red descended to the ground from the sky and let out a loud, mournful Banshee Scream...

The Hundred Transformations Demon Elder felt like her eardrums were about to burst. Her head blanked as a shot of unbearable pain coursed through her head.

The Reaper Mantis’ giant scythes slashed down like lightning, clamping down on the Hundred Transformations Demon Elders’ body. As for the Golden Beast flying in the sky, it turned into a sharp sword and landed on Xue Wu Xia’s hands. Swinging the beautiful sword magnificently, she quickly slashed across the Hundred Transformations Demon Elders’ neck.

At the same time, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man jumped from the high sky and kicked hard at the fake Yue Qiu’s chest, immediately knocking his demon’s body away.

Then, her strong fists smashed onto the fake Yue Qiu’s head like a meteor.

At this time, the fake Yue Qiu’s defense had been completely broken, causing him to vomit a huge amount of blood... He roared loudly and struggled, sending Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Li Brothers and

Prince of Tian Luo flying away. Just as he was about to get up, the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle and Lightning Mammoth came onto him and crashed onto him with all their strength, breaking all of Yue Qiu's bones. The fake Yue Qiu collapsed down to the ground in pain.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Prince of Tian Luo and Li Brothers was afraid that this fellow would still not die, hence they had also charged forward and clamped his body down.

The fake Yue Qiu who had turned into demon monster didn't stop struggling with all he had, but he had reached his breaking point.

After Yue Bing's, Princess of Qian Qian's and Barbarian Cow Shadow's consecutive attacks, his strength, mental and body had all crumbled down.

Hui Tai Lang charged forward and clawed out his demon heart with its sharp claws. In the end, Princess Qian Qian with her White Tiger power and mighty Sword Qi, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers and Prince of Tian Luo all managed to break a part of Yue Qiu's body, successfully dismantling him to a few pieces.

The fake Third Young Master who had just broken his frozen state was frightened to death and tried to escape. He only cared about watching his back in case Xue Wu Xia and the others will notice him. He tried running away with light steps, but he didn't realize that standing on top of a palace wall, the Thorny Flower Demoness was watching his surreptitious actions. Countless thorny flowers sprung up from the ground under her orders.

Before the fake Third Young Master could even scream, he was already swallowed inside a thorny flower. He struggled with all he had inside, but it was all futile. He only had one bad outcome, and that was to become a flower's fertilizer...

Xue Wu Xia didn't participate in killing the fake Yue Qiu. Instead, she raised the Golden Beast who had turned into a sword and break the Demon Abyss' teleportation gate.

Seeing the current situation, the two generals from Zi Jin Kingdom committed suicide in hopelessness.

The Demon Generals still wanted to lead their army and attack, but Luo Hua City Mistress released the [Aurora] in her hands and instantly killed a huge number of demon monsters. Even the Demon Generals were reduced to ashes.

The newly promoted Hundred Eyes Demon Elder from the Thousand Goblins Sect had been turned into a lunatic by Yi Nan's Spirit Mirror. He attacked his comrade Hundred Claws crazily, then exploded himself, killing his comrade and himself in the process. The only one who couldn't kill her opponent was Yue Yu. Her opponent was Hundred Wings, but with Yue Yu's current abilities, the battle would only end up as a tie at the most. She was even at a disadvantage. Fortunately, Luo Hua City Mistress had been keeping an eye on her, hence she didn't suffer from any serious injuries.

Yue Yu was also someone who specialised in healing skills. Her current fighting abilities were only acquired after training with Yue Yang for the past few days. Furthermore, her 'Tsunami' was

also better-suited to fighting in water. Her opponent was the Hundred Wings Demon Elder who kept flying in the sky, of course she would be at a disadvantage.

However, Hundred Wings didn't stand a chance to the Bloody Queen. Before he escaped 2 kilometres away, the Bloody Queen had managed to catch up to him.

With a whip of the Bloody Queen's Flame Whip, the Hundred Wings Demon Elder's wings shattered to pieces and he fell to the ground.

Bloody Queen swooped down, and as she let out a deafening 'Banshee Scream' to knock Hundred Wings unconscious, she stabbed her Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger and Silver-ranked Eye Destroyer Dagger deep into Hundred Eyes' heart and forehead, killing him instantly.

When Yue Yang returned from the Demon Palace back to the Yue Clan Castle, the great battle had all come to an end.

As he surveyed the surroundings, he found that everywhere looked disastrous.

The Yue Clan Castle was engulfed in smoke and almost all the buildings in the surrounding had crumbled flat to the ground, still burning in flames... Corpses scattered all over the ground and blood flowed everywhere. Yue Yang was even worried that they had been defeated during the fight at the beginning, but he suddenly heard a burst of joyful cheer from the Yue Clan Castle. He

even heard Hui Tai Lang's unique howl. Yue Yang felt at ease immediately.

This battle was finally finished.

It was an extremely arduous battle, but the cheers could prove one thing. In the end, they had gained victory of the great battle!

Xiao Wen Li floated out from his body and obediently hugged Yue Yang's leg. Her small body tried to support him soundlessly, that no matter what, during battles or normal lives, she would always accompany him by his side.

She would forever be by his side.

Chapter 300 – Level Up, Collecting Loot, Yue Yang's Return

The battle finally ended. Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo's summoning grimoires shone with the level up glow one by one.

The colour of the glow in their grimoires were all different.

Fatty Hai's summoning grimoire glowed with a green light, Xue Tan Lang's with blue light, and Prince of Tian Luo's with white light. Amongst them, the weakest and lowest-levelled one but also the fiercest and bravest in the fight, Fatty Hai, received the greatest reward. His Iron-skinned Rhinoceros ranked-up from Bronze-ranked Level 4 to Silver-ranked Level 4, and it evolved from Iron-skinned Rhinoceros to Silver-horned Rhinoceros. If it levelled up and ranked up one more time, it would be able to evolve into one of the rarest beast in the world, equal to the Lightning Mammoth in strength, the [Diamond Rhinoceros].

This evolution was very meaningful to Fatty Hai. His Rhinoceros could finally stand on stage.

Iron Rhinoceros would usually stay as Iron Rhinoceros its whole life, but as long as it could evolve into Silver-horned Rhinoceros, it would have 99% chance of becoming a Diamond Rhinoceros. Hence, Fatty Hai really couldn't stop smiling from ear to ear with this evolution.

Although he was seriously injured and was in so much pain that

he almost couldn't stand, this battle was completely worth it!

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were completely jealous of him.

They didn't possess summoning grimoires, hence they wouldn't be able to gain experience and level up during battle. They also didn't have the ability to receive the rewards for the level up from the Ancient Laws. For example, Fatty Hai's Iron Rhinoceros had not only evolved into a Silver-horned Rhinoceros, it also gained a new ability, [Steel Bones]. Ye Kong was so jealous that he almost drooled.

The difference between owning a grimoire or not lies in here.

Xue Tan Lang didn't reveal the reward for his level up, he continued to maintain his cool guy appearance. However, the joy that couldn't be concealed in his eyes was obvious for everyone to see. Seems like he got quite a nice reward.

Prince of Tian Luo's element-type beast, "Skyfire Meteor" had levelled up too. However, it was a Gold-ranked beast in the first place, hence it didn't evolve.

Amongst the people, the one that levelled up the most was neither Xue Tan Lang, nor Fatty Hai... It was Yue Bing.

Her Hundred Years Treant Defender had evolved into Thousand Years Treant General after levelling up.

It had levelled up to Silver-ranked Level 5 from Bronze-ranked Level 5. Thousand Years Treant General was much bigger than Hundred Years Treant Defender, and it also looked more human. It also possessed Ancient Tree's Heart. Ancient Tree's Heart was extremely important for Treants, because as long as their Ancient Tree's Heart was intact, a Treant would never die. The Thousand Years Treant General had not only gained higher combat power, it had also gained stronger life force... Treants' evolution path was Treant Warrior, Hundred Years Treant Defender, Thousand Years Treant General and Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree King.

Yue Bing's Treant was only one step behind from possessing the Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree King, that no one else in this world had.

With the Tree's Heart, it marked the start of the Treant's ability to evolve more human-like, and become a Holy Beast.

Qian Qian, Luo Hua, Yue Yu and the others had all levelled up to different extents. Amongst them, Xue Wu Xia who killed Innate Rankers Kai Yang, Luo Wei and also killed HUNDRED Transformations Demon Elder, acquired the greatest rewards.

All the girls decided not to disclose how much they have levelled.

All the demon monsters from the Demon Abyss had been completely annihilated.

The elite soldiers from Zi Jin Kingdom had mostly died in the battle. The few who survived chose to surrender, while others who

were afraid of punishment chose to commit suicide.

The Yue Clan members who sided with the fake Yue Qiu chose to surrender, and most of the clan members and generals who opposed the fake Yue Qiu and was imprisoned were all released. They immediately started to clean up the mess, healing people and putting out fire, saving their land.

Yue Clan guards like Lin Miao and Lin Lei who chose to follow Yue Yang in a heartbeat were seen as heroes now!

Even the branch families brothers had called them 'Big Brother Lin' when they saw them. Their close relatives, for example their cousins, raised them up to the air excitedly. They felt that the Lin Family's status in the Yue Clan would be raised in the future. When Yue Yang, the Innate Ranker, took back the control as the Yue Clan's leader, the Lin Family would definitely grow more prosperous... Some of the clan guards who didn't manage to surrender in time lowered their heads in guilt. The clan guards who participated in killing the demon monsters were still better off, at least they had proven their loyalty at the last minute. Those who resisted until the end, even though nobody started to arrest them, they still stood at the side quietly, awaiting their time to be captured and punished.

Everyone was members of the Yue Clan, who was right and who was wrong, who was loyal and who had betrayed, it was obvious for everyone to see.

Someone wanted to take advantage of the chaos and switch sides?

That was completely impossible!

When the two elders were released from the prison and saw how badly the Yue Clan Castle was damaged, the number of Yue Clan members lying dead on the ground, they couldn't help but to shed their tears... This battle was definitely the greatest calamity that the Yue Clan ever faced. Fortunately, under a situation where it was impossible to win, Yue Clan had managed to overcome it.

Because there was the Yue Clan junior, Third Young Master Yue Yang, who had miraculously turned the tides around.

With his own strength, he had killed a number of Innates and repelled the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian and the shadow that they suspected was the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader. He had even pursued the Green Summit Sect Leader Duan Mu Long Cheng and killed him in the Demon Abyss.

If he had not come to the Yue Clan Castle, the Yue Clan that had never fallen in the past thousands of years would probably be trampled to the ground.

“Right now, we only need to wait for brother to come back.” Yue Bing knew that they would have to settle the matters with their clan, but she hated to manage the matters of their clan. Furthermore, she didn't know how to. On the other hand, Yue Yu had gone to the Castle's main courtyard and comforted the elderlies, women and child who were frightened out of their wits. There were a few demon monsters who had invaded into the

courtyard, but they were killed by Second Uncle Yue Ling and Ninth Master Yue Feng. Hence the Yue Clan's elderlies, women and child were all safe.

"It's alright, your brother will definitely return safely." Xue Wu Xia wiped away the blood staining Yue Bing's face softly, comforting her with a gentle voice.

"Woof." Hui Tai Lang gave the best reaction, it was the first to ran out the door amongst the Bloody Queen, Thorny Flower Demoness and the others.

Their master had returned.

It could sense Yue Yang's unique, one and only kind of Qi.

The Bloody Queen and Thorny Flower Demoness could also sense his Qi, but they were slower by a moment. Following behind Hui Tai Lang, they all flew over ecstatically.

Forget about them, even Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others who were seriously injured and was in the midst of being treated struggled to get up and ran out, wanting to welcome Yue Yang's return personally.

The blood-soaked Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar accompanied Yue Yang as they stepped into the main door. They looked like they had just drowned in blood. Wounds lacerated all over their skin, but their expressions remained calm and

unperturbed, as if the wounds on their skin was others' not theirs. There were even a glimpse of pride on their faces. This was because after paying such costs, they were finally able to kill the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Zi Jin, who were at the same rank as them.

They were all Heavenly Imperial Guardians, but Da Xia's Heavenly Imperial Guardians were stronger.

The scars on their bodies now served as prove for having defeated the Zi Jin Heavenly Imperial Guardians.

Of course, they were a little embarrassed standing next to Yue Yang who was completely uninjured, but they had already known from the beginning that this brat was an abnormal existence, so they didn't feel very bad.

In reality, it was not that Yue Yang was not injured.

He had actually suffered serious injuries, but they had all been healed by the Nirvana Flame, so they couldn't be seen anymore.

The Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar knew that Yue Yang had fought with Duan Mu Long Cheng, Shun Tian and the others... but they didn't know that he had also fight against the Great Demon Kings Baruth, Ha Xin, Ou Gen and two Lich Kings Grun and Mafa. Otherwise, they would probably be so shocked that they have a heart attack. Actually, above everything else. Yue Yang had also managed to rescue the sealed, airheaded Qilin girl who had a bad sense of direction. He had even seen the twin Phoenix sisters

who were hidden inside another world in the Divine Grimoire.

When the Qilin girl barged into the world inside the Divine Grimoire, she had been kicked out by the twin Phoenix sisters. Afterwards, the twin Phoenix Sisters had accepted her and allowed her to enter the world inside the Divine Grimoire.

Yue Yang had also realized his dream kidnapping the Qilin girl with a bad sense of direction.

Initially, he had even wanted to negotiate it with the two Phoenix sisters.

However, the two Phoenix sisters were still young, even younger than Xiao Wen Li. They couldn't even speak, but when Yue Yang tried to align his thoughts with them, he felt some kind of dizziness as if his head was heavy and his feet was light. Nirvana Flame engulfed his whole body, and he felt as if he was about to explode. With his current abilities, he wouldn't be able to communicate with the two Phoenix Sisters. Of course, this was also because the two Phoenix Sisters were still unable to control their own abilities.

Yue Yang only tried to sense a little, but he had managed to understand a lot. With the help of the Qilin girl who had a bad sense of direction in 'translation', he had managed to understand quite a lot of things.

For example, he knew that the Phoenixes and Qilin were all kindhearted Immortal beasts. They have a kind disposition, and

they were also very intelligent. They possessed the purest “Natural Hearts”, so they would not initiate an attack on their enemies at normal times, unless those enemies posed as a danger towards them.

Hence, if not for some people who harbored evil intentions towards Yue Yang, in normal situations, they would not have come out to fight.

As for their origin, the Qilin girl was also unable to tell where the two Phoenix sisters had came from. However, she determined that Yue Yang was their ‘dad’. She even felt that Xiao WEn Li was also his ‘daughter’, she didn’t care about the difference in their races at all. This made Yue Yang felt really speechless. Furthermore, the Qilin girl liked Xiao Wen Li a lot. She felt that the little lamia loli had a better temperament compared to the two Phoenix Sisters. Xiao Wen Li didn’t have any objection with regards to her entering the world inside the Divine Grimoire. Furthermore, she wouldn’t be like the two Phoenix Sisters who had kicked her out.

The Qilin girl didn’t know that Xiao Wen Li true feelings was that as long as the she didn’t try to fight for her dad’s attention, she was fine with anything else.

Yue Yang was eighty percent sure that the Phoenixes eggs were inside the Universal Pouch that the Old Daoist Priest had left him. However, he didn’t know how they hatched afterwards.

Maybe the Heavenly Sword Goddess had given it to him... He shouldn’t care about this too much right now, because in the end, the Heavenly Sword Goddess would be his first wife no matter

what. With her managing his household, Yue Yang would feel at ease. He felt that if that was the case, he could simply enjoy his blissful sexual life and leave all the matters to the Heavenly Sword Goddess to manage. If he had problems internally, he would ask his first wife Heavenly Sword Goddess to solve it. If he had external problems, he would ask his second wife Xue Wu Xia to solve it.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty promised to meet Yue Yang at another time, then waved her hands and left.

If she didn't leave, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar would feel extremely nervous. Their hands were sweaty, their heartbeat increased, their temperature rises... This was not because she had enticed them, but it was because she was the infamous Tian Fa, the demoness from Demon Palace who killed without blinking their eyes. She was Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom's thousand years arch-enemy.

The good relationship between Yue Yang and Tian Fa didn't mean that the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar would let their guards down towards her, let alone see her as a friend.

Hence, after the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar finished their battle, Tian Fa had given Yue Yang a small smile and immediately left.

Yue Yang's return had hastened the Zi Jin Heavenly Imperial Guardian's death.

Although Yue Yang didn't join the fight, the Zi Jin Heavenly Imperial Guardians immediately thrown into disorder when they saw his return. They immediately lost their will to fight. The Ascetic Practice Saint had used this chance to unleash his ultimate move and finished his opponent. Then, he went over and helped the Scholar and worked together to defeat the other Zi Jin Heavenly Imperial Guardian. In the end, they gloriously returned to the Yue Clan Castle and announced their grand victories.

The old fox had also secretly teleported over.

There wasn't a single scar on his body, but his contributions to this battle was only second to Yue Yang.

This was because he had made use of his teleportation ability and changed the destinations of all the Demon Abyss' teleportation portal to Da Xia and Tian Luo to his own experimental Battlefield of Death. Without any Innate Rankers to disturb his plans, he had secretly maintained the safety of the two capitals all on his own.

The old fox's Spirit Qi was completely depleted, and he was tired to death. His complexion was pale white as he teleported to the Yue Clan Castle. Raising his walking stick, he walked over to Yue Yang and was prepared to knock it on Yue Yang's head.

This was because this rotten idea was Yue Yang's idea.

Although it was very effective, if not for his abundant experience and the fact that he had break through a new level in his teleportation ability, the old fox felt that he would most probably

die due to the depletion of his Spirit Qi... Thinking about it, he still feel some lingering fear until now. However, before he managed to knock his walking stick onto Yue Yang's head, Yue Bing had ran towards her brother with tears all over her face, rushing into his embrace.

Of course, she was crying because she was happy.

Seeing his brother return, Yue Bing felt that a huge burden in her heart had been lifted.

Her brother was her sky. Without her brother, she wouldn't be able to imagine what would happen to her mother, sister and herself.

The Bloody Queen, Thorny Flower Demoness and Barbarian Cow Shadow all rushed to welcome their master, hugging him tightly.

Hui Tai Lang happily snuggled against Yue Yang's legs.

This special position was it alone, nobody would snatch it from it.

Unable to hug Yue Yang and not daring to do anything to the two Innate Rankers, the Ascetic Practice Saint and the Scholar, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai was forced to hug the old fox instead.

They raised him up and threw him into the air as they cheered.

However, due to their exhaustion and injuries, their arms were too weak to catch the old fox who was thrown into the air when he fell back to the ground.

“Pow!” The old fox pitifully crashed to the ground hard, almost fracturing his back. It was so painful that he screamed out miserably.

“In this battle, we have completely defeated our enemies and achieved a grand victory. History would definitely recorded your names. You guys had created a miracle that wouldn’t happen twice. The safety of the kingdom, Yue Clan Castle were all safeguarded because of your hard work!” The Ascetic Practice Saint raised his arms and praised Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the other juniors who were soaked in blood.

“Victory, yayyy!!” The Yue Clan Castle who had almost become ruins resounded with a deafening cheer. Everyone cheered out as much as they wanted, feeling proud of the victory that they have achieved this time.

Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan and Xue Wu Xia all stood at the side, away from the crowd as they quietly watched Yue Yang.

Their expression were filled with softness and tenderness.

They were all worried about his safety.

They all wanted to hug him tightly too, welcoming his return. However, at this moment, they would give way to his friends and clansmen who were all cheering for him...